

Volume

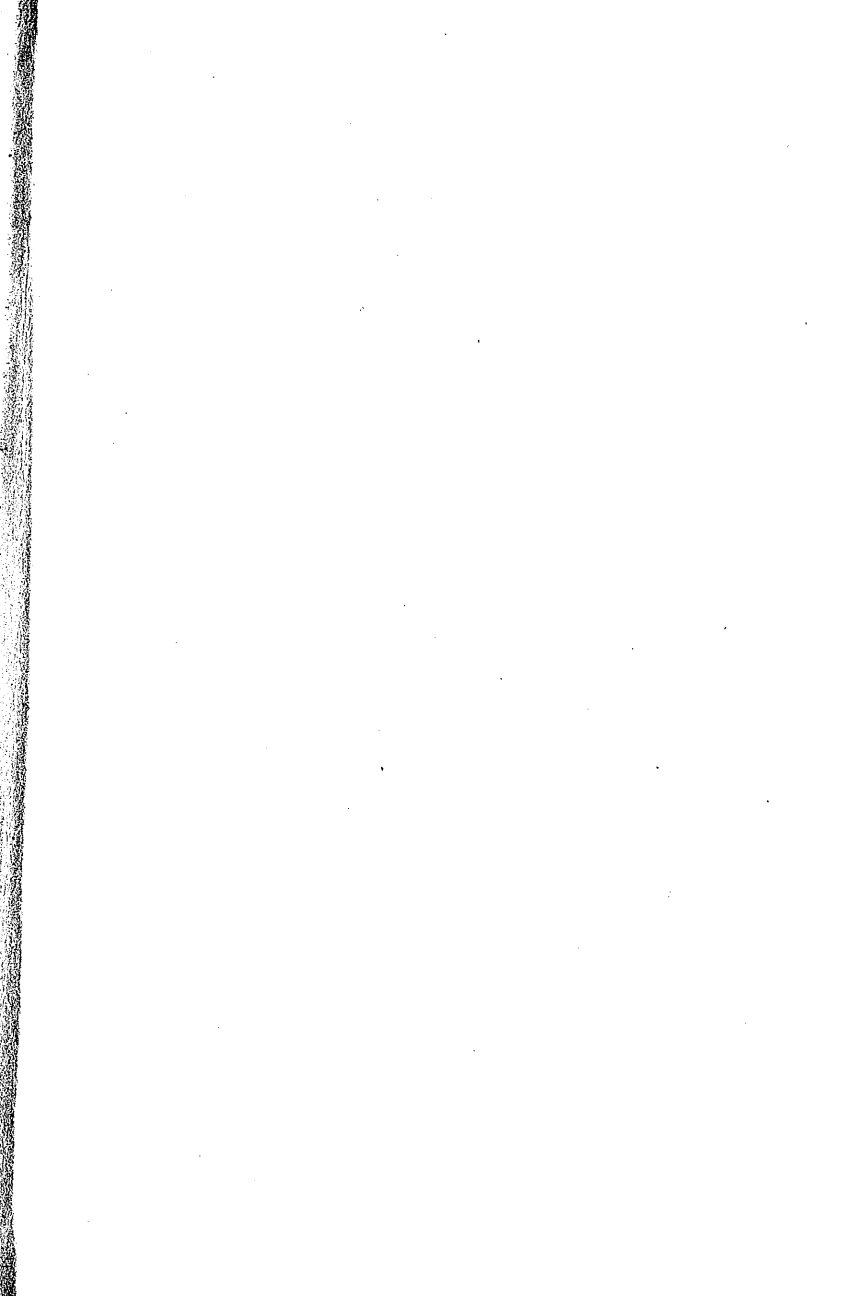
ume 1

The University of Chicago
Libraries



GIFT OF

Chicago Institute





ST. IGNATIUS

Founder of the

New York Edward



IGNATIUS LOYOLA.

of the Society of Jesus.

by Edward Dunigan & Brother

HISTO
OF
THE LIFE AND
OF
ST. IGNATIUS
FOUNDER OF THE SOCIETY OF
JESU
BY
FATHER DANIEL
OF THE SOCIETY OF

TRANSLATED BY THE AUTHOR

These are they whom we had sometime in derision, and
esteemed their life madness, and their end without honor.
children of God, and their lot is among the Saints.



VOLUM
NEW YORK
EDWARD DUNIGAN
151 FULTON ST
1855.

Y B R A

INSTITUTE

E LOYOLA,

Y OF JESUS.

B

BARTOLI,

JESUS.

OF "LIFE IN MEXICO."

d for a parable of reproach. We, fools, es-
hold! now they are numbered among the

Given by Chicago Institute

E I.

K:

& BROTHER,

TREET.

Y9A9BL

ITUTT201 00A0110

Y9A9BL
BX 4700
00A0110
TO

239A9BL 00A0110

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1855,

By JAMES B. KIRKER,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States, for the
Southern District of New York.

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

THE works of Father Daniel Bartoli being comparatively little known in this country, it may be well to mention that this learned and laborious Jesuit, professor of rhetoric, distinguished for his eloquence in the pulpit, and one of the most popular writers of the age in which he lived, was born at Ferrara in 1608, and published the work of which the following is a translation, at Rome, in the year 1650. Contrary to the custom of the Jesuit biographers of St. Ignatius, he wrote in his native tongue ; while his predecessors had almost universally employed the Latin language ; and in that ecclesiastical idiom, however generally in use in those days, their works had been rather appreciated by the learned few, than generally read and admired.

This "History of the Life of St. Ignatius and of the Society of Jesus," with its southern vivacity, striking imagery, and life-like portraits, became popular wherever it was known. It was translated into Latin

225776

by Father Giannini ; at a later period into French. A learned critic has declared that all translations of Bartoli must fall far short of the original. His unquestioning faith, his simple enthusiasm, combined with the romantic character of the narrative, do indeed seem more suited to times nearer the mediæval era, and to an atmosphere more glowing and cloudless than ours ; whilst much of the charm of the original must necessarily escape when transferred from those softly flowing periods to our more senatorial and positive language.

Nevertheless, a translation may serve to draw attention to the original, and will at least give an idea of its merits, however imperfect, to those whose knowledge of languages does not embrace that of Dante and Ariosto.

But I must not pass over in silence my obligations to the French translator, whose plan in the division of the work into chapters I have closely followed ; and whose example I have ventured to take in the omission of certain details, which might have appeared wearisome to the general reader, and unnecessary to the interest of the narrative.

Yet we need not fear that the subject is one which can be easily exhausted, or which can ever cease to be interesting. For three hundred years this wonderful

Society has fixed the attention of princes and people throughout the universe. Hated, loved, praised, abused, persecuted, cherished, but always an object of intense interest ; it has never sunk into insignificance, it has never been regarded with indifference. Whilst in one country the name of Jesuit awakens every feeling of distrust and abhorrence ; in another it arouses every sentiment of love and reverence. The member of the Society of Jesus finds himself regarded with as different feelings at different periods, as was the great Apostle of the Gentiles by the barbarians of Melita, before and after he had shaken off the venomous reptile from his hand. *He is a murderer—he is a God.*

And therefore, notwithstanding the many books which have been written upon this subject, whether against or in favor of the Society of Jesus and its Founder, the history of Bartoli, with its honest and plainly authentic details, and above all, as containing a fuller account of the Institute itself than has hitherto been given by any author, may be considered well worthy the trouble of perusal ; more especially by those who would gladly use their own judgment in ascertaining the true motives by which the Founder of the Society was actuated ; his original intentions in that foundation, together with the real nature of his *Spiritual Exercises* ; who would discover what has so

greatly puzzled a late Protestant divine, in what he calls "the twofold character of Ignatius de Loyola;" how he was at once an "unmanageable enthusiast," and the author of "a scheme of life and a polity, which has proved itself to be the most firmly compacted and the most efficient of any which the world has seen."

We think that this enigma will be solved by the simple perusal of Bartoli; and that the reader will also be enabled to ascertain how far the followers of St. Ignatius have walked in, or deviated from the footsteps of their Founder; and to what extent they have obeyed the injunctions which he bequeathed to them; whether, in short, the object of the Society has been to acquire worldly honors, wealth and influence, or whether they have acted up to their professed aim: namely, to labor for their own perfection, for the spiritual welfare of their fellow-men, and all

AD MAJOREM DEI GLORIAM.

P R E F A C E .

I PROPOSE to write the history of the Company of Jesus, and thus to fulfil the obligation under which that Society lies, of making known to the world from time to time the works which it has performed in its service; for if a narrative of the occurrences which concern those religious Orders who live only for God and for themselves, may be considered as an act of spontaneous liberality to the public, it is not so in regard to this Order, whose direct and principal object is to benefit mankind.

If we revert to the origin of the Society of Jesus, we shall easily perceive how distinct is the duty imposed upon it in this respect; since it appears that the whole world has concurred in its formation, increase, and extension, Spain gave it a father in St. Ignatius; France, a mother, in the University of Paris; to Italy it owes the Pontiff Paul III., who determined its existence as a religious Order; it received from Portugal the title of Apostolic, and the first

elements of its aggrandizement. Hardly was the new Society adult, when placed by Germany in the arena, to grapple with the Protestants of those unfortunate days; the East Indies, the kingdoms of Africa, the two Americas welcomed the children of Ignatius even during the lifetime of their Founder, and opened up to them those vast fields, which they were destined to cultivate by their labors, and to water with their blood.

Thus besides the obligations which the direct object of the Society imposes upon it, it is bound by those which it has contracted in the service of all nations, to come forward and balance accounts with them, that the world may judge whether or not these engagements have been fulfilled. This work will not consist of a simple narrative only; it will also be an apology for the Society; since there exists not only amongst Sectarians, but even amongst Catholics, a vast number of persons who have endeavored to draw down the hatred and contempt of the world upon this Order; representing it at one time as a disturber of peace; at another as designing and dangerous; and again, as utterly degenerate; nor will this vituperation cease until that day arrives, which God grant it never may! when these accusations shall be founded upon truth.

Had the Society abandoned the different public ministrations to which she devotes herself for her neighbor's welfare; and adopted the humble occupations of weaving mats, of making baskets, or of cultivating gardens; had she narrowed the sphere of her activity within the walls of a cell;

never issued forth whether to see or to be seen ; if, dead to the living, as St. Gregory Nazianzen expresses it, she had lived but to herself, the world would have spared alike her reputation and her works, and would not have honored her by its hatred. Then all defence would have been idle ; all appeal to reason and truth needless. But this was not what God required of our Order. In those days of calamity for His Church, when fresh auxiliaries were so needful for her, He did not raise up this new religious Order to seek for repose, but to devote itself to labor for the good of mankind. It pleased God himself to oppose this barrier to the ignorance of infidels, to the perversity of heretics, and to the corruption of Catholics. It was therefore impossible that, destined for such a struggle, the new Society should not have met with antagonists, and when enabled by the divine blessing to snatch from the hands of the enemy, the souls which he held in captivity, those very hands became armed against her, and challenged her to combat.

I may then justly give the name of apology to that which is in fact but a simple narrative ; for as Diogenes, in order to confute the sophisms of Zeno, who denied motion, merely arose and walked, so as an answer to those who obstinately refuse to acknowledge in a religious Order, a spirit and work worthy of its profession ; arguments and dissertations are of less avail than a mere narrative of well-authenticated facts.

This, indeed, has been the innocent but effective method of defence, adopted from the very birth of the Society, by its Founder and Father, St. Ignatius. In reply to a censure

afterwards revoked, which the Sorbonne, ignorant of the true spirit and works of the Society, had pronounced against it, he preferred to the most peremptory arguments, the combined testimonies which he had received from the principal cities of Europe, where, judging from visible and manifest facts, the Order had been declared highly useful, orderly, and well regulated. This was the sole reply given by Ignatius to those able but at that time ill-informed men, who had through ignorance condemned it.

I may also hope that it will prove no slight consolation, and no trifling advantage to the members of the Society itself, thus to see brought before them in one general picture, the life, labors, and glory of their elders; since they may hence learn to appreciate their works, to honor their memory, to imitate their noble examples. Thus should any one acknowledge that he is yet very far from the perfection which his vocation requires, let him console himself by entering into the humble sentiment of Father James Eguia, a man of eminent virtue, and confessor of St. Ignatius; that if amongst many pieces of gold of just weight, there should be one mixed with alloy, it is not remarked, but passes current with the others. As an encouragement to aspire to perfection, we shall find numerous examples worthy of our imitation in the lives of those holy men, the record of whose virtues will assist us to become the living copies of these noble models. Nor can any one justly apply to us the words of Philo: "The further," he says, "that the human race recedes from Adam, the less it receives at its birth, of that

primitive vigor belonging to a perfect nature, and possessed in the highest degree by our first father.* Thus," continues he, "as the rings of an iron chain suspended to a load-stone, participate so much the less in its virtue in proportion as they are further removed from it; so the gifts of nature degenerate in man, the further he recedes from his first parents." We, on the contrary, shall gain by distance; since the spirit of our Founder and of his Institute will descend to his successors, fortified by numerous and worthy examples; like a river, which, as it recedes from its source, is gradually increased by the new waters which precipitate themselves into its bosom, as it flows along.

The holy Apostle St. Francis Xavier asked nothing with greater earnestness, than to receive detailed accounts of his brethren whom he had left in Europe, and of all those who were daily added to their number. He writes to the Fathers in Rome: "I beg and conjure you in the name of God, my dear brothers, to speak to me of all our members, and of each one in particular; for having no hope of seeing them again in this life, *facie ad faciem*, I desire at least to be associated with them in spirit." Surely it was not to obtain merely a vain consolation, that the Saint made this earnest prayer, but rather that he might receive encouragement from their example to endure his fatigues, and joyfully to bear the burden of his labors. When that dearly loved news arrived from St. Ignatius and his other friends, we may believe that he conceived a still higher esteem, a yet more lively affec-

* *In Cosmop.*

tion for that mother ever since then so fortunate, less even in the number, than in the virtues of her children. "I cannot," he says in one of his letters to the Fathers in Rome, "cease to speak of the Society when I once begin; it is a subject upon which I know not how to contain myself; nor can I finish my letter more suitably than with these words: *Si oblitus unquam fuero tui Societas Jesu, oblivioni detur dextera mea!*"

Such is also the effect which the knowledge of the virtues of our predecessors shall produce upon us; and with this view I propose at some future period to write their lives; not by fragments, nor in a vague and general manner, but in order, and with all fitting details.

Meanwhile, let no one suspect that my pen will refuse to trace any thing but the virtues and the works with which it has pleased God to illustrate the Society; nor that I would defend, conceal, or extenuate those faults, whether grave or slight, with which some of her children may have tarnished her lustre, or dimmed her primitive beauty. An assemblage of so many thousands of men, although originally called by God, and afterwards subjected to the most rigid discipline, could certainly not be more fortunate or more faultless than that of the angels in Heaven, or of the apostles upon earth. The first were created in holiness, and doubly enriched with the gifts of nature and of grace; the others were formed by the teaching and example of Jesus Christ himself. Yet many amongst the first have peopled Hell; amongst the second some fell, and one was lost. Every profession in the

Church has hypocrites,* justly says St. Augustine; and there is no religious Order so new, no Institute so wise, which may not say, groaning with Job, "My works bear witness against me;" words applied, according to the interpretation of St. Gregory, to those double and false men, religious by their profession, and profane by their works.†

But besides, the very faults which have blemished their lives, may be useful to those who know how to extract a useful lesson from them. For as the shipwrecks of imprudent mariners first made known the hidden rocks which all marine charts now mark out for navigators, by which voyages have been rendered comparatively safe, so a faithful history, pointing out the causes through which some were unfortunate, and others fell, will serve as a guide and a warning to their successors, and will show them the necessity of taking another route, if they would avoid similar evils. If men, placed under the same rule, and forming one body, find advantage in studying the lives of their predecessors, it is therefore evident that they may derive as much benefit from reflecting upon the faults into which they have fallen, as upon the virtues by which they were distinguished.

Experience, it has been often remarked, is the daughter of Time; she is also the mother of prudence, and a guide towards wisdom; and many things can be learnt through her, which no abstract thoughts, or theoretical principles can

* In Psalm 99.

† Lib. 13. Moral. 5.

ever teach. As the reformation of the calendar was the result of a multitude of observations examined by each other, and not of some few isolated data, so in every form of government, certain fundamental maxims are not adopted, or at least their expediency cannot be proved, until all the events which have occurred during a long series of years have been examined, and the advantages and inconveniences of the system, carefully scrutinized. If we add to all this, that obligation to inviolable fidelity imposed upon every historian, an engagement which he takes in the face of the whole world, in virtue of his office, my readers may be convinced that every one of my assertions shall be based upon authentic proofs, and that I shall conceal nothing which it may be useful to relate.

However, the general history of the Order embraces a mass of facts which have taken place in the most different and most distant regions. In a narrative of this nature, order, clearness, and method are especially necessary. The best plan that I have been able to devise, consists in simply classing the labors of the Company, according to the four quarters of the globe. But there is one history which ought to take precedence of all the others, for it is the true basis of this work—I mean that of St. Ignatius. As Founder of the Order, he has a right to a more especial, a deeper remembrance; while his actions and the example of his life, ought to be a rule for the conduct of those who have inherited his spirit, and embraced his Institute.

Were I to mingle with this narrative a history of the

different events with which contemporary history furnishes us, I should injure the beauty of my subject, which consists in the unity and connection of the whole, as well as in the harmony of its parts. Yet I have felt persuaded that I should not pass over in silence several circumstances apparently of slight importance in the history of St. Ignatius, which had escaped the notice of his first historians, Ribadenara, Orlandino, Maffei, and others; or which perhaps they had suppressed on account of the times in which they wrote. For if we naturally feel a certain desire to know something of the features and physiognomy of those great men who have lived for the glory and happiness of their fellow-creatures, and endeavor from some ancient memoirs to form an ideal image of their appearance and lineaments, judging from what we learn of their character and virtues;* yet certainly we should prefer to a painting, which, after all, can but retrace their physical conformation, those pages where their innermost souls are unveiled, and where the different phases of their existence are developed, and brought to light by a faithful account of their actions and of the various events of their lives.

Now as in a portrait, where the artist endeavors to produce a perfect resemblance to the original, no line or stroke of his brush can be considered as useless; so in retracing

* *Quo majus, ut equidem arbitror, nullum est felicitatis specimen, quam semper omnes scire cupere, qualis fuerit aliquis.*—Plin. lib. 35. cap. 2.

the lives of great men, certain minute details, which taken separately, appear to offer little interest, yet possess a certain intrinsic merit, when they contribute to the formation of one admirable whole.

To apply this observation more immediately to St. Ignatius; we find Father Luis Gonzaga, who had lived with him some time, and had studied his character attentively, observe to John, King of Portugal, that the mere recollection of Ignatius, of his words and actions, inflamed his heart with a more vivid desire of perfection, than the holiest teaching, or the most lofty meditation. Others relating, after the death of the Saint, what they had observed in him, wept with emotion, and considered themselves supremely blessed; in having been permitted to study the theory and practice of perfection, under a master of such heroic sanctity.

I shall not, I think, be blamed for occasionally mingling with the ancient and faithful historical memoirs which we possess, certain facts with which they have not furnished me. I shall draw these details from no modern source, but solely from manuscripts written by the holy Founder himself, or from the writings of the Fathers Faber, James Lainez, Simon Rodriguez, Jerome Nadal, and others, from whom the first historians derived their materials. Besides this, the voluminous correspondence, and the depositions of six hundred and sixty-five witnesses, adduced in the process of canonization, have frequently been of great assistance to me.

Finally, in this first work, I shall venture to follow the

example of St. Gregory, the Pontiff, who was wont to compare himself to those rivers, which, meeting with hollow ground along their shores, fill it up, and flow onwards without deviating from their course. Thus, without turning aside from my principal subject, I shall make some digression whenever I find it necessary to do so. "The lyre," says St. Augustine, "is not composed solely of the chords which give it sound and harmony, but also of other parts, which are deaf and dumb in themselves. These, however, united to the chords which they support, become in their turn sonorous and melodious. Thus," continues he, "certain descriptions of material things, which are occasionally mingled with the writings of the prophets, do not indeed speak openly of Christ; but His mysteries are there, united by allegorical figures, of which we may say that they proclaim Christ; *Christum sonant*. The same observation might be applied to those digressions which I have considered it necessary to make; as for example, in my detailed account of the *Spiritual Exercises*, of the persecutions which we have undergone, of the protection granted us by the Mother of God, of the object and plan of our Institute. Here the connection between cause and effect is evident; and we may say of these different subjects, *Ignatium sonant*.

But besides the intimate connection which all this has with him, and which prevents me from omitting these circumstances, it was also my duty to mention them in order to explain, and by so doing to justify them. I have especially dwelt upon the plan of the Order instituted by the

Saint, and judged of so differently by those who know it and by those who do not, that it may remind us of the opinion of the two philosophers, Pythagoras and Anaxagoras, in regard to the sun, as related by an ancient writer; the one regarding it as a stone, and the other as a God: *Quem ille ut Deum, hic ut lapidem prospectabat.**

If when we contemplate a material object, the eye of the soul could penetrate by its intelligence that which the eye of the body only perceives from a distance, no philosopher would have been sufficiently materialist to have gone the length of saying that *the stars are animals, of which the heavens are the stables;** but, on the contrary, in considering the grandeur, the immutable order of the celestial spheres, and their harmony of motion, he would have revered the wisdom, the genius, and the omnipotence of the Divine Architect, who had communicated such rapidity to these immense globes, and had prescribed to their unequal revolutions, a rule which governs them with such perfect exactness. And thus the man who views from a distance the Institute of a religious Order, designed by God, who himself gave the model to its Founder, as he formerly made known to David the plan of the Temple, ought to judge according to the object aimed at by the Institute, of the suitableness of the means employed in attaining it. Then, from the connection of the various parts, he can easily comprehend the beauty of the whole; otherwise he will be, as St. Augustine says, like one who, viewing a beautiful mosaic, can, from his defec-

* Maxim. Tyr. serm. 9.

† *Lactant. de orig. error., cap. 5.*

tive sight, perceive only one or two of the stones which compose it, and in his ignorance accuses the artist of want of skill.*

It was thus that Lermeo, the Calvinist, as well as so many others, judged of the Society, when, after having first condemned it for having united the active and contemplative life, he added that the Society of Jesus alone knew how to reunite severity with gentleness, discipline with relaxation, &c. "*Sola Societas Jesu, omnium professionem severitatem, amœnitatem, disciplinam, laxitatem, paupertatem opes, usus, abusus, complexa est.*"

This was my reason for undertaking to make known in detail those things which, as we shall judge from facts, only require to be brought forward to the light of day, in order to be justified. Thus only can we render to St. Ignatius that homage which we pay, says St. Gregory Nazianzen, to the merit of a workman, by merely showing the excellence of his work to those who had never before observed it.

"*Vir vere, quem Prælegerat Dominus, ut eorum dux foret, qui portarent. Ejus sanctissimum nomen coram gentibus et populis, et infideles ad veræ fidei cognitionem inducerent, ac rebelles hæreticos ad illius unitatem revocarent, suique in terris vicarii auctoritatem defenderent.*"†

"A man, indeed, whom the Lord had chosen as the

* Lib. 1. de Ord. c. 1.

† Words of Urban VIII., in the Bull of canonization of St. Ignatius de Loyola, Founder of the Society of Jesus.

leader of those who should bear His most holy name to the Gentiles and nations, and bring the infidels to the knowledge of the true faith, and call back the rebellious heretics to its unity, and defend the authority of His vicar on earth."

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

Family, birth, and character of St. Ignatius—St. Ignatius is chosen by God to found the Society of Jesus, to combat the new heresies, to convert the Indies—St. Ignatius embraces a military career—His wounds, 17

CHAPTER II.

First effects of the fervor of Ignatius—The Blessed Virgin appears to him, and grants him the gift of chastity—His eldest brother endeavors to dissuade him from his project—St. Ignatius takes a vow of chastity—He defends the honor of Mary against a Saracen, by whom it was attacked—He passes a night in the chapel of Our Lady of Montserrat, divests himself of his armor, and assumes the garb of a penitent, 33

CHAPTER III.

Hard and humble life which Ignatius passes at Manresa in a hospital—Austerities which he practises in a cavern near that city—Fresh temptations assail the solitary of Manresa—His physical strength prostrated by a fever which reduces him to the point of death, 46

CHAPTER IV.

Singular graces which Ignatius received at Manresa, 57

CHAPTER V.

Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius, 61

CHAPTER VI.

Marvellous fruits of the Exercises—They are denounced before the Ecclesiastical Tribunals—Condemned in Paris by the Sorbonne—Examined at Rome, and approved of by Paul III.—They become the foundation and basis of the religious edifice founded by St. Ignatius, 76

CHAPTER VII.

Ignatius quits Manresa—The hospital and cavern which he had inhabited are held there in great veneration—Journey of St. Ignatius to the Holy Land, . . . 90

CHAPTER VIII.

— Ignatius visits the Holy Land—Is forced to return to Europe—Virtues which he practises in Barcelona—Reformation which he effects in the Monastery of the Holy Angels—Ill treatment which he meets with on account of his zeal—His patience disarms his enemies—Ignatius obtains the restoration to life of a man who had hanged himself, 101

CHAPTER IX.

Predictions of Ignatius to several persons who were desirous of following him when he was leaving Barcelona to go to Alcala, 119

CHAPTER X.

Inconstancy and unfortunate end of the first companions of Ignatius—His charity towards a person who had offended him—Conversion of several students—Ignatius delivered from an unjust punishment—New conversions, 146

BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.

Ignatius attaches some companions to himself in Paris, with the view of founding a new Order—Means which he employs to draw them to God—First vows or foundation of the Society of Jesus in the Church of Notre Dame de Montmartre—Persecutions which it endured, and protection which it received from the Mother of God—Labors of St. Ignatius and his companions—Storm raised against them in Rome; after which the Order is definitively formed and approved of by the Pope, Paul III., under the title of *Society of Jesus*—Origin of that name, 158

CHAPTER II.

James Lainez, Alphonsus Salmeron, and Nicholas Bobadilla associate themselves to St. Ignatius, 177

CHAPTER III.

- St. Ignatius proposes to his companions that they should adopt a uniform system of life—First vows pronounced by Ignatius and his companions in the Church of Our Lady of Montmartre, 186

CHAPTER IV.

- The birth of the Society at the Mount of Martyrs, a presage of its destiny—Bad effects of the odious books published against it, 196

CHAPTER V.

- Causes of the persecutions raised against the Society, 206

CHAPTER VI.

- Profit which the Society derives from the persecutions of which it is the object—Special protection of the Holy Virgin—The Society of Jesus, which took birth in the Sanctuary consecrated to Mary, is protected by her as her own property, 225

CHAPTER VII.

- Life of St. Ignatius in Paris—His conduct—His journey to Azpeytia and other places—Honors and conversions—Ignatius is received in Azpeytia as a Saint, and remains there three months—His works, and the fruits of his zeal in that city—He humbles himself to a Carthusian, his former master, and speaks to him of his project of forming a Society, 231

CHAPTER VIII.

- Journey to Venice—Reunion of St. Ignatius and his companions—Peter Faber in Paris, adds three new companions to Ignatius, 248

CHAPTER IX.

- The companions of Ignatius set out for Venice—Dangers of the road—Discussions with the heretics in Germany—Consolations and arrival, 256

CHAPTER X.

- Labors and charity of the companions of Ignatius in the hospitals of Venice—Journey to Rome—Return to Venice—The companions of Ignatius disperse through different cities—Their preachings—Charity of Ignatius towards one of his sick companions, 269

CHAPTER XI.

- Death of a companion of Ignatius—He sees his soul received into Paradise—Labors and sufferings at Ferrara and Bologna—Departure of Ignatius for Rome—Vision on the way—First success and first persecutions in Rome—The lawsuit, . . . 285

CHAPTER XII.

Charity of Ignatius and his companions towards the poor in Rome—The Saint prepares his companions to form a new Order—Difficulties which he has to surmount in attaining this object, 312

CHAPTER XIII.

Divers predictions as to the origin, spirit, and labors of the Society—Ignatius chosen first General of the Order—Solemn profession without the walls of Rome—Of the name of *Jesus* given to the Society, 323

HISTORY
OF
SAINT IGNATIUS DE LOYOLA,
OF
THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

FIRST BOOK.

CHAPTER I.

Family, birth, and character of St. Ignatius—St. Ignatius is chosen by God to found the Society of Jesus, to combat the new heresies, to convert the Indies—St. Ignatius embraces a military career—His wounds.

IN that part of ancient Cantabria, now called Guipuscoa, which extends along the sea-coast, between the Pyrenees and Biscay, two families resided, who held a distinguished rank amongst the most ancient and illustrious of the country; those of Ognez and Balde. They had always been possessed of great influence, less on account of their noble rank, than of the great number of their ancestors who had distinguished themselves in arms and literature. The house of Ognez has given rise to that of Loyola, the lords of which family were represented at the end of the fifteenth century, in a direct line, by Don Bertram, lord of Ognez and Loyola, head of the family, and father of eleven children, born to him by Doña Maria Saez de Balde, his wife.

Ignatius, the last of these children, was born in 1491, under the pontificate of Innocent VIII., and in the reign of the Emperor Frederick III. Nature had endowed him with the most noble inclinations; greatness of soul, lofty sentiments, an ardent passion for glory, an aptitude for all chivalrous exercises, the most charming and graceful manners, and in short, with every species of merit, fitted to distinguish a young man of noble birth. Considering all the advantages re-united in his son, Don Bertram was of opinion that it would be proper to establish him at court; and while he was still young, placed him there in quality of page to Ferdinand, king of Castile. But God, when he bestowed upon Ignatius the lofty character and noble nature which he possessed, designed him for greater things. Gifts so rare as these, were destined to serve as instruments of His grace, and for a very different purpose from that intended either by the lord of Loyola or by Ignatius himself. It is certain, and Ignatius often repeated the remark in after days, that persons who appear destined to obtain the most brilliant success in the world, are usually the best adapted to those enterprises whose object is the service and glory of God. Of this he himself was a striking example. The constancy which enabled him to suffer the most terrible anguish from human motives only, was changed into unalterable patience in enduring the most austere penances. That magnanimity of soul which led him to disdain all ordinary thoughts and affections, led him to devote himself more entirely to the increase of the Divine Glory; and the generous intrepidity which directed his choice to the profession of arms, afterwards induced him to form under the military title of Company a new order, whose special aim was to be the defence of the Faith, and the diffusion of the power and glory of the Church to the most distant regions of the earth. For it

pleased God that this valiant soldier should be carried off from the secular militia, to become the chief of a new militia, which, by means of other arms, and in a new species of warfare, was destined at once to serve the Church by its labors, and to defend her against the schism of Henry VIII. in England, the apostasy of Luther in Germany, and the revolt of Calvin in France; and which was moreover to repair the losses which the Church had suffered in Europe, by extending the Faith to the East Indies, those new possessions of Castile and Portugal. Such had been the method pursued by God ever since the first ages of the Church. Did heretics arise against her; forthwith He raised up in her defence, at one time, men of ability, at another, religious orders, mainly destined to combat their errors. Thus to Arius he opposed the great Athanasius, St. Cyril of Alexandria to Nestorius, St. Augustine to Pelagius; and during the space of four centuries, the orders of the two holy Patriarchs, St. Dominick and St. Francis, to the fury of the Albigenses and to the corruption of the whole world.

With regard to St. Ignatius, his birth, his conversion, and the foundation of his order, evidently kept pace with the necessity then existing in the Church for new auxiliaries. The very same year in which Christopher Columbus concluded his treaty with Ferdinand of Castile, and sallied forth to the discovery of a new world; God brought St. Ignatius into being, doubtless with the design that the conversion of so many barbarous and savage nations should be the fruits of the zeal and labors of his spiritual children. Six years after Ignatius, in the year 1497, Francis Xavier was born, and that same year, the first voyage of Vasco de Gamo to the East Indies took place. In 1521, Martin Luther declared in the Diet of Worms, in presence of Charles V., his obstinate persistence in heresy, and retired to

Wartzburg, where, becoming as he audaciously says, "a new John, in a new Patmos," he wrote a book against monastic vows, the perusal of which depopulated a great number of monasteries. In 1521, also, Ignatius quitted the world, consecrated himself to God, and after being restored to health, retired into the solitude of Manresa, where he composed his admirable work, entitled the *Spiritual Exercises*, in which he threw so bright a light upon the eternal truths of religion. It was by means of this book that he collected his companions together, founded his new order, and repeopled the ancient monasteries. Ignatius and Calvin were in Paris at the same time, and both made disciples in that city. The first attached to himself a great apostolic laborer, whose life and doctrines were destined to crush heresy; while the second found a powerful supporter for the mass of errors which he desired to propagate. Finally Henry VIII. king of England, who had acquired in 1521, the glorious title of *Defender of the Faith*, published an edict in 1534, whereby he condemned to death whosoever should not efface the title of "Pope" from all the books or writings wherein it might happen to be inserted. That very same year, Ignatius was at Montmartre, carrying through the plan of an association destined especially for the defence of the Church, and of the Sovereign Pontiff. As for the conquests of the Catholic Faith in the two Indies, they have surpassed its losses in the north of Europe; nor is it necessary to point out how God had evidently destined the new order for the conversion of these pagan countries. An ingenious author* has calculated that St. Francis Xavier alone, gained over a greater number of souls to Christ, by converting them from the errors of Paganism, than that of all the proselytes ever made by all the heretics united. We must therefore consider the children

* *Thom. Boy. De Sign. Eccl. Signo 20.*

of Ignatius as the new Apostles of Gentilism. Many exalted minds have been struck by this providential mission, but no more imposing testimony can be given than that of the Pontiff himself, who in the Bull of the canonization of St. Ignatius, expresses himself in these terms: "Gregory XV., our predecessor of blessed memory, considering with what ineffable mercy the Providence of God, which disposes and brings about in due season all the events of this world, has in past ages sent men distinguished for their learning and holiness, whether to carry the gospel among idolaters, or to extirpate rising errors, acknowledges that in these later days, he has acted in a like manner; for the kings of Portugal and Castile having opened up vast fields for Apostolic labors in the East Indies and in the New World, whilst Luther and other men not less dangerous than he, were endeavoring by their blasphemies to separate the nations of the earth from the Holy Apostolic See; God raised up Ignatius de Loyola, withdrew him in a remarkable manner from the midst of the world, and rendered him docile to the operations of grace. After having founded the new order of the Society of Jesus, which by its very institute devotes itself amongst other works of piety and zeal; to convert idolaters, to bring back heretics to the true faith, and to defend the authority of the Roman Pontiff; he terminated by a blessed death, a life admirable for its sanctity." Thus speaks the Pontiff; but let us return to the youth of Ignatius.

He had resided for some years at the court of King Ferdinand, when hearing the exploits of his brothers commended, he felt an inclination which had hitherto been dormant, aroused within him. Wearied besides of the frivolous restraints and idleness of a courtier's life, he disclosed to Don Anthony Manriquez, Duke of Najara, his desire of abandoning it for the more stirring life of the camp. The Duke, whose

kinsman he was, seconded his inclination, instructed him in the art of arms, and found him so apt a pupil, that he soon led him on from the first rudiments to a thorough knowledge of military science. From theory, Ignatius quickly passed on to practice, acquired a great reputation for valor, and soon reached those honorable posts which are the reward of military merit.

His conduct at this period of his life was more conformable to the laws of honor, than to those of the Gospel. Though never heard to utter a word which could make innocence blush, yet he made a profession of gallantry towards women, into which he was drawn rather from the vanity common to young men of his age, than from any vicious inclinations. He had a particular talent for appeasing discontents amongst the soldiery, and more than once calmed the disputes of parties about to come to blows; nevertheless, to support or defend his own reputation, his spirit was always quickly aroused, and his arm ever ready to combat. Such a man was likely to despise riches, of which he gave evident proof, after the conquest of Najara, a town situated upon the frontiers of Biscay. Ignatius in compliance with the orders which he had received, gave it up to pillage; but declined taking any part of the booty, reserving for his share nothing but the honor of the victory, and the sad pleasure of vengeance. Idleness and gambling had no charms for the young soldier. He employed the time which he might have spent in this manner, in writing verses in the Castilian tongue upon sacred or moral subjects, and composed a long poem in honor of St. Peter, who in after days restored him to life and health.

Such was the kind of life, and such were the occupations of Ignatius, until he had attained the age of thirty. Then God struck him with a terrible blow, which closed his path to military honors; but inasmuch as personal holiness and

the conversion of souls are superior to all earthly glory ; inso-much the new career which was opened before him, was superior to all that had, until then, been the object of his desires.

At this period the Emperor, Charles V., was at a distance from Spain, and his absence had emboldened a part of Castile to rise in a revolt, which, under the usual pretext of public liberty, served in reality the interests of some mal-contented nobles. The viceroy of Castile, Don Frederick el Almirante, wishing to provide for the defence of certain cities under his jurisdiction, which ran the risk of falling into the hands of the rebels, sent to Navarre for men and money, and even went so far as to withdraw the troops and ammunition from several of the fortified places. Henry d'Albret, whose father, John III., had been dispossessed of Navarre by Ferdinand of Arragon, seeing that kingdom in so weakened a condition, undertook to attempt its recovery, and gave the command of his troops to Andrew de Foix, brother of the famous Lautrec.

The danger was imminent, and the viceroy of Navarre, Don Anthony Manrique, hastened to the governor of Castile, and claimed his assistance. But Andrew de Foix, already master of St. Jean Pied-de-Port, as well as of other less important places, had laid siege to Pampeluna. The inhabitants, terrified by the number of the troops that blockaded the city, and despairing of holding out until the return of the viceroy, began to speak of capitulation. In vain Ignatius, who had the command of the place, encouraged them with the hopes of obtaining speedy succor, and reproached them with their pusillanimity. Seeing that nothing could be hoped for from them, he abandoned the town, and retired into the citadel. There also he found the troops feeble and dispirited ; for the enemy, who had already made their entrance into the town, were preparing for the assault. But first they invited

the garrison to a parley, and to this the commandant and several others immediately agreed. On beholding this cowardly conduct, Ignatius reflected that if some men of courage did not join them, they would probably accept the most humiliating and disadvantageous conditions, and he therefore resolved to be present during this negotiation. They required, in fact, a man as intrepid as he; for the enemy, proud of their superiority, and encouraged by the surrender of the town, showed themselves wholly unreasonable, and although the debates were prolonged, less humiliating conditions could not be obtained. To surrender,—such was the last word of the French; and the commandant of the citadel, to excuse himself for giving his consent, pleaded imperious necessity. But, at that moment, Ignatius, equally humiliated by the cowardice of his own troops, and irritated by the harshness of the enemy, peremptorily broke off all the negotiations, and withdrew into the fortress. If he were to be overcome, it should be by the force of arms, but never through miserable cowardice. He revived the courage of the soldiers, reminded them of the duties which loyalty imposed upon them, and of the rewards which awaited them. “An honorable death,” added he, “is always preferable to a shameful capitulation.” The assault was made, and repulsed with equal bravery. In defending a bastion which the enemy was endeavoring to scale, Ignatius performed prodigies of valor. However, the French artillery made a furious attack, and it pleased God that a stone detached from the wall by a cannon-shot, should strike his left leg, while the ball itself, by a fatal rebound, struck and shivered the right. Under these two blows he fell, and with him the courage of the soldiers whom he had animated both by words and example. The citadel, remaining defenceless, fell into the power of the enemy, who entered it on the Monday of Pentecost, the 19th of May, 1521.

The French, who had witnessed the honorable conduct of Ignatius during the negotiations, and his indomitable courage in defending the fortress, treated him with great consideration, respecting the virtues which men are pleased to acknowledge even in an enemy. The gravity of his wounds rendered it necessary to obtain more skilful advice than could be procured in the army, and after a few days they caused him to be transported to Loyola. The limb having been badly set, he was exposed to remain not only miserably lame, but also to suffer greatly, unless the surgeons came to the decision of breaking it afresh, in order to bring the bones together, and restore them to their right places. Undaunted by this cruel necessity, the young warrior permitted the surgeons to act according to their own judgment. During this dreadful operation, not a cry nor even a complaint escaped him. But nature, already exhausted by so much suffering, was unable to endure this new torture. The state of the wounded man daily became more precarious; and, whether caused by the violence of the pain, or whether some new malady aggravated the case, Ignatius was soon reduced to the last extremity, and having asked for and received the last sacraments, prepared himself to die. ✓

It was the vigil of the feast of the apostles St. Peter and St. Paul, and according to the opinion of the physicians, the next day was to terminate the life of Ignatius, unless some favorable crisis should occur in the night. It was from Heaven that assistance arrived; and by the intercession of the prince of the apostles, from whom he received that very night a miraculous visit, and immediately felt that he was out of danger. Doubtless the founder of the papacy thus manifested his interest in the life of a man destined to be so valiant a champion of the church and of the Roman see.

From that moment the pains of the sick man were as-

suaged, his health re-established, his strength restored, and, in short, his cure completed. However, notwithstanding the skill of the surgeons who had set his limb the second time, the bone had been broken in so many different places, that a great degree of deformity was unavoidable. A part of the bone, ill-joined, projected above the knee, so as to be distinctly visible : besides which, that limb remained shorter than the other. Ignatius, who set an extreme value upon his personal appearance, was so deeply afflicted at seeing himself reduced to this condition, that to escape from it, all sufferings appeared trifling. In hopes of being cured of this deformity, he consented to have the leg opened at the place where the bone projected, and to have it sawed off. He afterwards submitted to the torture of having the limb drawn out every day by means of iron machines, to restore it to an equal length with the other, and to avoid the defect of limping. On these occasions he displayed extraordinary strength of mind ; for, although warned by the surgeons that the operation of sawing through the bone would exceed in torture all that he had already endured, not only did his resolution remain unshaken, but he rejected all those precautions to which the most courageous men submit, in order to avoid any movement which, however slight, may be fraught with danger. During the whole operation he supported his sufferings with such perfect equanimity and so impassive a countenance, that one might have supposed him to be a dead body given up to the dissecting-knife, rather than a living being undergoing the most acute torture.

Such was the courage of Ignatius, who, after all, was but a martyr to self-love and vanity ! Nevertheless, he obtained much solid profit from this trial ; for when, in after-days, he recalled the faults and follies of his worldly life, the remembrance of what he had suffered on this occasion animated his

ardor, and encouraged him to perform heroic acts in the service of God; for he would have blushed to think that he had endured more in hopes of preserving those puerile advantages which the world admires, than he had suffered for the love of his divine Master.

But the world was not worthy of possessing this noble heart; and a soul like that of Ignatius, formed for the most lofty enterprises, would have been inevitably lost had he abandoned himself to his natural inclinations, and had he not, by a vigorous effort, raised his thoughts towards an object infinitely more elevated than all to which he had hitherto aspired. If grace sometimes produces marvellous results, even upon men of ordinary minds, its strength seems redoubled when it directs those noble souls whose natural elevation of thought renders them peculiarly fitted for great undertakings.

~~The visit of St. Peter, and the miraculous cure which he had operated upon Ignatius, doubtless appeared to him a favor from Heaven; but he had perceived no other object in it but the preservation of his life; he had seen no design on the part of God of rendering it more holy.~~ Whilst impatiently awaiting his recovery after the last surgical operations, he endeavored to beguile the weariness of these long hours of idleness, by occupying his thoughts with the vanities which formerly engrossed them. Above all, he reflected upon the most probable means of pleasing a lady for whom he had long entertained an affection, which the difficulty of their union, rendered almost impossible by the difference of their rank, had only increased in vehemence. But these reveries, in which he would remain absorbed for hours, always occupied with the same object, although they in some measure beguiled the weariness of his convalescence, never failed to leave upon his mind an impression of the emptiness and

nothingness of his desires. To escape, if possible, from this weariness and this unsatisfactory state of mind, Ignatius at length called for one of those books of chivalry, where agreeable fictions, mingled with the narrative of romantic and successful adventure, charm the imagination and beguile the time. It pleased God, that in a house where writings of this sort were never wanting, not a single romance could be procured at that time for the sick man. Two books, however, were found there, though of a very different nature from those which he desired to have. The first was the Life of our Saviour, written by the Carthusian monk Landolphus; and ~~the second was the Lives of the Saints; both were in the Castilian tongue. Necessity, rather than devotion, induced the wounded knight to engage in their perusal. But the things which are of God have a very different savor from those which are of the earth, and frequently lead even men whose tastes are corrupted to feel that, compared with them, all earthly matters are vapid and insipid. Ignatius soon began to read with eagerness what he never could have imagined capable of interesting him. The first feeling which he experienced was great surprise at the long and rigid austerities to which the saints had submitted, in order to conquer their flesh and deaden their passions. Grace working interiorly, he carried back his thoughts upon himself, and demanded of himself why he should not have the courage to imitate these great models. Of some, the only couch had been a stone; others had girded their loins with iron chains, or covered their bodies with a rough hair shirt. One saint had watched whole nights in prayer; another, after many days of fasting, had fed upon roots and drank but water. Others again had buried themselves in the depths of dark caverns, or undertaken distant pilgrimages, exposed to cold, to rain, and to scorching sun. What! said Ignatius to him-~~

self; were these men formed of bronze or stone, or were they insensible to torture? If they were as I am, if they possessed the same nature that I do, why can I not bear what they have done? They have despised worldly grandeur, they have lived in chastity; yet many of them, illustrious by their rank, and of superior genius, doubtless possessed sentiments worthy of these precious advantages; and all had a frail flesh and passions to combat. Despoiled of every thing, suffering without ceasing, despising the world, they were happy! Strange phenomenon! were they possessed of some unknown treasure, of some mysterious charm? But perhaps this secret charm, which softened the severity of their penance, can only be enjoyed by those who have practised it; perhaps it cannot even be understood until experienced. And if I were one day to clothe myself, like them, in a penitential garb, and to expose myself to the insults and jeers of the world; if, retiring into solitude, I were henceforward to live alone with God, and for God only; what will the world bestow upon me in compensation for my services, and what can I hope for in suffering for the world? But God! God! to suffer for him, to do for him what I have hitherto done and suffered for temporal interests—is that not holiness? Then I also can be holy, and it will be my own fault if I am not so.”

Ignatius, entirely absorbed by these exalted thoughts, would alternately lay down and resume his book, the perusal of which produced in him new effects of grace, and prepared his soul for the prodigious change by which it was to be sanctified. And here let us observe one circumstance worthy of serious reflection. What neither the fear of approaching death, nor the apparition of St. Peter, nor gratitude for the celestial favor which had miraculously restored him to health, had produced upon Ignatius, was wrought in his heart by the perusal of holy books. It was by their

means that God penetrated his soul, gave him that light which enabled him to view his own life as compared with that of the saints, inspired him with intense horror of himself, and with an ardent desire to become a new creature.

Thus several centuries before him, the great St. Augustine, who would not yield either to the tears of his mother or to the entreaties of his friends, confessed himself conquered upon reading a few words of St. Paul. Such is the virtue of holy books, and such the efficacy of those silent voices with which God speaks to the heart. They are read as an amusement, perhaps even as a subject of derision, but, on a sudden, light breaks in upon the darkened intellect, and a few lines have frequently produced a signal conversion. Therefore the Society of Jesus wisely devotes a large portion of its labors to the publication of pious books, in hopes of benefiting the souls of their fellow-men by this powerful auxiliary; and also as a debt of gratitude to God, who by this means touched the heart of their holy founder. But the conversion of Ignatius was not effected by one single ray of divine grace. A thousand temptations daily assailed him, and the evil spirit endeavored to detach his heart from the holy truths by which it was penetrated. Sometimes his military ardor was rekindled; at others, his former thirst for honor and distinction revived within him, or his taste returned for those pleasures to which his youth inclined him. Then arose thoughts of the jeers of the world when it should learn this extraordinary change; and the thousand conjectures which, after passing from mouth to mouth, would at length be repeated in the writings of historians. Ignatius of Loyola, they would say, after having lost the town of Pampeluna, no longer daring to show his face among men, had transformed himself into a hermit, lest he might hear himself reproached

with cowardice, had hid himself in the forests, and buried himself alive in the depths of caves.

Thus, partly through fear of ridicule and partly through worldly allurements, the soul of Ignatius, still too feeble to make a forcible resistance, was once more cradled upon the soft and seductive thoughts of glory and pleasure. But this did not last. In a little while, remorse of conscience brought him back to the perusal of those pious works; and again he renewed his former resolutions, and repulsed the attacks of the enemy with fresh vigor.

This alternation between good and evil feeling was prolonged for a considerable period; but at length the victory was gained. God, whose will it was that the decision of Ignatius should be the result of conviction, and not of sudden and impetuous emotion, made use of his own clear judgment to fortify him in his good resolutions. Thus he remarked, after repeated observation, that whenever he resolved to serve God, and to enter upon that austere life which he afterwards embraced, he experienced a feeling of perfect tranquillity, and his heart was filled with the sweetest consolation, which seemed to proceed from his inmost soul, and which the pleasures of the world had never afforded him. When, on the contrary, his thoughts wandered back upon his past years, or, when diving into futurity, he beheld a brilliant perspective of worldly honors, with their long retinue of pleasures and wealth, then an unspeakable bitterness, a profound melancholy, would suddenly take possession of his heart, and make him feel the complete nothingness of all these transitory enjoyments; showing him how superficial were all these worldly pleasures, and how incapable of bestowing any solid or enduring satisfaction.

Thus his own heart was a good teacher and a faithful interpreter of the truth, for this secret depression warned him

not to rest satisfied with mere appearances, but to look to the end, to balance the apparent advantages with the certain evils, and calmly to weigh both sides of the question. Who is so blind as not to see, upon reflection, that those things which pass away like shadows, which will not accompany us beyond the tomb, cannot be put in comparison with eternal felicity; that the earthly possessions which we have enjoyed, the pleasures to which we have devoted our lives, shall leave nothing behind them but the sad remembrance of past joys, and an immense debt which we must for ever pay, and which shall never be cancelled through all eternity! Ignatius gave himself up to the different reflections which alternated in his soul, like a novice inexperienced in heavenly things; but when afterwards more enlightened, he began to reflect upon the different impressions left upon the mind by divine inspirations, and by the suggestions of the demon, he comprehended that a sure rule for those who cannot at the moment discern the source from whence these feelings arise, is to examine the impression left upon the soul, when its agitation has subsided; since joy, calmness, and serenity proceed from Heaven; while from the father of darkness come confusion, obscurity, and depression.

CHAPTER II.

First effects of the fervor of Ignatius—The Blessed Virgin appears to him, and grants him the gift of chastity—His eldest brother endeavors to dissuade him from his project—St. Ignatius takes a vow of chastity—He defends the honor of Mary against a Saracen, by whom it was attacked—He passes a night in the chapel of Our Lady of Montserrat, divests himself of his armor, and assumes the garb of a penitent.

IGNATIUS at length made a firm determination to imitate those virtues of the saints, which, by forming the greatest contrast to his own vices, had most clearly shown him their deformity. It now only remained for him to choose from amongst so many admirable examples, those which he desired to take for his models. Nor did he hesitate long. His generous fervor inclined him to embrace the most austere mortifications, to retire into the depths of a cave; there to pass whole nights in prayer; to repose upon the bare ground; to wear a hair shirt; in short, to conquer the flesh by the holy severity of penance. Incited by the recollection of the faults of his past life, his object was to endeavor in some measure to discharge the immense debts which he had contracted towards God. Besides, at our entrance into a spiritual life, we usually feel as if the essence of holiness and perfection consisted in mortification. Grace itself prompts us to this. We feel so strongly the necessity of becoming completely detached from ourselves, and of dying to the pleasures of the senses, which is the immediate result of external penance.

Whilst Ignatius revolved all these lofty thoughts in his mind, he recovered his health and strength. He now no longer occupied himself solely in the perusal of the lives of our Lord, of the holy Virgin, or of the saints; but desirous of imitating them for the future, made a selection from amongst the most heroic acts of virtue which were there recorded, and formed them into a volume of three hundred pages, which he wrote with particular care, and which was the only thing that he carried away with him on leaving his family. But this pious occupation, whilst it relieved his holy impatience, could not prevent him from feeling afflicted by the length of his convalescence.

As long as his limb had not recovered sufficient strength to support him, he was obliged to delay the execution of his projects. Of these the first was to leave his family, to renounce the world, and far from his native land, clad in poor and coarse garments, to expose himself to the contempt of men, to the humiliation of begging, in short to the most severe and constant suffering. He thirsted for a new life, and all delay was now most irksome to him.

One night amongst others, when his heart burned within him, rising from his couch, he prostrated himself before an image of the Holy Virgin, and consecrated himself to her and to her Divine Son; then bathed in tears, and in a voice stifled with emotion, he renewed his engagement to execute the great resolution which he had conceived. At that moment a violent shock was felt throughout the castle, and especially in the chamber of Ignatius, where the windows were broken, and a rent was made in the wall, which bears to this day the visible marks of the shock. Did the powers of darkness thus manifest their wrath? Foreseeing from the present inclinations of Ignatius, what an enemy he would become to them in future, did they wish to bury him amidst

the ruins of the castle? But if the inmates of hell were filled with fury, there was great joy in heaven. The Virgin Mother of God, as a token that she had accepted the offering which Ignatius had made of himself, appeared to him one night when he was engaged in prayer. She carried her Divine Son in her arms, and looking at Ignatius with an air of maternal kindness, permitted him to contemplate the Saviour long enough to fill his heart with ineffable consolation. This celestial visit was still more wonderful in its effects upon the soul of Ignatius; it seemed to him as if, by an interior operation, his heart and intellect became penetrated with new affections and new thoughts; his whole being, in short, transformed, so as to render him a new creature. Little accustomed until then to watch over his senses, his imagination would frequently recall the remembrance of those objects which had formerly sullied its purity; but the apparition of the Mother of Virgins effaced them so entirely from his mind, that they returned no more. This favor so rare, and granted to so few saints, Ignatius enjoyed in such an eminent degree, that no sensual feeling, not even an involuntary one, was ever experienced by him from that period.

Having at length sufficiently recovered his strength to be able not only to rise from his bed of sickness, but to leave his paternal mansion, he began to make secret preparations for the execution of his design. Prottesting his intention of returning a visit which he owed to his kinsman the Duke of Manrique, he went to take leave of Don Martin Garcia, his eldest brother. At the moment of pronouncing this eternal farewell, he permitted no sign of emotion to be visible upon his countenance. Yet Garcia had some suspicions of his project. The change in the manners of Ignatius had not escaped his notice, nor had he failed to remark his pensive air, and his eyes frequently filled with

tears. He observed also that his military ardor and youthful vivacity were totally extinguished; that nothing in the world appeared to interest him, or rather that he seemed wearied of every thing in which he formerly delighted. He could therefore scarcely doubt that Ignatius harbored in his breast some strange resolution, and this sudden departure, after so recent a convalescence, confirmed him in his opinion. The warm affection of Garcia for a brother so deserving of being beloved, as well as his regard for the honor and reputation of a noble name, induced him to lead Ignatius aside, and with some hesitation to make known to him the suspicions which he had conceived. "If, indeed," said he, "I can term suspicion, that which in my mind is nearly reduced to a certainty. Ignatius! since the accident which befell thee, I no longer recognize my brother. In vain would thy lips utter a denial; thy looks and actions are sufficient evidence of thy intentions. Whilst endeavoring to conceal from me the change which has been produced upon thy mind, thou wouldst have me remain in ignorance even of its cause. It is therefore for me to reveal what I should have learned from thyself.

"This departure, then, oh Ignatius! under the pretext of a visit, conceals a flight. Thou art about to leave us, and shall we not know why, and whither thou art going? But I know thy character; and whatsoever this plan may be, it has been long meditated upon, and is no ordinary nor unimportant thing. Yet who has been thy counsellor, thyself excepted? or rather that gloomy melancholy, which under the disguise of devotion, is urging thee to form a resolution which thou art ashamed to make known to one who is thy brother by nature, and in age and affection more than a father to thee. If a military career has ceased to please thee, are there not other honorable employments open, suita-

ble to a man of noble birth? Or is it a desire of advancing to perfection which moves thee? Be it so, I praise and admire thee for the thought. But why fly from us, in order to attain that object? Even if we are wicked and perverse sinners, can God not be found within these walls? And canst thou not live to thyself, and yet remain with us? If my fears are unfounded, then reassure me, but my heart tells me that it is not so. Promise me at least, that if thou hast no consideration for thyself, thou wilt not forget what is due to the honor of the house of Loyola; of thy father and of thy brothers; and that I should be inconsolable were I to see my brother in any profession or in any garb unworthy of his rank and family."

This discourse in no way shook the resolution of Ignatius; or if it touched his heart, it was only to awaken the most tender compassion for a brother in whose eyes it appeared meanness to despise the world, and dishonor to bear the cross of Christ. But he merely replied, that it was indeed his intention to visit the duke, and that as for the rest, he was astonished that his brother could believe him capable of performing any action, or embracing any mode of life unworthy of his noble birth and the merit of his ancestors. Then taking leave of Garcia, he departed; his only suite two mounted retainers, and rode to Naverete, where his kinsman the duke then resided. When Ignatius crossed the paternal threshold, it seemed to him as if he shook off the dust of all earthly affections. Loyola and Oñes, his house and family, were henceforth to him as words without interest or signification. And many years afterwards, when requested by one of his noble relatives to give his advice concerning a marriage, which was considered very advantageous to the family of Loyola, he declined doing so. "It is," said he, "a matter too far removed from the holy profession of a

Religious. When we have abandoned all to follow Christ, we must forget the world, and think of Him alone. Eleven years ago I quitted my family, and since then I feel that I no longer have any worldly ties." To his kinsmen, who frequently addressed him by letter, his only exhortation was, "Leave the world, or live there in holiness."

But notwithstanding this contempt for the worldly advance of his family, Ignatius was a greater source of distinction for them than any which they derived from their noble ancestry. The castle, or as the country people call it, the *tower* of Loyola, where he was born and converted, is now one of the most holy and revered places in Spain. Isolated, like all the ancient castles of the province, it rises in the midst of a plain, in the vicinity of two considerable villages, Aspeitia and Ascoizia. During the whole year, but more especially on the birthday of the Saint, innumerable pilgrims may be seen wending their way thither, to do honor to the memory of their countryman and protector. It is a singular and affecting spectacle, to witness the population of five provinces winding through the narrow paths of these rugged and precipitous rocks. The heart is stirred with deep emotion, when in the midst of the wildest solitudes, the sweet melody of the rosary is borne upon the air, chanted by these pious pilgrims, and intermingled with simple and devout hymns, in memory of St. Ignatius. And since the castle-chapel cannot contain the crowds who throng thither, the open country serves them as a church, and Mass is celebrated without the walls. Innumerable are the graces and miracles wherewith God honors the memory of His servant, and makes his name glorious. Still more wonderful are the conversions which daily take place, of old and hardened sinners, who, attracted there by curiosity, find their hearts softened, as if by some celestial virtue breathed from these holy

walls ; and who, at the feet of their confessors, purify their souls with tears of contrition. To hear all these confessions, most of which embrace the sins of a whole lifetime, neither the fathers of the Society, nor the priests of the neighboring country are sufficient. It is calculated that during the eight days which this festival lasts, more than fifteen thousand persons generally receive the Holy Communion.

As for the external demonstrations of public joy, which take place on this occasion, we may observe that in the honors which she pays to her Saints, Spain has preserved her warlike character. We still recognize the country of the Cid Campeador, the theatre of that great warfare against the Arabs, which lasted for so many centuries. Thus during the whole Octave of the Feast of St. Ignatius, companies of soldiers dressed in the Moorish costume, and armed with short swords, engage in a mock fight, first after the fashion of a duel, hand to hand ; but afterwards the *mélée* becomes general, and the combatants display the most admirable skill and dexterity. The festival terminates by bull-fights, according to the custom of the country ; representations of scenes in the Life of the Saint, discharges of artillery, fireworks, and brilliant illuminations.

These demonstrations of respect and affection towards Ignatius, did not begin until his name had been publicly honored by the Church. Yet even before his death, the castle where he had been regenerated by grace, was visited with feelings of deep emotion and veneration by St. Francis Borgia, and by Father Jerome Nadal, who even then believed him fully worthy of the honors which the devotion of the people has since awarded him.

The chamber where St. Ignatius had wept over the faults of his youth, had obtained his first favors from Heaven, and the gift of inviolable chastity, had become, as it were, sancti-

fied. For while it still formed part of the castle, and was not as it now is, a sanctuary consecrated to God and His servant, the very walls seemed to revolt when its inmates abandoned themselves to criminal thoughts. Thus it is related that when men devoid of honor and decency, as on one occasion a foreign soldier, and on another a knight, were received at the castle of Loyola, and lodged in the chamber of the Saint, they found with terror that the house trembled to its foundations, whilst terrific visions appeared before their eyes. At other times, on the contrary, virtuous persons who were lodged in that apartment, felt themselves gently awakened from slumber, their minds filled with heavenly thoughts, together with a holy horror for their past sins, and feelings of ineffable sweetness and devotion which they had never before experienced.

But let us return to Ignatius, who having sent back his two servants from Navarete, bade adieu to the Duke and his sister, and now alone, and wholly devoted to God, took the road leading to Montserrat.

And as he rode on, he pondered in his heart upon the graces which the Holy Virgin had vouchsafed to him, and sought within his mind for any act of his which might have obtained from her so signal a favor. His examination induced him to devote himself by a vow of perpetual chastity to the Mother of our Lord, out of gratitude for the precious gift which she had vouchsafed him. Shortly after, a circumstance occurred, in which our inexperienced novice was on the point of being deceived by a false idea of piety.

A traveller, by birth a Moor, and in religion a Mahometan, of whom there were many at that time in the kingdoms of Valencia and Arragon, overtook Ignatius, and rode onwards in his company. Learning that a pilgrimage to the Virgin of Montserrat was the object of his journey, the

Moor began a conversation with him, concerning the Mother of God, which very soon degenerated into a dispute. With bold impiety, the Moor denied that after the birth of the Redeemer, she had remained as before, a holy and immaculate Virgin. The Saint endeavored to convince him of his error, and the tender devotion which he bore to Mary, furnished him with arguments and proofs, all of which the Mussulman turned into derision, accusing our holy Church of puerile credulity; until, at length, wearied of the conversation, or wishing to escape further discussion with Ignatius, he angrily spurred up his mule, and without taking leave of his companion, rode off at full gallop. This contemptuous rudeness, together with the impiety of the Moor, awakened the wrath of Ignatius. Zeal and anger were mingled together in his heart. Ought he not to avenge by the slaughter of the Saracen, this insult offered to the Holy Mother of God? He, vowed to the service of Christ, was he not bound to defend the honor of His Mother? But on the other hand, did not an inward voice whisper to him that the punishment of the guilty was in the hands of justice, and that all private vengeance was unbefitting a Christian? From this strange perplexity, Ignatius delivered himself in a manner truly characteristic of the age in which he lived; that is to say, he resolved to refer the decision to chance, or rather, as he thought, to Heaven itself. Having arrived at a part of the road, from whence a stony and steep path led to the mountain, whilst the road itself, continuing wide and smooth, led to a large village about fifty paces further on, Ignatius laid the bridle on his horse's neck, and resolved that if the animal followed the road taken by the Moor, he would force him to retract his impious words, or would punish him by taking his life. He believed that by this means, he conciliated his zeal with the secret voice of

his conscience ; but the Lord, touched with compassion for his ignorance, which as yet prevented him from distinguishing the feelings of the Christian from the chivalrous spirit of the Knight, ordained, that contrary to all probability, his steed should leave the broad and smooth road leading to the inn, where the Moor had already arrived, and climb the rocky mountain path.

Having arrived at a village lying at the foot of the mountain, Ignatius purchased the habit of a pilgrim, which he resolved to wear henceforward. It consisted of a tunic of coarse cloth, fastened by a girdle of rope ; sandals, and a staff, all which he placed upon his horse.

✓ The famous monastery of Montserrat, and the miraculous image of the Mother of God, visited by pilgrims from all parts of the world, are intrusted to the care of the Benedictine Fathers. The observance of their institute is maintained there in full vigor, and the holiness of the venerable inmates, is in perfect keeping with the sanctity of the place.

✓ The first thing which occupied Ignatius upon his arrival, was his preparation for a general confession, which he wrote down with extreme care. There lived at that time, amongst the Religious of Montserrat, a Frenchman, named John Channonés, formerly Vicar General of Mirepoix, who had at first gone there solely through devotion to the Blessed Virgin. But soon, edified by the perfectly innocent and holy life led by the monks, he remained amongst them, and embraced the rule of St. Benedict. From the age of thirty, when he entered, to that of eighty-eight, when he died, he never relaxed from his first fervor. In youth and in age, in sickness as in health, he always observed the most severe abstinence, and invariably gave the third of his allotted portion to the poor. He wore a hair shirt reaching to the knees, took only the most indispensable repose, and passed the greatest part

of each night in prayer, either in the choir or in his cell. It pleased God to try his patience, by prolonged and grievous infirmities, especially towards the close of his life, at that age which is of itself so great a burden. The resignation, obedience and humility of this holy Religious, shone with so bright a lustre, that his life became a model for the monks of other establishments of the same Order; and thanks to his powerful example, they returned to a stricter observance of their rule.

At the time when Ignatius presented himself at Montserrat, it was the office of Chanones to administer the Holy Communion to the pilgrims. It was therefore to him that Ignatius made his general confession, which he did with so much exactness and care, and so often interrupted by tears and sobs, that three whole days were employed in making it. His thoughts, feelings and projects were all revealed to the man of God, who, in return, communicated to his penitent the most precious treasures of the spiritual life.

Ignatius now desirous to appear externally, as he already was internally, a new man, went out towards nightfall, in search of a beggar, upon whom he might bestow his clothing; and having divested himself entirely of his worldly garments, assumed the sack of the penitent with its cord girdle; and then with a staff in his hand, returned to the Church. He now resolved to apply to a spiritual purpose, a custom of which he had heard formerly read in profane romances. Before girding on their swords, the knights used to pass a whole night in the performance of idle ceremonies, which was called the *Vigil of the Armor*. Ignatius therefore resolved to pass the night preceding the festival of the Annunciation, in watching and prayer, standing or kneeling at the foot of the Altar of Our Lady of Montserrat.* At the dawn of day the

* I cannot entirely agree with Father Bartoli here, as to the in-

penitent hung up his sword and poniard on a pillar of the Altar, piously received the Holy Communion, made a present of his horse to the Monastery, and set out very early in order to avoid recognition, as the solemnity of the day, and the sanctity of the place, were sure to attract a number of pilgrims. In after days, the memory of this noble and touching vigil was held sacred there, and shone like a beacon light before the faithful, who crowded thither from all parts of the world. As a mark of respect to the holy knight, an abbot of Monsterrat caused the following words to be engraved upon a slab of marble placed near the altar.* "In this place Ignatius de Loyola, mingling his tears and prayers, consecrated himself to God and the Holy Virgin." It was here that, clothed in sackcloth, as with his spiritual weapons, he watched a whole night. It was from hence that he

tentions which he attributes to St. Ignatius. The Vigil of the Armor had nothing profane in it, but was, on the contrary, stamped with a religious character. The candidate passed the night in the Church; fasting, praying and watching, in order to draw down the blessing of Heaven upon his new career, to obtain strength to vanquish his passions, and to perform the good actions which, as a right, were required from him. In the fifteenth century, chivalry was but a shadow of the great institution of the middle ages; but it appears to me very probable that the saint wished to recall the vigil in its primitive simplicity. To whoever has meditated upon the life of Ignatius, upon his *Spiritual Exercises*, and on the organization given to the Society of Jesus, nothing is clearer in the life, nor more manifest in the character of the Holy Founder, than this remembrance of the days of chivalry. He also had to perform an *arduous and glorious enterprise against the giants*, those of the sixteenth century, equally to be dreaded, though in another sense.—*Note from the French translator.*

* Ignatius à Loyola hic, multâ prece fletuque, Deo se Virginique devovit. Hic, tanquam armis Spiritualibus, sacco se muniens, pernecavit. Hinc ad societatem Jesu fundandam prodiit, anno 1522. F. Laurentius Nieto, Abbas, dicavit anno 1603.

departed to found the Society of Jesus, in the year of grace, 1522. This stone has been consecrated by the Abbot F. Laurentius Nieto, in 1603."

And now, having become poor for Jesus Christ's sake, Ignatius walked along, his heart overflowing with holy joy, at seeing himself clad in that garb so despicable in the eyes of the world, and yet which at the same time proved his contempt for it. He had hardly proceeded three miles, when he was overtaken by an officer of justice, who had been dispatched to inquire from him whether it was true that he had given his clothes to a beggar; as one had declared upon oath that he had received these garments from him, but not being believed, was imprisoned until further information was taken. Ignatius, touched with compassion, instantly reassured the officer as to the truth of the poor man's assertion; but no importunities could extract from him his motive for this extraordinary act of charity. The officer then left him, and went on his way, pondering within himself upon the rare virtue of this holy pilgrim; whilst Ignatius continued his journey, mortified and distressed at having been the means of exposing the poor man whose misery he had relieved, to these shameful suspicions, and even of endangering his life.

CHAPTER III.

Hard and humble life which Ignatius passes at Manresa in a hospital—Austerities which he practises in a cavern near that city—Fresh temptations assail the solitary of Manresa—His physical strength prostrated by a fever which reduces him to the point of death.

WHEN from the heights of Montserrat which look down upon the populous and opulent city of Barcelona, the traveller descends into the valley of Llobregat, and journeys northwards, he proceeds for some time along the bed of the river, without encountering any obstacles; but after ascending a few leagues, arrives at a small and turbulent stream. This is the Cardinero, upon the banks of which Manresa is situated. Perhaps no more than five hundred families reside there, yet Manresa is full of recollections. There Ignatius by wonderful acts of penance, climbed the rugged path of sanctity. A few steps outside of the town, was a hospital, for invalids and beggars, with a church dedicated to St. Lucy, and the Apostle St. Thomas. Thither Ignatius directed his steps, not so much in search of an asylum, as in hopes of finding the means of satisfying his religious zeal, as well as his ardent thirst for mortification and penance. He began by depriving himself of all that could afford either pleasure or repose to his body. The short sleep which at night he snatched from devotion, was taken stretched out upon the bare ground, a stone or a log of wood serving for his pillow; and this during the utmost rigor of winter, and when utterly ex-

hausted by maceration. The rest of the night he passed in prayer, or in penitential exercises, using a discipline of iron chains; for upon these points, Ignatius listened only to the ardent fervor of his heart. Seven hours of prayer upon his knees, attendance at Mass, and at the other offices of the Church, were his usual occupations. He fasted daily, and on Sunday, upon which day he partook with holy joy of the food of Angels, he added to what he called his dinner, a few herbs, mingling ashes or earth with them, in order to destroy their flavor. The rest of the week his daily food consisted of one small piece of hard black bread, with a glass of water. To the rude and coarse gown which he wore, he added a hair shirt, and a chain around his loins. Sometimes when visiting Our Lady of Villadordis, near Manresa, he exchanged this iron girdle, for a band woven by his own hands of a certain prickly herb, which pierced the flesh; and this band is still preserved at Villadordis with extreme veneration. To these external crosses, he added the internal discipline of constant, absolute, and rigorous self-denial. To root up every fibre of that pride, ambition and love of glory, which formed the basis of his character, was now the constant object of his endeavors. He therefore imposed upon himself one inviolable law: to fly from all to which his natural inclinations prompted him, and to seek for every thing which was repugnant to his nature. His principal object, then, was to find means of rendering himself contemptible in the eyes of men, to seek every opportunity of mortification and abasement, thus to crucify his proud feelings, and to humble his ambitious heart. That part of the day which he did not devote to prayer, he employed in thus mortifying all his natural feelings; especially by serving the poor and sick in the hospital. Amongst these, the most revolting were always those whom he loved best. To render them the lowest offices, to wash

them, to carry them in his arms, to dress and even to press his lips to their sores; all became for him a service of love, and a cause of joy. When leaving the hospital, he returned to the town to beg, he frequently received more insults than alms. The children especially would follow him with scornful hisses, and jeeringly call him *Father Sack*.

And although when better known, he became universally respected and venerated, yet even then, there was one man noted throughout the city for his bad conduct, who never ceased to attribute the coarse clothing and humility of Ignatius to hypocrisy. When Ignatius entered Manresa, this man never failed to place himself in his way, to caricature his gait and gestures, to harass him with offensive jeers and grimaces; or when tired of these coarse jests, to pour forth a torrent of insults and abuse of his character. Every day these scenes were repeated; and we may imagine how severe was that trial for the patience of our penitent, so fiery in his nature, and but now so bold a soldier by profession. His indignation might have suddenly awakened, and prompted him to revenge these insults; and such doubtless was the design of the evil spirit. But this species of wrath was not only lulled to sleep within the breast of Ignatius—it was wholly annihilated. At the altar of Montserrat, he had hung up along with his armor, every feeling of resentment and revenge. The volcano was extinguished, and no burning hatred could ever again find lodging within his purified soul.

With an alms of some few pieces of bread (which he generally repaid to his benefactors by giving them spiritual aid, and wholesome counsels), he returned to the hospital, and reserving to himself the worst portion of the food which he had received, divided the remainder amongst those who were poorest and most infirm. By a refinement of humility

and self-abasement, he even went so far as to imitate the rough and ignoble manners of those amongst whom he resided, that every one might believe him to have been born in the humble station which he had chosen through virtue and self-denial. About this time he had to repulse a terrible assault, and one day it seemed to him as if an inward voice said to him :

“ Why thus pass beyond all reasonable limits ? Heaven itself must disapprove of thy conduct ; for with what eye can it behold a vile and degraded being, instead of a holy and illustrious knight ? How much more glory would accrue to God, how much more sublime would be thine own virtue, hadst thou lived a saint in the midst of courts, rather than a beggar in an hospital ! How would the nobles of the land have imitated thee ! whilst now the very children turn thee into ridicule. Hast thou more at heart to obtain contempt for thyself than honor for God, and the conversion of many souls ? Did Heaven change thy heart for this, that thou mightest bury thy talents in this receptacle of misery, and bring odium upon sanctity by thy repulsive austerity ? If honors do no longer please thee, and thou wouldst live in obscurity, yet by what right dost thou expose to the insults of a vile populace, the honor of thy family, purchased by thy noble forefathers, at the price of their toils and their blood ? ”

For a moment this revolt of nature was fearful ; and the coarseness of his garments and food, the disgusting filth, and the repulsive manners of the patients, inspired the Saint with horror. But suddenly resolving to conquer at one blow, both hell which attacked and nature which betrayed him, he ran into the midst of the most squalid and repulsive of these poor creatures, and embracing them publicly, remained amongst them, until he had wholly triumphed over his re-

pugnance, and vanquished the temptation which assailed him.

This sojourn in the hospital thus afforded Ignatius numerous opportunities of perfecting himself in virtue, and of acquiring new merits; but because it was an obstacle to his entire union with God, and to that austere mortification to which his religious fervor inclined him, he now began to look about for some solitary and hidden retreat, where he might dwell beneath the eye of God alone, and satisfy his ardent thirst for penance. At the foot of a hill not far distant from Manresa he discovered a cave, hollowed out in the living rock, which in its gloomy aspect bore an exact resemblance to a sepulchre; yet it was surrounded by a valley of admirable beauty, which the peasants called *the Vale of Paradise*. Not far from thence flowed the Cardenero with its limpid waters; opposite was a wide road, between which and the cavern stood a stone cross, before which Ignatius used to perform his pious stations.

The cavern is thirty paces long, ten wide, and as many in height. On the side which looks towards Montserrat, in a fissure of the rock, a kind of loophole has been cut, through which the church of Our Lady is visible; but on all the other sides the deepest obscurity reigns, and the walls as well as the vault are covered with pointed stones and fragments of rocks. Few persons knew that this cavern existed, and none ever visited it. To Ignatius it appeared a dwelling precisely adapted to his projects. After having cut a narrow path through the wild briars which concealed its entrance, he took up his residence within the cave, and in that abode where solitude, silence, and gloomy horror seemed to invite the soul to penitence, he redoubled his habitual austerities; watched whole nights, fasted several days continuously without taking the slightest nourishment;

and added severe and even bloody discipline, by striking his breast with a hard and sharp stone.

All these severities so exhausted his strength, that his life seemed a perpetual miracle. His stomach being totally destroyed by them, he suffered cruel pains; he frequently lay senseless, and more than once was found nearly dying, without heat or motion. Having gone one day to Villador-dis, to pray in a chapel, he fell into a fainting fit, in which he lay for several days; and when he recovered from this, his weakness was such that he seemed at the point of death. Some pious women brought him food, and he was enabled, though with difficulty, to reach the hospital.

New temptations now assailed the solitary of Manresa, but new efforts conquered them. His physical strength soon gave way under the severity of a fever, which reduced him to the last extremity. In this terrible crisis, vanity would once more play her part: "Why should he regret death? (such was the thought which flitted over the mind of Ignatius.) Did he not die a saint? His penance, his hair shirt, his iron girdle, his weeping, his watching—were these no claims upon Heaven?"

Such were the images which, like vain phantoms, passed and repassed before the mind of the sick man, and by turns distressed or pleased him. There was a moment in which his moral agony greatly surpassed even his bodily sufferings and the anguish of approaching death. Then Ignatius resolutely summoned before him the gravest and most humiliating faults of his past life, and he demanded of himself what proportion there could be between the feeble efforts of a few months, and those crimes committed during a long series of years. He then prayed to God, entreating Him to grant him pardon for his offences, instead of a reward for his virtues. This was the moment of triumph; but such a deep

feeling of terror remained in his mind after this rude conflict, that he entreated the assistants, should the dreadful vision return, to repeat these words to him: "Ignatius, remember the sins of which thou art guilty, and the punishment which they deserve! Think not that Paradise is due to thee, nor forget that thou hast deserved hell!"

But a more dangerous trial yet awaited him, that of scruples. God permitted the demon to inspire him with a thousand doubts and a thousand fears, as to his confession at Montserrat, although made so carefully, and with such sincere contrition, until each of his actions appeared to him a serious sin; while, at the same time, all spiritual consolation was withdrawn from him. His heart dried up, his spirit filled with trouble and confusion, and preyed upon by a thousand perplexing thoughts, he no longer received that bright light which formerly filled his soul when in contemplation; and the more he endeavored to occupy himself with heavenly things, the stronger became the temptation. Days and nights succeeded one another and this horrible torture continued; neither tears nor prayers gave him any relief, until he became persuaded that God had abandoned him, and that he was lost without resource. Frightful abyss! whose depths can alone be sounded by those who have been mercifully withdrawn from it. The most severe and rigid penance gives as much consolation to the mind and heart as suffering to the body; but to love God, to serve Him fervently, to be filled with the most ardent desire of possessing Him, and yet to be persuaded that we displease Him, and that He rejects us; nay, that every one of our actions is an offence to Him—these torments can be compared to no others, unless it be to those of hell itself!

The sad condition of Ignatius touched the Dominicans, who received him into their house. But instead of finding

any relief there, he fell into such a state of gloomy melancholy, that at times the horrible thought would occur to him of dashing himself from the window of his cell. Then he would shed torrents of tears, and in a loud voice conjure the Lord to send him some assistance from heaven, since upon earth he could find none. In this extremity he recalled to mind the story of a holy man, who, having long and uselessly prayed to God for a favor which he ardently desired, resolved to abstain from all food until he had obtained from the pity of the Lord what he could not hope for from his own merits. It struck Ignatius that he also might use this gentle violence towards God; for if the remedy was extreme, the malady which it was to be applied to was no less so; and God, like a tender father, would not permit his child to suffer longer, but would relieve his soul through compassion.

Thus, without diminishing any thing of his former austerities, he began his fast, and by a kind of miracle in his actual condition, continued eight whole days without swallowing even a mouthful of bread or drinking a drop of water; and he would have had the courage to prolong this fast, had not his confessor, on being informed of it, positively prohibited him from doing so. I know not whether it was to reward the faith which had induced Ignatius to have recourse to this strange method of moving the Lord to compassion; or the obedience which caused him to desist from it; but for a short period of time he recovered his peace of mind and serenity. He believed himself cured, when at the end of a few days, he again relapsed into those agonies of scruple and melancholy. Could a human heart endure more cruel sufferings?

From this fact we may learn an important lesson. God thus made known to Ignatius that we must not endeavor to force his will, as if our tears and necessities were unknown

to him, or as if he were insensible to them. The sole rule of our will ought to be the will of God; and then fervor or dryness, temptations or peace, trouble or serenity, all will be indifferent to us. To strengthen our courage by means of the affliction itself; to pray to the Lord for deliverance from it or for strength to bear it; and always to maintain ourselves in the humble attitude of resignation, that is our part.

This second trial, which was rather a lesson than a chastisement, was of short duration; and Ignatius regained a degree of interior joy and peace of mind surpassing all that he had formerly experienced. Destined to become one of the greatest masters of a spiritual life, it was well that he should learn by experience the lessons which he was one day to teach. Not one of these terrible vacillations between joy and grief, dryness and fervor, had been spared him. Thus we find him in after days writing to a nun of Barcelona: "God has two methods of instructing us. He employs the one himself, and permits the other. That which proceeds from him is the inward consolation which dissipates our trouble and fills the heart with love towards him. The intelligence which it brings along with it enlightens the mind, and fortifies it by revealing wonderful secrets to it, and by clearly showing it the paths which are to be followed or avoided in a spiritual life. The fervor which it sheds over the soul is such, that the most painful labors are converted into pleasures, the greatest fatigues into repose; all burdens become light, all austerities attractive; but these consolations are not permanent in the soul; they have their times and their seasons, according as it pleases God to grant or to withdraw them, always for our greater good.

"When the heavenly light vanishes, the demon introduces trouble and desolation into our hearts, in order to detach us from the service of God. We are frequently over-

whelmed with a feeling of the deepest melancholy, and we cannot discover its cause; prayer becomes dryness, meditation wearies us. Then come disheartening thoughts about ourselves. We see ourselves as it were repulsed and abandoned by God, separated from him, and it seems to us that nothing which we have hitherto done has pleased him; that nothing which we can do in future will be useful to us. Hence arise discouragement, distrust, and despair which represents all our faults as mortal, all our miseries as irremediable. But neither is this sad condition lasting, and we ought to make use of the one to enable us to support the other. Thus in time of consolation we must humble ourselves, and remember that we are in the days of interior desolation; and on the contrary, when despair overwhelms us, we ought to recollect that at the first rays of divine light, all that darkness will vanish, and our former peace of mind be restored."

Thus by means of his own trials, Ignatius was enabled to be useful to others. He possessed in the highest degree the art of curing scruples; and it may be well to transcribe here the rules which he wrote upon this subject.

1st. Many persons consider as a scruple the opinion which they form in regarding as sinful a thing which is not so. Thus certain persons would believe they had committed sacrilege, had they walked upon a cross accidentally formed by two straws. That is not a scruple, but a false and erroneous judgment.

2dly. A true scruple would consist in imagining that we had walked upon these straws through contempt of the cross, and then, notwithstanding the secret testimony of conscience, remaining in a state of trouble and perplexity, which the devil gives rise to and maintains.

3dly. Of these two sorts of scruples, we should always

hold the first in abhorrence, as a cause of error, full of dangers and snares. The second may, during a certain period, redound to the profit of the newly converted soul, and may render it pure, by withdrawing it from every thing which has even the shadow of sin, according to those words of St. Gregory: *Bonarum mentium est, ibi culpam agnoscere, ubi culpam non est.*

4th. The Enemy carefully examines the nature of the conscience which he attacks; whether it is strict and delicate, or easy and obtuse. The first he endeavors to contract and intimidate still more, until he has reduced it to a state of such intolerable anxiety, that it finishes by abandoning itself to despair, and is lost. Thus, when he observes that, far from consenting to the slightest fault, it flies even from the shadow of one, he will make it believe that sin exists where there really is none, such as, for example, in certain words, or in sudden and unguarded thoughts. With the obtuse conscience he acts very differently, and by familiarizing it gradually with slight faults, finishes by blinding it to the most grievous sins.

5th. He who wishes to advance in a spiritual life, ought to follow the path exactly contrary to that towards which the Enemy endeavors to attract him. If his conscience is too lax, he must endeavor to draw it closer; and, on the contrary, if too contracted, he must expand it. Between these two extremes, he may walk in peace and security.

6th. If we contemplate doing or saying any thing which is neither contrary to the usages of the Church nor to the orders of our superiors, which contributes to the glory of God, and yet which is suspicious in our eyes, as being tainted with vanity, we must raise our hearts to God; and if in his sight we judge the action to be useful, or even not contrary to his glory, we ought to follow our first impulse, saying, like St. Bernard: *Nec propter te capi, nec propter te finiam.*

CHAPTER IV.

Singular graces which Ignatius received at Manresa.

MEANWHILE; the graces which God bestowed upon Ignatius at Manresa, infinitely surpassed the extreme afflictions by which he had been pleased to try his patience; and here let us remark a wonderful analogy between the conduct of God and that of his faithful servant. Although Ignatius was well aware of the immense debt which he had contracted with God, in consequence of his former worldly life, he did not endeavor, by his severe mortifications at Manresa, to satisfy divine justice. He raised his thoughts still higher, and aspired solely to please God, and to honor him by offering up a holocaust of sufferings to the glory of his name. And thus, on His side, it seemed as if the Lord had forgotten that Ignatius had been a man of the world, and guilty of great faults. Even from the first, He shed abundant graces upon this his chosen servant, and raised him from the beginning to a height rarely attained by His most faithful and cherished followers, even after the greatest services and merits.

Thus upon one occasion the Saint confessed to Father Lainez, that one hour of prayer at Manresa had taught him more concerning spiritual things than he could have learned from the instructions of the wisest doctors. Yet it has been maintained that such a man could not have been the author of the *Spiritual Exercises*, and that he was too much of a

novice to have composed them. A strange mode of reasoning! as if the science that is of God should be measured by the time employed in studying it! as if all-powerful wisdom were not at the disposal of the great Teacher! In the divine school of Christ Jesus do we not frequently see the youth excel the aged man,—the beardless boy surpass in depth of knowledge the man whose hair has grown gray in the study of sacred science? Whence comes this anomaly? Where God is the master, a few lessons suffice, and the first has received the grace denied to the second. Sometimes a single ray of light, shining and disappearing like a flash of lightning, discovers a horizon of wonders to the soul, which absorbs its admiration during a long course of years.

Besides these particular graces, Ignatius was also favored with frequent visions. One day amongst others, whilst at prayer in the Church of Our Lady at Manresa, he saw with perfect clearness, the whole plan of the divine wisdom in the creation of the world. Again, during a procession, his spirit was ravished in God, and he was enabled to contemplate, under a form and by means of images adapted to the feeble intelligence of one who yet inhabits this earth, the profound mystery of the most Holy Trinity. This vision filled his heart with such celestial joy, that ever after, its mere remembrance made him shed abundant tears.

The very language of the Saint became impregnated with this marvellous vision; and although the depth of the mystery renders it almost unapproachable by mortal language, yet Ignatius found such luminous comparisons, such vivid terms in which to utter what his mind had conceived concerning it, that in each of his astonishing expressions, the source from whence they were drawn might be traced in all its purity.

Nor was this the only time in which the Holy Trinity

deigned to make itself known to the Saint in a sensible manner ; and even towards the close of his life, this divine favor was often vouchsafed to him. He had also the happiness of beholding the Infant Jesus in the Holy Sacrament of the altar ; and his mind being suddenly illumined with heavenly light, he clearly understood the manner in which our adorable Saviour remains under the form of the consecrated elements. For some time these visions had but one particular mystery in view ; but one day when praying at the foot of the cross of the Fort, upon the banks of the Cardenero, which flowed past his cave, he received, as it were, a cluster of similar graces. God placed before his eyes at that time, an immense treasure of supernatural objects, of which He gave him a clear and precise knowledge.

At length his mind received such admirable lights concerning the mysteries of faith, and his convictions thereby became so strengthened, that the total loss of all the holy books in the world would not have shaken them, while he would joyfully have given his life to defend the truths which they contained. Besides, Ignatius perceived these truths, not under a sensible form, but by means of a purely spiritual radiance, which sometimes fell even upon objects belonging to the material sciences, and which especially gave him one inestimable gift, that of discerning the minds of men. Nothing could equal the vivacity of these supernatural impressions. To the end of his existence, a single glance thrown back upon his past life at Manresa, sufficed to revive the emotions and to inflame the soul of the Saint with an ardor similar to that which he had experienced at the time of his residence there.

But to return to Manresa. The demon, irritated by the extraordinary favors of which Ignatius was the object, endeavored to render them suspicious to him, by uniting with

them certain visions which were merely illusive. He began by showing him a long luminous trace, resembling in its form a serpent spotted with fire, and adorned with the most brilliant colors, which placed itself above the cross of the Fort ; but this vision, however curious, had no useful object, and by that means betrayed its author ; besides, when it disappeared, the trouble in which it left the mind of Ignatius was sufficient to enable him to recognize the illusion. He despised it so thoroughly, that afterwards when it appeared to him, whether in Rome or in Paris, it was sufficient for him to raise his staff against the phantom to rid himself of it. It was also at Manresa that Ignatius fell into that wonderful ecstasy which kept him for eight whole days so completely absorbed in God, that he had all the appearance of a dead man ; and he would certainly have been buried, had not a slight and scarcely perceptible motion of the heart indicated that he still lived. This ecstasy took place in the hospital of St. Lucy, in a chamber which he had selected, because he could see from the window into the church, and because the poor went there to hear Mass. It began one Saturday evening, whilst they were chanting Complins, and till the following Saturday at the same hour he gave no signs of consciousness. . But the holy servant of God always kept silence upon the objects which had thus ravished his senses ; only when he returned to himself, like one awakening from a sweet and profound sleep, he cried out thrice with his eyes turned towards Heaven, " Oh Jesus ! oh Jesus ! " whilst his countenance expressed the transports of his soul, even more than his words. The most distinguished men of the Order, who had lived with the Saint, and had heard him speak of what happened to him at Manresa, have always believed that God then revealed to him what He destined him to do in the service of His Church, and traced for him the plan of

that Order, of which he was afterwards to be the Founder. When in later days he wrote his Constitutions, he would reply to those who asked him the reason of certain important points of the Institute, "I learned it at Manresa."

Notwithstanding such extraordinary favors, Ignatius remained as humble as before; he regarded himself as a novice in spiritual life, and rendered an exact account of his conscience to his Director, listening with docility to whatever counsels he thought proper to give him. Amongst his directors he counted the holy monk, Dom John Chanones of Montserrat, to whom he had made his general confession, and to whom he went from time to time, regarding him as the father of his soul, and laying bare his inmost heart before him. Although the holy old man fulfilled the part of teacher and director to Ignatius, yet in his heart he venerated him, and always spoke of him as a saint. He was often heard to say that Ignatius would be a pillar of the Church, and that the world would have in him an apostle, a successor of St. Paul, to announce the Gospel to barbarous and idolatrous nations. Such was Manresa for Ignatius; the holy school where, as he himself expressed it, he had learnt the rudiments of a spiritual life.

However, the report of his high rank in the world began to be spread abroad; it was asserted that he only concealed himself under these coarse garments, in order to remain unknown in the world, and that nothing but a spirit of humility and penitence could have transformed a noble knight into a beggar, and a brave soldier into a hermit. Pious people began to examine him more closely, and succeeded in discovering some of his excessive austerities, and even part of the graces which God so abundantly bestowed upon him. In a little while the admiration and respect which he inspired increased to the highest degree; and when he fell

ill, in consequence of those mental sufferings of which we have spoken, and which had reduced him to a state apparently verging upon consumption, a rich man named *Amigante* caused him to be transported from the monastery of the Dominicans to his house. From that time this man was called *Simon* and his wife *Martha*, because they had the happiness of assisting and receiving into their house this living image of the Saviour. This devotion to his person increased daily; and when he afterwards quitted Manresa, one of its inhabitants, much less occupied with his temporal interests than with the spiritual advantages which he derived from the counsels of Ignatius, abandoned his country and a lawsuit of the highest importance, and accompanied him. If he went to pray at the foot of some cross placed outside of the town, the people followed him at a certain distance, but if he began to discourse upon spiritual subjects, an immense crowd collected around him. When they saw him thus, his countenance glowing with fervor, mounted upon a rock, which is yet shown in front of the old hospital, all hearts were filled with contrition, and with the desire of doing penance. By those garments so coarse and so poor, by that hair formerly so cared for, now scattered and dishevelled, by that pale and emaciated face, by that chain tightly girding his loins, by these naked feet, by all these signs they recognized the Saint; but when he spoke, what power was in his words! what burning shafts seemed to dart from that glowing heart! And thus at every moment examples were seen of men who, enlightened by his private conversation, and by certain fundamental maxims which he had given them to meditate upon, renounced the world and assumed the monastic habit. These first proofs of the efficacy of certain truths in awakening the soul, and leading it to God, added to his own experience, since it was from a consideration of them that his heart had

become so entirely detached from worldly things, induced Ignatius to reduce, as it were to an art, the rules for a spiritual life. It was then that he composed that admirable book of Spiritual Exercises, dictated by an intelligence far superior to that of man, and truly written by the rays of an All-Divine light. These are the Exercises which gave to the Church the first children of St. Ignatius; these are the Exercises which have inspired them with that virtue, that spiritual strength, which rendered them capable of every undertaking which had for its object the salvation of souls. So long as the Society continues as it was at its birth, it will find its first spirit in this precious work; and should it ever be so unfortunate as to witness the extinction of that spirit, it is at this source alone that it could be rekindled. Let us then study the Spiritual Exercises in some detail.

CHAPTER V.

Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius.

THE Exercises of St. Ignatius are not only a series of pious reflections collected together in one book, from which each individual may learn how to commune humbly with his own heart, and to hold holy converse with God. Were they no more than this, they could not be offered as a new work, nor could they with propriety be called the *Exercises* of the Saint whose name they bear. The object which he proposed and attained, was to reduce the cure of the soul to an art, by basing upon certain principles of faith an exact and positive method, which, practised by the application of the means prescribed by him, insures almost infallible success. If we reflect seriously upon this, we shall find that this method differs from a simple consideration of the truths of religion, as much as a knowledge of the virtues of certain plants or minerals, differs from the art of medicine; which, by teaching us to understand the constitution of the human body, and the properties of certain substances tending to restore its equilibrium when injured by sickness, forms a body of precepts, by means of which our health may be restored or preserved.

Thus, long before St. Ignatius was born, men knew for what end God had created them; they knew the malice of sin, and that its punishment was hell; the necessity for the examination of the conscience, for confession, the mysteries

of the life of Christ, &c. But to reduce to an art the knowledge of our spiritual maladies; to discover the efficacy of certain considerations in remedying these maladies; to understand thoroughly the manner of applying these remedies; in short, to form as it were a code wherein the different means of purifying, consoling and fortifying the soul, should be re-united; by which it may be led first to a perfect disengagement from all worldly things, and then to an intimate union with God; this certainly did not exist, and in order that the reader may judge for himself, we shall now trace a sketch of these Exercises.

At the beginning, Ignatius places a meditation, which on account of its importance, has been styled *The Foundation of the Exercises*. First, God created every thing in this world for one particular end, which is, utility to man; let us then endeavor to discover for what end man himself has received being and life. Is it that he may become a powerful king, a great warrior, a rich merchant; that he may obtain a large portion of worldly goods, and nothing more? If he discovers positively that it is not so, but that on the contrary, he has been created by God to serve Him during this life, and after death to enjoy him eternally; must we not deduce this decided inference;—that man must endeavor to obtain the things of this world, only in so far as they may lead him towards the object of his creation? Moreover, as the means which lead us towards an object, have neither merit nor intrinsic value unless they conduct us to that object, there results by a new inference, that the measure of the esteem in which we ought to hold riches or poverty, honors or humiliation, health or sickness, &c., should be in proportion, not to the good or evil which they procure for us during this present life, but to the assistance or hindrance which they are to us in regard to that future and immortal life which is to

succeed it. When this truth at once so clear and important has been thoroughly meditated upon by a soul hitherto infirm and weakened by its wholly terrestrial desires and unruly affections, it begins to extricate itself from them; it even feels itself disposed to renounce more legitimate attachments, but which are yet too closely connected with the world. Then a new ray of light illumines it, and makes it view the world with a very different eye from that with which it beheld it, when reversing the eternal order of things, it employed all its intelligence in procuring earthly goods, the possession of which seemed to be its final aim, and from the attainment of which it hoped for unmingled happiness.

The consideration of this first truth has been so efficacious with an innumerable number of penitents, that on leaving the retreat where they had given themselves up to these reflections, they have found themselves new men.

Martin Olave, a learned doctor of the Sorbonne in Paris, said that one single hour of meditation upon this *Foundation of the Exercises*, had taught him more than long years of theological study. It was upon this same basis that Father Everard Mercurian, one of the first disciples of St. Ignatius, and his third successor in the generalship, established the whole conduct of his life; and he would often say from his own experience and that of many others, that the *Foundation of the Exercises* was alone sufficient to effect the most astonishing changes, by uprooting all earthly affections in our souls, and by exciting us to direct all our desires to God and to eternity.

Ignatius was so well aware of its virtue, that he endeavored to attract towards it the attention of all those whom he himself could not direct in this meditation. A prelate, in a letter which he wrote to the Saint, showed himself deeply afflicted by the crosses which he met with. Ignatius answered him:—

“The affairs of this present life, my Lord, are in reality fortunate only inasmuch as they serve us for that which must follow it, and which will be eternal. Misfortunes, by illuminating the soul with celestial light, teach it to direct its contemplation to heavenly things, to love nothing but Jesus, to follow him upon His cross, and to die with him there, in order to rise again as he did.”

Hardly more than one hour's reflection upon what is called the Foundation of the Exercises, is now demanded of beginners; but their author did not fix the time which ought to be devoted to it; well aware that this time must be measured according to the disposition and necessities of the soul. It requires more effort to hew down an old tree whose branches are widely extended, than to root up a young shrub. We can easily conceive that an hour would be far from sufficient for one who had grown old in worldly wisdom; for the question is not only how we should acquire a speculative knowledge which will lead us to detest evil; we must above all things bring about a practical reform, often differing in the means as well as in the results. How shall we lead our will to form other desires, and to practise works repulsive to our nature, if our intelligence is not convinced that the new way is the only straight and sure path? Hence the name of *foundation* given to this meditation, thus inviting us to examine it thoroughly, and not to stop at the surface. A work truly important, since upon this foundation, the edifice of a new life is to be raised.

This first truth thoroughly examined in a general and profound sense, the question is how to make its immediate application. The mind is solicited to take the firm resolution of using earthly things henceforward, only as the means of attaining eternal happiness. For this purpose, the Exercises offer for our consideration the extreme disorder and

danger arising from a contrary line of conduct. We find the proof of this in our own life; the picture of which is naturally placed here. We survey it at our leisure; we recall to our mind the faults and errors which have separated us from our last end. When this view presents itself before our eyes in all its nudity, the Saint offers along with it a meditation upon the enormity of sin, and upon the punishments which await it in hell. The effects of both become palpable, when we behold the Angels irrevocably condemned, the fall of Adam, and the damnation of so many sinners, who suffer the just punishment of their crimes.

These considerations already begin to disengage the soul from those vicious affections, which after weakening, finish by depriving it of life, making it lose the grace of God; but as they are rooted in our souls, and difficult to eradicate, these reflections are presented to us in different ways all tending to destroy them. Such is the employment of the first week.

In the second, we begin to meditate upon the reign of Jesus Christ in our souls; that is to say, upon the solemn appeal which he makes to all mankind, as a king to his subjects, to engage them in his service. His conditions contain advantages of a very different nature from those proposed by temporal sovereigns; since he promises to treat his servants as himself; and that they shall have nothing to do or to suffer of which he has not given them the example. This consideration is one of extreme efficacy, leading us by gentle violence to the firm resolution of following and imitating our Saviour. From this general resolution we descend to the details, of which the models are to be found in the life of Jesus Christ, in meditations upon the incarnation, the birth of Christ, and the other portions of His divine humanity. Here we must especially dread the snares of him who re-

doubles his attacks against the soul which he sees upon the point of attaching itself to God. We must then fortify this soul, that it may resist all dangerous assaults.

Such ought to be the effect of that admirable meditation which St. Ignatius has entitled, "*Of the Two Standards*," which has peopled so many monasteries. On one side is represented Christ, and on the other Lucifer, who both recruit soldiers, and set forth the advantages of their respective banners. The enjoyments offered by Lucifer show themselves as they are—vain, fugitive, and followed by eternal remorse; the demon cannot be faithful to his promises. Christ, on the contrary, in exchange for a short period of suffering, assures us of happiness without end and without limits. Our courage revives, and the soul repulses the promises of the world, in order to follow Jesus Christ, and cleave to him alone. All these preparations were necessary, that we might derive benefit from the last Meditation of the second week, which has for its object the state of life which we are to choose for the future. This is the most important question of all, since it decides upon our eternal as well as our temporal interests; and therefore St. Ignatius has based it upon such wise regulations, that he who conforms to them can never have cause to repent of having made a bad choice. ✓

We should first consider the nature of our vocation, and then the time and manner of fulfilling it. As to its nature, it must, in the first place, be good, or at least it must not be bad. Moreover, there are those which are unchangeable, and there are those which are changeable. When we are already bound by the first, we cannot go back to make any examination of it, although we should have entered into it through human, or even through bad motives. Our only object must be to labor, in order to acquire perfection in our present condition, be it the priesthood or marriage. Neither

ought mutable vocations which are good in themselves, to be again examined, unless we desire to leave them, in order to enter upon a path of greater perfection.

There are three periods for choosing a vocation.

1st. At certain moments, God acts upon our will by such abundant graces, that we can retain no doubt as to the source of our inspirations, as it was in regard to St. Matthew and St. Paul.

2d. Without receiving so deep an impression, or acquiring such entire certainty, we feel, by the interior emotions of our heart, a kind of intimate conviction which enables us to decide.

3d. In fine, the mind is sometimes so free from all preference, or from all which might deceive the judgment or obscure the light of religious truth, that it calmly resolves upon that which it clearly discerns to be preferable.

As to the manner of executing what we have resolved upon, we must first bring back before our eyes the condition, employment, and object of the choice which we are about to make. Then must be renewed a labor which we have already gone through; the endeavor to wish for nothing but with a view to our eternal welfare, and to become indifferent to all that is not God, as at the beginning of the Exercises. When our mind has attained this holy state, we may pray to the Lord to enlighten us and to lead us back to do his holy will, if we have had the misfortune to deviate from it. Then, with steadfast eyes, beholding on the one side eternity, and on the other the career which we desire to embrace, we come to a decision, without hesitation, without reservation; offering up our firm and irrevocable resolution to the Lord. There is also another manner of resolving this important question. Let us consider what advice we should give in a similar case to our best friend; or, again, how we should wish to have decided, when upon our death-bed.

It is thus that Ignatius understands the examination of our vocation, when our object is to discover what it truly is. Thus the second week is employed in fixing the choice of those who are still entirely free. We observe that the Exercises are linked together, and derive their strength from each other, so as finally to lead to their proper object, namely, to bring the heart which leaves its former dangerous situation to a perfect union with God. To this the reflections of the two last weeks constantly tend. In the one, we give ourselves up to meditation on the Passion, which teaches us to love the Lord and to follow Him in the path of suffering; on the other, we meditate on the glorious mysteries, which give rise to softer affections, and which, by fixing our contemplation upon the goodness of God, and on His other perfections, inflames the soul with love, and renews its desire of union with Him. ✓

The Exercises of St. Ignatius, therefore, exactly fulfil what they promise; that is, they prepare the soul to break through the trammels of all disorderly and earthly affections, and to discover the will of God as to the state of life which may conduct it to salvation. So wisely do they apply the means to the end proposed, that when they are faithfully followed, it may be considered almost miraculous should no fruit be obtained from them. Thus Ignatius, who had experienced their effects upon himself, like Noah when he drank of the juice of the vine which he had planted, requested all those whom he wished to lead, either to change their lives, or to a complete union with God, merely to devote some days of retreat to the considerations which he would present to them. Few can resist this trial, whether they be men whose lives are disorderly and irregular, or those whose virtue is but weak and vacillating. ✓

The Exercises are not only a remote preparation for

serving God ; but they inflame the heart by kindling within us an ardent love for our divine Saviour. Thus a furious persecution against the Christians broke out in Japan. Suddenly they were seen hastening in crowds to the Fathers of the Society, and begging for the holy armor of the Spiritual Exercises. Nor was their pious confidence deceived ; for by the invincible patience, the wonderful joy, which these generous champions displayed during all the various tortures inflicted upon them : death in every horrible shape ; by slow fire, by boiling water, by freezing, by crucifixion ; it was easy to perceive what strength they had imbibed from that source.

V The priesthood especially derive a degree of energy from the practice of the Spiritual Exercises, which is made manifest by its lively and constant action upon the minds of others. Father Mercurian, a general of the Order, declared that the book of Exercises, thoroughly studied, might suffice as a library for preachers, and a guide for spiritual teachers. Egidius Foscarì, one of the three theologians specially charged with the examination of the work, when raised to the bishopric of Modena, immediately desired that the Exercises of the first week should be used throughout his diocese. The results were wonderful, both in Modena itself and in a multitude of other cities. It is true that the preacher was Father Landini, a man at once scientific and practical, and whose spiritual master had been St. Ignatius himself.

Indeed, it has been remarked that the profit derived from the Exercises greatly depends upon those who direct them. Amongst many men imbued with his spirit, and versed in the guidance of souls, the holy founder counted very few whom he considered capable of conducting them according to his plan. At their head stood Peter Faber ; then came Alphonsus Salmeron, Francis Villanova, Jerome Domenecchi,

and Francis Strada. The reason of this difficulty is very simple. These Exercises are remedies for the soul; but remedies must vary according to its temperament or its infirmities. Thus the wisdom of the Saint saw the necessity of some additions, serving as an appendix to the principal work. They are rules for the master and for the scholar, for the director and for the directed. Their definitive success frequently depends upon the exactness with which they are followed. When we deviate from them we follow the caprice of our individual will, but not the Exercises of St. Ignatius. Sometimes from vanity they have been parodied or only modified; but the result has invariably been that the more the order established has been deviated from, the less has been the good effected; until nothing has remained but the remembrance of great presumption or the mortification resulting from useless efforts.

The Saint himself adhered in a surprising manner to all the details; he would retrench nothing, he would add nothing. It appeared indeed as if they were not his property; as if they were not the workmanship of his own brain, but instructions received from a superior Being. His biographers give numerous examples of this. The first Fathers who followed the Exercises, did so with the greatest strictness. "Father Ignatius," said Gonzales on this subject, "conversed with me one day about the Exercises imposed upon the Abbé Martinenghi. There is a great falling off," said he, "from our former severity. Then no one failed to fast several days in succession, without being urged to do so. Now, although the former practices are not blamed, one whole day's fasting is hereby permitted." The shortest fast amongst the first Fathers, lasted three days. Simon Rodriguez alone was exempted, on account of his feeble health and hard labors. During six whole days, Father Faber took no nourishment.

As for the astonishing austerities of St. Francis Xavier, they will be related elsewhere.

The practices prescribed while the Exercises last, are many and various. He who begins ought to perform them with perfect generosity of heart, and without wishing to restrain the operations of God in his soul. Let one sole disposition animate him; that of abandoning himself entirely to the influence of the Holy Spirit; that of answering to every call whatsoever it may be; *Ecce adsum*. Then let him lay down all worldly thoughts at the door of his cell, and apply himself exclusively to the meditation of the present day, without seeking to know that of the day following. The holiest objects even ought to be set aside in favor of this one meditation; for the mind is easily distracted, and would otherwise return weakened to the principal subject of its actual meditation.

The employment of our time will be in harmony with the object of the meditation, and therefore solitude, silence, and penance accompany the Exercises of the first week, the rules of prudence and discretion being nevertheless observed. We retire to rest, our thoughts occupied with the meditation which we shall make during the night; and at the moment of awaking, it is the first object which ought to occupy our minds. We afterwards begin our prayers, either prostrated with our faces to the ground, or kneeling, or standing, as we may deem most expedient. If God speaks to the heart upon one point, we must not pass on to another, before having thoroughly examined the first, and being impressed by it. If weariness and sadness overwhelm us, we must not abridge a single moment of the time destined for the meditation, but rather add to it, thus conquering ourselves, and awaiting *in silentio et spe*, the unction of divine grace. If, on the contrary, we receive a superabundance of consolations and of spiritual delight, we

must especially beware at these moments, of making perpetual vows, or such as would oblige us to change our condition. Finally, we must give our director an exact account of what passes in our soul, be it good, or be it evil; in order that he may apply the remedies best suited for the promotion of grace, and may act with wisdom, according to our circumstances and personal disposition.

CHAPTER VI.

Marvellous fruits of the Exercises—They are denounced before the Ecclesiastical Tribunals—Condemned in Paris by the Sorbonne—Examined at Rome, and approved of by Paul III.—They become the foundation and basis of the religious edifice founded by St. Ignatius.

A CALVINIST, named Gabriel Lermeo, felt at once astonished and indignant on seeing the strange changes effected by the Jesuits. Men held in the highest esteem on account of their station, riches or merit, suddenly abandoned the world and its hopes, to consecrate themselves to God in the most severe Orders. Lermeo could not comprehend this mystery, and he wrote the following words:—

“ By what fascination do the Jesuits turn the heads of men who come and shut themselves up in certain cells, placed outside their houses, and arranged so as to produce dark night in the middle of the brightest day? It is there that the priests keep those unfortunate men, in a state of sombre melancholy, of perpetual horror! Woe to him who falls into this snare! for like those unfortunate beings who descended into the cave of Trophonius, he may bid adieu to joy and happiness. He enters full of wisdom; he comes out mad; dead to all earthly things, and living only for tears and sadness. Once shut up in this place, the patient can neither see, nor be seen. Meanwhile, one of these magicians brings him, twice a day, a *charm* traced upon a paper; the longer

he meditates, the more his fascination increases; he weeps, he cries, he roars, as if the flames of hell were devouring him; he swears to live henceforth as if each day he were to die, and no longer to hold to the earth but by an imperceptible point. When at length he leaves this retreat, he looks at the world with astonishment, as if he entered it for the first time. He no longer views it with the same eyes; its aspect is changed, and it seems nothing but a raging sea, upon which it is as easy to be wrecked, as it is necessary to navigate. At each instant the poor wretch fears to run aground, or to lose his way; and in hopes of reaching the port in safety, he finishes by throwing himself into a monastery.

“If there should happen to be some weak head amongst the Jesuits, they work it up and knead it over, until they have fashioned it to their will. He that is cowardly and soft, they render firm, and hard to himself; he who spurned all obedience, becomes submissive; the idle are spurred forward, the weak are supported.”

A magnificent eulogium of the Exercises, hidden under the form of a satire, where fable is mingled with truth. What power, what efficacy must be contained in those principles, laid down and developed by a vigorous mind, when they extort such confessions from an enemy! Thanks to this sole means, the companions of Ignatius worked real prodigies in those calamitous times when the heresy of Luther placed the Catholic faith in so much peril. The profound learning of those eminent men began by attracting the esteem of those who, from their high station, exercise so much influence over public morals; but the gentle holiness of their manners soon gained the hearts of those personages, and induced them to retire for some days from all intercourse with the world, in order to occupy themselves solely with their eternal interests. It is with a feeling of pious and eager curiosity that we read

the proofs of this in the correspondence which Father Faber addressed to St. Ignatius from Mayence, from Spires, from the Diet of Worms, from that of Ratisbonne, and from so many parts of Upper and Lower Germany.

Fathers James Lainez, Alphonsus Salmeron and Claudius le Jay, produced the same effects at Trent, where the flower of Christendom was assembled. They figured in the council as theologians, and attracted equal admiration in general assemblies by their eloquence, as in private conferences by their learning. What may be considered still more wonderful, is the fact of their bringing over a great number of the members of the council to the practice of those Exercises whence they themselves had derived the spirit which animated them. It pleased God to bless this work so manifestly, that the three Fathers being insufficient for the number of postulants for the Exercises, were obliged to employ as directors those who had just become their followers.

Thus, without leaving Trent, the Society became known throughout every part of Europe which had representatives there. The Council was hardly terminated, when the bishops, not confining their approbation to mere sterile expressions of opinion, sought to attract them into their respective dioceses, as men who held in their hands an instrument which it had pleased God to render eminently useful for the reformation of morals. Men eminent both by the dignity of their sees and the splendor of their learning, might then be seen humbly following the Exercises of Ignatius, discovering in them, by the divine light of the Gospel, the most precious and most important truths, and bowed down with confusion, acknowledging in the presence of God, their profound ignorance of those things in the study of which they had consumed the long years of a laborious existence.

Amongst these men may be distinguished Father Peter

Ortiz, agent from Charles V. to the Holy See, who had been for many years one of the most celebrated doctors of the University of Paris, and who was greatly struck with the benefit derived from the Exercises by Cardinal Contarini. That prelate esteemed them so highly, that he copied them out in his own hand, and bequeathed them to his descendants as the most precious part of their inheritance. Ortiz, therefore, wished to make a trial of their virtue upon himself; and in order to break entirely with the outer world, so that no earthly thoughts should mingle with his devotions, he retired with St. Ignatius into the famous monastery of Monte-Cassino. No sooner had he entered that solitude and begun the meditation, called the Foundation of the Exercises, than it seemed to him as if he had entered into a new world; and during the whole forty days which he devoted to this course of meditation, he felt as if he were no longer upon earth. When he had finished, he found that two contrary effects had been produced upon his mind—extreme joy and extreme grief; joy at having learned in forty days this new philosophy, the existence of which he had not suspected during so many years of study; and grief that this knowledge had been acquired at so late a period of life as to render it very difficult for him to put it in practise; that is, to abandon the business and cares of life in which he was engaged, and to attach himself to Jesus Christ and the Cross, in the humble poverty of the religious state.

Nor ought these apparently wonderful effects produced by this little book to surprise us, for the Exercises will be found to contain instructions which are entirely new, even to men of the greatest capacity and learning, so great is the difference between those practical truths which the soul imbibes at the very fountain-head of religion, and those speculative principles which only strike the intelligence.

“The philosophy of Father Villanova, or that of the Exercises,” said a celebrated Spanish theologian, “is worth that of all the doctors put together.” No doubt, it is a sublime philosophy which leads the human heart to live for God alone, and to be kindled at the very focus of charity. Why then, as some noble minds have asked, should there not be a school of Christian mysticism, a course of instruction for the inner life, as well as classes of scholastic theology in the universities? But can the science of the heart be learnt in public, and does not the voice of the Lord most frequently speak to it in silence?

We have here come in contact with one of the most powerful and most fruitful agents of the Catholic reformation in the sixteenth century. Whether we consider it as an instrument of Divine Providence, or a simple phenomenon of the human mind, it is certain that the effect produced by this book is one of the most curious facts of modern history. Wherever it appeared, it exercised an almost irresistible influence over the minds of men. To the doctors of law succeeded the teachers of a spiritual life; men such as Louis de Blois, Fray Luis of Grenada, John of Avila, St. Charles Borromeo and others, whose praises of the work are inexhaustible. Blossius wrote from Louvain on the 3d of November, in the year 1550, to Father Adriani: “I think that Father Ursinaro must have already informed you that he has made our young men follow the Exercises. Would to God that we could have done so twenty years sooner! the old men would have required them less. Let us praise the Lord for having taught you this method of meditation, which I doubt not will be for His glory, and for the salvation of souls.”

✓ The holy archbishop of Milan believed that by the assistance of the Exercises he laid the first foundations of a

spiritual life. He enjoined upon all his seminarists to follow the practices of at least the first week, before presenting themselves for holy orders. He himself found in this book the subjects of his constant meditation; and one day, when the Duke of Modena showed him his library, "I have one also," replied he, showing him the Exercises; "but it is small: it is contained in this volume, which has been more useful to me than all the books in the world." We ought to read in the authors of that period an account of the prodigious effects of which we speak. Meanwhile the pictures which we are about to present to the eyes of the reader will enable him to penetrate into the intimate movement of the Catholic reformation and of the religious life in the sixteenth century. Let us listen to the words of an eye-witness: "It is not only our Order which has acknowledged the astonishing efficacy of these holy Exercises; all the others publish the admirable effects which they have derived from them. The monasteries are re-peopled; the most ardent fervor and precise observance of the rules have been re-established there; while in the world, princes and priests, laics, whether young or old, the learned and the ignorant, all, after these holy practices, have become absolutely different men. After the meditation upon hell, some called aloud upon the madmen devoted to the world, to reflect upon the horrors of eternal reprobation; others go through the cities, striking their breasts, and publicly asking pardon for the scandal they have caused. Some are seen going to meet their enemies, and begging for a reconciliation; others shut themselves up in the hospitals and devote themselves to the service of the sick, or else burn the books of profane science which have so long occupied them, henceforth to study nothing but Jesus crucified. ✓

Teadilla, a city situated at the distance of a few miles

from Alcala, contains a monastery of Hieronomite monks. One of these, called Peter Arragona, a man highly reputed in his Order, was united in strict friendship with Father Francis Villanova, who was at that time engaged in founding at Alcala a new college of the Society, and who gradually led his friend to practise the Spiritual Exercises. Villanova belonged to the small number of those whom St. Ignatius considered particularly fitted to lead souls to God by this method; added to which, whose example was as instructive as his precepts, so that his services were eminent not only in Spain, but throughout the whole of Christendom.

The Exercises did not fail to produce their usual effect upon Father Peter Arragona. When he had concluded them he found himself a new man; and from that time his greatest desire was to make them known to and followed by others. He first addressed himself to the monks of the monastery of Teadilla; but nothing that he could say to them produced any effect. The old men rejected his proposal almost with contempt. It neither suited them nor the honor of their Order, to become in their old age the scholars of a young man still on the threshold of life. Had they not been doctors in their establishment for years? Father Arragona was not discouraged, and at length finished by conjuring them to judge of the Exercises by the effect which they should produce upon the only one in the monastery who had consented to make the trial. This was granted in the midst of the general raillery; for the person in question was a lay religious of noble birth, but of a temper so whimsical and ungovernable, that he appeared more like a soldier than a monk. Yet they thought themselves obliged to endure him, because he sustained their house by his fortune, the only merit which counterbalanced his defects. Perhaps it pleased God to recompense him by a more real and solid benefit than

this condescension on their parts, and that he therefore induced him to listen to the repeated importunities of Father Arragona. At first his only incitement was a certain degree of curiosity, which inspired him with a desire of discovering what these Exercises, of which he heard such different opinions in the monastery, really were.

With this intention, the lay brother set off on horseback, followed by a servant. When he met any of his acquaintance upon the road, who asked him what he was going to do at Alcala, he replied, "I am going to make a trial of certain enchantments practised by the Jesuits, with which our Fathers are unacquainted;" and then, half laughing at himself, half grumbling at Father Villanova, he continued his journey. Arrived at the college, he asked for the rector. As soon as he saw Father Villanova enter, a young man whose exterior was not prepossessing, and who was clad in an old gown, worn and even patched, he was displeased, and turned his back upon him, inwardly murmuring against Father Arragona, who, through error, or from mockery, had sent him to a man whose appearance he could not endure. But Father Villanova, who knew his visitor by reputation, and was expecting him, addressed him with so much politeness, so earnestly entreated him to partake of some refreshment before going, that he at length persuaded him, though with much difficulty, to delay his departure until the following morning. During this interval, the admirable gentleness which characterized the good Father, especially when he discoursed familiarly upon heavenly things; his care for his guest; his charity, humility, and affability, so won upon the Hieronomite, that at length he gave himself up into his hands, and put himself entirely under his direction to follow the Exercises. The meditations of the first week alone, which were the most appropriate to the penitent, lasted twenty-one days.

God gave him, during this period, so thorough an insight into the dangers of his position, and he conceived so deep a repentance for his conduct, that the religious beheld him with admiration shedding torrents of tears, and giving himself up to austere penance hitherto unknown to him, but from which his soul received greater consolation than his body endured suffering. After having made a general confession, and acquitted, as far as was in his power, his immense debts towards God, equally changed in his external appearance as in his internal condition, he returned to his monastery.

It required neither arguments nor entreaties to induce his brethren to try for themselves the efficacy of the means which he had employed; for so complete and unexpected a conversion appeared to them to border upon the miraculous. All resolved to imitate his example, and the monastery underwent a thorough reform.

The second example which we shall give is perhaps still more curious.

There lived in Sienna a priest who had become celebrated as the author of certain plays, of an original and by no means delicate character. The success which they obtained effaced the shame in his own eyes, and made him glory in that which ought to have covered him with confusion. He was not always satisfied with merely composing, and more than once appeared upon the boards of the theatre; thus displaying before all eyes the double scandal of a priest upon the stage in the evening, and an actor at the altar in the morning! Meanwhile, two companions of Ignatius, Brouet and Rodriguez, arrived at Sienna, sent by the sovereign pontiff to bring about certain reforms in that city. They were accompanied by a famous preacher, Father Francis Strada. These three men, by the noble examples of virtue which they gave, by public and private lectures, and

especially by the practice of the Exercises of St. Ignatius, effected in a short time remarkable changes both amongst the clergy and the laity. It pleased God, upon one occasion, to conduct the unworthy priest of whom we have spoken to hear their discourses, and to give so much force to their words, that his eyes were opened. He saw with horror the monstrous condition at which his soul had arrived by the violation of his duties towards God, and by the enormous scandal which he had given. Resolved to change his life, he went in search of the preacher, and entreated his assistance in the accomplishment of his resolution. The latter believed that he could not do so more effectually than by engaging him to follow the Exercises of St. Ignatius. Hardly had he thoroughly examined the first meditation than he began to perceive in the fall of angels and of men, in the sorrows and vanities of the world, and in the horrors of hell, dramatic scenes of a very different nature from those which his imagination had hitherto conceived. Very soon his double character of priest and comedian inspired him with such profound horror, that he resolved to make a public and impressive reparation. After having made known his pious wishes to his director, he one day mounted the pulpit, a rope round his neck, his face bathed in tears, and humbly asked pardon for the scandal which he had given. His appearance alone touched every heart, and all retired as much edified by his humility as they had formerly been revolted by his disorderly conduct.

He afterwards wished to associate himself with our Fathers; but as his fervor could not brook the delay which they would have required as a trial, he entered into the Order of St. Francis, and assumed the holy habit of the Capuchins.

The destiny of the little book of Exercises is indeed most remarkable. In proportion as it produced these wonderful effects upon European society, it stirred up a furious

opposition against itself. We have read the words of the Protestant Lermeo; but hostile voices rose even from the Catholic camp. Biting calumnies, gratuitous suppositions, malignant interpretations, were all levelled against the Exercises. Our Fathers, it was said, pretended by means of them, to make the Holy Spirit descend upon men; to produce ecstasies and visions, and to effect the strangest transformations. The book, added others, contained suspicious opinions, hidden under the veil of mysticism—it must be brought before the tribunal. It was presented there. Providence seems to have specially employed this means to make it known. In searching to discover evil, its enemies learned its true value. *Ubi cognoverit veritatem, et ipse, statum sequitur*, says Tertullian, in regard to Christianity. The result of its examination before the courts in Paris, in 1535, filled every one with astonishment; a contrary effect had been fully expected. The Dominican Orè, charged with its examination in that city, became its most fervent follower. The same circumstances were repeated in Portugal ten years later. At first it was declared that the Exercises were only calculated to produce mad men; gradually it was regarded as a work fitted to make saints. Soon after, Francis Borgia, Duke of Gandia, took the initiative, which his high position in the world permitted him to do. While still invested with all his dignities, he entreated Paul III. to submit the work of Ignatius to a new examination, in order to give it all the splendor of the pontifical sanction. The Pope accepted this proposal, and approved of the Exercises in the most formal manner. “Charged as we are to exercise towards the flock of Jesus Christ, confided to our care, the functions of pastor, our desire for the glory of God renders precious to us all that may contribute to the spiritual advancement of souls, and disposes us to receive favorably

those requests whose object is to increase the piety of the faithful servants of Jesus Christ; for which reason—our dear son, the noble Duke of Gandia (Francis Borgia), having stated to us, that Ignatius of Loyola, general of the Society of Jesus, established by us in our beloved city, and confirmed by our Apostolic authority, has collected certain *Documents* or *Spiritual Exercises* drawn from the Holy Scriptures, and from experience of a spiritual life; that therein he has established an excellent method for leading on the faithful to holiness; the aforesaid duke giving testimony of this, not only from what he has heard in many places, but also from his personal experience, has requested us to cause the said *Documents* or *Exercises* to be examined, and should they be found worthy of praise and approbation, to grant them all the apostolic favors calculated to make them bring forth the fruits of salvation, and to excite the faithful to use them with greater devotion.

“Having therefore caused the said Exercises to be examined by our well-beloved Egidius Foscarari, Master of our Sacred Palace; by our well-beloved son, John, Cardinal Priest of the title of St. Clement, Bishop of Burgos; and by our venerable brother, Philip, Bishop of Saluces; and having learned from them that they had found them replete with piety and sanctity, and well calculated to procure the spiritual advancement of souls; considering, moreover, as we ought to do, the abundant fruits which Ignatius, and the Society founded by him, have produced in the church of God throughout the world, and to which these same Exercises have so much contributed; we declare by the present bull, that we praise and approve of the said *Documents* or *Exercises*, and all and each of those things which they contain; we earnestly exhort the faithful of both sexes throughout the whole world, to make use of these pious *Exercises*, and

to endeavor to profit by them, so as to increase in piety. We permit also the said Exercises to be printed by such publisher as it shall please the aforesaid Father Ignatius to choose ; on condition that after the first edition they cannot be reprinted without the permission of the said Father Ignatius, either by that publisher, or by any other, under penalty of a fine of five hundred ducats, which must be applied to pious works ; and we ordain, moreover, all the ordinaries of the different dioceses, all ecclesiastical dignitaries, and all canons of the cathedral or metropolitan churches, to take the defence of the said Exercises, in virtue of our authority ; to let all those engaged in them enjoy the above-mentioned approbation and concession ; never permitting them contrary to our intention, as manifested by the present bull, to be in any way whatsoever molested, and to repress all opposition which may be made to these Exercises, by ecclesiastical penalties, and censures, &c.

“ Given at Rome, on the last day of July, year of our Lord 1548, fourteenth of our Pontificate.”

The solemn approval of the Sovereign Pontiff, shut the lips of the opponents. The little book continued to be spread throughout the world, doing good wherever its precepts were faithfully followed. The Saint himself often labored to perfect it, during the twenty-five years which followed his retreat at Manresa. He added these touches, he said, in proportion as he received fresh knowledge from on high. This expression explains many secrets ; and especially that deep knowledge of the human mind, that consummate experience in all things pertaining to God, which astonish us in the ignorant hermit of the cave on the banks of the Cardenero.

From that time the Exercises became the basis of the religious edifice raised by Ignatius : the sixth and seventh

congregations of the Order decreed that every postulant should follow them for a month, before being admitted to the noviciate; and that each year, every Jesuit should suspend the occupations of his ministry, to apply himself in solitude to these holy practices. To give them yet more importance, those men who had drawn from conversations with their Holy Founder, and from their own experience, a deep knowledge of the manner in which they ought to be directed, were charged with drawing up a *Directory*, which accompanied the Exercises. Finally, the Superior General, Aquaviva, published them in their present form.

CHAPTER VII.

Ignatius quits Manresa—The hospital and cavern which he had inhabited are held there in great veneration—Journey of St. Ignatius to the Holy Land.

IGNATIUS had passed more than ten months at Manresa, where in the depths of his cave, as well as during his abode in the hospital, he had acquired the knowledge and virtues which he there made manifest. Although this place was so well suited for the penitential life which he led, he was to a certain extent driven from it by a circumstance the most insupportable for holy men ; the respect and affection testified towards him throughout the country. The concourse of people around his poor retreat, increased daily ; they followed him in his pilgrimages and stations ; and not to disturb his pious meditations, the crowd observed him from a certain distance.

The humility of Ignatius suffered from this state of things ; and other reasons added to this, obliged him to leave Manresa. His discourses had touched many persons, who begun by following the first Exercises, and then resolved to change their mode of life completely. Now these multiplied conversions became a tacit reproach to those whose souls were daily growing more and more hardened ; and they begun to spread abroad the most odious calumnies against the saint, whose reputation and tranquillity were thus daily compromised.

It is true that this reprehensible conduct exercised in reality little influence. When Ignatius arrived at Manresa, God was hardly known there; at his departure, it was a city of saints. Besides, he felt himself animated by an ardent desire to visit the Holy Land, and by his preaching to spread the knowledge of Jesus Christ throughout the East. As soon as his project of departure was made known, tears, entreaties, a picture of the perils which he would have to encounter, every thing was put in practice to dissuade him from this resolution; but the voice of man was of no account to him, when it did not accord with the voice of God. Nor would he be persuaded to accept as travelling companions, the chosen friends who entreated him to do so.

He would only, said he, be accompanied by the faith which guided him,—by the hope in God which would never allow him to want for any thing, and by the charity which would never leave him solitary. He also refused all pecuniary aid; and the only concession which could be obtained from him, was to leave off the coarse gown and chain which he wore, and to assume the dress of a poor scholar. By this he even satisfied his humility, since the strange garb of a penitent might have attracted attention. And thus, leaving the inhabitants of Manresa filled with grief, he departed for Barcelona, where he waited for an opportunity of setting sail for Italy.

When Ignatius had left Manresa, the veneration which he had inspired was turned upon the places which he had consecrated by his austerities, by his pilgrimages, and by his fervent preaching. Public inscriptions recalled the remembrance of the Saint, or edifices consecrated to God arose in these spots. A pillar was erected in front of the hospital of St. Lucy, where the Saint had followed the first suggestions of his fervent zeal, and the following inscription was engraved upon it in his honor :—

“To Ignatius of Loyola, son of Bertram, native of the province of Guipuscoa, Founder of the Clerks of the Society of Jesus, who, in his thirtieth year, fought with great valor against the French, who had attacked the citadel of Pampe-luna; he was dangerously wounded there; then, being cured by a particular grace from God, he felt an ardent desire to visit the holy places in Palestine, and during his journey made a vow of chastity. He had first dedicated his armor to the Holy Virgin, in the Church of Montserrat; there, clothed in sackcloth, he began to weep over the faults of his past life, and, like a new soldier of Christ, to avenge them upon himself by fasting, tears and prayers. In memory of this event, to the glory of God, and in honor of the Society of Jesus, John Baptist Cardova Valenziano, Bishop of Vich, and appointed to the Bishopric of Tortosa, has erected this pillar, as a token of his attachment and respect to the Holy Father, and to the Order, and to make known that he considers Ignatius of Loyola as a man whose elevated piety deserves the respect of all Christendom.”

The hospital of St. Lucy became a College of the Society; the sick were carried to a more convenient place, and the little room where the Saint had formerly fallen into an ecstasy of eight days duration, was transformed into a chapel. The cave where he abandoned himself to such rigorous austerities, and where he beheld so many celestial visions, was paved and adorned as much as a simple grotto could be, without taking from it the rude aspect, or diminishing the holy horror which its appearance inspired. A beautiful painting was also placed there, where the Saint was represented as he had there been so often seen; his hair in disorder, his face pale and emaciated; his body clothed in sackcloth, his feet bare, and an iron girdle about his loins. Ignatius, on his knees before an image of Our Lady bearing in her arms the Infant Jesus,

has his eyes fixed upon her, and his right hand extended, as if ready to write upon a large projecting stone, under her dictation and that of her Divine Son, the *Spiritual Exercises* which he had formerly composed there.

The plague was now raging at Barcelona, and the port was shut. Ignatius was therefore obliged to wait, until the disappearance of the scourge should enable him to cross over into Italy; but his fervor would not permit him to be idle, and he passed all his remaining time in the hospitals and prisons, after the seven hours which he invariably consecrated to prayer. He distributed to the poor the alms which he received by begging for their relief. Even his voyage did not seem to occupy his thoughts. He knew not by what means he should cover his expenses, yet one would have said that God himself was his almoner, so greatly did he multiply the proofs of his goodness and mercy towards Ignatius.

Whilst he was listening to a sermon, in the midst of a group of children, a lady of quality, named Isabel Rosella, having fixed her eyes upon him, saw his countenance surrounded by a circle of light, and heard an inward voice which pronounced these words: "Call him." And at the same moment she discerned that these miserably poor vestments concealed a great servant of God. However, she acted with circumspection, and revealed to her husband alone, what she had seen and heard. By his consent, Ignatius was brought to their house, where, under the pretext of performing an act of charity to a poor man, they received him at their table. Here they continually led the conversation to heaven, by subjects; and the Saint, who was not aware of their motives in all this, discoursed upon them with admirable fervor. His burning words kindled the hearts of his hosts, and they recognized more than ever the Divine Spirit which animated him. Too happy would they have esteemed themselves,

could they have prevailed upon him to remain with them for ever; but finding him irrevocably decided to go to the Holy Land, and knowing that his intention was to set out in a brigantine about to sail for Italy, Isabel Rosella conjured him not to risk his life by going in that vessel; especially as he could make the passage safely, in a good ship, which was to set sail shortly after; adding that she would take upon herself all the expenses of the voyage. God, who no doubt inspired her to make this offer, at the same time disposed Ignatius to accept of it, at least in so far as concerned the choice of the vessel; for he did so on condition that the captain should grant him his passage for the love of God.

Soon after, the brigantine sailed for Italy; but hardly had she left the harbor, when a furious tempest assailed her, and she perished with men and cargo.

However, the master of the ship who had granted a free passage to Ignatius, wished him at least to provide himself with the provisions necessary for the passage. The Saint on the other hand, considering this precaution as proving a want of faith in Providence, would have gladly begged when on board the vessel, so as really to subsist entirely upon alms. He renounced this project only in compliance with the advice of his confessor, which was a law to him; but he would receive no gift from his generous hostess, and went through the streets of Barcelona, soliciting charity.

It pleased God that he should address himself to a noble lady, named Zepilla, whose son had fled from home to rove about the world, shamefully supported by begging for money. The air of noble birth stamped upon the countenance of Ignatius, at once convinced her that he was not born in his present miserable condition, and struck with grief at the recollection of her son, whose image he forcibly recalled to her mind, she loaded him with reproaches for his manner of

living, treated him as a vagabond, and overwhelmed him with insults. Ignatius accepted this humiliation with much more joy than he would have felt had she offered him the most liberal gifts; and after quietly listening to her reproaches, he thanked the lady with much gentleness, and concluded by telling her that she was perfectly in the right, that he was in truth an unworthy sinner, and the worst of men. He thus expressed with deep conviction the true feelings of his soul. But so unexpected a reply struck the speaker with amazement. She blushed, became confused, and felt her anger converted into admiration. She immediately ordered an abundant provision of bread for the mendicant, and requested him to pardon the insults which had been provoked by the recollection of a personal misfortune. The lady could never afterwards give an account of this singular meeting without deep emotion; and when Ignatius returned from Jerusalem, she became entirely devoted to him, whilst he in return poured into her heart the rich treasures of heavenly blessings.

Providence thus provided the pilgrim with his daily ✓ bread and his passage. Indèed money also had been given him; but resolved to abandon himself truly to the care of God, he laid it upon the shore. Sublime confidence! holy folly of the cross!

A violent but favorable wind brought them in four days to Gaeta, where Ignatius found shelter in the stable of an inn. In the middle of the night, hearing the cries of a woman, whom some soldiers were insulting, he flew to her assistance, and his countenance glowing with holy zeal, threatened them with the anger of Heaven, and at length induced them to depart.

He soon after set out for Rome, where he arrived on Palm Sunday, in the year 1525. Having received the bene-

diction of Pope Adrian VI., and his permission to travel to the Holy Land, he set out on foot, according to his usual custom, and always begging, towards Venice. Some persons had persuaded him to accept of seven crowns, necessary, said they, for his expenses at sea, and for the avoidance of a thousand dangers on his journey to Venice. But he soon repented of this, and asked God to pardon him, as if for some serious fault; for according to his opinion, it was better to appear insane in the eyes of those who could not penetrate the sublime secret of voluntary poverty, which consists in giving all to God, that we may receive all from Him; than to yield to human respect. Therefore he had hardly left Rome, when he distributed his money to the first indigent persons whom he met.

The plague was at this time raging in Italy, and strangers were subjected to the most severe investigation, before being admitted into the city. This was an abundant source of suffering, and at the same time of consolation for Ignatius; for, pale and emaciated by the fatigues of the journey and by his austerities, no one doubted that he was either threatened with the disease or already attacked by it. The gates of every city were closed against him; a shelter outside the walls was refused him; and the hand of charity itself feared to open to give him alms. His position became dreadful; he found himself obliged to spend whole nights in the open air, and to submit to the most cruel privations; but his thoughts, ever serene and pure, were constantly directed towards the sole object of his love. His truest pleasure consisted in suffering, so wonderful was the internal consolation which inundated his heart. Our Lord himself even deigned at one time to fortify him by His presence, and to make known to him that He accepted his sufferings. Between Padua and Chioggia, his physical strength became so exhausted, that,

obliged to abandon the companions with whom he had been walking, he found himself alone and without a guide in the middle of the country. He immediately collected his thoughts, and began to pray. Then Jesus Christ appeared to him, radiant in glory, and consoled him with words which would have converted the most bitter afflictions into delight. He promised that by His protection he should enter both Padua and Venice, where, without this Divine assistance, it was impossible for him to penetrate; and truly the aid which he received was wholly divine, for he passed as if invisible through the gates of both these cities, no one even asking him from whence he came; whilst his travelling companions who were separated from him, had the greatest difficulty in obtaining admission. The Divine Hand which protected him did not stop there; it procured him also the means of living in Venice, and the unexpected happiness of finding a passage to the Holy Land; for the vessel which carried the pilgrims had sailed several days before. Ignatius, who arrived towards dusk, not understanding the language and not knowing where to find an hospital destined for the reception of strangers, retired for the night under the shelter of a portico in the Square of St. Mark, and under the guardianship of God, who watched over him.

There lived at that time in Venice a Senator called Mark Anthony Trevisano, not only one of the most learned magistrates of the Republic, but a most holy man. He understood so perfectly how to unite the care of public affairs to his religious duties, that he might have been taken for a Religious, as much as for a Senator. Austere towards himself, he joined to all his other acts of penance, that of constantly wearing a hair shirt. Of the most tender charity towards the poor, his house resembled an hospital, and in relieving their wants, he would have reduced himself to beggary, had

not his nephews, the lords of Marcelli, persuaded him to live with them, and taken upon themselves the care of his worldly affairs. Every where he was surnamed the Saint, and in after days his services led him to the supreme dignity of Doge. After having merited that rank by his virtues, he wished to renounce it, and would certainly have done so, had not Lorenzo Massa and Antonio Milledonne, Secretaries of the Republic, persuaded him to sacrifice to the public good the happiness which he would have felt in retiring into a monastery, and bestowing all his wealth upon the poor, and thenceforth living for God alone. He lived to an extreme old age, leading a life which was a continual preparation for death; and dying calmly whilst assisting at Mass.

This same man, so meritorious in the eyes of God and of his fellow-men, was awakened one night by a voice which seemed to come from God himself, and which addressed him in terms of gentle reproach; giving him to understand, that whilst he was sleeping well, stretched upon a soft and commodious couch, a holy pilgrim was lying on the bare ground, no one thinking of relieving him. These words caused Trevisano equal confusion and joy. Readily believing how great must be the merit of this pilgrim, whom God himself recommended to his charity, he instantly went out to search for him; found him lying under a portico in the square, and conducted him to his house, where, with equal zeal and respect, he bestowed upon him all necessary assistance and relief.

Besides the charitable attentions which were lavished upon him in this house, God sent aid to Ignatius from another source, by permitting him to be recognized by a Biscay merchant, who seeing him in this sad condition, offered him money and clothing; but he accepted nothing, and only begged him to procure him an interview with the Doge,

Andrea Gitti, that he might obtain permission from him to take passage on board a ship destined to convey the new lieutenant of the Republic of Cyprus to that Island. The audience was obtained and the favor granted. Yet he would have profited little by this, had not God himself, for whose sake he exposed himself to lose all its advantages, manifestly come to his aid.

Upon the vessel where the holy pilgrim embarked there were many passengers, who endeavored to beguile the weariness of the time by loose conduct and libertine discourse. Amongst the sailors it was even worse. After imploring the mercy of God in the storm, they insulted him when the danger was past. Ignatius, always ready to do battle for the honor of God, and finding that gentleness had no effect upon men such as these, as coarse as they were wicked, at last forcibly reproved them for thus daring to provoke the anger of Heaven, so near as they were to death and hell. The only result of his zeal was, that they formed a plan for casting him upon a small uninhabited island, and abandoning him there. Some of the passengers having discovered this, gave him warning, and entreated him to discontinue those efforts, which were useless to others, and might bring about his own destruction. But even this approaching danger could not shake his resolution. He knew that the will of God was more powerful than the hatred of the wicked, and that the winds and the sea obey Him alone. And he soon experienced the truth of this, when lying off the island; for while the sailors were steering for the shore, a boisterous wind arose, which drove back the ship, and increased in violence every time they attempted to make the land; so that in spite of themselves, they were forced to resume their route towards Cyprus.

But God rewarded his servant for a zeal which men did

not appreciate, and he received the ineffable recompense of celestial apparitions. At the very time when, retired in one corner of the vessel, he wept over the outrages which the Divine Majesty received from these blinded and corrupted men, the Saviour himself deigned to appear to him, addressing him in words full of sweetness and consolation.

CHAPTER VIII.

Ignatius visits the Holy Land—Is forced to return to Europe—Virtues which he practises in Barcelona—Reformation which he effects in the Monastery of the Holy Angels—Ill treatment which he meets with on account of his zeal—His patience disarms his enemies—Ignatius obtains the restoration to life of a man who had hanged himself.

ON beholding the land consecrated by the labors and sufferings of the Lord, Ignatius experienced a sensation of unutterable joy, which we may easily believe when we reflect upon the ardent desire which he had conceived from the moment of his conversion to perform this pilgrimage, as well as upon the increasing love with which the visits of our Lord inflamed his heart. How many perils had he encountered, how many dangers had he surmounted, in order to arrive at the goal which was at length before his eyes! That very year, the Turks, emboldened by their recent success, and especially by the taking of Rhodes from the knights, infested the seas, carried off multitudes as slaves, and deterred most of the pilgrims from making the holy voyage. All these reports were current in Venice at the moment of his departure; and many had endeavored to frighten Ignatius, and to deter him from his project. "God is my sole support," said he. "I would not hesitate to set sail upon a plank." Abundant tears gushed from his eyes when he beheld Jerusalem, and at the same time perceived the Franciscan Fathers, the guardians of the Holy Sepulchre, coming out in procession to meet the pilgrims.

He visited all those holy places which bring to the memory such touching recollections, with the same sentiments as if he had witnessed the birth of Christ in Bethlehem, heard him preach his divine doctrine in the Holy City, beheld him expire upon Calvary, or rise to heaven from the Mount of Olives. As his method of meditation consisted in first representing to himself the place where a mystery had been effected, applying to it the interior sentiments which it led him to conceive, he engraved in his memory the plan and the different sites of the holy places, such as they then existed, so that they might be useful to him afterwards, should it not be the will of God that he was to remain in Palestine to preach the religion of Jesus Christ to the infidels, and to obtain for himself the grace of martyrdom.

Although it had been revealed to him by God himself, in the solitude of Manresa, that he was destined to gain many souls to the true faith, and that in order to accomplish this, God would associate companions with him, whose future mode of life He then traced out; yet nothing had been revealed to Ignatius as to the place where they should assemble together, or as to the class to which they should belong. Then supplying by his own judgment what was wanting in the knowledge vouchsafed to him by the celestial Intelligence, he had become persuaded that this association was to be formed in Palestine, whither, since the first moment of his conversion, he had felt so ardent a desire to direct his steps. Hoping, therefore, that he might remain there, he had brought from Europe letters of recommendation to the Franciscan Fathers, which he delivered to the Father Warden, without, however, disclosing to him any other motive for his desire of remaining in Palestine, but that of satisfying his devotion. The Father Warden encouraged his hopes, and promised him his good offices with the Father Provincial, who alone could de-

cide, and who was shortly expected from Bethlehem. But God, who had other views regarding Ignatius, and who designed to be propitious to him in Rome, and not in Jerusalem, disposed the course of events in a totally different manner from what he expected.

At the very moment when, full of hope, he was writing to his friends in Europe, to take leave of some and to invite others to join him, the Father Provincial arrived, and gave him audience. After having first praised his pious design, he told him that notwithstanding the desire he felt to grant permission for its accomplishment, he could not do so without seriously injuring the interests of his own convent, where his Religious had already much difficulty in finding a maintenance, on account of the smallness of the alms bestowed upon them. "You have no other resource yourself," added he, "but public charity, and would therefore deprive us of a part of the little which is indispensably necessary for our existence. Moreover, you may convince yourself of the truth of my words by seeing several of the brethren embark tomorrow for Italy, sent back there by me, the scarcity of provisions not permitting me to keep them in Palestine.

Ignatius protested that he would by no means be an incumbrance to the Provincial, and that he asked no aid from him but that which was purely spiritual, such as hearing his confession and giving him the Holy Communion. But the Provincial, far from yielding, told him that in this decision he consulted at once the interests of his community and the personal safety of Ignatius; since it often happened that pilgrims, passing beyond the limits assigned to the Christians, were either killed by the Turks or carried into slavery; and that the latter invariably turned to the detriment of the monastery, whose inmates, through charity, ransomed them with the little which they possessed. He therefore required

Ignatius to prepare for setting out with the other travellers on the following day. Ignatius, extremely afflicted at the idea of this sudden departure, answered, that neither the fear of death, nor that of slavery, would be sufficient to determine him to leave Palestine; that nothing but the fear of offending God by remaining, could induce him to depart. "And you would indeed offend Him," answered the Father Provincial, "were you to remain here against my will." At the same time he showed him a papal bull, giving to these Religious the right of excommunicating those who should remain in the Holy Land without their permission. Ignatius required no more; he bowed his head, and instantly went out to make preparations for obeying the orders he had received; and as, when hoping to remain in Palestine, he had taken leave of his friends in Europe, so now he desired to do likewise with regard to the Saviour. Having therefore secretly withdrawn from his companions, without providing himself with a guide to defend him against the Turks, he went hastily to the Mount of Olives, once more to venerate and kiss the holy traces which Jesus Christ, in ascending to Heaven, left impressed upon the rock; and by giving his knife to the guardians, purchased their permission.

After having satisfied his devotion, he resolved to visit the sanctuary of Bethphage; but recollecting on the way that he had not observed with sufficient accuracy the position of the feet of our Saviour, so as to know towards what point of the globe He had turned when quitting the earth, he returned to the Mount of Olives, and giving the guards a pair of scissors, the last article which he possessed, succeeded in making the observation which he desired.

Meanwhile, the monks, perceiving the absence of Ignatius and guessing its cause, sent in quest of him an Armenian, a man employed in the service of the monastery. He, meet-

ing the holy pilgrim as he descended the mountain, accosted him with rude words, even threatened him with his stick, and taking him roughly by the arm, led him back to the monastery. But of all this Ignatius felt nothing; for at the very moment of that man's approach, our Divine Redeemer appeared to him, and with consoling words walked before him to the monastery. The following day Ignatius embarked, and bade adieu to the Holy Land, where he left his heart, and carried away as his only consolation, the hopes of one day returning thither.

The pilgrims having arrived at Cyprus, found three vessels about to sail from thence; the one Turkish, the second a large and well-armed ship belonging to a Venetian merchant, and the third a small vessel in bad condition. The greater part of the travellers made their arrangements to go with the Venetian captain, because the approaching winter rendered the passage dangerous, and every one wished to take the safest mode of conveyance. But Ignatius had not wherewith to pay his passage, and several of the pilgrims entreated the captain to receive him through charity, assuring him that he would admit a Saint on board his vessel. The captain's only reply was a profane jest. "If he be a Saint," said he, "what need hath he of a vessel? He can easily work a miracle, and walk upon the sea." Thus spoke that man, or rather his avarice, whose apparent wisdom is often but real folly.

The master of the small vessel acted very differently; and, at the very first request made to him, consented to receive Ignatius for the love of God; and it was indeed to God that it belonged, to reward the captains of the two ships according to their respective merits.

They raised anchor before daybreak, and the three vessels set out in company, with a favorable wind, which lasted

until sunset. Then there arose a squall, and the waves rising mountain high, the ships parted company. The Turkish vessel, shattered by the tempest, perished on the high seas, with all her crew; the Venetian, trying to approach the shore, was dashed upon the coast of Cyprus; its passengers were saved, but the whole cargo lost. The small vessel, old and fragile, on board of which Ignatius was, might naturally have been the first to succumb to the violence of the hurricane; yet after being several times apparently on the brink of destruction, she weathered the harbor of La Pouille; and, there being revictualled, once more set sail for Venice, where she arrived happily, after a passage of two months and a half.

Meanwhile Ignatius finding that he could not remain in Palestine, to labor for the salvation of souls, pondered in his own mind upon the means of satisfying his daily increasing zeal. The more he reflected, the more it seemed to him as if an inward voice warned him, that without either learning or study, he never could run the risk of giving instruction in spiritual things, and consequently could never labor for the welfare of his fellow-men. This thought put him on the path which was to lead to the foundation of that Society, the sole or principal end for which God had chosen him, and favored him with so many graces. Incited by this inward conviction, he resolved to return to Barcelona, where charity would never allow him to want for alms sufficient for his subsistence, nor for masters to assist him in his studies. He therefore set out again on foot in the middle of winter, though still suffering from the fatigues of his last pilgrimage. Clothed in coarse stuff, with a poor robe which reached to his knees, it seemed impossible that he could ever reach Genoa, through plains and over mountains covered with snow, without being liable to perish with cold. Of all the

offers which were made him, he accepted only a piece of coarse cloth, which he wrapped double around his loins, to appease the excessive pains of a sick and weakened stomach. A small sum of money which had been given him, he distributed to the poor.

Whilst at his devotions in a Church at Ferrara, several beggars approached him, to each of whom he gave alms. In a little while, having exhausted all his small change, he distributed his gold, of which he had about fifteen pieces. Then these poor creatures made this known to others, and he was so surrounded by them that in a moment his purse was completely emptied. As more beggars continued to arrive, Ignatius looked at them with a countenance filled with compassion, and begged them to excuse his refusal, assuring them that he possessed nothing more, either for them or for himself. It was a marvellous thing for these poor people, to see a man exhausted with hunger and cold, who without thinking of his own necessities, bestowed upon them even to his last farthing! Observing, moreover, his deep religious meditation, and seeing him beg alms for his own subsistence, they could no longer doubt his sanctity; but pointing him out to others, they exclaimed aloud, "Behold the Saint!"

During the rest of his journey, fearing to lose his way in unfrequented paths, and being thus obliged to pass through the midst of the French and Spanish armies, and to traverse places plundered by the two parties, he was exposed to the greatest dangers. By night he withdrew amongst the ruins of some dilapidated and half-burned house, which afforded him a little shelter from the cold and rain, in a deserted country, where he could hope for no assistance from public charity. More than once he was stopped by parties of soldiers, and brought before their captain. One day, amongst others, some Spaniards, taking him for a spy, arrogantly de-

manded of him what affairs had brought him to this place, stripped him of his clothes, and searched him for the papers with which they supposed him charged by the enemy. Finding none, they made a cruel amusement for themselves, by dragging him, almost naked, before their captain.

Ignatius joyfully endured this public affront. His imagination represented to him so vividly the torments suffered by our Lord, in a similar circumstance, that he hardly remarked what was passing around him. But suddenly the demon made a violent assault upon him, filling his heart with dread; making him fear lest his present confusion should not be his only cause of suffering; bringing before his imagination the tortures to which he was now going to be exposed, in order to drag his pretended secrets from him: then a long imprisonment, followed up by an indefinite series of ill-usage. To avoid all these probabilities, he had only to make himself known, and casting off his habitual simplicity of speech, to resume the language of a nobleman, and to inform the commanding officer of his distinguished rank.

But however subtle the temptation, Ignatius soon recognized in it the reasonings of self-love, and this was sufficient to induce him to act precisely in the contrary sense to that suggested by the enemy of souls. Brought before the captain, he behaved as a rude peasant would have done; did not salute him, answered his questions slowly, and without giving him any title, or saying any thing to excite his compassion. But this conduct, which seemed to expose him to great danger, was precisely the cause of his safety. The commander, mistaking for stupidity that which was in fact the effect of sublime virtue, gave him back to the soldiers, turning them into ridicule for not having been able to distinguish an idiot from a spy. Ignatius received his clothes again, but the soldiers revenged themselves by loading him

with insults, until an officer, moved with pity, dragged him out of their hands, and procured him a shelter and some food.

Having at length got free from the Spanish quarter, he shortly after entered that of the French, hoping to collect amongst them a new treasure of insult and sufferings. Having fallen almost immediately into the hands of the sentinels, they sent him to their chief. He, discovering from the first questions which he put to Ignatius, that he was a native of Biscay, and belonging himself to its environs, received him with great kindness, and ordered him to be well treated. This conduct not only procured him the relief which he so much required, but strengthened him in his resolution of relying upon God alone, and of accepting sufferings and consolation with equal joy, as being equal proofs of Divine love and providence, and alternately dispensed by the same hand. Ignatius then continued his journey, and having reached Genoa, embarked for Barcelona, on board a ship belonging to the Spanish squadron, to which Andrew Doria, then on the French side, gave chase for some time.

Having arrived at Barcelona, he found a kind master in Jerome Ardavalo, who, from a spirit of charity, instructed him in grammar, of which he kept a public school. There Ignatius, at the age of thirty-three, might be seen becoming as a child in the midst of a crowd of children, and learning along with them the rudiments of the Latin tongue. This undertaking, which at the first glance appears neither very great nor very meritorious, was in fact one of the strongest proofs which he could have given of his zeal in the service of God. Once convinced that by study alone he could become a useful instrument for His greater glory, he no longer took into consideration either the interests of his own private devotion, of which it was necessary to retrench a

considerable portion, nor the fatigue and labor inseparable from this kind of study. In fact he now entered into an entirely different class of ideas; having not only to repair by dint of application, the years which he had lost in the idleness of the camp, but also to conquer his own nature, little inclined to study; and to arrive from a state of complete ignorance at a knowledge no less complete of humanities and theology.

In this new stage of his life, he had also to combat new and strange temptations, under which he nearly fell.

When he passed so many hours of the day and night at Manresa, in the most lofty meditation, favored by celestial visions, ecstasies, and a supernatural knowledge of divine things, the demon had never openly endeavored to lead his mind astray from them, except by that fantastic vision of which we made mention.

At Barcelona, when he arrived at school, the gates of Paradise were opened to him, and his soul became inundated with so much delight, his mind was raised to so lofty a communion with celestial things, that books and study, all were forgotten. His time was passed in sighs, tears, tender emotions, and acts of love to God; in practising the *amo, amas*, which he saw no necessity of conjugating. Thus in a hall filled with noisy children, he experienced the same interior consolation as in the silence and solitude of his cave. And so it was that weeks and months glided by, and he remained as ignorant as before.

Nor can we be surprised at this stratagem of the Evil Spirit. What higher mission can man receive, than that of co-operating with God himself in the conversion of souls? And when one so zealous as Ignatius is to be led thither by means of study, the tempter believes that he has gained a great victory, when he sees him devote himself to mystic the-

ology, and neglect the elements of the sciences necessary for him to acquire ; since the one only conduces to the enjoyment of him who is engaged in it, whilst the other contributes at once to the welfare of our fellow-creatures, and to the eternal glory of God.

From these constant distractions, covered with the veil of piety, Ignatius might have concluded that he was called to contemplation rather than to study ; and perhaps he might have fallen into the snare, had he possessed that natural bias to self-love, which frequently causes us to mistake illusions for divine inspirations. Happily his only desire was for the glory of God ; he thus discovered his error more easily, and when he had once recognized it felt so deeply humbled, that leading his master into a neighboring church, he threw himself on his knees before him, entreated pardon for his past negligence, confessed the illusions which had distracted him from his studies, and bound himself by a vow to follow them for the future with the greatest punctuality. He also begged his master to require from him with exceeding strictness, the same duties as from the other scholars, and to punish any future neglect on his part with the same chastisements. The result was admirable, for no sooner had he thus discovered and spurned the artifices of the demon, than those spiritual consolations and supernatural ecstasies which had ravished his soul with such gentle violence, vanished entirely. When he afterwards experienced spiritual dryness and interior desolation, he consoled himself with the thoughts of the fruit which he hoped in due time to obtain from his studies, for the service of God and his neighbor. In the same way, many years after, when he became Founder and Head of the Society, he used to reprove his followers, when he saw any of them who pursued their studies with reluctance, regretting their former spiritual joys, instead of

reflecting upon the fruit which their present privations would enable them to gather in future for the salvation of men. When the fountain of consolation was dried up for them, he would remind them that patience, humility, and obedience, practised in times of dryness and aridity, would become a source of consolation and joy. He thus expresses himself upon that subject, in a letter which he wrote some time after his sojourn in Barcelona:—

“We must not be surprised when our students do not experience all that calm sweetness of devotion which they perhaps desire, for He to whom it belongs to dispense this grace, grants it when and to whom He pleases; and we may believe that during the course of the studies, which are usually laborious for the mind, Divine Providence suspends those sensible consolations, because even whilst they afford great joy to the soul, they fatigue and exhaust the strength of the body. Besides which, all application to the speculative sciences, consumes and dries up the affections of the heart. Nevertheless, when study has the service of God for its sole object, it is in itself an excellent exercise of devotion. Provided the foundations of virtue are not shaken, and that we devote to prayer the time prescribed by the Constitutions, we ought not to be afflicted because of this dryness, but receive with resignation from the hand of God whatever He pleases to bestow upon us, and cleave to that which is most important of all; to patience, humility, obedience, and charity.”

Meanwhile Ignatius diminished nothing either in the severity of his mode of life, or in his prayers. Although John Paschal, in whose house he occupied a garret, would have willingly divided his humble fare with him, he would never consent to partake of it, but on his way to and from the school, begged the piece of bread necessary for his subsistence du-

ring the day. All that he considered superfluous, he distributed to the poor, giving them the best portion. The great esteem in which he was held, procured him abundant alms, both in money and clothing; but he had hardly received them before they passed into the hands of the indigent, a great number of whom always surrounded his house, counting upon Ignatius, who was poorer than themselves. He was their father and protector;—he loved and served them as if in the person of each he beheld that of our Lord himself.

On arriving in Barcelona, Ignatius had wished to resume his former austerities, but inward pains proceeding from a weakened stomach, obliged him to abandon them. He found out the means of supplying their place, by other austerities, as severe, but more hidden. His humility was thus doubly satisfied. He always took from sleep the time for his prayers. The young son of his hostess, John Paschal, was curious to know in what he was occupied so long, and secretly watched him. Ignatius after gazing fixedly for some time towards Heaven, would begin his prayers, sometimes with his arms extended in the form of a cross, sometimes prostrate upon the ground in an attitude of the most profound devotion. And thus he would remain upon his knees, motionless as a statue, until his countenance began to glow, and torrents of tears gushed from his eyes. More than once, as Paschal was wont to relate, the chamber was filled with a dazzling splendor, which seemed to emanate from the Saint; at other times, he rose from the ground to the height of four or five palms, and while in this posture he would heave burning sighs, or he was heard to pronounce these words: "Oh Lord! if men knew thee! Oh my God! infinitely good, how canst thou endure a miserable sinner such as I am!"

Paschal, as we may easily believe, was forcibly impressed

with this miracle, and in after days took pleasure in relating it to his children. If they had known, said he, that guest so holy and so gentle, they would kiss the traces of his footsteps, the walls of his chamber; and then tears would fall from the eyes of the Barcelonese, and striking his breast, he would bitterly lament that he had profited so little by the presence of Ignatius. The divine favors with which the Saint was loaded, did not only go to seek him in his modest cell; notwithstanding the care with which he concealed them, they were at times revealed in him with irresistible force. The nuns of the convent of St. Jerome of Barcelona, beheld him one day, after he had passed two or three hours before the altar of St. Matthew, motionless as a marble statue, rise from the earth still kneeling, while his face had assumed the expression of an angel.

Yet he was no less zealously occupied with the welfare of his neighbor, than with his own perfection; and his patience and charity were especially evident in his labors for the reform of some nuns belonging to the convent of the Angeles. They were in the habit of receiving visits from some persons of dissolute conduct, and the danger was as great, as the scandal was public. Ignatius resolved to remedy this evil, whatever might be the consequences to himself; and he therefore chose their church for his habitual place of devotion. There he spent whole hours in praying and entreating God to grant him success in the affair which he had undertaken. His modesty, his tears, the fervor which shone in his countenance, excited the attention of the nuns; they looked at him at first with curiosity, soon with respect; and then wishing to know who he was, learned at length that he was one who had passed in the town for a saint. Then they were desirous of hearing him speak upon spiritual subjects, and he having consented to do so, began to discourse in

their presence, upon the important duties and excellence of a religious life. He then represented in forcible terms the outrage done to God by the scandalous lives of some of their members; the injury which they did to their house, the bad example which they gave to innocent hearts, whose ruin they might cause; and finally the punishments which God reserved for them, and which would be so much the more terrible as the offences of persons consecrated to Him, surpass in malice those of all other sinners. Their eyes were opened, not only to acknowledge, but also to weep over the wretched condition in which they blindly lived. This work of conversion was not the affair of a few days. In order to assure and consolidate it, Ignatius continued his exhortations, and at length led the nuns to meditate upon his Exercises. ✓ The fruits of these meditations were seclusion, regularity, devotion, and the most edifying fervor. From that time the persons who were interested in these disorders, found the gates closed against them, and all access to the convent prohibited. They were irritated to fury; and seeing that Ignatius, neither alarmed by threats, nor intimidated by the bad treatment twice inflicted upon him, continued to encourage this reform by his instructions, they resolved to get rid of the obstacle which opposed them by assassinating him.

One day therefore when he was returning to the convent, in the company of a holy priest named Pujalto, who had assisted him throughout this affair, they were attacked by two Moorish slaves, and so cruelly beaten that the priest, it was said, died in consequence.* However that may be, Ignatius received such severe wounds, that he fell senseless on the ground, and the assassins believing him dead, did not

* Such is the account given in the official report; but according to John Paschal, the priest recovered from his wounds.

repeat the blows. As long as sense and speech remained to him, he had continued impassible under the blows with which he was overwhelmed, and had not ceased to bless God, and to implore His mercy, both for those who wished to take his life, and for himself, who joyfully accepted death. He remained lying upon the ground, until a miller happening to pass by, placed him upon his mule, and carried him to the house of Agnes and John Paschal. The Saint arrived there so entirely exhausted, that he seemed upon the point of expiring. His whole body was livid, bruised and painful. It was necessary to raise him upon a sheet in order to change his place in bed, and even this caused him acute suffering. At the end of thirty days he was entirely given over, and the last sacraments administered to him.

During all this time Ignatius had received constant visits from the principal inhabitants of Barcelona, both men and women, for they all regarded him as the Apostle of their town. John Paschal, who has written the narrative of this event, enumerates amongst them persons of the highest nobility. Ignatius never felt happier than at the moment when, like his Divine Master, he was going to lose his life for the salvation of his brethren. The acute pain caused by his wounds, appeared to him an actual relief, and it was only in obedience to the strict orders of his confessor, a monk of great merit, belonging to the order of St. Francis, that he would permit himself to be divested of his hair shirt. John Paschal preserved it, and bequeathed it to his children, as their most precious inheritance. This hair cloth was afterwards the means of restoring health and even life to several persons in Barcelona; but in the year 1606, the Duke of Monteleone, Viceroy of Catalonia, obtained it by dint of much importunity, and preserved it as a treasure for his house.

But the visits of most value in the eyes of Ignatius, were not so much those of the rich and great, as of the poor, who hearing of his condition, ran in crowds to the house, all in tears, offering up fervent prayers for the preservation of one who was so faithful a servant of the Lord, and so tender a father to themselves. But it was decreed that he should not, in obtaining the salvation of one monastery, lose a life destined by God himself for such important labors in His service.

After fifty-four days of severe suffering, Ignatius was pronounced out of danger, and was able to leave his bed. As soon as he had recovered his strength, the first use which he made of it was to return to the convent of the *Angeles*, and to strengthen by a renewal of his former discourses, the good resolutions which had been taken there. Agnes Paschal, who felt all the tenderness of a mother for him, at once admired his conduct, and trembled at its probable consequences, for she did not doubt that his wicked enemies, again exasperated against him, would resolve upon his destruction; and she conjured him earnestly not to return to a place where so many dangers surrounded him. But he replied, that he knew no greater felicity, than to suffer in the service of God, and to die for the welfare of his fellow-beings. By this truly heroic virtue, he obtained assistance from on high, by which not only every obstacle to the accomplishment of his labors was removed, but his most bitter enemy was converted.

One day, as Ignatius was returning from the monastery, he met a merchant named Ribera, who throwing himself at his feet, confessed himself to be the principal author of the crime, entreated his pardon with expressions of the deepest repentance, and added a solemn promise that he would change his mode of life; a promise which he faithfully fulfilled. His repentance was caused even less by horror at the crime

of which he had been guilty, than by admiration of the virtue manifested by the Saint in his admirable patience and devoted constancy, and in the silence which he had maintained concerning this affair.

It was not on this occasion only that the efficacy of his prayers was apparent, especially when their object was the conversion and salvation of a sinner. Two brothers named Lisani, divided by interested motives, pleaded against each other at Barcelona. The one having obtained a favorable sentence, his brother, unable to overcome his grief, finally abandoned himself to such despair, that he hanged himself from a beam in his house. All the neighborhood resounded with the lamentations of his relatives and friends, collected together round this horrible spectacle. Ignatius, who was returning from the convent of the *Angeles*, hearing all this rumor, hastened thither, and moved with compassion for this miserable soul, promptly caused the rope to be cut. But in vain they attempted by every means in their power to restore life to the unfortunate man. Then Ignatius knelt down beside him, and in a short but fervent prayer entreated the Lord to restore him to life, and to grant him time sufficient to repent of his crime and to confess it. The prayer of the Saint was instantly granted.* “And while all in amazement (these are the very words of the three auditors of the tribunal of the Rota) awaited the issue of the affair, Lysani returned to life;” but he only lived long enough to confess his sins, and to obtain absolution.

* *Et cunctis stupentibus, et rei exitum expectantibus, Lysanius ad vitam rediit.*

CHAPTER IX.

Predictions of Ignatius to several persons who were desirous of following him when he was leaving Barcelona to go to Alcala.

MEANWHILE, at the conclusion of two years of labor, Ignatius had made so much progress in the Latin language, that according to the decision of his masters, he was fitted to pass on to higher studies. He therefore resolved to go to Alcala, where the university, then newly founded, could boast of the most eminent masters in every branch of literature. But God, who directed Ignatius towards an object which He had not yet revealed to him, was preparing for his servant rather a school of virtue and patience, than one of science and philosophy. Many of his friends and other pious persons offered to follow him, not only to be his companions in study, but his pupils in all spiritual matters. He only accepted three, Calixtus, Artiaga, and James de Casares; and these fell off, and did not end happily. But amongst those whom he refused, there were two in particular to whom he gave reasons for so doing, which could only have been suggested by prophetic knowledge.

The first was a young Catalonian, a native of Gerona, named Michael Rodès, to whose request he replied in the following terms: "No, you must not accompany me; you will live in the world, you will succeed in the profession of a lawyer; you will have a wife and children, and one of them

will wear the habit of an Order which I shall found." Fourteen years elapsed before the establishment of the Society, and every thing happened in due season, as he had foretold. Michael Rodès became an excellent jurisconsult, married, and the youngest of his sons, named Michael, after him, became a member of the Society, was distinguished for his austerities and zeal, and died there in a ripe old age.

When in his youth Michael Rodès manifested to his father his desire of entering the new Order which St. Ignatius had just founded, the elder Rodès informed his son of the prediction formerly made to him, and then both rejoiced at seeing its approaching fulfilment. But the Provincial having delayed sending his answer to the young man's request for admission, longer than the ardor of his age or the fervor of his zeal could support, he changed his plan, and resolved to take the habit in the monastery of Certosa. On two different occasions, the day of his entrance was fixed, and twice an unforeseen accident prevented it. Upon this he returned to his first idea, and obtained admission into the Society, by which the double prophecy of the Saint was accomplished.

The second person to whom he refused permission to accompany him was that very John Paschal, in whose mother's house he lodged at Barcelona. John had offered to follow him ever since the time when he meditated his voyage to the Holy Land. But Ignatius assured him that it was the will of God that he should remain in the world, and disclosed to him in detail every thing that was afterwards to happen to him. "You will marry," said he, "a woman of great virtue; by her you will have many children; they will cause you much tribulation, and you will be reduced to great poverty." In fact, the first of his sons was born deaf and blind; the second, at the age of twenty-two, became insane; the

third, who led a very disorderly life, died suddenly in the presence of his father. Of his four daughters, only one lived long enough to be married; nor was the last part of the prediction less realized for poor Paschal; for the day arrived when, poor and loaded with debts, he found himself nearly reduced to beggary.

Fortunately, whilst predicting these misfortunes, Ignatius had softened their bitterness by the consoling assurance that they would all tend to the profit of his soul. The good Paschal relied so implicitly upon the fulfilment of this prophecy, that when his friends endeavored to console him during his first misfortunes, by the hopes of better fortune in days to come, he would say to them, "Ask patience for me; but do not try to make me conceive hopes which cannot be realized. That which our holy guest predicted will alone come to pass. Every one of his words has been verified up to this day, and so it will be even to the end." As long as Ignatius lived he never ceased to console his unfortunate friend by his letters. After his death he did not forget him, and returned to reanimate his courage, by a wonderful vision, of which the following are the circumstances. While reading the account of it, we seem to breathe the perfume of the olden times, whose recollection has faded away from us.

For forty years, John Paschal had preserved the devout habit of attending matins and afterwards mass every morning, at the tomb of St. Eulalia, which is placed beneath the high altar of the cathedral in Barcelona. One day he arrived so early that a long time elapsed before the office commenced, and meanwhile he knelt down upon the steps of the altar and began to pray. Overwhelmed at that moment by new misfortunes, he laid them before God and his holy protector, who had died but a few years before. "Oh my father!" cried he; "truly did you foretell all that was to happen to

me ! Without doubt, you, from the highest heavens, behold the life which I now lead ; you who predicted it to me when upon earth, leave me not now without consolation, or at least without patience, so that my troubles may lead me to that eternal salvation which you also foretold I should obtain."

Whilst Paschal thus prayed, he began to hear in the distance a strain of sweet and admirable music, which seemed to approach gradually. At length he beheld appearing to the left of the altar, a numerous company of angels and of men in ecclesiastical habits, all of celestial beauty. When they had entered the church, they ranged themselves around the high altar, and then one came and placed himself in their midst ; a man of the most venerable aspect, wearing, along with the sacerdotal ornaments, a stole and a white cape. Before the vision, the church was in deep darkness, for the clock had but just struck four, and it was in winter ; but when the last personage of whom we have spoken appeared, the basilica shone with so brilliant a light, that the holy edifice appeared all on fire. The old man stopped at the tomb of St. Eulalia, and after having profoundly saluted the Holy Sacrament, took from the hands of an acolyte a censor, and passing before the altar, incensed it several times. A sweet perfume was spread through the cathedral. Soon this blessed company directed their steps towards the door on the right hand of the altar, where Paschal was kneeling rapt in admiration.

But the priest who had used the incense, turning towards Paschal, and looking at him as if surprised at not being recognized by him, made him a sign to approach. Then his eyes were opened ; he knew St. Ignatius, and rising impetuously, ran towards him. The Saint received him with a smiling countenance, asked him familiarly if he remembered him, added that he had never forgotten him, and reanimated

him with the hope which he had formerly given him of eternal salvation.

Paschal would have embraced him, but at the moment in which he opened his arms, the Saint blessed him, disappeared, and with him the whole of that heavenly vision. Then Paschal cried aloud, "Oh my father! my father Ignatius!" At these cries, several priests hastening into the church, found Paschal like one beside himself, shedding torrents of tears. He immediately related what he had seen, and during his whole life, this ineffable remembrance was a source of the sweetest consolation to his heart.

Ignatius certainly left an ineffaceable impression in Barcelona. Fifteen years after his departure from that city, one of his relatives, then a novice in the Society, arrived there. The inn where he lodged was immediately surrounded by crowds of people; he was eagerly questioned, and received in return several curious details respecting the Saint. Money was offered him, that he might found a house in Barcelona; but Father Araoz (such was his name) would accept nothing, and contented himself with giving some advice and exhortations, which were received as if coming from the Saint himself.

He meanwhile arrived at the city of Alcala in the beginning of August, in the year 1526. The first person whom he met, and from whom he received alms, was the same Martin Olave, a distinguished doctor and professor of the University of Paris, who was afterwards called by God, through a signal vocation, to enter the Society, and was received into it by its holy founder twenty-six years after this first meeting. He was then young, and studying philosophy at Alcala.

Ignatius had still three months before him, previous to the opening of the schools; and these he employed in his own sanctification and in assisting his neighbor. Soon after, his three companions arrived, to whose number he added a

fourth, a young Frenchman, page of Don Martin of Cordova, Viceroy of Navarre. This young man happened to be at Alcalá, because as he was passing through that town with his patron, he had received some wounds in an affray, which detained him at the hospital. This circumstance, apparently unfortunate, was the cause of real happiness to him; for, whilst the medical men endeavored to restore his bodily health, he recovered the health of his soul, owing to the cares and exhortations of Ignatius. These five friends were clad alike, in a habit which consisted of a simple gray tunic, descending to the feet, with a hat of the same color. Hernando de Para lodged two of them from charity, and Andrew de Arce the two others. Ignatius had taken a room in the hospital of Antezana, which it was not difficult for him to obtain, since the chamber which they allowed him to occupy had been long since untenanted. His mode of life was the same as it had been in Barcelona; and he distributed to the poor the alms which he received for his maintenance. His charity led him to seek out especially those unfortunate persons whom a sudden reverse of fortune had plunged into misery, and who were retained by shame within their wretched dwellings. More than once Ignatius was surprised in his mysterious rounds by former friends or acquaintances, but he carefully concealed himself from their researches, and hastened to relieve the unfortunate in other places.

In this university they taught the logic of Soto, the physics of Albertus Magnus, and the theology of the Master of the Sentences. Ignatius, who probably measured the strength of his intelligence by that of his feelings, was deceived by the ardor with which he desired to devote himself to the salvation of souls. He followed with much courage, but also somewhat confusedly, these three different branches of learning; and thus uselessly spent both his time and

trouble, for in endeavoring to study every thing at once, he made progress in nothing.

In truth, God had not led Ignatius to Alcala in order that he might make great progress in profane learning. His will was that others should derive benefit from the spiritual instructions of the Saint. Therefore the Lord subjected him to spiritual persecutions, the nature of which must have severely tried his patience. At length Ignatius felt that he had so little aptitude for the labors of the school, that he was forced to give them up, and to apply himself entirely to the sanctification of his brethren.

He therefore began to frequent the hospitals to teach there the Christian Doctrine, to hold spiritual conferences, to converse with the students, especially with those who led the most libertine life, or whom he observed surrounded by the greatest number of friends and companions. By bringing them back to a regular mode of living, he hoped to gain over at once a greater number of souls to God. And it pleased God to bless his efforts by the numerous conversions which he obtained, and which gained him great reputation as an apostolic teacher.

Yet the efficacy of his discourses was not owing to his eloquence, for nature had denied him that gift; but his heart spoke, and that heart wholly kindled with the love of God, seemed like a furnace, from whence issued the glowing flames by which he was consumed, diffusing their warmth over all who listened to him.

The Exercises themselves were based upon certain fundamental truths, which he had thoroughly examined by the light of divine knowledge, and which had assumed in his mind all the characteristics of deep conviction. The effect which he produced upon his hearers was therefore irresistible; and he joyfully employed the all-powerful virtue of the

Gospel to touch the hearts of the most hardened sinners. Experience had taught him that the most intractable may be subdued by zeal and perseverance.

Amongst these was a young nobleman, invested with a very high ecclesiastical dignity in Spain. He had frequently heard Ignatius spoken of, and on being informed that he desired an audience, concluded that he had come to ask alms, which supposition alone prevented the young prelate from refusing him admittance. Nevertheless, at the sight of the Saint he felt himself troubled, and his countenance changed. His suspicions and fears increased, when Ignatius requested to speak with him in private. As soon as they were alone, he thus addressed him: "One who is less than nothing, and who is moreover a miserable sinner, cannot venture to arrogate to himself the title of friend to a nobleman of your high rank; yet such are my affection and devotion to the person of your lordship, that amongst your thousand friends, perhaps there is not one so sincerely attached to you as I am. Nay, I am more devoted to you than you are to yourself; since it is your soul, the noblest part of your being, which I love, and it is of it that you take no care. You know not, nor is it surprising, all that is rumored of you in Alcalá. This is the fault of those who surround you, and who allow nothing to reach your ear which does not please and flatter you. But what does indeed astonish me is, that you do not hear the voice of your conscience! Did God place you in this world to think of nothing but your own amusement, as if neither heaven nor hell existed? Is it then so unimportant a matter, whether you are to save your soul or to lose it to all eternity? If, at this moment, death were to overtake you, (which God forbid!) what would be your fate *for ever*? What would become of those riches which you use only to offend and insult the

all-powerful God, from whose bounty you received them? And those shameful pleasures which ruin your soul, what account could you render to God of them? What of all the souls who, through your means, perish eternally?" At these words, the indignation of the young prelate against the beggar who had thus come to insult him in his own house, broke forth. He interrupted him furiously, overwhelmed him with a torrent of abuse, and threatened to have him thrown out of the window, if he ventured to add another word.

Ignatius, no way offended by this fury, which he regarded as nothing more than the ravings of an unfortunate madman, continued his zealous efforts; and in a short time, his words, vivified no doubt by the Spirit and grace of God, vibrated to the very depths of his hearer's soul, and suspended his wrath. Seeing him become more calm, Ignatius continued his discourse with noble intrepidity, succeeded in touching his heart, and saw him at length humble himself before God.

The servants, attracted by the angry voice of their master, expected to witness some strange scene, and their surprise was extreme, when they beheld him leave his apartment, lavishing upon Ignatius the greatest marks of respect, and when they received orders to place a cover for the stranger, who was going to sup with him. Our Saint did not refuse the invitation, hoping to profit by this additional opportunity of continuing the conversation upon spiritual subjects, and of fortifying him in his good resolutions. Dating from that day, the new convert became one of the most zealous friends and defenders of Ignatius; who, on his side, felt the greater attachment for him, that his conversion became the source of many others.

Similar conversions of this nature happened daily; and a spiritual school was formed within the hospital, at least as

numerously attended as that where the humanities were taught; but the prince of darkness could not leave this work in peace, since he lost as many disciples as were gained over by the Saint. Some worthless men first endeavored to make Ignatius pass for a magician, but no one crediting this assertion, they were obliged to have recourse to other methods; and they next used all their efforts to excite the authority of the courts against him, so that being brought into disrepute amongst the ignorant by the investigation of his life and doctrine, they would afterwards feel no confidence in him.

The propagators of certain dangerous opinions, who called themselves the *Illuminati*, had been lately discovered and condemned in Spain. Besides, a great and terrible movement was beginning to distract all Europe. Luther, with his piercing and passionate voice, was stirring up the minds of men, and disseminating his pestilent doctrines. His works, read, commented on, and reproduced under a thousand forms, animated all Germany against the Papacy. In Spain the Inquisition watched with extreme care over the preservation of the Catholic faith. Meanwhile, it was a strange spectacle to see these men and women, belonging to every rank, assembling in an hospital round this Ignatius, who hardly knew the rules of grammar! Things went so far, that Doctor Alonzo Sanchez, canon of St. Just, on one occasion publicly refused the Communion to Ignatius and his companions, reproaching them with making too familiar a use of holy things. But shortly after, no doubt enlightened from on high, he distributed the bread of life to them, and experienced at that moment so sweet a feeling of devotion, that he could hardly restrain his tears. The same day, he begged Ignatius to dine with him, and after hearing him speak upon spiritual subjects, respected him as a saint.

However, as it happened that some of the converts, on changing their manner of living, experienced violent trouble and even great physical sufferings, suspicion increased; and it was decided that all this proceeded from enchantments and magic. Besides this, several young students suddenly changed their mode of life, and shut themselves up in silence, to follow certain mysterious practices under the guidance of their Director. What were these practices? Might not error glide in amongst them? for, in short, this Director was an ignorant man; and was he not endeavoring, under the cloak of sanctity, to spread abroad new doctrines? Then came other objections. Why this manner of dressing differently from other students? Was there not at least some vanity in this circumstance? Finally, the new converts received the Communion every Sunday; an uncommon practice at that period. Thus suspicions accumulated from day to day, like clouds gathering together before a storm. All these circumstances, disfigured as usually happens, reached the Court of Inquisition at Toledo, at the same time with importunate demands for having them promptly remedied; Don Alphonso de Mexia, canon of the cathedral, was therefore dispatched privately to Alcala, and charged to take, in concert with Dr. Michael Carasco, the canon of St. Just, information upon this subject, and to transmit it to Toledo. He fulfilled his mission with equal fidelity and prudence. He interrogated those who were habitual witnesses of the life of Ignatius, and those who daily listened to his doctrine, and having ascertained the sanctity of both, returned to Toledo without having seen Ignatius, after having directed John Rodriguez de Figueroa, lieutenant of police in Alcala, to replace him. He, wishing to show his zeal, shortly after desired the Saint to appear before him, and informed him that inquiries had been made concerning him. "It was

true," said he, "that they had turned to his advantage; but one thing, however, had given him displeasure, and this was the singularity of the dress which he and his companions wore. Why should they all be of the same color and form, as in religious orders?" The Lieutenant added, that Ignatius and his friends ought in future to vary at least the color of their dress; and as for the rest, they might continue to lead their usual mode of life, and to labor for the sanctification of souls, as they had hitherto done. It was easy to please Figueroa. Ignatius and Artiaga dressed themselves in black, Calistus and Casares in brown, and the young Frenchman resumed his former costume, only adding shoes and stockings, out of obedience to the magistrate; who shortly after renewed his inquiries and examined new witnesses, but heard nothing excepting eulogiums of Ignatius. He therefore conceived the strongest feelings of respect and affection towards him, but an incident soon occurred which entirely changed his good dispositions.

Amongst those who assembled to hear the exhortations of Ignatius, were two ladies of noble family, mother and daughter, both widows; the name of the mother, Mary del Vado; that of the daughter, Louisa Velasquez. These pious women, ardently desirous of performing some great works of a spiritual nature, took the resolution of passing their whole lives as pilgrims, of visiting all the hospitals in Spain, and of performing great works of mortification and charity. But before putting this project into execution, they wished to obtain the approbation of Ignatius; and he, far from giving it, reproved them severely for their intention, and by wise and powerful arguments, proved to them that women, still young, who can hardly find safety in retirement, could not, without running great risks, undertake this wandering life. The Enemy of their salvation, said he, only

desired to remove them from the guardianship of their friends, in order to make them fall more easily into the snares which would be prepared for them. If they wished to give themselves up to works of mortification and charity, there was no want in Alcala, either of sick persons, or of hospitals where they might exercise them with equal merit, and fewer dangers. He succeeded in convincing them, and for the moment they abandoned their project.

But the end of Lent approached, and anxious to pass that time in the most holy manner possible, their first idea returned with more than its former force; however this time they only mentioned it to some intimate confidants. Soon after, dressed as pilgrims, and accompanied only by one female domestic, the ladies Del Vado and Velasquez, set out upon their journey on foot, and begging alms. When they were no longer seen in the town, divers reports arose concerning them, until at length the persons whom they had taken into their confidence, openly declared that they had not fled from their house, but were merely making a pious pilgrimage. Then all manner of maledictions fell upon Ignatius. At the first glance it certainly appeared as if nothing but his exhortations could have induced two ladies of honorable conduct, to adopt so strange and dangerous a resolution. Many were irritated by it, but none so much as the Doctor Pedro Cirvelio, under whose guardianship they had been placed; and his anger was the greater that this adventure was in truth as disagreeable for him, as dangerous for his wards. Was it not intolerable, said he, to see an ignorant man, a beggar, come, no one knew from whence, overturning all Alcala, without any sort of opposition? It was time to abandon a man who would soon separate daughters from their mothers, and wives from their husbands, to expose them under the pretext of piety, to public ridicule. Such

audacity must be put a stop to, and this person deprived of the means of acting in such a manner, since, devoid as he was both of learning and prudence, his advice could only lead to deeds of scandal or folly.

All affairs which concern the students are brought before the Rector of the University, and it is to him that the right of judging belongs. Cirvelio, knowing how devoted Matthew Paschal was to Ignatius, feared that he would not find in him the severity which such offences seemed to merit, and therefore addressing himself to Figueroa, the lieutenant of police, he lodged his complaint with him. The authority of the Doctor, and the esteem in which he was held by Cardinal Ximenes, who had given him the first chair of theology lately founded by him in this University, decided the lieutenant of police to give an order for the arrest of Ignatius, which was immediately executed.

Whilst the officers were leading him to prison, the young Don Francis Borgia, son of the Duke of Gandia, happened to pass by, at that time a youth of about seventeen years of age. A striking contrast was presented by these two men at that moment; the one, led between constables, who were conveying him to a shameful imprisonment; the other surrounded by a numerous and noble retinue, the object of universal homage and respect. This circumstance, which then appeared the effect of chance, tending to increase the mortification of Ignatius, was no doubt a disposition of Divine Providence, which was one day to indemnify him for it, by giving him the happiness of seeing that very nobleman, then Viceroy and Duke of Gandia, arrive in Rome, place himself under his authority, and enter into the new Order which he had founded. From what different extremes had arisen the superiority of the one, and the submission of the other!

But Ignatius, though a prisoner, had not lost either the

veneration or the love of his pupils, who flocked in numbers to see and hear him. Persons of the highest rank did not fear to penetrate into his prison, and there they found him with so free and contented a spirit, that it seemed as though he had gone there willingly, in order to prove by example, as well as precept, that when God is in the heart, we find Paradise every where. Deducing subjects of instruction from his actual position, he spoke with so much fervor, as to appear absolutely beside himself. His enthusiasm seemed to border upon madness. To love God, to love God, repeated he without ceasing, that is happiness; to suffer for Him, is the greatest proof of love; to suffer for the glory of God, in that alone consists true joy, unheard of felicity! Amongst those who crowded to hear him, was observed George Navero, then principal professor of the Holy Scriptures at Alcala, a man particularly renowned for his clear judgment and piety. One day he was so enchanted with the discourse of Ignatius, that, without remarking it, he allowed the hour of his lesson to pass by. He afterwards repaired in great haste to his scholars, who were waiting for him in the court, and accosting them with the countenance of a man transported with admiration, exclaimed, "I have just seen Paul in chains," (*Vidi Paulum in vinculis*,) thinking it no exaggeration to compare the noble conduct of Ignatius under suffering, with that of the great Apostle.

Meanwhile, Figueroa pursued his inquiries and examinations, and calumnious accusations were not wanting; but after being thoroughly investigated, they were invariably discovered to be without a shadow of truth. In fact the testimonies in favor of Ignatius soon became so abundant, that the trial appeared more likely to lead to his canonization, than to his condemnation as a criminal.

Whilst this singular prosecution was in progress, people of

high rank went to the prison, and offered him their services, either in his defence, or to obtain whatever favors he might desire. Amongst these, two of the principal persons were Doña Teresa Enriquez, the mother of the Duke of Marcheda, and Doña Leonora Mascaregna, at that time lady of honor to the Empress, and afterwards governess of the prince, Philip II. But our Saint was so far from desiring to obtain his release from prison through favor, that he would not even consent to take an advocate to defend his cause. It was that of God. In His hands he placed it, and as calumny alone could cause his condemnation, he would have esteemed himself happy to be condemned.

One of his companions, named Calixtus, having heard in Segovia, where he then resided, of the imprisonment of Ignatius, came immediately, although suffering from illness, to Alcala, in order to share his captivity. Ignatius instantly sent him to the magistrate, that he might undergo all necessary examination.

But on the 18th of August, forty-three days after their departure, the three pilgrims returned home. Questioned in their turn, they gave conclusive testimony in favor of the innocence of Ignatius; but even before this last examination had taken place, Figueroa had thought it his duty to give some consolation to the holy prisoner, accompanied, however, by very ill-placed severity. He repaired to the prison to inquire from Ignatius himself whether he had taken any part in the pilgrimage of the three women. On his pious and sincere but negative reply, Figueroa put his hand on the shoulder of Ignatius, and said smilingly, "Come, take courage, for this accusation alone detained you here; yet it would be better for you, and more satisfactory to me, if your discourses bore in a less degree the stamp of novelty."

Ignatius hearing these words from a man whose duty it

was to sustain instead of condemning his efforts for procuring the salvation of souls, replied with an air at once grave and modest: "I should not have thought that to speak of Jesus Christ to Christians, could have been called a novelty." And without permitting a single word disrespectful to Figueroa to escape his lips, he added several remarks which confounded him, and brought blushes to his face.

But some delay was necessary before this affair could be terminated; and it was not until the first of June, 1527, that the magistrate declared the life and doctrines of Ignatius to be wholly irreproachable; the only order which he gave being that within the space of ten days Ignatius and his companions should leave off the habits which they wore, and dress like the other students; moreover he forbade Ignatius to give either public instructions or private exhortations, before having finished his three years of study, and concluded his course of theology, and that under pain of excommunication and banishment from the kingdom. Ignatius bowed his head in token of respect, and received these orders as if coming from God himself. He merely remarked, that as to his clothes, he would obey by divesting himself of his tunic, but that he could not dress like the other students, because he possessed nothing in the world, and only procured by begging, the little food necessary for his daily subsistence.

Upon this, the magistrate recommended him to a man of some note, named Luzano, whose reputation for charity was great throughout Alcala; and who resolved to accompany Ignatius, when he went through the city, asking alms. They arrived one day at the house of Lopez Mendoza, where a number of young men had collected to play at tennis; a crowd of spectators surrounded the players; Luzano drew near, and asked for charity. Lopez, already irritated by some

advice which Ignatius had formerly given him, concerning his disorderly life, cried out; "Is it not shameful for an honorable man like you to go about begging in this manner for a miserable hypocrite like that? May I perish by fire if he does not deserve to be condemned to the flames!"

All who heard these rash words, were troubled, and as they were circulated through the city, they were considered truly scandalous. For the misfortune of him who had uttered them, God himself seemed to accept this impious challenge, and to let its dreadful consequences fall upon his head. A few hours afterwards, news was received at Alcala of the birth of the prince, afterwards Philip II., and great preparations were set on foot for rejoicings both public and private. Lopez ascended the terrace of his palace, with a page and a slave, to fire off an arquebuse; but a spark, directed by divine wrath, flew upon a vessel containing a quantity of gunpowder, and set fire to it. The flames enveloped the unfortunate Lopez, who uttering loud cries of despair, rushed precipitately down from the turret, and casting himself into a reservoir filled with water, expired an instant after. Thus few hours elapsed between the crime and the punishment of that unfortunate man—between the insult received by Ignatius and his justification. He then saw what St. Augustine calls, "A great spectacle, God himself armed for his defence." (*Magnum spectaculum, Deum armatum pro te.*) When we observe this fact with attention, we shall remark in it a double stroke dealt by the hand of Divine Providence, which, while thus proving how God could avenge the honor of His faithful servant, effaced the bad impression which might have been produced, not only by the imprecations of Lopez, but also by the bad treatment of the magistrate towards Ignatius, in condemning him to silence, as if he had been guilty; even while acknowledging the innocence of his life, and the purity of his doctrine.

However, Ignatius being prohibited from speaking of God, and gaining souls to His service, or from upholding in the right path those whom he had already led to God, believed that his best plan would now be to follow the advice of the Archbishop of Toledo, Don Alonzo Fonseca, who recommended him to repair to Salamanca, and there to continue his studies and satisfy his fervor. But here again God did not permit him to remain long, and it seemed as if His will was that Ignatius should leave Spain; for in the midst of so many vicissitudes, his resolution to study always remained unshaken. It was this which led him to Paris, where Heaven kept as in reserve for him, Francis Xavier, James Lainez, and several others, destined to serve as foundation-stones for the great edifice of the Society. As we may judge by the sequel, the few months which he passed in Alcala, contributed powerfully to this work; for the opinion which he left behind him in that city, in regard to himself, together with the general desire of making his acquaintance, attracted to France and Italy, and afterwards associated with him, Salmeron, Bobadilla, Olave, Nadal, Eguia, and all those men distinguished by their talents and sincerity, who will appear in the course of this history.

And so, after having, as it were, cast his nets in Salamanca, God required his presence in Paris, that he might reunite and select men willing to co-operate with him in executing the great project which he meditated.

When he had established himself in Salamanca, he resumed his former habit of discoursing upon spiritual subjects, both in public and private. But whether it was that unfortunate prejudices had been transmitted there from Alcala, or that the evil of those days caused suspicion to fall even upon the holiest things whenever they assumed an aspect of novelty, a fortnight had hardly elapsed in the midst

of his pious Exercises and the conversions consequent upon them, when several Dominican Religious, zealous guardians of the Faith, moved to suspicion, desired to become thoroughly acquainted with his life and doctrine. It was easy for them to do so, for he had chosen one of their number for his director. From him he one day received an invitation to dine at the monastery, accompanied with the warning to hold himself in readiness to answer all the interrogatories which would be put to him by several of the Religious. Dinner being over, he led Ignatius into a chapel, where the Vicar of Alcala awaited him; who after cordially eulogizing the apostolic life which he had chosen, and the pious fervor manifested by his discourses, inquired what course of study he had followed, and how far he had profited by it. Ignatius replied that he had studied little, and acknowledged that he knew nothing.

"What!" replied the Vicar, "few studies and no learning! and you preach without being a theologian?" "I do not *preach*," replied Ignatius, "but I speak familiarly about heavenly things, in the hopes of converting some of those who listen to me."

He was then questioned as to the subjects of his exhortations, and replied that he spoke of vices and virtues in general.

"But these," said the Vicar, "are matters of profound theology; and by your own confession, you are ignorant of that science. You can only therefore possess this knowledge by a supernatural gift of the Holy Spirit:—if it be so, confess it."

Ignatius did not consider this deduction as perfectly just, for his interrogator referred only to the speculative manner in which this subject was treated in the schools; whereas he only concerned himself with the acts which are derived from

it, and with their utility or danger to men's salvation. He therefore made no reply; whereupon his interrogator, believing that he had reduced him to silence; "In times like the present," said he, "where so many errors are spread throughout Christendom, you dare without learning, without study, to speak in public upon subjects of which you are ignorant, and you will not explain the nature of your teaching to him who might judge of your errors, if you possess any. If your doctrine is pure, why are you now silent? If it is not so, how do you venture to teach it? Moreover," added he in great astonishment, "what strange manner of dress is that adopted by your companion?"

He spoke of Calixtus, lately arrived at Alcala, and who wore a very short cloak, a very large hat, and carried in his hand a pilgrim's staff. Now Calixtus was a tall man, of an ungraceful figure, and this costume truly appeared ridiculous enough. Hearing the question of the Vicar, he replied that he had given away the rest of his clothes to a poor man who required them more than he did. The Vicar believing this a well-invented falsehood, smiled incredulously, and resolved, since Ignatius kept silence concerning his doctrine, to compel him to an explanation.

Accordingly he ordered him to be confined in one of the cells of the monastery, with guards placed before his door; and there he detained him for three days, whilst he proceeded against him before the courts.

Ignatius was meanwhile visited by several of the monks, some wishing to see, others to hear him; whilst he as usual discoursed upon spiritual subjects with the most perfect equanimity, and the more freely that he felt assured of being understood by his audience, all well versed in sacred learning. The convent became divided into different parties in regard to him. Some looked upon him as a Saint,

and being perfectly convinced that such admirable knowledge could only have been acquired through the most sublime and elevated contemplation, were of opinion that he should be left at perfect liberty to teach, since it was easy to see that the Spirit of God spoke by his lips. Others on the contrary declared that, Saint or not, an ignorant man should not be permitted to become a teacher, and that at least it was necessary that a careful examination should be made both of what he knew and what he taught, until it was ascertained whether or not any dangerous errors were concealed under this appearance of holy life and doctrine.

At the end of three days, Ignatius and Calixtus were transferred to so miserable a prison, that their confinement might thenceforth be regarded as a punishment rather than a precautionary measure. To the foot of each of the prisoners was attached a chain about twelve hands long, so that the one could not move without dragging his companion along with him. The religious writings of Ignatius were then seized, and each word analyzed. Yet he was so well and even so happy in his prison, that during the whole of the first night, he did not cease to sing with his companion all the psalms and hymns which they knew by heart.

The following day many pious persons visited Ignatius, and observing that his only means of taking a little rest, was to lie down upon the damp and muddy floor, they insisted upon sending him some relief, notwithstanding his determined refusal to accept any.

Several days having elapsed in this manner, he was led into the presence of four persons for examination; three of whom, Isidore, Paraviña, and Frias, were doctors of theology; while the fourth, also named Frias, was a magistrate, and bachelor of the University. They examined him by turns, proposing the most subtle questions to him concerning

the mysteries of the Most Holy Trinity, the Incarnation, the Eucharist, and even canon law. Ignatius, even while protesting his ignorance, replied with so much solidity of doctrine, and such extreme correctness of expression, that every one was struck with astonishment. They afterwards invited him to discourse as he usually did in public, giving him as a subject the first commandment. This was blowing up the fire that lay kindled in his heart, into a bright flame, for when he spoke upon divine love, he became animated, not like a man who merely teaches a doctrine, but like one who feels and practises it in his own heart.

Soon after, a circumstance occurred, which brought to light all the sincerity and innocence of Ignatius. Two more of his companions had been shut up in the common prison, he himself having, without being required to do so, made them known to the judges, in order that they might undergo an examination. Now it happened that one night the prisoners forced open the doors, and escaped. The companions of the Saint alone remained, both from a consciousness of innocence, and from having been instructed by him to look upon suffering as a particular favor from God. From that moment, a commodious and spacious apartment in the prison was assigned them. But Ignatius still remained in irons. His prison, it is true, seemed to have become a place of public resort, for men of all ranks crowded to hear him discourse. Amongst them was Don Francis de Mendoza, afterwards Bishop of Burgos and Cardinal, and the Vicar Frias, who had been the most severe or the most zealous of his interrogators. Seeing him in irons, the latter expressed his compassion both by looks and words; but Ignatius, turning towards him, his countenance glowing as it usually did when he made an outward manifestation of his love for God, "I must repeat to you," said he, "what I just now said to a

lady, who pitied me sincerely for what she called my extreme misery, and what I call my extreme happiness. If the love of God is in your heart, you can easily understand that to suffer for God is an enjoyment to which all the pleasures of the world cannot even be compared. I assure you that there are not in all Salamanca chains or irons enough to prevent me from wishing for more, for the love of Him in whose honor I wear this, which appears to you too heavy."

After twenty-two days of imprisonment and chains, Ignatius and his companions were brought before their judges. Their innocence being acknowledged, they were set at liberty, permitted to resume their former mode of life, and even to preach as before. But they were at the same time desired to abstain for the future, not yet being theologians, from defining mortal or venial sins, a subject which offers great difficulties even to the most enlightened men. The judges believed that they had treated Ignatius with all the respect which they considered his due; and in taking leave of him, all added various testimonials of their esteem, especially the Vicar Frias. But the Saint, who carried his views further into futurity, was of opinion that the prohibition of his judges was equivalent to an order to be silent; for since his Exercises made a strong attack upon sin, and for that very reason had raised up so many accusers and enemies against him; if he continued to speak openly as hitherto, against all that offends God, he might be accused of determining the nature of the offence, and consequently of having deviated from the injunctions which he had received.

He therefore resolved, three weeks after leaving prison, to quit Spain, and directed his course to Paris, where he arrived on the 28th of February, 1528. There he joined some Spaniards, the rent of whose house was paid in common, discharging his debt by means of the alms sent him

from Barcelona, in order to save the time which he usually spent in begging. He was thus enabled to devote himself more assiduously to his studies. He now wished, instead of following confusedly all the different branches at once, to resume them in order from their first elements, when one of his companions, to whom he had confided his purse, containing twenty-five ducats, having employed them for his own use, and being unable to restore them to their owner, Ignatius was obliged to ask an asylum at the hospital of St. James, and again to provide for his subsistence by imploring public charity.

This new arrangement was very prejudicial to his studies, both because that hospital was at a great distance from Montague College, where he attended the classes, and also because the doors were opened late in the morning, and shut early in the evening. In this way he daily lost some part of his lessons. An unsuccessful attempt was made by several of his friends, to attach him to the service of some literary man, who should be at the same time his master and professor; so that Ignatius might have satisfied his private devotion, by serving Jesus Christ in his person, and the apostles in the persons of his fellow-students. At length, driven by necessity, and following the advice of one of his friends, who was a religious, he resolved to go to Flanders during the vacation, and to beg from the Spanish merchants wherewith to support him during one year; he even went once to England, which country was still Catholic.

John Madera, a fellow-countryman of Ignatius, represented to him that his appearance every where in that state of poverty, was derogatory to the honor of his family; that it would be believed either that they were so destitute as to be unable to provide for the necessities of one of their members, or so avaricious as to refuse to do so. He even went

so far as to say, that by conducting himself in this manner Ignatius was guilty of a sin of injustice against them, since he compromised their reputation. John Madera was so convinced of this, that all the reasonings of the Saint failed to shake his opinion. Then Ignatius wrote in the form of a case of conscience, the following question: "May a nobleman, who for the love of God has renounced the world, go from country to country, subsisting upon alms, without fearing to injure the honor of his family?" Ignatius submitted this to several doctors of the Sorbonne, whom he chose from amongst the most enlightened of that body, and they unanimously replied, that there was no fault in doing so. Then he showed this decision to Madera, less for his own justification, than in order to defend the glory of voluntary poverty, which, ennobled by the example of Jesus Christ, for the love of whom we devote ourselves to it, cannot blemish the honor of the most illustrious descent.

At all events, Ignatius soon found it unnecessary to undertake long and painful journeys, in order to provide for his subsistence; for the Spanish merchants, knowing who he was, undertook to remit the amount of their alms to Paris; and this was sufficiently ample to provide him not only with enough for his own maintenance, but for that of Peter Faber and Nicholas Bobadilla, as well as for the support of many poor persons.

During one of his journeys to Flanders, an incident occurred, afterwards attested by the process of his canonization, which proves that long before founding his Order, Ignatius knew by revelation that he was to be its Father. He had gone to ask alms from a young Spaniard of Medina del Campo, a merchant in Antwerp, called Peter Quadrato. Whilst receiving the aid which this young man bestowed upon him with liberal generosity, God made known to his

servant by prophetic inspiration, that he should one day be indebted to him for still more important services. Looking fixedly at the young merchant, "The day will come," said he, "when you, who now exercise your charity so liberally towards me, will found in your own country a house of the Order, which God designs to establish by means of the miserable man whom you have just now assisted." The novelty of this idea, the positive manner in which it was expressed, and the ever increasing respect entertained for the sanctity of Ignatius, made a deep impression upon the young Spaniard, and he never forgot those words. In after days, his wife, Francesca Mansoni, never failed to relate this prophecy, when in company with any of the fathers of the Order. The prediction was accomplished; and Quadrato founded at Medina a college of that Society, whose establishment had been announced to him so long beforehand.

In a monograph such as we have undertaken, the smallest details make known the man, and the opinion in which his contemporaries held him. Let us then be permitted to add one circumstance, in concluding this chapter. Ignatius was at Bruges, when Louis Vivès, a man of great learning and clear judgment, made him on one occasion sit down at his table, with no other motive than that of performing an act of charity to a poor man, when hearing him speak of God in his sublime manner, and with that profound intelligence of spiritual things which distinguished him, he was lost in astonishment, and when Ignatius had gone, exclaimed to those present, "That man is a Saint, and you will see him one day found a new religious Order." His ability to perform great things for the service of God was so manifest, that at the first glance, and by the inspiration of good sense alone, it was easy to foresee all that he was capable of accomplishing.

CHAPTER X.

Inconstancy and unfortunate end of the first companions of Ignatius—His charity towards a person who had offended him—Conversion of several students—Ignatius delivered from an unjust punishment—New conversions,

IGNATIUS being now entirely decided as to his mission, employed himself in making a new selection of men of superior skill, fitted to accomplish the extraordinary works which he had planned for the glory of God. I say a new selection, because it happened in regard to those four companions of whom I have spoken, as to those seeds which produce a beautiful verdant plant, but remain barren of fruit. They found that they were not strong enough to follow in the footsteps of a giant, and soon abandoned him. Nor was he more successful at first in the choice of his new fellow-laborers. These were John de Castro, a man of solid parts, and doctor of the Sorbonne; Peralta, a student, and a young man of the family of the Amadores, a native of Biscay. Ignatius had drawn them towards God by the practice of his Exercises, which had produced upon them their usual effect, namely, that of a complete change of life. All three sold every thing they possessed, gave the money to the poor, and retired into the hospital of St. James, where, giving themselves up to long meditations, they prepared themselves for the adoption of a life worthy of so noble a beginning. But the world, which can only see with the eyes of flesh, beheld

in this heroic resolution nothing but the height of folly; and when they saw these noble and rich young men (for such were the two first) begging for alms, they considered their conduct as that of miserable wretches and madmen, and as tending to dishonor their country and family. Their friends surrounded them, and by advice and reproaches, endeavored to bring them back to what they called good sense; but the grace of God had cast its roots too deeply in their hearts to be easily torn up by the discourses of men, who were the less wise the more fondly they trusted in vain chimeras. The last reply of the new converts was, that they also had formerly looked upon heavenly things with profane eyes, but that now, thanks to the lessons of Ignatius, their blindness was cured: "And if you yourselves," added they, "would listen to him, perhaps you also would wish to join him; but at least if you will not imitate him, cease to trouble us."

When all hope of persuading them to change their resolution was entirely lost, recourse was had to violent measures; and a handful of men well armed being sent to the hospital, the converts were dragged out by force, carried back to their former habitation, and obliged to dress according to their rank; until at length, by dint of persecution, they consented to live at least externally like other people, till their studies were concluded, and they had returned to Spain. And it was thus that these new seeds, without becoming entirely abortive, did not bear the fruits which might have been expected. John de Castro, who afterwards became a preacher, resolved that the words by which he exhorted his brethren to persevere in virtue, should not reproach him with his own instability; he therefore took the Religious habit, in the Carthusian monastery of Valencia. We shall have occasion to speak of him again in the sequel of this history.

Peralta undertook a voyage to the Holy Land ; but meeting in Italy with one of his relatives, a distinguished officer, he was taken by him to Rome ; and the Pope having prohibited him from continuing his journey, he returned to Spain. As for the young Biscayan, his fate is entirely unknown to us. A new storm now broke forth against Ignatius ; and the old accusations of magic and sorcery, by which he was said to lead the minds of his hearers astray, were renewed. Amongst those who spoke against him in no measured terms, were two men of note, both doctors, Peter Ortiz and James Govea ; the first much attached to the two Spaniards whom we have already mentioned ; and the latter to the young Amador, who attended his classes. Their conversation, as well as that of some others as prejudiced as themselves, reached the ears of Father Francis Matthew Ori, who was then Inquisitor ; and he, easily imagining from the effects produced, what the nature of these pretended sorceries, which troubled men's minds must be, conceived a great desire of becoming acquainted with Ignatius, who was at that moment absent from Paris. It happened that his companion, the student who had dissipated all the money intrusted to him by Ignatius, having set out for Spain, had fallen ill in Rouen. There, entirely alone, and reduced to complete destitution, he had recourse to the charity of the man whose trust he had betrayed, and found means of making known to him the extreme misery to which he was reduced. Ignatius only required to be informed of his condition, to reward the evil that had been done to himself, by the most heroic charity. He set out instantly, in hopes of being useful to this unfortunate man ; and before rejoining him, made an offering to God of all the suffering of his journey, which he resolved to perform barefoot and fasting, after having consulted the Lord in a church of the Dominicans, where he had gone to perform his devotions.

In commencing this undertaking, Ignatius could not help feeling a certain degree of apprehension, and his human nature, in spite of himself, revolted at the idea of taking so long a journey without any food. But when he had arrived at three leagues distance from Paris, and whilst endeavoring to climb a hill, was renewing within his mind his fixed determination to drag himself, if it were necessary, to Rouen, God suddenly infused so much strength and vigor into his heart, that he journeyed ten leagues more that same day, and instead of walking painfully, felt as if he were carried through the air. He experienced neither hunger, nor fatigue, nor weariness, so completely was he ravished in God, and inflamed with Divine love. These heavenly consolations filling his heart, frequently obliged him to stop, and to breathe forth aloud the feelings which consumed him. The first night of his journey he was received in a hospital, and shared the bed of a poor mendicant; the second he slept in the fields upon a heap of straw; the third day he reached Rouen, and hastened to the house of his old companion. After having embraced him affectionately, he began to serve him with admirable charity, and afterwards procured him a passage on board a vessel, giving him letters of recommendation to his friends. Such is the vengeance of the Saints; such is the manner in which they punish offences committed against themselves.

While Ignatius was still at Rouen, and devoting himself to the care of the sick man, he learned that the Inquisitor of Paris was desirous of seeing him. He therefore hastened his departure as much as possible, and before entering his own dwelling, went in search of the Inquisitor, and assured him of his submission to his orders, whatever they might be. He only entreated that he might not be prevented from attending the classes which were opened at St. Remi. However,

his innocence was so promptly recognized, that he was not even obliged to undergo an examination, and immediately recommenced, under Professor John Peña, his course of philosophy at the College of St. Barbara.

At the same time God excited in the heart of Ignatius an ever-increasing desire to labor at the work so often attempted in vain, and for which He had more especially led him to the French capital. He therefore began to speak upon spiritual subjects to the scholars, not only in hopes of leading them to God, but also in order to discern their characters, and to attach to himself those destined by Heaven to become the companions of his labors. And thus it soon came to pass that when the classes were ended, masters and scholars formed groups round Ignatius, to take lessons in this new celestial philosophy, of which he was the admirable interpreter. Compared with his strong and logical deductions from the very heart of the Gospel, the philosophy of Aristotle grew pale. In listening to that heavenly discourse, the souls of the hearers, deeply moved, acknowledged the impression of an eloquence springing from the heart. The courses of Peña were neglected; the cause of philosophy suffered, and now another storm broke forth against Ignatius.

It was a custom in the College of St. Barbara, on holidays, for the scholars to argue with each other by way of exercise, and also that the master might judge of their progress; but since Ignatius had introduced amongst them the habit of frequenting the sacraments, the daily increasing concourse of students in the church diminished in the same proportion the number of those who assembled at St. Barbara. Peña, discontented, and knowing that it would be useless to complain to Ignatius, addressed himself to Dr. Govea, rector of the college. Pupils convicted of bringing disorder into the classes, were punished by a solemn castiga-

tion, inflicted in the public hall; and for this purpose, the professors armed with rods and whips, assembled at the sound of the bell, the students also being bound to assist at the spectacle. The material suffering of the punishment was trifling, but the infamy was great; and it was considered a degradation to be intimate with any man who had undergone it. It was then to this punishment that Peña wished to condemn Ignatius, in hopes of rendering him contemptible in the eyes of his companions. The moment was favorable, for the Rector had conceived an aversion for Ignatius ever since the affair of the young Biscayan. Govea and Peña therefore took council together upon this matter, but the affair got abroad, and the friends of the accused warned him not to present himself at the college.

On receiving the news of his intended degradation, the weakness of nature for a moment prevailed in the heart of Ignatius, and he conceived a feeling of horror at the idea of receiving so ignominious a punishment. But he soon grew calm, and reproaching himself bitterly for this momentary revolt of the senses, directed his steps towards St. Barbara; where, no sooner had he entered, than the gates of the college were closed upon him. But of this great sacrifice which Ignatius offered to the Lord, it pleased Him to accept only the victory which he had gained over himself, and not to permit his servant to suffer an affront, the consequences of which would have been more unfortunate for others than for himself. Ignatius clearly discerning the artifice of the demon, who only labored to make him contemptible by this odious means, in order to alienate from him the souls which had derived benefit from his instructions, felt his love of humiliation yield to his earnest desire of becoming the instrument of the salvation of his brethren. Therefore, when about to be led into the hall where his punishment awaited him, he

requested permission to speak beforehand with the Rector. His request being complied with, he spoke his mind frankly and openly, animated by no personal fear, but by the purest zeal for the glory of God. He assured the Rector that after having suffered chains and imprisonment, his courage would not fail under the chastisement which was awaiting him, and which did not take him by surprise as they believed, since he had been warned of it beforehand, and yet had presented himself at the college of his own accord. In other places, the same fault, his desire of gaining souls to God, had already brought persecution upon him, yet he had never said a word in his exculpation, nor permitted any advocate to defend him; for to suffer and die in so glorious a cause was less a merit than a source of honor and joy. "But now," added he, "it is not my interest which is at stake, but the eternal salvation of many a soul now in peril; and it is therefore that I believe it to be my duty to make an appeal to your better judgment, as to whether it is an act of Christian justice to permit a man to be punished as a disturber of the peace, whose only crime is that he has labored to make the name of Jesus known and loved; and to inflict upon me the ignominy of a public chastisement, with the sole view of detaching from me those whom God in His infinite mercy has placed under my care."

As he spoke, the eyes of the Rector were opened, and for a moment tears were his only answer. Then taking Ignatius by the hand, he conducted him into the hall where the masters and scholars were assembled; and there, throwing himself at his feet, he entreated him to pardon the insult which he had given permission to be inflicted upon him; and the offence which, through him, he had offered to God himself. Many years afterwards, before the Society had become a religious Order, this same Govea petitioned the King of

Portugal, John III. to employ the companions of Ignatius in the conversion of the Indies, where they sowed the seeds of those admirable spiritual harvests afterwards reaped by St. Francis Xavier, and by so many others who emulated his zeal and followed in his footsteps. Had this unjust sentence pronounced against Ignatius been put in execution, perhaps he never would have made the glorious conquest of Xavier, who being at that time a resident of the college of St. Barbara, and of the most extreme susceptibility in all that concerned the honor of a gentleman, would never have condescended to occupy the same chamber with him, nor even to listen to a man publicly branded with infamy.

Thus God turned to the increase of His own glory and to the credit of Ignatius, the very methods chosen by his enemies for injuring both. The opinion of a man so highly esteemed as the Rector—an opinion expressed with such public demonstrations of respect—could not fail to attract universal esteem and admiration towards Ignatius, and greatly to increase the number of his disciples. John Peña, who had raised this storm against him, afterwards learned to cherish and venerate him as a saint. The same effect was produced upon Moscoso and De Vallò, professors in the college, and one still more striking upon Martial, a doctor of theology, who becoming more intimate with Ignatius, and daily acquiring from him fresh knowledge upon the most sublime subjects, became persuaded that one who without having studied, was already so marvellously skilled in theology, must have been taught by God himself; and for this reason, he offered to admit him as doctor of theology, before he had entirely terminated his other courses. It is true that Ignatius refused to consent to this, but the circumstance may suffice to enable us to appreciate at its true value the sentence passed in Alcalà, by which Ignatius was prohibited from speaking

in public until he had become a theologian; he whose instructions were so valuable, that even before studying theology, he was considered by such a man as Martial worthy of being received as master and doctor.

However, the position of Ignatius was now greatly altered. His zeal and labors were no longer confined within the walls of the college; and, although, from his imperfect knowledge of the French language, he could not employ himself so actively as in Spain, he never failed to seize every opportunity of making himself useful to his neighbor. Some anecdotes are related of him in regard to this zealous desire for the welfare of his fellow-men, which are worthy of being held in perpetual remembrance.

A man of depraved habits had become passionately enamored of a married woman, through which criminal love his life was exposed to constant peril. No sooner was this circumstance made known to Ignatius, than he resolved to employ his most strenuous exertions in order to ward off the danger, both temporal and eternal, which threatened this miserable man; but he could not succeed in touching his conscience, for it is a peculiarity of the vice which enslaved him, that it darkens the vision to every ray of truth and renders the ear deaf to the most salutary warnings. Ignatius found it necessary to have recourse to other methods. To visit the object of his passion this man had to cross a bridge, thrown over a deep stream; it was then winter and the cold extremely severe. Ignatius, stripping himself of nearly all his clothing, plunged into the water up to his neck, and there awaited the moment of the evening when he was accustomed to pass the bridge. Meanwhile, he conjured the Lord with tears to accept the sufferings which he was enduring for the moral cure of one who, ignorant of the danger of his condition, had no desire to remedy it. At length the

man whom he expected arrived alone, entirely absorbed in his usual thoughts. As soon as Ignatius perceived him, he addressed him in a voice, which though trembling was full of force, and which on this occasion penetrated the heart of the sinner. "Go," said he, "go seek for odious pleasures at the peril of your life and of your immortal soul. As for me, I shall remain here praying to God that I may expiate by my sufferings your unworthy enjoyments. You will find me here on your return; you will find me here every evening, until God, whom I cease not to implore in your behalf, shall put an end to your crimes or to my life." The guilty man shuddered. Affected by these vehement words, and moved to compassion at the sight of sufferings, self-imposed for his sake, he opened his eyes to his danger, changed his course of life, and from that day regarded Ignatius, who had thus delivered him from a double death, as his best and truest friend.

On another occasion, Ignatius, in order to induce a priest to reform his scandalous life, employed a method neither less novel nor less efficacious. His position hardly permitted him to speak freely to this priest, as it might have been considered disrespectful in a layman to find fault with the conduct of an ecclesiastic. After consulting God in prayer, as on similar occasions he never failed to do, he went one Sunday morning to confession, and kneeling at the feet of this unworthy priest, related to him the sins of his whole life, with sentiments of compunction, well calculated to arouse similar feelings in the breast of his hearer. As he continued, God spoke to the heart of this unworthy minister, and made him feel how much more criminal in a priest than in a layman were those faults, of which the penitent accused himself. The sorrow of Ignatius penetrated his heart with intolerable remorse. Had he also been a priest they would

soon have exchanged parts, for hardly was the confession ended, when the unfortunate ecclesiastic felt himself transformed into a true penitent. He revealed to Ignatius the miserable state of his soul; and entreated him, as he had thus contributed to show him his danger, to assist him thenceforward to lead a new life. The Saint, who desired nothing more, earnestly advised him to follow the Spiritual Exercises; and in a short time the exemplary life of the convert offered as salutary an example, as his depraved conduct had hitherto given cause of scandal.

In the two last cases, the zeal of Ignatius had suggested the singular methods by which he was enabled to effect these striking conversions; but there was a third, which happened in Paris, of which it may be said that the means were afforded by the very person whom he desired to convert, or rather were inspired by Divine goodness, which was pleased to operate these wonderful conversions.

Ignatius went one day upon business to the house of an ecclesiastic, a doctor of theology, and found him engaged in playing billiards. He was politely received, and either by way of compliment, or more probably as a jest, the master of the house proposed to play a game with him. Ignatius, who knew nothing of billiards, excused himself upon that plea, but the doctor persisting in his request, his visitor, moved no doubt by an inward inspiration, replied, "Be it so, doctor, I accept your proposal; but poor men like me cannot afford to play for mere amusement, we must have some stake. As I possess nothing in the world but my own person, that shall be mine. If I lose, I shall be bound to serve you for the space of one month, and to obey you in all lawful orders. If I gain, you will obey one order which I shall give you, and which will be greatly for your advantage." God, who had suggested to the one this singular proposal, in-

spired the other to accept it. The game began. Ignatius played with such good fortune, that it was easy to perceive the Lord himself directed his inexperienced hand. His companion lost every point, and began to believe that this astonishing game might be a means of which God made use, in order to arrive at some great result, which he did not yet discern. At length, finding himself conquered, he consented to fulfil the conditions previously agreed upon. Ignatius required him to follow the Spiritual Exercises for one month, and the doctor gathered the fruit which they almost invariably produced; so that he passed from a criminal to an innocent life, and from thence to one still more perfect.

SECOND BOOK.

CHAPTER I.

Ignatius attaches some companions to himself in Paris, with the view of founding a new Order—Means which he employs to draw them to God—First vows or foundation of the Society of Jesus in the Church of Notre Dame de Montmartre—Persecutions which it endured, and protection which it received from the Mother of God—Labors of St. Ignatius and his companions—Storm raised against them in Rome; after which the Order is definitively formed and approved of by the Pope, Paul III., under the title of *Society of Jesus*—Origin of that name.

THE first bonds of friendship which Ignatius formed in Paris, were with a young man named Peter Faber (in French, Lefebvre), born at Villaret in the diocese of Geneva. When scarcely able to walk alone, he was sent by his father into the country, to tend his flocks; and this circumstance, which then appeared the mere result of indigent circumstances, was in truth a special disposition of Divine Providence in regard to the child; since being thus confided to solitude, he was removed from danger, and maintained in that primitive innocence, so rarely preserved unblemished amongst children collected together in cities.

The father of young Faber was a good man. He taught his son the first elements of religion, and in this the child made such rapid progress, as to be soon capable of instructing others. A large stone is still pointed out, upon which, when but six years of age, he would climb up and speak to

the country people upon the mysteries of faith, with so much clearness and grace, that he invariably attracted a large audience. They not only admired his youthful intelligence, but were astonished at this ardent desire of contributing to the salvation of souls, in a child who could hardly have been supposed to know what salvation was. God thus made manifest that he was destined in after days to a very different employment from that of tending flocks; and this premature zeal was a presage of the noble conquests reserved for him. Though he passed his first years in so humble an occupation, the want of cultivation and development did not obscure his intellect. He suffered deeply on the contrary from not having it in his power to devote himself to study, and his constant prayers and entreaties at last produced such an effect upon his father, that fearing lest, through his neglect, these precious dispositions of his son should be thrown away, he made him abandon an employment so unsuited to him, and placed him at college, under the direction of Peter Veliardo. This man, whose life was holy, and whose charity was unbounded, had devoted himself to the laborious task of education, much less for the sake of pecuniary advantages, than in hopes of giving that bias to the minds of the children intrusted to his care, the salutary influence of which usually extends over their whole future life. Thus his instructions embraced all moral and Christian duties, no less than the humanities. One of the methods which he employed in order to infuse the fear and love of God into these young hearts, was to mingle examples of virtue and precepts of morality with all the lessons which he taught. He was always on his guard lest the works of the ancient poets or historians should injure the innocence of his pupils; and as Faber himself was afterwards wont to remark, these authors seemed to become purified as they passed through his lips.

It is easy to conceive the progress necessarily made, both in learning and piety, by such a scholar under such a master. At the age of twelve, animated by a fervent desire to please God, Faber consecrated himself to Him by a vow of perpetual chastity, and bound himself to serve God in a more perfect state of life, without having as yet any distinct idea as to the nature of his vocation. Such enthusiastic resolutions can only suit a soul which, having been long exercised in the practice of virtues of a less elevated order, has become gradually prepared for attaining a more sublime degree of perfection.

As for the humanities, besides the Greek and Latin languages of which Faber was a complete master, he also became a skilful rhetorician; his master could lead him no further. But in order to study philosophy it was necessary for him to leave his father, and the affection of the elder Faber towards a son so deservedly beloved, rendered him strongly opposed to this separation; whilst the want of pecuniary means, indispensable in providing for his son's outfit as a student, was another obstacle, yet more difficult to surmount. But at length all yielded to the will of God, who had not destined Faber to form the consolation of one family only, nor to benefit one obscure corner of the earth; but to be the bearer of reformation and salvation to many lands; and therefore it pleased Him to impart so much force to the arguments of Dom George Faber, the Prior of a Carthusian monastery, and a near relative of the family, that he succeeded in persuading the father to consent to every sacrifice in order to send the young man to finish his studies in Paris, where, at that period, both sacred and profane learning shone in their brightest lustre.

There he had as master of philosophy that same John Peña, who was also the teacher of Ignatius, and who con-

ceived a strong attachment to Faber, both on account of the innocence of his conduct, and his simple and amiable manners, as well as for the solidity of his judgment, and that unwearied application to study which soon raised him above all his fellow-scholars. Sometimes it happened that the master himself, in order to throw light upon some obscure and difficult passage of Aristotle, would have recourse to him, as the best interpreter of the philosophic meaning. His course terminated, Faber received the grade of Doctor on the same day as Francis Xavier; and it was at the very time that he was about to commence the study of theology, that Ignatius entered the College of St. Barbara to study philosophy. But the brilliant pupil of Peña wished to pass a second year in investigating thoroughly this science of his predilection.*

* In the archives of this college, we find on the register of the *Nation Francaise* that *Pierre Lefebvre* received the grade of Doctor on the 15th of March, 1529; but as the year then began in Paris on Easter-Day, the year 1529 corresponds to 1530, according to the present mode of calculation. This is clearly proved by that which is noted on the same register, on the subject of two of the companions of Ignatius; where it is said that Claude Lejay was received master of arts, on Saturday the 6th of March, 1534, and Simon Rodriguez on the 14th of March, 1535, on the Tuesday of the second week in Lent; which is only correct according to our present way of counting, in the years 35 and 36 of that century, in the first of which the 6th of March falls in fact upon a Saturday; and in the second, the 14th is a Tuesday. I have thought it right to make these observations, both in order to throw some light upon the dates of that period, as well as to prove the correctness of those which concern St. Ignatius. In February 1528, he arrived in Paris; and on the following year, he began at St. Remi the course which he terminated in 1533, taking the rank of Doctor on the 13th of March. Then he entered upon theology, continued that study for four years, and terminated it in 1537, as we shall relate in the sequel.

Ignatius having arrived at the College of St. Barbara, to begin his studies in philosophy, was confided by Peña to the care of Peter Faber, who was to serve in some measure as his tutor, and to explain to him in private, the lessons which he heard in the classes. It was an advantage to both parties. The relations thus established between them, led to a more intimate acquaintance, from whence reciprocal attachment and esteem soon arose, for each possessed the species of merit which the other most loved and admired. Ignatius could not have desired to meet with one more capable of serving his designs; nor Faber with a friend more according to his own heart. Yet their position was somewhat peculiar. Ignatius felt how useful Faber might be to him in the work which he meditated, whilst Faber experienced an absolute necessity to have Ignatius for his spiritual director. Yet notwithstanding this mutual attraction, they remained for a long period mutually reserved; their acquaintance assuming no symptom of intimacy. It was Faber who first broke through these trammels by opening his heart to his holy pupil, and seeking in him a refuge from the grief which oppressed him.

He was at this time the constant victim of violent temptations, the more painful for him in proportion to the purity of his conscience, and in consequence of his vow, which was ever present to his mind. His will repulsed his thoughts with energy, yet he shuddered at the idea of a blemish even in thought. Wishing to chastise his body, and bring it into subjection, he in vain imposed the severest penances upon himself; then to a desire for other sensual pleasures, a temptation to gluttony was superadded. Faber did not succumb under any one of these temptations, but his very efforts led him into danger by engendering thoughts of vain-glory in his mind. The victory was therefore as dangerous as the combat, and to fill up the measure of his spiritual misery, he

was violently assailed by scruples of conscience. This decided him to confide the necessities and sorrows of his soul to Ignatius, and to entreat the assistance of his prayers, and the support of his councils. As scruples when they reach a certain height, usually induce strange resolutions, he confessed to him that in order to deliver himself from the images which fatigued his mind, he had formed the determination of separating himself entirely from the objects which gave rise to these vain imaginings; of retiring into solitude where he could neither see nor be seen, and of living upon herbs, until his former peace of mind was restored. But nothing of all this was needful in order to bring him off conqueror in the combat; and Ignatius, who had been put to still severer trials, was able to point out to Faber the surest and simplest means of victory. We carry along with us our most terrible enemies even into a desert, and the experience of St. Jerome joined to that of many others, teaches us, that in the caves of Palestine we may bring back to our view the theatres of Rome, and that where the eye can trace nothing but the footsteps of wild beasts, the imagination may bring dangerous and seductive objects before us. Nor is the most rigorous fasting always an infallible remedy against the most miserable temptations; for we have seen man exhausted with austerities, yet not freed from the attacks of the common enemy of mankind.

Ignatius led forward his new pupil by those paths which his own experience and spiritual knowledge suggested to him; and the means which he employed, joined to the prayers which he unceasingly offered in his behalf, soon restored peace to his soul. The simple confession of his condition had even sufficed to commence his cure, whether it was that this act of humility was in itself a remedy, or that the spirit of darkness, seeing himself discovered, lost his accustomed boldness.

The cares which Ignatius bestowed upon Faber, had not his present necessities for their sole object. He also hoped that by constantly leading him onwards to a higher degree of perfection, he might inspire him with the desire of embracing a state of life the holiness of which would prepare him for uniting himself to him, and aiding in his lofty projects. And first, he prescribed, in order to repulse the different temptations which assailed him, the practice of those private examinations of the heart, which assist us to uproot one by one the smallest fibres of that self-love, which grows and multiplies within our souls, as weeds spring up and abound in the fields. He taught him how to defend himself by interior acts, and yet without ever attributing the victory to himself, even though sure that the evil inclinations of his nature had no share in these temptations, and that the demon alone made them arise in his soul. As for scruples, Ignatius, who had bought very dear the art of curing this great evil, soon succeeded in restoring Faber to such tranquillity of mind, that he thought fit to advise him to make a general confession of his whole life. His wish was to prepare him for the future, to induce him to make resolutions to lead a life of greater perfection than he had hitherto done; and, according to Ignatius, nothing conducts us so surely to this end, as thus bringing our whole life before our eyes, and maturely weighing all our actions and all our faults.

It is a fine spectacle to observe these two souls thus penetrating into each other, thus perfecting each other under the all-powerful action of divine grace. One of the most efficient means employed by Ignatius for the spiritual progress of his friend, consisted in spiritual conversations, in which they both found so much happiness, that they seemed no longer to comprehend any other language but that which treated of God and of heaven. It even became necessary to curb these pious

transports. When they met together in the evening to rehearse the lessons of the day, hardly had they begun, when a word escaping from the one or the other, seemed like a spark falling upon dry branches, to kindle within them so much love for spiritual things, that the hours of the night passed away with the rapidity of a moment; for when the soul is thus sweetly absorbed in rapturous thoughts, it forgets itself and all external objects. The studies of Ignatius suffered from this; he did not gather from these conferences the profit which he had hoped for; therefore they made an agreement never to speak upon spiritual subjects during the hours set apart for the rehearsal of the lessons of philosophy, and this convention they faithfully observed.

Ignatius thus passed two years in cultivating the soul of his companion, and at length seeing that it was capable of rising to the most elevated thoughts, disclosed to him one day in confidence, his project of going to the Holy Land, and devoting his labors and life to the conversion of the infidels, a project worthy of a heart entirely given up to God.

Faber, who until then had fluctuated amidst a thousand doubts and uncertainties as to the state of life which he should in future adopt, felt himself internally moved as it were by the Spirit of God, which drew him towards Ignatius, and throwing himself into his arms, he conjured him to receive him as his associate in this noble and perilous enterprise. He was thus the first of the children of Ignatius, and as worthy of such a father as he was of such a son. Faber, being then desirous to attach himself henceforward solely to him who had brought him forth in Jesus Christ, wished first to take leave of his father according to nature, and returned to his native place, where he found that his mother was already dead. He remained there eight months, rather because his presence was productive of great spiritual advan-

tage to others, than for his own consolation or that of his family; then having received, together with the paternal benediction, permission to dispose of himself absolutely, and to give himself up entirely to the service of God, he returned to Paris carrying nothing away with him, and placed himself in the hands of Ignatius in such a complete state of destitution, that he could not continue his studies without the aid of alms which Ignatius received for him.

On the return of Faber to Paris, Ignatius judged that the time had arrived when it would be profitable for him to follow the Exercises. Until then he had delayed giving him this advice, waiting till Faber, entirely disengaged from all worldly ties, and freed from all earthly cares, should be enabled to experience their salutary influence in full force, and be led forward to that perfection of which his soul was so capable. The manner in which he followed them was truly admirable. He quitted the College of St. Barbara, where he occupied the same chamber with Ignatius and Francis Xavier, and retired to a poor house in St. James's street: it was winter, and the cold that year was so severe in Paris, that the Seine was crossed in carriages. Faber, who was always incited to contemplation by the sight of the heavens, passed whole hours in prayer, in the middle of the night, in a little court, covered with ice and snow. This, which would have caused insupportable suffering to any other man, did not even produce a moment of distraction in him; the supernatural ardor which burned within him, so completely annihilated the painful sensation of external cold. He resolved not even to look at a fire whilst he remained in this retreat; insomuch that a certain quantity of coal having been placed there for his use, he employed it for a very different purpose;—he used it as a couch and would occasionally throw himself on it for a few hours, rather of suffering than repose.

To all these mortifications he added one not less severe, viz., an-uninterrupted fast of six whole days, during which time the bread of angels was his only food. His intension was to continue it still longer; but Ignatius guessed from the livid pallor of his countenance, that he must be practising some great austerity, and having assured himself that it was so, and after having obtained inspiration from heaven by prayer, he ordered Faber to renounce his self-imposed penance that very day—to take some food, and to kindle a fire. The first fruits which Faber gathered from this voluntary fast, was to be ever after freed from a violent appetite, which, whether from a necessity of nature, or from sensual inclination, had hitherto rendered fasting extremely painful to him.

Having terminated the Exercises, he resolved to take Holy Orders, for which this retreat had served as a preparation. He did so, receiving every spiritual consolation; renewed the offering which he had already made of himself to the Lord, consecrating himself to the divine service, not only as priest but as victim, should he be judged worthy of dying for His love.

He celebrated his first Mass on the day of St. Magdalen, towards whom he had a particular devotion; and afterwards continued to pursue his studies in mystic and scholastic theology.

The second disciple of Ignatius was Francis Xavier, whose soul was capable of comprehending all the sublime ideas of his master. Through him our Saint might deem himself honored, as having been the director and guide of an apostle. Xavier always acknowledged his debt to Ignatius, and when he gave himself up to his immense evangelical labors in the East, confessed that all his strength was due to the spirit which Ignatius had infused into him, and of which he was but the instrument, moved by a superior

power. Had Ignatius never gained over to God but this one soul, he might have esteemed himself fortunate, like him who, finding a pearl of great price, even if forced to sell all he possesses in order to obtain it, impoverishes in order to enrich himself, and compensates by one single stroke for the thousand small losses which he has experienced. Thus Stephen, by obtaining the conversion of St. Paul alone, first the persecutor, and then the teacher of nations; he who reunited so many barbarous voices in one concert of praise to the honor of Jesus crucified; made a more noble conquest than if, traversing the whole universe, he had gained over thousands of souls to God.

✓ The castle from which Xavier took his name, is situated in Navarre, at the distance of about one day's journey from Pampeluna, where Ignatius received the wound which proved so salutary for his soul. Although his father was of the family of the Jassi, he and his brothers took the name of their mother, Doña Maria of Azpilqueta and Xavier, in order to preserve to their posterity the remembrance of one of the most ancient and illustrious houses of Navarre. Formerly known under the name of Asnarez, the family assumed that of Xavier, when King Theobald, to reward their services to his crown, made them the gift of this castle, which they possessed for more than three hundred years.

Francis Xavier was born in the year 1497, and like St. Ignatius, was the last of several brothers, but infinitely more fortunate than they, for their lives were devoted to ambitious pursuits; his, to contempt of the world. God had prepared him for this from his earliest years, by giving him inclinations entirely opposed to those of his brothers. The only taste they showed was for the profession of arms, whilst Xavier, on the contrary, loved nothing but study, following in this respect in the footsteps of his father, a distinguished

man of letters, auditor of the royal council, and greatly beloved by John III., king of Navarre. Towards the year 1527, Francis went to Paris, studied philosophy, and professed it publicly for three years and a half, with the greatest success. During this period, the companion of his studies and even of his chamber at the College of St. Barbara, was Peter Faber. Surely it was already an astonishing thing, to see this Xavier, with his proud heart, and his illustrious descent, sharing the room of this poor peasant, but lately occupied with the care of his flocks. How can we fail to recognize in this a particular disposition of Providence, which thus secured to the young Navarrese a companion capable of inspiring him with a sincere love of virtue, in the midst of the free life led by the students? Modesty was indeed a natural gift in Xavier, and it must have been strong within him; since young, ardent, and free, amiable and graceful in his manners, he always kept himself on his guard against the vices of his age, and lived and died as pure as he was at the moment of his birth.

On the other hand, his thoughts had not yet risen beyond the honors of this world, and they appeared to him the most noble objects which a generous heart could aspire to. Therefore, when Ignatius was associated with him as a companion, the young nobleman seeing him show an equal contempt for esteem and for insults, and clothe himself in so poor and abject a manner, abhorred as the indication of a mean spirit, that which was, in fact, the effect of the most sublime humility. Thus he began by despising him, and looking upon him with a species of disgust. In vain Ignatius addressed the most salutary exhortations to Xavier, entreating him to commune with himself; bitter raillery or proud disdain were the only answers he obtained. But on the other hand, with that admirable knowledge of the minds of men, with which Ig-

natus was endowed, he had immediately discerned in Xavier one of those strong souls, from which we must never expect common things, and which, incapable of degrading themselves for any temporal interest, always deviate from the path traced out by the multitude. But when once they lose sight of the earth, and turn their eyes towards eternal things, it is they who soar above all others in their lofty flight.

The greater the distaste which his fellow-countrymen evinced towards him, the more Ignatius endeavored to win his affections, in order that he might afterwards arouse within his heart a desire to serve God. The very ambition of Xavier assisted him in attaining this object; for Ignatius seeing his ardent thirst for distinction in literature and mental labor, sought out pupils and hearers for him, brought them to him himself, and on all occasions showed himself anxious for his glory. The noble soul of Xavier, drawn towards Ignatius by this conduct, he began to regard him in a different light, to consider him as a sincere friend, and gradually to treat him with confidence and familiarity. He knew besides the noble origin of Ignatius, and that he also had formerly been intoxicated with the vain fumes of glory. In a little while, reflecting upon this great change, which the love of God alone had effected, he began to think that it might have proceeded from some other cause than cowardice or meanness of spirit. He who thus considered the world as unworthy of occupying his thoughts, must surely be raised very far above it. Gradually, sanctity began to assume a new aspect in the eyes of the student, and he discovered that the things which are of God open a vast field of contemplation to an elevated mind, and inspire it with thoughts even more generous than his own had hitherto been. Meanwhile, Ignatius never failed to profit by every opportunity which he could find, of making an impression upon Xavier, especially

upon those points where he considered himself strongest, but where in reality his chief weakness lay. Often he would make those words of Our Saviour resound in the ears of the young student; "What shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? *Quid prodest homini, si mundum universum lucretur, animæ veri suæ detrimentum patiatur?*" "Don Francis," said he, "if we are to expect no other life than this here below, if we are born to die, and not to live eternally, then you triumph and I surrender. You are wise in thinking only of the things of this world, and in endeavoring to obtain all those which are still wanting to you. I am mad in advising you, on the contrary, to renounce all you possess. But if this short life is only a passage leading to another which is immortal, which is endless, then compare them—the one with eternity, the other with fleeting time, in order to comprehend by the proportion which you will find between one moment and interminable ages, the importance of making a provision for the one, rather than for the other. You weary yourself in laboring to obtain in this world a felicity which the terrestrial and grovelling ideas that now appear to you noble and generous, represent as true happiness; but do you hope, with all your efforts, ever to succeed in obtaining any thing more precious than Paradise—more durable than Eternity?—Yet Paradise and Eternity are destined for you! And if you wish to gain them, who can prevent you? When you possess them, who shall deprive you of them? Why then so much labor in order to procure earthly happiness for a soul whose origin is celestial, and transitory enjoyment for a heart capable of loving and possessing God himself, for ever! A blind man leans upon the first object which he meets, because he can see nothing beyond it; but he who can contemplate the firmament, does not fix his eyes upon the ground; and

esteeming the earth at its true value, cannot find it worthy of making him forget Heaven, and perilling his soul. Even could this world bestow upon you in one moment its most seducing gifts, and show you as by a flash of lightning all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, could you possess them longer than during the short time you have to live? And were you to live a hundred centuries, would not the last hour of their last day arrive at length? And if you the ephemeral possessor of a middling degree of good, have deprived yourself of God himself for all eternity, shall you have gained in the exchange? Who could enumerate all those who have been rich, powerful, honored? yet their grandeur, their possessions were only lent them, and they fatigued themselves in preserving and increasing that which they were at length obliged to abandon. Did any one of them ever carry away with him a vestige of his riches and power? Had he at least carried away one slave, a single one of his slaves, were it the vilest, the most miserable of them all! Had he preserved but one shred of purple, to show beyond the tomb, that he had been a king when upon earth! But, arrived upon the threshold of eternity, all have looked back, and have beheld the wealth and grandeur which were still theirs, already seeking new masters, whilst they were advancing alone, not to exchange them for new treasures, but to receive the reward of their works! By speaking thus to you, I would not narrow the circle of your thoughts, nor abase their loftiness; I would on the contrary render them vaster, more sublime; for I call those *narrow*, which, notwithstanding all their vain efforts to extend themselves, can embrace but a short space of time; I call *abject*, those which remain fixed upon the earth. Should you obtain everything which you now desire, you would neither be happy nor satisfied.

"Oh no! your heart is not so narrow that the whole world can suffice for it; nothing, nothing but God can ever fill it. But in Him you will find all that your soul most ardently desires; then, when you contemplate this world which now dazzles you, and compare its happiness with yours, the first will appear like a drop of water compared with the ocean; like a faint glimmer of light, eclipsed by the appearance of a sun, resplendent in immortal beauty. Francis, you have a solid judgment. I leave you therefore to pronounce yourself which is most advantageous; to say now to all the joys of this world, *Quid prodest?* what have I to do with you? or to enjoy them at the risk of repeating eternally with the unfortunate victims in hell, these other words; *Quid profuit superbia, aut divitiarum, quid contulit nobis?*"*

Such were the lessons of evangelical philosophy which Ignatius offered to Xavier for his meditation, in order to induce him to partake one day in the holy folly of the Cross, which laughs at the wisdom of the world. And the disciple soon became worthy of his master, for God, who dictated the words of the one, made them penetrate into the heart of the other. The first reflections had troubled him; a usual effect of the combat which arises between nature and grace, between vice and virtue; but a salutary crisis uprooted from his heart every terrestrial and worldly thought which lingered there. Ignatius would have wished him at that time to follow the Exercises, but the duties of his office did not permit this. He therefore replaced them as much as possible by conversations upon the fundamental maxims of salvation, which were a kind of spiritual milk for Xavier, preparing him for the reception of more substantial nourish-

* Sap. 5.

ment. The great word of Ignatius, *quid prodest*, of which he had felt all the force, since it was the lever which raised him above the world, afterwards became in his mouth one of the most powerful means for producing upon others the effect which he himself had experienced from it.

In later days, in a letter written from the Indies to Simon Rodriguez, Xavier expresses a great desire that the zeal of John III. for the propagation of the Faith in the East, should be excited by the frequent repetition of these few words: *quid prodest*, &c. "If I could believe," said he, "that the king would not repulse my humble and faithful counsels, I would entreat him to meditate daily, were it but for a quarter of an hour, on that divine sentence, praying to God that he would grant him grace to understand its full meaning and interior sentiment. I would that he terminated all his prayers by these words. It is time to labor to draw him out of error, for the hour approaches more nearly than he believes, when the King of Kings will demand of him an account of his administration. *Redde rationem villicationis tuae*. Occupy yourself therefore in endeavoring to induce him to send the assistance necessary for the conversion of the infidels!"

But the world and hell could not, without trembling, lose such a man as Xavier. They foresaw that he would drag from their hands a multitude of souls, and would open to the Gospel the gates of those far distant regions, where no one had yet caused its holy light to penetrate. They would not therefore wait until they should have to combat Ignatius and his disciple together, but begin by using all their endeavors to separate them; for the former alone was already an enemy too much to be dreaded. The spirit of darkness persuaded Don John, the father of Xavier, that by permitting him to continue his studies he entailed upon himself a

useless expense, from which his son would reap no benefit. But to these fatal suggestions the Lord opposed the advice of a holy maiden, and through her means their evil influence was turned aside. Xavier had a sister, Doña Magdalen Xavier, who had formerly occupied at court the high position of first lady of honor to the queen, but who had afterwards resigned her office, and retired into the Convent of Santa Clara at Gandia, where she died in the odor of sanctity—an opinion confirmed by many favors from Heaven; one of the most remarkable of which was the probable inspiration by which she foresaw the great services which were one day to be rendered to the Church by her brother Francis. Indeed she wrote to her father, that if the glory of God was dear to him, he ought, far from recalling his son, to retain him in Paris until he had entirely concluded his theological studies, “for,” added she, impressively, “God has chosen him to be His apostle in the Indies, and one of the firmest pillars of the Church.”

The letter of this faithful servant of the Lord was long preserved, and read by many persons, who deposed to it at the process of canonization, as ocular witnesses of its contents. Don John Xavier, confiding in the words of Doña Magdalen, renounced all idea of interrupting the studies of his son; but failing in this attempt, the Enemy of man's salvation raised up dangers of another and not less grave nature. One Michael Navarro, a man of low origin, and yet baser soul, who lived at the expense of Xavier, observing his growing attachment to Ignatius, foresaw that he would end by consecrating himself as he had done to a life of humility and poverty; he therefore feared that he himself would thus lose the support upon which he depended, and also that the glory of an illustrious family would be compromised. He resolved to secure at a single stroke his own

livelihood and the honor of the noble house of Xavier, by taking the life of Ignatius. He would have succeeded but too well in this fatal design, had God not stretched forth His arm to defend the life of His servant, and to avert from Xavier the misfortune of losing such a master. As the assassin, armed with a dagger, ascended the staircase with stealthy steps, in order to fall unawares upon Ignatius, who had already retired to his chamber, he heard a terrible voice pronounce these words: "Whither goest thou, wretch? and what dost thou design to do?" Seized with terror, he rushed trembling into the presence of Ignatius, and throwing himself at his feet, confessed his odious design, together with the supernatural cause of his repentance, and humbly entreated his forgiveness.

CHAPTER II.

James Lainez, Alphonsus Salmeron, and Nicholas Bobadilla associate themselves to St. Ignatius.

AFTER Francis Xavier, the next disciples of St. Ignatius were two Spaniards of distinguished talents; the first, James Lainez, of Almazan, in the diocese of Siguenza; the other, Alphonsus Salmeron, from the environs of Toledo. The former was twenty-one years of age, the latter eighteen; but both were very far in advance of their age in all learning, whether religious or profane. Lainez was already a professor of theology, and Salmeron possessed a thorough knowledge of the Greek, Latin, and Hebrew tongues. After having studied at Alcalá, they were attracted to Paris, less from the desire of visiting foreign countries, than by the reputation for sanctity acquired by Ignatius. All which they had heard related of him in Alcalá—all that was written from Paris concerning him, inspired them with an earnest wish to study the practical science of spiritual things under so great a master; and they therefore resolved to pass over into France. It pleased God to make known to them that they had in some measure guessed his will; for they had hardly entered Paris, when they saw Ignatius advancing towards them; and although Lainez had never met with him before, yet as he had come in quest of a Saint, he judged from the gait and appearance of Ignatius, that he must be the man he

sought. Heaven had prepared Ignatius to receive him as a pupil, at the same time that it had inspired Lainez to choose him for his master. It was therefore to their mutual satisfaction that Lainez became the friend and companion of the Saint, who beheld with great joy the manner in which God favored his designs, by thus attracting towards him men of so much talent and virtue. This young man was destined not only to be the companion of Ignatius, and his assistant in the foundation of a new religious Order, but even to be his successor in the government of the Society. This is the same Lainez who, after having performed heroic labors in Europe and Africa for the service of the Church, appeared at the Council of Trent, where he excited universal admiration, assisting more than once as theologian from the Holy See, and afterwards refusing the Cardinal's hat, with which Paul III. wished to recompense his merit. He could not, however, avoid accepting the generalship of the Society, when after the death of Ignatius he was elected in his place, as one who walked more closely in the footsteps of the holy Founder, than any of his followers. But a more remarkable fact, and one which redounds still more to his honor, is, that being found worthy, by his learning, merit and superior wisdom, to occupy the first post in the universe, he would in all probability have been raised to the dignity of Sovereign Pontiff, had he not through humility fled in order to escape from that great honor; for after the death of Paul IV. twelve of the most influential Cardinals were of opinion that no one was more worthy than he to bear this weighty charge, although neither Bishop nor Cardinal.

Salmeron made no delay in following the example of his companion. They were together admitted to the Exercises of St. Ignatius, and engaged in them with so much fervor, that after having kept the three first days as a complete fast,

Lainez continued it for fifteen more, on bread and water, adding other austerities, such as the hair shirt, the discipline, and a wooden board for his only place of repose.

God employed other means to lead a fifth companion to Ignatius, Nicholas Alphonso, surnamed Bobadilla, from the place of his birth, near Palencia. He had taught the humanities at Valladolid with great success, until the desire of studying philosophy led him to Paris, where his poverty placed him under the protection of Ignatius; for being unable to provide for his own expenses, and knowing that the esteem in which Ignatius was held, procured him the means of distributing abundant alms, he solicited his aid, and obtained advantages of a much more important nature than those for which he sought. Besides the material aid which he received from Ignatius, a rich treasure of holy counsels and spiritual consolation was bestowed upon him; whereupon he gave himself up entirely to the influence of the Saint, followed his Spiritual Exercises, and became his faithful friend and companion for life.

Before making acquaintance with the three last of whom we have spoken, Ignatius had become united in strict friendship with Simon Rodriguez d'Azevedo, a native of Berzella, in the diocese of Viseo, in Portugal. It would seem, indeed, that on his death-bed Ægidius Gonsalvez, the father of Rodriguez, had foreseen the destiny of his son. Having called his children around him, to receive his dying blessing, he began with the eldest; but suddenly turning his eyes upon Simon, then a very young child, carried in the arms of his mother, Catharine d'Azevedo; "Madam," said he, "I recommend that child to you. Bring him up with particular care, for God destines him to do great things for His glory." From that time, the mother of Simon regarded him as already consecrated to God; and the Lord, for whose

service alone he was educated, bestowed upon him the most angelic innocence and the greatest apostolic zeal. The first enabled him to surmount many dangerous attacks upon his virtue from women who became enamored of him; while the second led him to conceive, like Ignatius, the desire of visiting the Holy Land, and devoting his life to the conversion of the infidels. This was in fact his motive for joining Ignatius, with whom he maintained friendly relations before Lainez and Salmeron were known to him. One day when opening his whole heart to Ignatius, and confiding all his intentions to him, he found that the same desires and the same projects had been formed by the Saint. Upon discovering this conformity in their views, Rodriguez could no longer doubt that God himself had inspired the king of Portugal with the idea of sending him at his own expense to study in the university of Paris, for the sole purpose of placing him within the reach of Ignatius, and of making him the partner of his labors. He no longer hesitated to become his pupil and companion, and was yet more fully confirmed in this design, when after having followed the Spiritual Exercises, he recognized with still greater certainty that the will of God with regard to him was, that he should adopt the state of life projected by his new director.

Such were the first six disciples whom the patriarch collected together in Paris, and three others joined him afterwards. There was yet another whom he ardently desired to obtain from God, but his wish was not gratified until some years had elapsed. This was Jerome Nadal, a native of Majorca. He resisted a long while before being able to come to the determination of following the Saint; and as his history is particularly connected with that of Ignatius, I shall relate it here, to avoid breaking the thread of my narrative.

Jerome, in order to perform great deeds in the service of God, only required the assistance of an apostle like Ignatius, who in fact used every means to attract him, as did also Faber and Lainez, with their utmost zeal; but deaf to their counsels, he firmly defended himself against them. They also employed for the same purpose, Emanuel Miona, the Director of Ignatius, who had been very successful in drawing many souls to God. Nadal gave him the opportunity of exercising his charity towards him, by choosing him for his Confessor; but when he saw that he also, like the others, exhorted him to embrace a state of life which he had already rejected, having no other arguments to use, he replied ironically, "How can you think me obliged to take a resolution which you do not follow yourself? Since it is so great an advantage to be attached to Ignatius, first give me the example, and then you may draw me after you—then I may at least begin to think of it."

Ignatius deeply regretted to see a young man who might have been so useful in the service of God, losing himself in the tumult of the world; and disappointed in his hopes, he resolved to try what influence he himself might have over him. He therefore went one day in search of Nadal, and leading him to an old and unfrequented church, entered it along with him. There, having no fear of being interrupted, Ignatius began to talk with him upon spiritual subjects, and showed him a long and forcible letter which he had just written to one of his nephews, exhorting him to exchange the yoke of the world for that of Jesus Christ. To give him a proof of perfect confidence, he proceeded to read it to him from beginning to end, insisting, as he went along, upon certain truths of especial importance, from which he hoped that Nadal would derive as much profit as his nephew. They begun in fact to touch his heart, but when Jerome felt

this he resisted his emotion, and combated the Lord with His own weapons. Taking the holy Gospel from his pocket, and showing it to Ignatius, "To this book," said he, "I keep firm; it is sufficient for me; if you have nothing better to offer me I shall not follow you, which I plainly see is your desire. I know not as yet what you are, either you or your companions; and what you intend to do, I know still less." And with these words he quitted him, and for the future avoided every opportunity of meeting either Ignatius or his friends, so fearful was he of yielding to their influence. Nadal afterwards returned to his native place, and lived there for more than ten years, always uneasy and vacillating, like a man dissatisfied with the half Christian life which he led, and yet wanting courage to embrace a more perfect one. The Gospel alone was no longer sufficient for him, as he had formerly said to Ignatius, since he would have wished an angel to descend from Heaven to explain it, and to make known to him clearly that our Lord's invitation to take up the cross and follow Him, was also addressed to himself. Such is usually the punishment of those who despise the warnings which are sent them from Heaven by the ministry of the servants of God; they vainly desire supernatural admonition; and while awaiting it, remain in the miserable servitude of the children of the world.

However, a time arrived when Jerome Nadal had recourse to the counsels of a certain anchorite named Anthony, whom he regarded as a Saint. His advice at first only induced him to adopt the salutary habit of devoting some moments of each day to mental prayer. It is true that the profit which he derived from this exercise was not entirely limited to a desire for his own salvation, for he began to form a project for associating to himself some men, capable by their learning of making themselves useful to others.

He did not remark that they might have shown him the Bible, as he did to Ignatius, and told him that they desired no other guide to perfection, than which, in truth, a better could not be found.

In the mean time, the Society of Jesus was founded, and already extended as far as the Indies; from whence Francis Xavier addressed letters to Ignatius and his companions in Europe, and spoke to them of the thousands of heathen whom he had brought to the knowledge of the true Faith. It pleased God, that a copy of one of these letters should arrive at Majorca, and that after passing from hand to hand, it should fall into those of Nadal, who eagerly perused it. He saw that the Xavier, whom he had known in Paris as one of the companions of Ignatius, had become nothing less than an apostle. Learning, moreover, from the same letter, that the Society now formed a new Order, approved of by the Sovereign Pontiff, he remembered what he had said to Ignatius some years before, and exclaimed with animation, "Oh! here is indeed a great work!" and without any delay, came to the resolution of setting off for Rome. Yet he had then no other intention but that of seeing Ignatius once more, and receiving from him some counsels which might be beneficial to his spiritual welfare. Therefore when James Lainez and Jerome Domenechi proposed that he should join them in following the Spiritual Exercises, he complained of it to Ignatius, regarding their proposal as a snare to draw him into the Society, and believing that he possessed neither the talents nor virtues necessary for making himself useful in that state of life.

The Saint reassured him, and even encouraged him to follow the Exercises; but as to the idea of joining the Society, "Do not occupy your mind about it," said he; "it must come from God; and were He to inspire you with the

desire of doing so, He would know in what manner you could be usefully employed." During the whole course of the Exercises, Nadal endured long and painful conflicts with himself, for he had commenced them with the fixed resolution of yielding to no inward emotion, and of awaiting some supernatural warning, before deciding upon his vocation. But God, who called him to become one of the Society, would give him no other sign of His will, but those inspirations which secretly speak to the heart, and which were not wanting to him. He combated then against God, and against himself, and constantly discussed the reasons for and against joining Ignatius. But having arrived during the course of the Exercises, at the meditation of *The two Standards*, he confessed himself conquered at the very moment when he appeared furthest from being so. Having thoroughly examined the motives which were to decide him to follow the banner of Christ, he experienced such perplexity of mind, such heart-rending agitation, that neither head nor heart could longer endure such agony, and he was ready to give up every thing in despair; when, in the middle of a night which he had devoted to painful reflection, it pleased the Lord to cast upon him one of those glances of peace which shed calmness and serenity wherever they fall. Nothing more was wanting to dissipate the gloom, and to appease the tempest which had distracted the soul of Nadal. Instead of that sombre melancholy which had until then agitated his mind, it was inundated with such sweet consolation, that during a moment of delightful meditation in the presence of God, he took a pen and wrote these words: "I now acknowledge, that the reasons which have induced me during so long a period to combat against myself, and which have prevented me from attaching myself to the service of God, do not even deserve an effort on my part to refute them.

On the contrary, all which hitherto disinclined me to it, now attracts and consoles me; for, after a strict examination, I have been enabled to comprehend that self-love and the rebellion of nature had alone caused me to combat and doubt. I see the will of God so much the more evidently in my present determination, that it is equally repugnant to my senses and to the world: neither can comprehend or relish the Spirit of God and his reign in our souls. For this reason, neither the troubles which till now I have undergone, nor the severest misfortunes by which a man can be overwhelmed, nor any sufferings invented by the demons themselves, can turn me from the resolution which I now take in the name of the Most Holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, to follow the rules of the Gospel, and to keep the vows and engagements of the Society of Jesus. I am ready to do all that may be required of me, in conformity to these vows, which I here pronounce with fear and respect, but with entire confidence in the mercy of God, from whom I have received so many blessings. It is with my whole soul, with my whole power, and with my whole will, that I bind myself by these vows. To God be the glory! Amen. 23d day of November—18th of the *Exercises*.

This promise, so solemnly made by Nadal to God, he faithfully performed, and in accordance with the words of Ignatius, employments were never wanting to him, to the great benefit of Italy, Sicily, Spain, Portugal, and Africa, where he gave himself up to immense labors for the salvation of souls; labors which were crowned with the most consolatory success. After having refused the first glory of contributing, with Ignatius, to lay the foundations of his Order, and to establish its Constitutions, he had at least the second; that of having assisted him in the government of the Society, and of having carried and made known throughout the greatest part of Europe the spirit of its legislation.

CHAPTER III.

St. Ignatius proposes to his companions that they should adopt a uniform system of life—First vows pronounced by Ignatius and his companions in the Church of Our Lady of Montmartre.

THE moment had now arrived in which Ignatius, having collected together a truly chosen band of men, filled with zeal and courage, was enabled, in unison with them, to lay the foundation of the great work which he had so long meditated. But to bring this about it was necessary that they should decide to unite amongst themselves for the same object, as each individually was already united to him in intention. Until now there had been no communication between his followers, and each believed himself alone attached to Ignatius. To lead them to a discovery calculated to afford them as much surprise as consolation, and before binding them at the same time to God, to himself, and to each other, he prescribed to them the exercise of prayer, fasting, and other penances, to be practised until a certain day which he fixed upon. During that interval they were also to reflect, and to decide upon the state of life which should appear to them most conducive to the glory of God, and the salvation of men; after which they were to come to Ignatius, and separately communicate their resolutions to him. Then, added he, they would find that not alone should each march towards this noble goal; then their companions should be made known to them.

The time passed by—and having fulfilled the prescribed works, they all arrived on the appointed day, to give their answer to Ignatius. Each ardently desired to become acquainted with his associates in this great enterprise. When they were all assembled, Ignatius, Peter Faber, Francis Xavier, James Lainez, Alphonsus Salmeron, Nicholas Bobadilla, and Simon Rodriguez, they could not refrain from shedding tears of emotion and joy; and all prostrated themselves, to adore and thank the Lord.

There was, in this assembly, such a union of merit and talents, that each individual considered himself unworthy to form a part of it.

After a short prayer they rose, and Ignatius spoke:

“Heaven has chosen you,” said he, “from amongst many others, for enterprises of no ordinary importance. In the depths of my heart I have the assurance that it has done so for the salvation of men. In beholding such companions of your labors, how greatly ought your courage to be inflamed, and your confidence to surpass that with which your own zeal and your desire of serving God, had hitherto inspired you; for remark, I beseech you, that if each one of you individually was already capable of great deeds for the glory of God and his Church,—what strength each will receive in the union of all your efforts, when, bound together, you will form but one body and one soul! what fruits may you not expect from this junction, for the common good of all! You have had the time that was necessary for reflection—you must now decide. As for me, my only desire is, by God’s help, to conform my life to the example of Jesus Christ. None more perfect, no surer model for imitation, will ever be found. Must he not be the best of men, who comes closest to this Divine Model? Now, the Saviour was not satisfied with his own personal sanctity; he spent his life, he suffered death,

for the salvation of the world. Therefore, as far as my weakness makes it possible, I aspire to imitate him in these two points, by laboring for my own perfection, and for the salvation of my brethren. I am well aware, that were we to shut ourselves up in the depths of our own consciences, and enjoy God in the holy delights of contemplation, we should pass a less fatiguing life, one more exempt from danger, more peaceful, in short, more agreeable. But ought we to prefer our own convenience to the interests of God's glory, which cannot receive greater increase than by the salvation of the souls to whom our Saviour has consecrated his labors, his sufferings, and his death? Can we ourselves be consumed with divine love without endeavoring to revive the ardor of lukewarm hearts? Can we be enlightened with divine knowledge, and not endeavor to illuminate with it the eyes of the blind? Can we walk in the way that leads to heaven without stretching out a helping hand to those who have wandered away from the road? Shall I fear to lose some portion of the gifts of Heaven by communicating them to others, or to swerve from the right path by leading my brethren there? On the contrary, were I even to consider my own advantage only, should I not find in this an increase of merit and honor? But why should I speak to you of interest, or of personal advantages? Does that ardent and generous love which ought to burn within our hearts stop to calculate? Have we not the example of our Lord before our eyes? He who has redeemed our brethren upon Calvary, he desires it, he wills it —and shall not this desire, this wish, be sufficient for us?"

As for the execution of the plans upon which Ignatius was irrevocably decided, he told his friends, that after having in idea traversed the whole world to seek for the place where he might labor with most profit in this noble enterprise, he had not found one where he could hope for more success than

the Holy Land. He himself had formerly visited it, and had not seen without great grief, that land where liberty had been gained for the world, and the redemption effected, now enslaved by Satan and deprived of the fruits of that redemption. It was there then that he wished to carry, in the first instance, the precious seed of the faith. "Oh! how happy should I consider myself," cried he, "could I shed my blood in such a cause, in the very places reddened with the blood of the Saviour!" And as Ignatius spoke his countenance glowed like his heart. He then added, that he was resolved, while awaiting the moment for putting his plans into execution, to consecrate himself solemnly to God, so that he might henceforward belong to him alone; and that in this view, he intended to engage himself by vow to voluntary poverty, to perpetual chastity, and to the performance of a voyage to the Holy Land. After these burning words, there was a momentary silence. Ignatius waited until his companions should manifest their respective resolutions; but all hearts had spoken by his mouth, and in disclosing his sentiments, he had but expressed those of his faithful associates; for God, who had brought them together, had also animated them with the same spirit. "The Holy Land!" Such was the unanimous reply. But the Lord, who discerned in them men capable of still greater things for his glory, destined them for a less narrow sphere, for yet vaster enterprises. To their labors, and to those of their successors, he confided the whole world; and to one of them especially, so large a portion of the globe, that it would have sufficed for the zeal and labors of numerous apostles.

All then applauded the words of Ignatius, and engaged to follow him and share his labors. They then embraced each other, shedding tears of the most cordial affection; and from that moment were so united together by the ties of mu-

tual charity, that they regarded each other as brothers, and felt towards Ignatius all the love and deference due to an elder brother—all the respect which we owe to a parent. After this, the Lord, who willed that their zeal should be wholly directed towards the enterprise to the completion of which they had bound themselves, permitted the same idea to present itself to their minds, and they inquired whether, in the case of their voyage across the seas being prevented, or that on their arrival some unforeseen cause should force them to withdraw, they should not go to other countries, and convert other nations.

After mature deliberation it was agreed that they should wait in Venice for one year, and that if during that period they had found no means of transporting themselves to Palestine, they should consider themselves freed from their vow, should repair to Rome, and presenting themselves to the Sovereign Pontiff, should offer to labor for the salvation of souls, wherever it might please him to send them. But as the greater number of them had not yet terminated their course of theology, which it was absolutely necessary to finish, they agreed to continue their studies in Paris, from the month of July, 1534, at which they then were, until January the 25th, 1537; after which period the journey to Venice was to take place. Providence reserved another destiny for them.

Nothing now remained but to pronounce their vows at the foot of the altar; and they chose as the most suitable day for this, the 15th of August, the feast of the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin. In depositing in her hands the offering which they here made of themselves, the new brothers not only hoped for her special protection, but trusted that this offering of their persons would be more agreeable to the Son if received from the hands of His mother. They therefore

employed the few days which remained before the Assumption in preparing themselves by fasting, fervent prayer, and austere penance.

The most profound secrecy was to envelope their project; and they selected, as a fitting place wherein to pronounce their vows, a church built upon a hill, at half a league's distance from Paris, and called Our Lady of the Mount of Martyrs, now Montmartre. There, on the appointed day, they assembled in a subterranean chapel belonging to the church. They were entirely alone. The only priest among the brethren was Faber, who celebrated the holy mysteries. At the moment of communion, holding in his hand the body of the Saviour, he turned towards them, and each, one after the other, added to the vows of poverty and perpetual chastity, that of making a voyage to the Holy Land, and of deferring to the will of the Sovereign Pontiff. They also promised to receive no fees for the administration of the sacraments. Their vow of poverty obliged them to renounce all they possessed, when their studies were terminated, preserving only what was strictly necessary for the journey to Palestine;—but even this little none of them kept, as sufficient alms provided for it.

The vow to receive nothing in the fulfilment of the ecclesiastical functions had for its object, besides the practice of voluntary poverty, that of finding more frequent opportunities of employing themselves for the salvation of souls, when no recompense was required; and it was also a means of contradicting the calumnies of the Lutherans, who falsely accused the Catholic priests of enriching themselves as it were by the blood of Jesus Christ, and of selling the holy things for their own gain.

Their vows being pronounced, they all received communion, with such feelings of devotion and such ardent fervor

that one of them, Simon Rodriguez, continued to feel its influence thirty years afterwards, when he wrote the account of it. The sole recollection still filled him with ineffable consolation. But nothing can be compared to that which inundated the heart of Ignatius, whose happiness even surpassed that of his companions, for on this auspicious day he reaped the fruits of his labors, and beheld the fulfilment of his long cherished hopes. His spiritual family was indeed not numerous, but, as it was afterwards proved, the superior merit of each member rendered him equivalent to many proselytes.

Here we shall again remark, what various grave writers have pointed out as one of the most signal evidences of the divine protection extended over the true religion; that in this very year, 1534, in which were laid the first foundations of a Society especially consecrated to the service of the Church, and to obedience towards its Head;—Henry VIII., formerly *Defender of the Faith*, had become the cruel persecutor and mortal enemy of the Holy See. In this very year, 1534, he had published those detestable edicts, whereby every one who did not efface the title of “Pope” from all books or writings where it hapened to be, was declared guilty of a capital offence, and deserving of death. “Ineffable goodness,” cries Sanders, “infinite mercy of God towards His whole Church! In those days, when the blasphemies of Luther in Germany, and in England the cruelty of its tyrant, appeared on the point of extinguishing the outward profession of all religion, and the practice of Christian perfection; of annihilating the respect due to the Vicar of Jesus Christ, and of giving up to execration the venerable titles of *Pope* and *Pontiff*; the Spirit of God raises up men like Ignatius de Loyola and his companions, who not satisfied with imitating the perfection of other Orders, add, in order

to combat the impiety of Luther and Henry, a fourth vow to those which bind other Religious, and submit their persons as well as their works, to the Roman Pontiff! By it they bind themselves to undertake all labors, to support with passive obedience, and without even claiming the daily necessities of life, all the fatigues which he may be pleased to expose them to, for the extension of the Catholic Faith, and the conversion of infidels or sinners. "These men," continues the same author, "thus united together and formed to virtue by the beautiful Institute of St. Ignatius, took, in order to designate their Society, the name of Society of Jesus; and this holy name, together with the faith of the Roman Catholic Church, they have carried throughout the whole world, and have made both known, not only to the most remote nations and to the utmost limits of the Indies, but even to those countries of Northern Europe, seduced by the new errors, and to unfortunate England, separated from the Communion of the Christian world by the cruelty of its tyrants. At the price of their blood and their lives, they have caused the celestial torch of truth to blaze forth, even in the reign of Elizabeth, the worthy daughter of Henry VIII., and in spite of her most cruel persecutions. Thus "God hath given us another seed, for Abel, whom Cain slew." Let us return to Ignatius and his first companions.

After having fully satisfied their devotional feelings, and offered up fervent prayer and thanksgiving to the Lord, they passed the remainder of the day seated beside a clear and beautiful fountain, which springs forth at the foot of the hill where the Church stands, and whose waters have, according to tradition, been sanctified by the blood of the holy martyr Dionysius. There they partook of a frugal repast, and their hearts, filled with sweet and holy joy, concerted together upon the manner of life which they should lead

during the remainder of the time which they were to pass in Paris. Ignatius, who together with the title of Father had received that day a new effusion of the Spirit of God, to assist him in governing his children, and preventing all abatement of their fervor, decided upon certain practices to which they were to subject themselves, and which, without being detrimental to their studies, were calculated to maintain devotion in their hearts. These practices consisted in prayers, daily penance, and in receiving the holy Communion on all Sundays and feast days, which was uncommon at that period. Besides this, they were annually, on the day of the Assumption, to renew their vows in the same Church; which in fact they did during the two following years, 1535 and '36. Finally, they promised to love each other, and to consider each other as brothers.

As they were separately lodged, they agreed to assemble together occasionally, sometimes at one, sometimes at another of their respective houses. There they were to partake in common of a simple repast, and by pious conversation reanimate that mutual charity which is maintained by domestic intimacy. Thus these ties, formed by God himself, were never loosened; and so far was the first resolution taken by these admirable men from ever becoming weaker, that they all labored in concert to procure new companions, their most ardent desire being to see their numbers augmented.

Moreover, their moral and intellectual faculties seemed to have acquired new vigor, and their constant efforts were directed towards the acquirement of those sciences most calculated to contribute to the welfare of their neighbor; while the purity of their zeal seemed in some measure to double their natural capacity.

It is certain that a work undertaken solely in the view of

serving God, is really more fruitful than any other ; we give ourselves up to it with more fervor, continue in it with more constancy ; our intention is stronger and more undivided, even though the nature of the labor should be changed ; because it is never weakened, nor, if we may so express it, scattered about, by the sterile attractions of vain curiosity ; but above all, because the Father of all knowledge grants a more than ordinary share of intelligence to those who devote themselves entirely to His cause.

The city of Paris, in whose bosom the first sketch of the company had been conceived, took the title of Mother of the Society, as is attested not only by the writers who have so applied this name, but by a Latin inscription, engraven upon bronze, placed in the upper part of the church of Montmartre, and not in the low chapel near the tomb of the Martyrs ; the design being that it should be more exposed to view than it would have been in that dark and solitary place.*

Louis XIII. regarded it as a personal honor that the Society should have first seen the light in his dominions ; he styled it his Daughter : he congratulated it upon the extension which from that circumstance it was likely to acquire. " My kingdom," said that Monarch, in an autograph letter to Gregory XV. concerning the canonization of St. Ignatius— " my kingdom deserved this honor, that so great a servant of God should have come to this my city of Paris to study the sciences, to reunite his followers, and to lay the foundations of his Society in the church of Montmartre."

* *D. O. M. Siste spectator, atque in hoc Martyrum sepulcro, probati Ordinis cunas lege. Societas Jesu, quæ S. Ignatium Loyolam patrem agnoscit, Lutetiam matrem, anno Salutis MDXXXIV. augusti XV. hic nata est: cum Ignatius et Socii, votis sub sacram Synaxim religiose conceptis, se Deo in perpetuum consecrarunt, ad majorem Deo gloriam.*

CHAPTER IV.

The birth of the Society at the Mount of Martyrs, a presage of its destiny—Bad effects of the odious books published against it.

THE assistance of God had been manifest in all that regarded Ignatius and his companions: but through what mysterious motive had they been induced to seek the poor and modest church of Montmartre, when so many proud basilicæ were open to receive them? Was there not in this another providential warning, an indication of the fate which awaited the young Society? Was not she also to pour forth her purest blood in torrents, and in a foreign land? Was not her lot also to be one of fierce storms and cruel persecutions? Let us see how events have faithfully interpreted this augury.

Hardly had a century elapsed, before more than three hundred of the children of Ignatius had perished—whether in announcing the faith amongst the Gentiles, or in defending it amongst the heretics: some burned before a slow fire; some precipitated into the sea; some hewn into quarters, or slain with arrows, crucified, beheaded, pierced with lances: Others plunged into frozen or boiling waters, or subjected to the frightful torture of the *pit* as in Japan. In that kingdom alone the Society already counts more than ninety martyrs to the faith, and of these, thirty-two were burnt.

alive, and thirty-three perished by the aforesaid horrible punishment.*

These long voyages amidst storm and tempest, exposed to the fiery heat of the torrid zone; the painful labor of acquiring difficult and barbarous languages; the necessity of dwelling miserably in the forests, often worse lodged than the wild beasts in their caves; in fine, hunger and thirst and that foreknowledge of the cruel tortures which awaited them, and of which death is the least terrible feature,—all this was surely a life of martyrdom. Yet it is a fact, however marvellous, that so noble, so quickening an influence seems to have descended upon the Society in the crypt of the martyrs, that our young priests of the present day fear neither suffering nor torture; and if the prayers of the petitioners were granted, half of the Society would abandon Europe for those countries where they might obtain the crown of martyrdom.

As for persecution, few societies have been so richly endowed in that respect. Attacks of every kind, and accusations of the most contrary nature, have been made against its members; and in the midst of this unequalled and implacable fury, the Society increases, flourishes, plants its foot

* The punishment of the *pit* was as follows: In the middle of a sort of well, six or seven feet deep, was erected a gallows, to which the sufferer was suspended, with his head downwards, and his hands tied behind his back. Lest the blood should stifle him too quickly, his whole body was tightly bound round with bandages. In this state he was left without food or water, until he expired, after five, six or eight days of agonizing pain, produced by the inversion of the intestines upon the stomach, and the blood which gushed from his mouth, nostrils, ears and eyes, without the possibility of his relieving himself in any way. This punishment has made more apostates in Japan, than fire or sword, or the waters which boil forth from the abysses of the mountain of Ugen.

every where ; is expelled from all places ; speaks and writes in every language, its sole aim being public utility ; and there is no tongue which is not raised against it, no pen which is not employed to combat it. If we read the history of its establishment, we shall feel ourselves transported to the days of the prophet Nehemiah, when the Jews who were rebuilding Jerusalem, were obliged to have one eye upon their work, and another upon their enemies ; when they held with one hand the square and the hammer, with the other the bow and the lance ; when after placing one stone as workmen, they were forced to defend it as soldiers. We have been driven from Japan, China, Ethiopia, Transylvania, Bohemia, England and Flanders, on account of our imputed crimes. We have preached the faith of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, we have attacked heretics, we have defended the Council of Trent, under the double point of view, of dogma and discipline ; we have unflinchingly supported the Sovereign Pontiff. Often have ignominious sentences of exile been pronounced against us, and pillars erected, covered with insulting inscriptions in regard to us. We have been given up to shame and contempt ; our houses have been abandoned to pillage, and our persons to the fury of an irritated populace. The books alone which have been written and published against the Society, under every form ; poetry, history, romance, journals, denunciations, satires, trials, prophecies, &c., would suffice to form a library. Fifty years ago, Peter Ribadeneira published a catalogue of the writers belonging to the society. The Protestants immediately made another of their antagonists, whose names alone would form a volume. But the crafty compiler does not, like Ribadeneira, add a notice of the lives of the writers to their names. Perhaps out of consideration for the Society. Who can tell his motive ? It is true that he afterwards exhorts the heads of all states to contribute with their

money to the reprinting of all the writings published against it; and at Rochelle, this enterprise was actually begun. Six volumes were printed, but it would seem with more zeal than discretion; for the compilers collected every thing they could find, without stopping to select the most important documents; "And how," says one writer, "can we, with such a method as this, ask for the concurrence of the European potentates?"

This was the state of things forty years ago; but now these writings have multiplied to such an extent, that it would be more difficult to enumerate than to answer them. Moreover they always excite curiosity by the peculiarity of their titles, or by pretended revelations of high importance to princes as well as to the public. Thus these books are seized upon, and procured at any price. In some, the name of our Society is interpreted, disfigured or condemned; mysteries are attributed to us; our hidden doctrines are said to be unveiled, our character described, our spirit anatomized as it were, our interior spied out, our obscure and hidden teachings dissected. In others, they publish our private opinions, our secret instructions; they invent a *True History* of our origin and progress, they relate our crimes. Fish-ponds are filled with children, the offspring of sacrilege, destroyed by parricides; the vaults of churches are arsenals filled with arms, to favor revolt whenever we judge the moment favorable. We abandon ourselves to nocturnal communications with our familiar demons, to obtain from them the means of disordering the reasons of the pretended reformers, and of inducing them to obey the Pope. Rich treasures, collected from the spoils of the whole world, are contained in our burial vaults. Every week we hold a council concerning the political conduct of governments, in order to further our own interests, and to shape our own enterprises accordingly.

They reckon sixteen hundred and forty-two mistresses, kept and assassinated by Cardinal Bellarmin, from whence the world may infer what the conduct of our less virtuous men must be, this monster being one of our most esteemed members. Sixty years ago, Nicholas Sanders wrote: "More fables have been spread abroad concerning the Jesuits, than concerning the monsters of mythology. Their origin, their mode of life, their Institute, their morals, their doctrines, their acts,—all have been the objects of the strangest and most contradictory commentaries. Mere dreams have been forged, which have not only been retailed in whispers, but which men have actually ventured to maintain in public, and even to print!" *

Formerly, in order to expose our Lord and his disciples to the hatred of the universe, the Emperor Maximin caused to be published and disseminated throughout all the schools in the Roman Empire, that work of Satan, entitled the *Acts of Pilate*; purporting to be a faithful narrative of the trial and condemnation of Jesus Christ, drawn from the archives of the Pretorium in Jerusalem, and filled with odious calumnies against his divine innocence. Yet they obtained so much belief, that when a Christian appeared in public, the universal cry was, "*To the fire! to the fire!*" so that they were nicknamed "*The vine-branches.*" There is hardly a single apologist of Christianity in the first ages, who does not complain of the unworthy artifice which was employed to render Christians odious to the whole world, by this publication of writings filled with the most ridiculous impostures.

* De Jesuitis plures fortasse fabulæ feruntur, quam olim de monstribus. De origine enim horum hominum et genere vitæ, et instituto, de moribus, ac doctrina, de consiliis, et actionibus, varia simul, et contraria, ac somniorum simillima, non privatis tantum colloquiis, sed publicis concionibus, librisque, impressis publicantur.

And the Society of Jesus might borrow their words, should she wish to complain, or rather may find motives of consolation in them.

Besides, we are not alone in the struggle, not alone under the burden of persecution. The illustrious and venerable Orders of St. Francis and St. Dominick preceded us in the *via crucis*; gave us examples of holiness and religious perfection, as well as motives of consolation. Gregory XIII. himself reminds us of this, in his bull *Ascendente Domino*; and in order to raise our courage, sets before our eyes the sufferings of the two Orders, which he styles, *Sanctorum Dominici, et Francisci præclarissimos ordines*. Hardly had they left the cradle, and still filled with that primitive pith and vigor communicated to them by their holy founders, when the mendicant Orders and the preaching Brothers were assailed by the most odious accusations. Their doctors were expelled from the pulpits; and they were regarded as poisonous plants, which would soon be rooted out from the Church and from the world. According to the famous William de St. Amour, these monks endeavored to usurp the principal Chairs of the University, to withdraw themselves, by Apostolic privileges, from obedience to Bishops; to introduce themselves, like devouring wolves, into families, and there to carry off their prey; utterly abandoned as they were to pride and ambition. Then they insinuated themselves amongst the great, in order to attain gradually to a place amongst princes, and to obtain their good graces. They taught with arrogance, they preached with vanity, and proudly boasted of their Orders. They resisted attacks, instead of turning the left cheek when the right had been struck. They cloaked their wickedness under an appearance of modesty; their pharisaical minds under their hypocritical manners. Why did they not, at least for the future, shut

themselves up in their cells? Why frequent courts, fill the chairs of the Universities, employ their time in preaching and study, instead of being assiduous in the choir? why not weep over their own sins, instead of condemning those of others? In a word, they were false teachers, precursors of Ante-Christ, who should be rooted up, destroyed, annihilated.

Should we not suppose that such language was applied to some anti-social sect, the enemy of God and man? The causes of this blind hatred, of this passionate invective, may be traced in part to some slight errors in some few of these religious; but chiefly to the envy of those who were furious at seeing their learning eclipsed, and certain chairs in the University decreed to some of the principal members of these holy Orders; finally to that fatal humiliation which Innocent IV., by foreign instigation, imposed upon the Order of St. Dominick, whose only crime was that of being too far advanced in science and holiness, and of being esteemed too highly. When their enemies beheld them almost persecuted by the only hand which could have defended them, they grew emboldened to commit excesses which seemed almost to threaten the Church itself with schism, or at least to cause the irrevocable ruin of two Orders which had deserved the gratitude of all Christendom.

In fact, their existence would have terminated, had not Alexander IV. been favorable to them, and had not the two great saints Thomas Aquinas and Bonaventure written in their defence. But at length this outcry so long raised against them, has ceased; and as a recompense for their long sufferings, they live in peace, and sheltered from further outrage.

The time has come in which the storm falls with most unsparing severity upon us; in which our enemies would will-

ingly see us more maltreated than Job was by his persecutors; in which we are forbidden to justify ourselves; in which it is said to us as by St. Gregory Nazianzen of the Christian philosopher: "He should present not only the left cheek to him who would strike the right, but a third if it were possible." Thus if we speak, we are vindictive; if we are silent, it is a confession of guilt: for this silence is never attributed to the patience which refuses to defend itself, but to the embarrassment which is unable to do so.

I shall not stop to consider the impotent efforts of a Lermeo, a Pascuasius, a Meseno, &c., to sully the glory of St. Ignatius, and the merits of his children. Their names and writings are stamped with a character of puerility, which renders their censures contemptible to any man of sense or taste, and their motives are so evident, that no one can be deceived by them.

But the malice of our enemies has occasionally been manifested in a singular manner. In a recently published life of St. Theresa, all the testimonies of that great Saint in favor of the successors of St. Ignatius, all the acknowledgments which she makes of the constant spiritual aid which she received from them, has been carefully omitted. "Praised be God," says she in the twenty-third chapter of her life, "who has given me the grace which has enabled me to obey my confessors, although imperfectly; and these have almost invariably been those blessed men belonging to the Society of Jesus." Their names were Balthazar Alvarez, Jerome Perez, Egidius Gonsalez, Ripalda, and Father Francis Ribera, who afterwards wrote the life of his holy penitent.

The same observation may be made with regard to the life of the great Archbishop of Milan, St. Charles Borromeo. In a new life of that Saint, more detailed than any preceding one, not a word is said of his relations with the

Society of Jesus, nor of the services which he received from them, for his own perfection, and for the reform of his Church. Yet these very facts are recorded in the first histories which were compiled and published by authors who had lived with St. Charles himself, and who had been eye-witnesses of all which they related. It is not thus that history should be written, nor can such omissions be pleasing to the Saints themselves, who, like lofty trees, bend from the highest heavens their fruit-laden branches towards the earth, to salute that hidden root from whence they imbibed the sap and nourishment which rendered them fruitful. It seems to me that in these glorious acknowledgments of the blessed, there is something touching, which at once consoles and ennobles us. Our eyes are filled with tears, our heart expands with joy, as we read these words of St. Theresa, when she says, writing to Christopher Rodriguez de Moya, concerning certain Jesuits: "They are my fathers, and if there is any good in my soul, is it to them after Our Lord, that I owe it. All pious persons are not suited to our convents, but only those whom the Fathers of that Society have confessed and directed. I do not recollect having ever admitted a single nun who was not their spiritual daughter, because they always succeed best amongst us. As these Fathers formed my soul, God has given me the grace to introduce their spirit into our houses; and if their constitutions are known to you, you will find that, upon many points, ours are conformable to them, a brief from the Pope having given me permission to that effect. Avila, 8th June, 1568."

Perhaps we ought to stop here; but our enemies are not only out of the Church; we are insulted not only by an Osiander, a Hospinian, a Lermeo, but even by those who profess the same faith as we do; nay sometimes, who have embraced the same holy vocation.

And yet that very variety which exists amongst the different religious Orders, is but an ornament the more for the Church. Why judge and condemn those whom God has called to walk in other paths? Does this not resemble the error of the ignorant, who believe that our antipodes walk with their heads downwards? *Unus quidem sic*, says the Apostle, *alius vero sic*. Perfect harmony is formed from dissonance, not from discord. "The vestments of that Queen (the Church) of which David speaks in his forty-fourth Psalm, of what tissue is it composed?" says St. Augustine.* "The materials are rich, and the colors are varied." *Pre-tiosus et varius*. "Thus then," continues he, "let there be variety not rents in this vestment"—"*in veste istâ, varietas sit, scissura non sit*." But on the contrary, this pretension to entire uniformity, in the letter as well as in the spirit, is called by Tertullian the mother of schism, and degenerates into that desire of enriching ourselves by the poverty of others, which appears so criminal to St. Augustine. It is at least contrary to that pure zeal for the glory of God, which rejoices in all that it sees performed for His service, and which ought to rally us all together for that noble end; like the heavens, which, declaring to the earth the glory of God, communicate to it that velocity of motion which it never ceases to obey.

* *Aug. in Psal. 44.*

CHAPTER V.

Causes of the persecutions raised against the Society.

At the moment in which St. Ignatius and his companions are about to enter upon that rocky path, which they have traced out for their successors, it may not be useless to inquire into the principal causes which have aroused so much bad feeling against us. When a navigator unfurls his sails to the wind, we see him anxiously bending over his nautical charts; carefully taking cognizance of the dangerous breakers, the narrow channels, the shallow waters renowned as the sites of many shipwrecks; let us imitate his example. The moment has arrived for boldly approaching these difficulties. Besides, we may here make use of Gretser as our guide, for that celebrated controversialist enumerates seven principal causes of the persecutions to which we have been exposed. Let us remark also that this long experience gives great weight to his opinion.

The first of these causes is, that without knowing any thing concerning us, excepting by vague reports, no one takes the trouble to examine whether it is not more just to suppose that a man may make a false accusation, when no obstacle prevents him from doing so, than to believe in the culpability of persons who are deterred from committing evil, by so many reasons; both human and divine.

In the first ages of the Church, the most odious crimes

were imputed to the Christians. They were accused of adoring the head of an ass; of daily slaughtering a child at break of day, of offering it up in sacrifice, of eating its flesh, drinking its blood, and of afterwards abandoning themselves to the most infamous abominations. Yet that was the golden age of Christianity, the time when *Christian* and *Saint* were synonymous terms. But is it not a most astonishing circumstance that these accusations were received undoubtfully as soon as they were made; that they were sufficient to cause innocent men to be condemned to torture, to the sword, to be torn by wild beasts? "Thus," says Tertullian, "the very name was sufficient. *Are you a Christian?* The whole form of trial was contained in these words. You answer in the affirmative, and from that moment you are convicted of sacrilege, homicide, and high treason. The public credulity is the sole element of conviction."

Hence arose the complaint common to all the apologists of these ancient times; that when hatred sought to condemn the Christians, there was no endeavor to prove their crimes, lest being found innocent it should be necessary to absolve them. Yet noted men amongst the pagans were seen coming forth from their blindness, and becoming new men, as soon as their hearts were touched by a ray of divine grace. They had been infidels, murderers, adulterers, robbers; and they became pious, gentle, and humble of heart; chaste, generous to the poor; yet all this availed nothing, men would not believe the testimony of their own eyes—all this, said they, might be for the public, but in secrecy, in darkness, strange things passed; and the accused were thus deprived of all means of defending themselves, so vast was the field thus opened to calumny.

Yet who does not know that notwithstanding persecution, notwithstanding the blood which was poured forth in torrents,

the faith was not extinguished. When one Christian fell, a hundred others came to fill his place; and the horrible barbarity of a people thirsting for blood, grew weary of striking; before the neophytes of the faith shrunk back before these frightful trials. Fame came, nevertheless, in aid of the executioners.

"Her crime," says Tertullian, "is not that of spreading events abroad with incredible rapidity, but of accompanying them with falsehood; for she cannot relate the truth, without an intermixture of fable. She only exists through falsehood, and gains credit only by proving nothing. Thoughtless minds alone put trust in her; wise men yield belief to evidence only. They know that a narrative is always amplified in passing from mouth to mouth; that malice, or the habit of exaggeration, swells it, increases it, precisely as a lofty tree springs from the smallest seed. It was thus that the fatal opinion which attributed so many crimes to the Christians took root; and that which had been so easily invented, no one could ever prove."*

I shall not here enlarge upon what the Society has had to suffer from this foolish credulity; the narrative would be interminable. We shall limit ourselves to Saxony and other Protestant countries of Germany; and it suffices to state that in these countries, all the inhabitants, even the children, are accustomed to describe us with the faces of demons, the wings of bats, and the horns and feet of goats. It is true that we share these honors with the Pope himself. Doubtless these are the portraits drawn of us by the Protestant preachers; they strike the imagination, and their object is attained; we are hated without being known.

Now if malevolence and hatred do not fear to advance

* Apol. C. 8.

assertions, of which a single glance would prove the falsehood, how much more easily may they attack the feelings of the heart, concealed from all eyes! more especially if they attribute all which to the outward eye seems praiseworthy, to mere artifice and hypocrisy, fearing lest favorable inductions might be drawn from appearances.*

Are there many persons who would answer like Henry II. of France, when attempts were made to irritate him against us: "Ah! let us judge of them by their actions, since God alone knows the secrets of the heart, and the accusations of men cannot render an innocent man guilty."

Another class of accusers is composed of heretics, who in order to write against us, affect to be Catholics; and of Catholics who attack us under the mask of heresy. The first hope that by means of this disguise they will obtain some credit, but they are soon discovered, in spite of the interest which they affect to take in the welfare of souls. The second are actuated by hatred, vengeance, interest, or are instigated by

* Here one would almost be tempted to accuse Father Bartoli of exaggeration, had not facts of the same nature been repeated in times closer upon our own. When the revolution of 1789 drove a vast number of French priests to England, more than one citizen's family who received them, were constantly upon their guard against their *witchcrafts*. During the first nights of their residence in any house, the family watched by turns, and sometimes went so far as to examine whether or not they had human feet. We can guarantee the authenticity of this fact. The chapelet especially was a mysterious charm, looked upon with terror. On the other hand, is not the personification of a Catholic monk still to be found, according to the ideas of many persons, in that Abbé, whose waist according to Bürger three persons could not span?

"Der Piafflein, das wuszte sich besser zu hegen,
Sich weidlich am Tisch und im Bette zu pflegen,
Wie Vol Mond glauzte sein feistes gesicht,
Drei männer umspannten den schmeerbauch, ihm nicht."

Note of the French Translator.

some violent passion which transports them beyond the limits of ordinary malevolence. The most common mode of tactics amongst the heretics, consists in suppressing their names, or in assuming others, so that should their doctrinal errors become manifest, the work may still be attributed to a Catholic pen. Thus when we undertake to convict them of falsehood, the first phrase which presents itself to us is the following : *Atheus sit, an Judæus, hereticus, an schismaticus, ater, an albus, jesumastix procacissime, ignoro : catholicum esse non credo ; christianum vix puto*. It was thus that Stanislaus Rescio la Spugna began, when endeavoring to efface the blemishes with which the Society had been stained by a certain young man, partly schismatic, partly Zwinglian, but nowise Catholic, who concealed his true name under the simple title of a Polish gentleman.

A third species of attack is covered by constant protestations of patriotism and zeal for the public welfare. Of this nature is the *Oratio sincera*, addressed to the king of France, and consisting of a tissue of falsehoods ; such is also the *Patrocinium veritatis*, filled with such manifest untruths, that in answer to it, it would be sufficient to change the first letter of its title, and to call it *Latrocinium veritatis*.

One of the later inventions of our enemies was to have a work printed, purporting to be written by us, and which has for its title, *Private opinions and secret instructions of the Society of Jesus*. By it they wished to prove that we had two Institutes ; the one holy, and publicly acknowledged, which had been bequeathed to us by our Founder, and which we produced pompously ; the other, private and political, confided by the general to the superiors alone, which was composed of various methods of growing rich and forwarding our own interests by the guidance of souls ;

making a traffic of religion. To cover the imposture more effectually they supposed these instructions to have been published by the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, into whose hands they fell, said they, when the Protestant Duke of Brunswick, called Bishop of Halberstadt, after having given up our college of Paderborn to be plundered, gave them a part of the spoils. But those whose duty it is to expose falsehood, when it endeavors to pass for truth, once more tore off its mask, and revealed to the whole world, if not the name of the author, at least the true nature of this odious work, falsely attributed to the Society. It was therefore prohibited in Poland by the Apostolic Nuncio, the Bishop of Cracow; in Spain, by the court of the Inquisition; and in Rome by the cardinals, members of the tribunal of the *Index*, who by a solemn decree, pronounced its condemnation.*

Although we find more malignity than talent in these iniquitous productions, they have excited so strong an impression against us, that no statements have been able entirely to efface it; for men listen to an accusation more readily than to a defence, and falsehood frequently gains credence more easily than truth. Yet the time will come, I doubt not, when we shall glory in these very attacks; when we shall show them like honorable scars; when they will be our consolation in vigils and labor. It gives me pleasure to transcribe here the words of Father Francis de Villanova to a

* Die 10 Maie 1616, in sacra Indicis illustriss. S. R. E. Cardinalum generali congregatione habita in palatio illustriss. et reverendiss. D. Cardinalis Bellarmini, facta relatione cujusdam libri cui titulus: *Monita privata societatis Jesu*. Notobrigiæ anno 1612, sine nomine authoris: illustriss. D. D. Cardinales decreverunt, præfatum librum, utpote false Societati Jesu adscriptum, calumniosum, et diffamationibus plenum omnino esse prohibendum, prout de facto illum prohibuerunt &c.

young man whom these various accusations had strongly prejudiced against the Society.

"Suppose," said he, "that a company of skilful dancers perform a ballet, the figures of which have been composed and arranged with great skill. If some one who is a perfect stranger to the art of dancing, were to see it executed from a distance, we must not be astonished if the performers appear to him a collection of madmen or of drunken persons, who leap about without any other rule for the movement of their feet, than the caprices of a head disordered by the fumes of wine; but he who sees them nearer, and who is a connoisseur, observes that all their motions are foreseen and regulated, and that they follow the sound and time of the music with perfect precision. He admires their skill, and is not at all disturbed by being told that others, who are ignorant of the art, are turning them into ridicule.

"And so it is with those who pass their judgment upon things which are entirely beyond the reach of their vision and understanding, as well as of their affections."

As for Catholics, there are some who are so but in name; men without God, without faith, and who would openly desert their religion, were they not held back by some remains of shame. A life differing from their own is an offence to them, and the very sight of one who so lives, seems to them a reproach upon their own conduct and sentiments. Therefore, to profess open war against vice, to declare it publicly, is to inflict a personal grievance upon them; for those who are the adversaries of their favorite vices, they regard as personal enemies; and their irritation arrives at its height when they believe that their interests are in danger.

But what should we gain by collecting here the titles of all the works whose authors have not even dared to affix

their own names to them? The man who respects himself, gives no other answer to anonymous communications but a dignified silence. Let us imitate this example, and let us rather remember those beautiful words addressed by Paul IV. to the first General Assembly held by our Society:—"Do not expect," said he, "to receive better treatment than the Saints of the Old and the New Law. You will experience a like fate. Many will neither receive you nor your doctrine; to persecute you and to put you to death, will seem to them meritorious in the sight of God. Our age, which hath witnessed the birth of this blessed Society, is an age of many troubles. We behold the Church almost everywhere exposed to the most violent attacks, to the most cruel persecutions. It is not only the inhabitants of newly-discovered regions, who launch their shafts against the spouse of God; no, it is even those who, together with ourselves, glory in the name of Christians."*

Besides, they have dared to reproach the whole Order with the faults of some individuals; and because some few branches have produced bad fruit, they would willingly have laid the axe to the root of the tree, and felled it. Strange logic! To seek for impeccability out of Heaven! "Human virtue," says St. Ambrose, "is a lamp which sometimes becomes extinguished, and emits a nauseous odor."

* Ne putetis vos melioris esse conditionis, quam legis utriusque sanctos Dei legatos. Similiter vobis continget. Multi enim non recipient vos, nec doctrinam vestram, sed persequentur vos, et interficient, obsequium se præstare Deo arbitantes. Perturbatissimum enim seculum hoc est, quo Dominus vocavit istam beatam societatem. Ecclesiam Dei diris modis vexari, et ubique fere oppugnari videmus. Oppugnant Christi sponsam, non tantum à fide alieni barbari et qui in novis insulis Christianum nomen hostiliter insectantur, sed etiam illi, qui communi nobiscum Christianorum nomine gloriantur.

If a religious Order were to be condemned because sinners are to be found in it, all would be condemned equally; but that alone deserves to be so, where sin may be committed with impunity. If he who sins is punished, his very faults, like the dark shadows in a painting, serve to bring out the lights, to distinguish and classify the different objects, and to show to all men that the rules are observed and order maintained. It is thus that God draws His glory from our sins, although by a wise disposition, His justice punishes them. But if one alone is guilty, on his head alone be the condemnation. The whole college of apostles was not doomed to die because Judas deserved death. Besides, could it be credible that so many thousands of men, for the most part unknown to each other, should be so completely identified with one another that the evil committed by one single individual, ought to be attributed to the whole number, and justify universal hatred and contempt towards the whole body? If our detractors have not that benevolence which covers the faults of a few with the virtues of many, let them at least have the justice not to attribute to all the errors of a few.

“This manner of judging is very intolerant,” said St. Augustine, in a letter which he addressed to his people; “there are persons who endeavor to discover, and are rejoiced to learn that a bishop, a priest, a monk, or a virgin consecrated to God, has fallen into some faults, that they may afterwards take it for granted that many others have done likewise. These very people know that unfaithful wives have existed, yet they do not repudiate their own; nor do they accuse their own mothers of sin. But if they hear a false accusation spread abroad, or perhaps a real fault related of a person whose life had until then been exemplary, they endeavor to make it be believed that all those

who lead the same kind of life, must be guilty of the same faults."

See to what such an abuse of reasoning would lead. In every community, where one individual has committed a fault, all must be considered equally guilty. Why not, in the same way, suppose that all are innocent where some are so? Such a general argument can prove nothing; nor can any thing be more unjust than to judge of the will of some by that of others, for in a numerous society of individuals, opinions not only differ, but are constantly opposed to each other. Therefore to select from amongst so many writers belonging to the Society, the opinions of one only, whether erroneous or contrary to the interests of those who condemn it, and then to give them as the doctrine of the whole body—is that acting justly? I do not allude here to opinions which are condemned as belonging to us, and yet which were published long before any of us had even learned to read; but to those whose authors conceal their names, that the blame may fall upon us alone.

Another reflection may have some weight with those to whom the study of our corrupt nature is familiar. Men who lead evil lives, with difficulty believe in the innocence of others; as one who afflicted with vertigo, beholds every thing turning around him. And this is more especially the case, when, through a long habit of evil, a man has lost all power of renouncing sin, and then believes that this weakness arises from a radical impossibility of resisting his inclinations. Thus the greater number of those who sin, especially against purity, console and excuse themselves by believing that all have the same inclinations, and that all yield to them, and that he who conceals them with most care, may be the most prudent, but is not the most innocent. Thus our detractors are grievously tormented when they perceive

in us some increase of virtue, of talent, or of credit; and as the course is odious to them, they shut their eyes in order not to perceive it, and endeavor to persuade themselves that it does not exist. Nor are there any fables, however absurd, which they have scrupled to publish, in hopes of injuring us. Some years ago an author did not fear to affirm that St. Francis Xavier had been only a secular priest, and had never made a religious profession. It would indeed seem that we were disposed to try the patience of our readers, were we to stop here in order to contradict paradoxes such as these, yet as they have been repeated from Christian pulpits, it may be well to attempt a simple refutation of them.

Our enemies had beheld the Sovereign Pontiff bestowing upon Xavier the title of the new Apostle of the Indies; by reason of the splendor of his sanctity, and of his admirable works. They had heard of the numerous kingdoms into which he first carried the light of the Gospel, of the prodigious number of infidels whom he had himself baptized, of that gift of tongues which had been granted him, of those continual miracles by which it pleased God to glorify his servant; all which reflected a splendor upon the Society, insupportable in their eyes. It was requisite then to throw some doubt upon a fact until then undoubted; and if they have not succeeded in deceiving the majority, some at least have fallen into the snare; and those who propagated such falsehoods could hope for no more.

But whence shall I draw proofs to make manifest a truth already so notorious? for there are things in themselves so evident that they may be compared to the light of Heaven, which it would be in vain to point out to one who persists in denying its existence. No one will deny that Ignatius bestowed upon Xavier the office of Provincial in the Indies; that afterwards he ordered him in virtue of the authority

which he had over him, and of the obedience which Xavier owed him, to return to Europe; that Xavier gloried in being a member of the Society, and for this blessing rendered thanks to God in a vast number of his letters; that he governed according to the right granted him by his office, sometimes admitting new members, and at others dismissing such as he considered unworthy to remain, even Superiors. Who does not know that he renewed his religious vows every morning; that he wore in his reliquary, along with the name of Ignatius, extracted from one of his letters, and a fragment of bone of the Apostle St. Thomas, the formula of his solemn profession, which it is customary in the Society for each member to write with his own hand? Who shall attempt to deny these facts?

As for the functions of Apostolic Nuncio, can we doubt that he fulfilled them, when we read the apostolic briefs conferring that dignity upon him? These expressly declare that they are addressed to Xavier, in order that without any opposition, and with the powers granted to that effect, he might exercise, whether in Ethiopia, should he go thither, or in the Indies, the ministrations proper to the Institute of the Society, viz., preaching, the administration of the Sacraments, and in short all things necessary to the salvation of souls. Moreover, Salmeron and Codurius, two of the first companions of Ignatius, were also named Apostolic Nuncios, by Paul III., in March, 1540, six months before the Society was established by that same Pontiff as a religious Order. Before the ensuing year, Salmeron set out for Ireland, the place of his destination, with Pasquier, named Nuncio, to replace Codurius, who had died in the interval. Did that prevent them from making their solemn profession in Rome? or, in order to make it, did they demand a special permission from the Pope? or did they receive in consequence a new

brief? If it is answered that the Pope, by expressly mentioning them in the bull which instituted the Society a religious Order, gave them a tacit and virtual dispensation from this solemn profession, it follows that since Xavier is expressly named, he participated in this dispensation. But what will be said if it is proved that he was a professed Religious of the Society, even before he became Nuncio? Yet this fact is incontestable.

Ignatius received an order from Pope Paul III., to send into Portugal, to pass from thence to the Indies, two companions of his own choosing, instead of the six whom King John III. asked for. He chose Simon Rodriguez and Nicholas Bobadilla; but as Xavier was destined by God to become the Apostle of these distant countries, Bobadilla, attacked by a severe and prolonged illness, could not undertake the voyage. Then Ignatius sent Francis Xavier in his place. He received the order on the 15th of March, and set out the following day; but as the Apostolic authorization, declaring the Society a religious Order, was then daily expected, he consigned the following resolutions to writing.

First, he assented beforehand to all the rules and constitutions which St. Ignatius and his companions remaining in Rome, should establish; he approved of them, and promised to conform to them in all things. Secondly, he gave his vote that Ignatius should be elected general of the Order. Thirdly, he then engaged himself by religious vows for the time when the Order should be recognized as such, and charged James Lainez to make known this writing in his absence. We still possess this document amongst our archives in Rome, and I here transcribe the last part of it, that is to say that which regards the vows, and translate it word for word from the Spanish.

“ When the Society shall be recognized, and the general

elected, I engage myself now, for that period, to perpetual obedience, to poverty, and to chastity. I beg my very dear father in Christ Jesus, James Lainez, for the service of God our Sovereign Lord, to present, in my absence, this writing and these three religious vows to the chief who may be elected, and from this moment I engage to observe them. In testimony whereof I sign with my hand the present writing. Given in Rome, the 15th of March, 1540. Francis."

We shall now show that the Society was raised to a religious Order, several months before the nomination of Xavier to the dignity of Nuncio.

I discover four briefs of Paul III., relative to the Nunciature of Francis Xavier, and to that of Simon Rodriguez, who was named at the same time.

The first is dispatched on the 27th of July, 1540, and addressed to John III., king of Portugal, with the power of keeping it, or of communicating it to them, according as it suited him best to retain them or not in Portugal. In it, they are declared *Nuncios*, and authorized to preach the Gospel, to explain the Scriptures, &c., &c. The second bears the date of the 2d of August, of the same year, and contains some new powers, such for example as those of reconciling heretics with the Church, dispensing with irregularities, &c. The two last are of the 4th of October, and only contain recommendations from the Pontiff to the Emperor of Ethiopia, and the kings of the Indies, in favor of the two *Nuncios*.

From all this it is manifestly proved that Xavier was not made Nuncio at his departure from Rome, since the briefs which gave him this dignity were not expedited for four or five months after he had left it; moreover, the king, who, as I have already observed, was free to deliver or to keep the briefs, did not in fact give them until the audience in which

Xavier took leave of him, before his departure from the Indies, which happened on the 7th of April, 1541, seven months after the Society had been declared an *Order*. This is unanimously affirmed by all the historians.*

We see from a letter entirely in the handwriting of Xavier, and signed by Simon Rodriguez, the letter being from both, that on learning that the Company had been raised to an *Order*, *he made his profession in it*.

But why should I seek for new proofs, when I have before my eyes the declaration of the very Sovereign Pontiff, by whom Xavier had been created Apostolic Nuncio? He reckons him, with nine other members of the Society, in the number of the first Fathers, in the bull beginning with these words: *Regimini militantis Ecclesiæ*; and in a second, *Injunctum nobis*, dated 1543, at which time Xavier was in the Indies, he again places him with all the others, and entitles them collectively, Religious of the Society of Jesus. We find this same declaration repeated in a bull of Julius III., (*Exposcit debitum*), dated 1550. If we inquire into the views of the Sovereign Pontiffs who have lived nearer our own time, upon this subject, we shall find Gregory XV. hearing and approving of the statement made to him in consistency, by Cardinal Maria Del Monte, in which he declares and proves by the acts of his canonization, that Francis Xavier was a *Religious*, and in subjection to the orders of St. Ignatius.

In fine, and this is equivalent to a sentence and public definition, the commemoration of this Saint is placed in the Roman Martyrology, accompanied by these express words: *In Sanciano Sinarum insula S. Francisci Xaverii, Socie-*

* Orlandin, *Hist. Soc.* I. 3, num. 41. Tursell, I. 1, c. 12, et Lucena, I. 1, c. 10. *Vit. Xaverii*. Maffie, *Hist. Ind.* I. 12.

tatis Jesu, Indiarum apostoli.—We have dwelt thus long upon this subject, much more to unmask the malignity which engenders so many and such evident falsehoods, than to bring forward proofs of a truth too well known to require any defence.

One circumstance which has in no small degree contributed to raise up violent storms against the Society, is the malice of apostates, and of those who have been expelled from it. Whilst they were members of the Society, they attached themselves to it in proportion to the advantages which they expected to derive from it; but their hopes having vanished, they have become the accusers of those whom they had not the courage to imitate. Heaven has no greater enemies than the demons who were precipitated from thence, nor the cloisters more bitter adversaries than the apostates who have fled from their shelter; since by employing every artifice to throw discredit upon the religious Orders, they hope to conceal the causes of their own expulsion.

“I shall tell you frankly,” wrote St. Augustine to his flock, “and it is before God, who reads my inmost soul, that I speak to you; since I began to serve Him, I have never known more holy souls than those who have sanctified themselves in monasteries; as in the same way I have never known worse men than those who have become perverted there. Hearing unceasingly that sentence of condemnation repeated, ‘he is not fit for the kingdom of God,’* these guilty souls conduct themselves like desperate men; they are like the ancient gladiators, destined to death, whose insolence was intolerable, because ‘they have nothing to fear and are most to be feared.’”†

It was formerly false brethren of this description who

* Aug. *Tract*, 33, *In Joan*.

† Epit. 37.

produced the works entitled *Historia Jesuitica, de modo agendi Jesuitarum*, and others of the same nature. They presented the Society under the most blamable aspect, because it appeared to them so, in not having raised them, according to their pretensions, to offices to which they had no right. If those who under the semblance of Reformers have been the persecutors of our Order, had obtained during their residence amongst us, the eminent posts which they aspired to, it would have appeared to them all that was holiest, wisest, and best governed; whereas they have represented it as presenting a monstrous medley of order and disorder, and worse than all as requiring reformation and correction, from the very persons who have left it solely to avoid subjection to its laws and disciplinary penalties.

We would ask also, does it require much talent or science to compose a book of the fragments of letters from the Superiors, or of the canons and decrees of the General Congregations, presenting them under a false light?

Let us give one single example amongst a multitude of others. A certain Arsenmüller entered into the Society, in all likelihood rather as a spy of the heretics, than with the intention of establishing himself there. He remained but a short time, it being impossible for a Lutheran, greatly inclined to sensual pleasures, to play for any length of time the part of a spiritual man. He therefore left the Society, carrying with him the constitutions, in order to write commentaries upon them, with which he afterwards filled his book, entitled *Historia Jesuitica*. He more especially discusses and condemns the rule which imposes upon us that submission towards our Superiors, which we owe to Our Lord himself. He quotes very exactly the precise words of the text; but not without uniting to this the common artifice of sectarians, using truth as a coloring for his own falsehood.

Thus he dares to assert that as their own villanies do not suffice for the children of Ignatius, they also bind themselves to execute all those which their Superiors may be pleased to order; "for," adds he, "he who promises to obey *in all things*, excepts none; neither theft, nor homicide, nor perjury." It is well known how much credit this infamous assertion obtained, as is proved by the many writings in which this total dependence upon the Superiors is called *the obedience of assassins, a yoke worthy of the brutes*; so easy is it to calumniate an Order, by means of its own Institute, in the minds of those who only know it through these artful quotations. If Arsenmüller had transcribed the whole rule, and consequently added the words which immediately follow those above cited, it would not have been in his power to hold us forth to the universe as men ready to fulfil the orders of a criminal will; for it is there expressly declared, that we must obey our Superiors in all that is not sin.

We see the same method of proceeding in regard to the letters and counsels from the Generals of the Order. Placed upon an eminence, like vigilant sentinels, they have under their eyes all this vast Society committed to their charge. Now and then they raise their voices, whether to exhort, to warn, or to command; but before doing this, they do not wait until an abuse has become universal, although in blaming it they always speak in general terms, and as soon as they perceive, endeavor to uproot it. For this reason they give public counsel, useful to all; a remedy for the weak and infirm, and a preservative for others. The same may be said of the general Congregations, in which salutary ordinances re-establish or perfect the observance of the rules; a method which, far from producing relaxation or disorder, is, on the contrary, the only means of avoiding both. There are some things which must be vigorously combated from the very be-

ginning, because they might become serious in their consequences ; and it is a wise mode of action to oppose gentle authority to that which is less an evil for the few, than a danger for the many.

Thanks be to God that all men are not yet so blinded nor so devoid of judgment, as to be unable to recognize in all this the artifice of the calumniators. They have done more for the honor of the Society, in proving by their apostasy that ambitious men cannot live there, than they have thrown discredit upon it, by making some quotations from its Institute, in a manner calculated to make it appear monstrous, even as certain concave mirrors entirely disfigure the objects which they represent.

CHAPTER VI.

Profit which the Society derives from the persecutions of which it is the object—
Special protection of the Holy Virgin—The Society of Jesus, which took birth in
the Sanctuary consecrated to Mary, is protected by her as her own property.

HAVE we not wandered far away from the Mount of Martyrs and its influence upon the rising Company? No; for we have not left the circle of persecutions. And let us not forget that although Jacob wept for his son's death, when he beheld the bloody remnants of his garments which the perfidious brothers presented to him, yet in later days, Joseph was restored to be the joy of his old age. We also behold our vestments torn by exterior attacks, but the grace and protection of God remain to us. Since the foundation of the Society, says Father Nadal, God has begun by exposing it to persecution, whenever it has been his design to elevate it. St. Ignatius feared for the Order nothing but too much tranquillity. He was once surprised with a sad and depressed countenance, a circumstance astonishing in a man whose impassible physiognomy always indicated the profound peace of his soul. He was in fact afflicted, because he observed that in a certain province, the affairs of the Society went forward with too much tranquillity; and that its members enjoyed equally the favor of the court and of the people. Ignatius judged from his own experience. When he was solely occupied with the care of his own soul, and his own

progress in perfection, no one thought of ill-treating him ; on the contrary, he was venerated as a Saint ; but was he occupied with his neighbor, they took up arms against him, and he soon found accusers, imprisonment, and chains ; he was treated as a seditious disturber of the peace, and ordered to be silent. " You enjoy a long truce," said one of his friends to him in Paris, when the Saint, who as yet knew French but little, could not labor for the salvation of souls. " It is true," replied he, " the world grants me a truce, because I do not make war upon it ; but let me once come out of the camp, and you will see Paris up in arms against me."

Such were also the sentiments of Francis Xavier and Francis Borgia. The first trembled whenever there was a cessation of persecution against him or his Order ; the second hoped that after his death he might from Heaven behold the Society always persecuted. And should we now fear because we are so ? Should we not rather regard it as the guarantee of our future welfare, as the pledge of our prosperity ?

Besides, our observation is applicable to all religious orders ; they have in reality nothing to fear but from themselves. The arrows of the infidels may make us martyrs, the hatred of heretics may be aroused against us ; the prejudices of Catholics themselves may pursue us ; hatred, arrows, and prejudices will only serve to purify us, to make us prudent, to draw us into closer union, and to teach us to rely on God alone. Our dangers can only be internal, and they would be great, indeed, if ever private intimacies, those sources of division, were to arise and overturn order, and break the chain of general union, in which our force should consist. Also, were a marked preference in our favor to be the fruit of intrigue and not of merit ; were we to obtain the affection and protection of the great, at the expense of

religion, and to its injury ; were we to tolerate their weaknesses, under the miserable pretext of suffering a lesser to avoid a greater evil ; were we either in consideration of the public homage rendered to great talents, or actuated by the hopes of personal usefulness, to relax, in certain cases, the discipline rigidly observed towards persons of less importance ; “ if, in short,” as St. Gregory Nazianzen says, “ whilst the tempest raged without, the sailors, divided amongst themselves, raised a storm yet more terrible within the ship ; ” then, without doubt, our danger would be great, and our position deplorable.

Persecution, I repeat, will always be a blessing for us. In this respect the servants of God, the Saints, are unanimous, and their opinion is well worth that of the world. A Dominican friar wrote against us, and omitted nothing which could render the Emperor and the public unfavorable to our Order. The grave and pious Louis of Granada is informed of this by one of our Fathers, and immediately writes him the following letter :—

“ God knows with what pain I have read the letter which you have written to me ; although I desire to see you prosper, I would not that it were so much at our expense ; for in this species of traffic, the damage is to him who does the injury, and not to him who receives it. I am aware that Our Lord knows how to sweeten the waters with salt, to cure the eyes of the blind with mud, to multiply the children of Israel by the persecutions of Pharaoh, and Christian people by that of tyrants. I know that He employs His adversaries to bring about His designs. The children of Jacob, in selling their brother Joseph, intended to prove the falsity of his dreams, and did only justify them : and this I think is precisely the result which will be produced by this last attack, whose object is to destroy the Society of Jesus. It

will only serve to render it more humble, more holy, more exemplary, more circumspect, and consequently more estimable. Thus the very means chosen by this friar to subvert it, will serve in the hands of God to raise it up : and so it may truly be said, that he hath labored more for you than you have for Antichrist, as he pretends. As for me, I feel very certain that He of whom Job said, *Quis ponit ventis pondus*, and who sent unto Paul that sting of the flesh, in order that the grandeur of the revelations made to him might not inflate him with pride, has prepared this trial for you, in order that the esteem and praises of men might not excite your vanity. Remember, then, that the seeds which are put in the ground sometimes require a soft air, and sometimes frost, so that the one may make them sprout forth, and the other give their roots time to penetrate into the earth, and strengthen there. The same thing is necessary for the spiritual seed which God sows in His Church, for His own glory. For if the sweetness of praise, when not carried to excess, encourages the development of virtue, yet tribulation develops its strength. Let your Reverences then rejoice in being treated like the primitive Church. Woe to the Company of Jesus, when combats and persecutions shall no longer exist for them ! I entreat you to pray God with the fervor of perfect charity, that He will not punish us for the fault of one of our members, which I fear more than any other misfortune. *Lisbon, 31st March, 1536.*"

But if persecutions have indeed been good for us, here is another protection, a more gentle influence, whose effects are not made known to us by sorrow ; it is that of Mary. The Society was founded by the first Fathers on the solemn day of her feast, and in a church consecrated to her worship. They chose her for the special patroness of their intended labors. And it does truly seem, that from that moment,

there was established, as it were, a mutual exchange of tenderness and devotion ; of sincere attachment on the one side, and on the other of efficient assistance, and providential manifestation. There is not only the gratitude and respect which servants feel towards a good mistress, but rather the affection and indelible union which reigns between a mother and her children.

Let us reflect for a moment upon the multitude of young men placed in our colleges under the particular invocation of Mary. What fruit enduring through life, what deep roots of piety are implanted in the heart, when on those days consecrated to the Queen of Angels, our pupils are seen approaching the Sacraments, visiting the hospitals, distributing alms in private, and practising all those works of charity of which their tender age is capable ! At blessed moments like these, the dew of Heaven falls mysteriously upon their souls, to water, fertilize, and develope the germ of faith, whereof the rough bark shall one day be enabled to resist the storms to which in riper age it may be exposed.

It would be easy to write a whole book, filled with the numerous marks of bounty which our cherished Mother has lavished upon us. Let us here consider but one ; that which she bestowed upon Ignatius himself. It was to the Holy Virgin that he especially owed both his conversion and that angelic purity, which he seems to have bequeathed as a precious inheritance to his sons. Is it not a marvellous circumstance, that, mingling as the members of our Society do with persons of all ranks and of all ages, their morals have never yet suffered ? Sometimes cast upon distant shores, amidst the corruption of barbarians, and the degradation of savages, they have always been seen to conquer all the snares of sensuality. At others, in our most brilliant European cities, where luxury displays all its charms, in-

dustry its fascinations, and the world its seductions, no one has yet ventured, with any shadow of probability, to accuse these servants of God of yielding to the allurements of the passions. To whom can we attribute so extraordinary a favor, if not to that immaculate Virgin, who always obtains from her Divine Son graces precious in proportion to the perfect trust and ardent love testified towards her? It is then Mary herself whose sacred hands have rocked the cradle of our infant Society in the Chapel of the Martyrs. And again it is she who receives it in Rome, in her Church of Our Lady della Strada. Where, in fact, could a more propitious place for the foundation of our Order have been found?

Fifteen years later, St. Francis Xavier, who had chosen the Mother of God for his guide through all his perilous voyages, landed at Japan on the very day of the Assumption, and opened a new field for a long succession of martyrs. And on beholding such admirable goodness on her part, we have proved the depth of our gratitude. In all our tribulations, it is to Mary that we betake ourselves; it is the intercession of Mary that we implore, and our trust in her has never been deceived. No day passes in which our prayers do not arise towards her, to ask her protection, or to return thanks, whether we weep or whether we rejoice. From time to time the voice of our generals may be heard, exhorting us to continue. "Love her," they say, "as your Mother; serve her as your Sovereign Lady;" whilst the good Father Martin Gutierrez exclaims, "Friends, we are all, yes, all collected within the ample folds of her royal mantle!"

CHAPTER VII.

Life of St. Ignatius in Paris—His conduct—His journey to Azpeytia and other places—Honors and conversions—Ignatius is received in Azpeytia as a Saint, and remains there three months—His works, and the fruits of his zeal in that city—He humbles himself to a Carthusian, his former master, and speaks to him of his project of forming a Society.

THE companions of Ignatius, after having pronounced their vows, united together, if not in the same house, at least in one common mode of life. They ardently pursued their literary studies, and endeavored to advance in the path of perfection. Ignatius himself, not satisfied with the observance of the rules which he had prescribed to others, followed the suggestions of his fervor, in all works which could be useful to his neighbor, or which tended to his own sanctification. At half a league's distance from Paris, in the direction of Montmartre, there was a plaster quarry, hollowed out at the foot of a hill, where different apertures had been cut. There, in a dark and hollow cave, Ignatius, far from the tumult of the city, would sometimes pass whole days in penitential exercises, and whole nights in prayer. He often went also to a church called Our Lady of the Fields, situated in the faubourg St. Germain, the lonely position of which rendered it well fitted for meditation. It was especially whenever his external occupations and studies had deprived him of a great part of the time which he would willingly have devoted to prayer, that he came into this soli-

tude, to renew the strength of his soul by contemplation and austerities. These retreats never made him neglect any works of charity. He brought back several heretics to acknowledge the truth, and was the means of leading a vast number of persons into monasteries of different Orders.

One day, after having with his own hands dressed the sores of a poor plague-stricken beggar, he felt the first symptoms of the malady, and was obliged to absent himself from the college for some days; but he was delivered from this danger by a miraculous cure.

The life of Ignatius was entirely passed in such acts of devotion to others. Those who had the opportunity of observing him closely, were filled with profound admiration at his conduct. A celebrated doctor, named Peralta, had placed himself under his spiritual direction; and this doctor was afterwards called upon to testify upon oath to the conduct of the Saint. He replied, that the holy and charitable works of Ignatius, of which he himself had been an eye-witness in Paris, appeared to him, of themselves alone, to merit canonization.

Meanwhile, God permitted him to be attacked by violent inward pains, which increasing daily, reduced him to a state of such extreme weakness, that they rendered him unable to practise any other virtue but that of the admirable patience with which he endured them. All remedies having proved ineffectual, the physicians decided that the only remaining hope of cure was from the effect which might be produced by his native air; and his companions so earnestly importuned him to try this remedy, that he at length consented to do so. It is true that he took this resolution more for their personal advantage, than in hopes of obtaining any relief for himself. He wished above all things to preserve them from the dangers which would have accrued to many of them, from

taking a journey to Spain for the arrangement of their own affairs. For Xavier, Salmeron, and Lainez were under the necessity of returning thither, in order to terminate definitively the renunciation of all their property, as required by their vows. But, besides the inconvenience which might have resulted from their dispersion, Ignatius, who knew all the charm attached to the paternal mansion, the powerful influence of family ties over the heart, and how frequently they allure it from its vocation, appeared to do willingly for the sake of his health, that which he undertook in reality only for the welfare of his companions. But at the moment of his departure an unforeseen obstacle presented itself. Certain doubts had again arisen in the minds of some persons, as to the orthodox nature of the doctrine taught by the seven men, who had united together to follow a mode of life so entirely out of the common way. It was known that the plan of this life had been traced by Ignatius; and this was sufficient cause for his being summoned before the Inquisitor of Paris. It was said, that the effects of the doctrine being new, the doctrine itself must have the same character. Was it dangerous or salutary, who could tell? and if it were useful, why keep it secret? Besides, added the accusers, nothing is more easy than to discover the truth. Why not examine a certain little book composed by Ignatius, and by means of which he attracted so many disciples?

But God directed all these different suspicions with higher views. Some years later, the persecution which was to arise against the Society of Jesus in Rome, being founded in a great measure upon the false report which was spread abroad, that the companions of Ignatius had fled from Paris to escape being burned alive, it pleased God that a thorough examination should now take place in Paris itself, so that

afterwards the examiner was able to give testimony to their innocence.

The Inquisitor had a high esteem for the virtue of Ignatius, and especially for his religious zeal; for he had brought many heretics to him to be reconciled to the Church. Nevertheless, to fulfil the duties of his office, and to satisfy the importunity of the accusers, he secretly made inquiries into his life and teaching, and in short into every thing connected with him and his companions. As he found nothing but causes for admiration, he would have abandoned the affair; but Ignatius, foreseeing that his departure on account of his health would certainly pass for flight, presented himself before the Inquisitor, without being summoned, and himself gave information of all that there still remained to be known in regard to him. The only thing which the Doctor desired, was to know at last this wonderful book, by means of which Ignatius gained so many souls to God. He therefore begged for a sight of it, not by right of examination, but in order to satisfy his devotion; and when he had it in his possession, he perused it with great eagerness. As he himself excelled not only in the theory, but in the practice of perfection, he comprehended and admired the divine spirit which had confined within the limits of so small a work so much force, so great a power for purifying the soul, for enlightening it, and for leading it by a complete disengagement from all worldly ties, to a union with God. He was so much affected by it, that when Ignatius returned to reclaim his book, the Doctor obtained permission from him to copy it out for his own benefit and for that of others, after he himself had learned how to make use of it. But Ignatius was now no longer isolated, as he formerly was at Barcelona, when united for a temporary period to some few companions; nor was he his own master, as at Alcalà or Salamanca. He

was now the head of a family, small in number, it is true, but containing the germ of all that his thoughts had conceived. Henceforth, an unblemished reputation was necessary to him, as to one who was to labor for his neighbors' salvation; and moreover, he was well aware, that go where he would, the enemy of souls would pursue him, and would raise up adversaries against him. For this reason, he begged the Inquisitor to give a definitive judgment upon his cause. He himself being on the eve of his departure for Spain, and his companions about to leave Paris, he desired that the slightest suspicion might not rest upon their lives or doctrine, which would inevitably be the case should the proceedings not proclaim their innocence publicly. The Inquisitor perceived so clearly that the accusation had been brought forward by men totally ignorant of spiritual things, and they appeared to him so futile, that he considered it useless to lose time in refuting them. But in vain he assured our Saint, that such accusations ought rather to be the subject of his ambition than of his fear. Ignatius was not satisfied with these assurances; and one day, bringing with him a notary and several celebrated doctors, he begged the Inquisitor to commit to writing the reasons which prevented him from following up the accusation and pronouncing sentence; so that this act might become an unexceptionable testimony of his innocence. The Doctor consented without hesitation, and joined to it such praises of Ignatius, that he retired even more confused than satisfied. Delivered at length from this obstacle, he recommended his companions to the care of Father Faber, the only priest amongst their number, and one whom they all respected as an elder brother. Having fixed upon the 25th of January, 1537, for meeting again at Venice, Ignatius took leave of his friends with the most cordial affection. If this departure had taken place at the

end of the year 1535, as it is erroneously stated by Father Polanco, and repeated after him by the two historians, Orlandini and Maffei, the Saint could not have gone to Venice until the end of the following year, whereas one of his own letters proves that he arrived there at the end of the same year.

Such a separation, and at so critical a juncture, might well have inspired the venerable founder with some fears; but he knew the virtue of his brethren, he knew that he might confide in their unalterable attachment, and he departed with joy. His confidence was not deceived; the bond which united them all could not be broken. "Had Ignatius died," wrote one of them; "had any other accident put an end to our engagement, we should all have hastened forward towards the Holy Land; we should all have consecrated our lives and our labors to the salvation of the infidels."

In the unfortunate state of health in which Ignatius then was, he could not undertake a journey on foot from Paris to Biscay. His companions procured him a horse of the most trifling value, and of so miserable an appearance, that when he gave it to the hospital of Azpeytia, it was only used to carry wood for the poor inhabitants of the country. It was thus that he arrived at his native place. He would willingly have remained there unknown, as much to avoid a meeting with his relations, as from the fear of not being permitted to lodge in the city hospital; but it was impossible for him to preserve his incognito. He had gone to an inn two leagues distant from Azpeytia, when one John Equiber, who was on intimate terms with the family of Loyola, arrived there, and inquired if there were any travellers in the house. "There was," said the host, "but one, an ill-dressed man, yet good-looking; and who, from his speech, seemed to have been born in that neighborhood; although he did not recog-

nize him." John, moved by curiosity, glanced through the aperture of the door, and saw Ignatius on his knees praying with the most profound devotion. He instantly recognized him, remounted his horse, and rode off in haste to carry the news to the lords of Loyola, and through the whole adjacent country. There it was received not only with great joy, but with such sentiments of piety, that, in order to receive him worthily, the whole clergy of Azpeytia assembled in procession, and went out to meet him. His brothers and nephews were themselves preparing to go out at the head of a noble cavalcade to escort him; when, fearing lest these testimonies of honor and respect might cause him to fly from his country, when he had scarcely returned to it, they renounced their intention, and contented themselves with sending a respectable priest to inform him that he was expected and desired at the castle of Loyola, which they should always consider as his property.

However, they reflected that another obstacle might occur. If Ignatius were to suspect the honorable reception preparing for him, he would probably retire into the mountains, which robbers and bad roads rendered equally dangerous. His kinsmen therefore sent armed servants to the different passes, with the secret mission of accompanying and defending him in case of attack. The brothers of Ignatius had judged rightly; he refused with modesty the invitation sent him through the ecclesiastic; dismissed him, to avoid his importunities, and set out alone across the mountain path, in the direction of Azpeytia, where he intended to lodge at the hospital; but he fell into the very midst of the honors which he wished to avoid. At the entry of the town, he met the whole clergy coming forth in procession, together with a multitude of his kinsmen. They first welcomed him as a Saint, with the warmest marks of veneration; whilst the others

used every effort to induce him to go with them to Loyola. But although he had been unable to avoid this meeting which he had not foreseen, nothing would induce him to yield to the importunities of his family. Since the day that he left his castle, he had never ceased to consider himself as one who possessed nothing upon earth; and having once become poor for the love of Jesus Christ, the hospitals which he met with on his way, were for him as so many paternal mansions. Therefore, without being deterred by the fear of displeasing his brothers, Ignatius went to lodge at the hospital of the Magdalenes. Upon this, they contented themselves with sending him a suitable bed and some provisions. Of the first he made no use, but unmade it every morning to deceive public attention as to his penance, which consisted in lying upon a board. The servants of the hospital at length discovered this, and sending back the bed, brought him one such as was used there by the poor invalids, which he accepted. As for the provisions, he would not touch them; but the day after his arrival went out to beg alms, and continued to do so during the three months of his sojourn at Azpeytia.

To live with the poor, to eat at their table, to distribute to them whatever seemed to him most delicate, to reserve for himself the most miserable food, such was his usual mode of life. Once only, nevertheless, he consented to enter his house, in compliance with the earnest solicitations of his sister-in-law, who knelt before him, and conjured him to do so, by the Passion of Our Lord. He yielded to her entreaties rather to make her understand the sentiments which she ought to feel towards that most holy mystery, in the name of which she had entreated this favor, than from the desire of pleasing her, or of enjoying the pleasure of finding himself once more in his own domicile. That evening, then, he re-entered the home of his fathers, slept upon the floor, and

the next morning, by break of day, he had returned to the hospital.

His pains, and the weakness of his stomach had left him, even before he reached his native land; for which reason he had resumed his usual austerities. Besides the hair shirt which he habitually wore, his fasts were frequent, he also made use of the discipline, and usually slept upon the bare ground. He employed the strength which had been restored to him, for the salvation of souls. His eldest brother, Don Martin Garcia, who looked upon spiritual things with the eyes of worldly prudence, endeavored to dissuade him from his efforts, assuring him that no one would come to listen to his instructions. "If a single child profits by my teaching," replied Ignatius, "my time and labors will seem to me well employed."

But on the contrary, a great concourse of people soon collected to hear him. To doctrinal teaching, he united instructions upon those spiritual observances, which lead to the practice of a Christian life. It was at this time that he knew and predicted the future fate of two children. The first, named Martin Alarzia, stammered somewhat in his speech, and was very homely in his appearance; so that when he answered the questions in the catechism, peals of laughter were heard amongst those present. But Ignatius turning towards them, said, "You ridicule this young child, because you discover in him only that which strikes the eyes; but know that his soul is infinitely more beautiful than his body appears to you deformed. That beauty will for ever increase, he will become a great servant of God, and will do useful and great things in his own country, for the salvation of his brethren." This child became in fact a priest as zealous as he was holy, and as long as he lived, rendered great services to his countrymen.

The second was a child of eight years old, named Francis D'Almara. His mother presented him to Ignatius, that he might bless him, and might pray to the Lord that He would be pleased to preserve him for her consolation and support. Ignatius looked at him for some moments, then turning to his mother; "Be not uneasy," said he, "your son will have a long life, and a numerous offspring." Almara afterwards became the father of fifteen children, and died at the age of eighty.

The regular preachings of Ignatius took place in the evening, three times a week, and usually lasted two hours; but in consequence of a slow fever with which he was attacked, his weakness became extreme, and this exercise was very fatiguing to him. Nothing but his own zeal, together with the divine assistance, could have made it possible for him to continue. He preached in the open country, no church being sufficiently large to contain the crowds who thronged to hear him. The people climbed the trees, often at a great distance from the preacher; but his voice was distinctly heard at the distance of more than three hundred paces, whether by the particular assistance of God, or from the mute attention of this immense audience, who were awed into deep religious silence.

On the occasion of his first discourse, Ignatius gave a remarkable proof of humility. One of his motives, said he, for returning to his native land, after having quitted it so many years since, with the intention of never beholding it again, had been to satisfy the dictates of his conscience; which had never ceased to cry to him, that there where he had formerly given the example of a youth spent in dissipation, he ought now to give that of true repentance. Every day, added he, he implored God with tears to pardon him, and now he conjured his companions to forgive him also, and

to grant the assistance of their prayers to an unfortunate sinner who so much required them. If some amongst them had unfortunately imitated him in his errors, he entreated them now to imitate him in his penitence. "Moreover," added he, "a debt of justice obliged me to return amongst you, one by which I am bound to restore the honor of an innocent man, and even to indemnify him for a loss which he once incurred through me." So saying, he mentioned by name, and pointed out one of his hearers. "Yes," added he, "that man was imprisoned and condemned to repair the damage which had been done in a garden, not by him, who was unjustly accused of it, but by me and some of my comrades, who had stolen fruit off the trees. Let all now know his innocence and my fault. To repair the injury which I then caused him, I here publicly declare that I make him a gift of two farms which still belong to me, the one by right of restitution, and the other as a voluntary and gratuitous gift."

After such a beginning, the fruits of salvation which he afterwards produced in the souls of his hearers, were truly worthy of the spirit which animated him. He first reformed the clergy, who stood greatly in need of amendment, many of them leading an irregular life, without even an attempt at disguise. He led them back to that purity of morals and conduct which so holy a state requires. Ignatius next attacked the passion for gaming, which, by causing the ruin of families, brings so many troubles along with it, and at the very least, involves so great a waste of time. The result was prodigious; and for more than three years after, neither cards nor dice were seen in Azpeytia. Afterwards came the turn of luxury, jewels, but above all of an immodest mode of dressing amongst the women. Then sobs might be heard from amidst the crowd, vanity yielded, and the ornaments of

frivolity disappeared. During the ten days which elapsed between Ascension and Pentecost, the preacher explained one of the ten commandments every evening, and succeeded in drawing down the Divine Spirit upon more than one heart, on that day when His descent is celebrated, and for which these teachings served as a preparation. After the second instruction, all vain and false oaths, hitherto very common, were banished from the country. He had moreover the happiness of converting several women of bad conduct; and God gave so much power to the words of His servant, that not satisfied with devoting themselves to penitential exercises, these women labored also for the conversion of their companions. To avoid the danger of falling back into sin and profligacy, they left the place and undertook long pilgrimages on foot; whilst one of them, who had less strength than the others, shut herself up in an hospital, to devote her life to the service of the sick. Ignatius also established a confraternity of the Holy Sacrament, to whom he confided the care of the poor who were ashamed to beg, and effected a capital upon his property for their relief, to be administered by the principal inhabitants of the town. A treasurer was appointed to distribute the alms. He introduced the custom of praying daily at noon, for those who lived in mortal sin, and fixed a salary for those who gave the signal by ringing the bells of the parish; he also re-established the habit of praying every evening for the faithful departed, and engaged his brothers to have so many loaves distributed to the poor, every Sunday, in honor of the twelve Apostles. In short, every thing which he wished to establish, in order to reanimate fervor in the service of God, he succeeded in, through the zeal of the inhabitants of Azpeytia. Besides, Heaven came in aid of his charity and care, by powerful assistance and astonishing miracles. A woman was brought him from a distant part of the country,

who for four years had been possessed of a devil. The exorcisms of which the powers had been tried, had only served to prove the reality of the possession. God reserved her deliverance for the prayers of Ignatius. He laid his hands upon her head, made over her the sign of the Cross, and sent her back delivered from the demon.

Some, encouraged by this example, brought another woman to him; one who was subject to such terrible convulsions, that every one believed her to be possessed. On seeing her, the Saint, enlightened by wisdom from above, declared that she was not so; but that frightful images, which the demon brought before her eyes, were the sole cause of these dreadful convulsions; and making over her the sign of the Cross, she was cured. Still more wonderful was the cure of an unfortunate woman, wasted by pulmonary consumption, and so far gone, that her friends were only awaiting her last sigh. They entreated him to bless her, but he declined using a sacerdotal prerogative, until at length, vanquished by the entreaties of the dying woman, and of those who surrounded her, his humility yielded to his charity, and he gave her his blessing. Strength and health were instantly restored to her, and she returned on foot to Gamara, from whence she had been carried. She afterwards returned to see him who had so wonderfully cured her, and brought him an offering of some fruit, which he accepted, in order not to distress her, but which he immediately distributed amongst the poor in the hospital.

The cure of a poor epileptic man was not less admirable. The Saint being present at one of his attacks, placed his hand upon the sick man's forehead, after having implored the assistance of Heaven, and he was radically cured of his infirmity. Whilst by the hands of Ignatius, such prodigies were wrought, the very virtue of his garments also effected

them. Thus a woman whose arm had long been withered, having undertaken, through a sentiment of confidence and devotion, to wash the linen which he had worn, was rewarded by a thorough cure.

But whilst many sick persons were restored to health solely through the prayers of Ignatius, it pleased God, in order to increase the merit of His servant, and to give a great example of patience to the world, that he should himself fall ill. The hospital no longer afforded him solely a place of retirement, but the assistance which his condition required. His brother, Don Martin de Garcia, wished to have him transported to Loyola; but his importunities were ineffectual, and in order not to be deprived of the happiness of attending to him, his relations came to see him in the hospital. Amongst these were his cousins, Doña Maria de Oriola and Doña Simona de Alzaga, who passed several nights there, during one of which a circumstance occurred, worthy of being recorded. Before retiring to take a little repose, they wished to leave a light in the chamber, but the Saint objected, and had it extinguished, saying that if he required light, God would not let him want it. As he never regarded the more or less suffering condition of his body, when uniting his soul to God, he began to pray, and remained some hours at his devotions. His heart became so inflamed with the rays of divine love, that after having been obliged several times to relieve it by sighs and tears, cries escaped from him. His cousins instantly hastened to his chamber, and found it resplendent with celestial light. Ignatius, confused that this miracle had been perceived, earnestly entreated them to keep perpetual silence upon the subject.

He was scarcely recovered, when he prepared to leave Azpeytia; and as soon as his intentions were made known

through the town, the people and all the clergy conjured him with tears to remain amongst them, and not to prefer another country to his own, where his labors were so profitable. But he answered, that God called him elsewhere, and that besides, he could not remain at Azpeytia, because, being surrounded there by his family, he lived as if in the midst of the world. He had afterwards to struggle against the wishes of his brother Garcia, who had until then yielded to his humility, in permitting him to reside in the hospital and to live upon alms, and who now in parting from him, would willingly have furnished him with a horse, and with servants to accompany him to the port whence he was to embark for Italy. By so doing, he was desirous not only to prove to Ignatius the fraternal affection which he bore him, but also to satisfy public opinion, which would have attributed to indifference on his part, that which was nothing but an act of profound humility on the part of Ignatius. Besides, Ignatius had not yet recovered so entirely, as to be in a condition to run the risk of undertaking a long journey on foot at the approach of winter. He would neither wholly yield, nor entirely refuse. He consented that his brother and his other relatives should accompany him to the confines of Biscay; then, having bid them an eternal farewell, he took, on foot, the road which was to lead him, first to Xavier, then to Almazano and Toledo; where he was to wind up the affairs of Francis Xavier, James Lainez, and Alphonso Salmeron, natives of these places. He afterwards went to Sagorba, to visit his old master and friend, Don John De Castro, who had shortly before entered the Carthusian monastery, the *Vale of Christ*. Their former mutual confidence had suffered no chill. Ignatius then informed Castro of his project of passing into Italy, and from thence to Palestine, to found an Order, whose Institute should have for its object, no less the glory of God

and the salvation of man, than the personal perfection of its members. He traced out the plan, as it had been revealed to him, spoke of the companions whom he had already gathered, and entreated the support of his counsels and prayers.

John de Castro asked him to give him until the next day for reflection, and passed the night in prayer upon this subject. The following day, filled with joy, and as one assured by Divine light, that this work was of God, he encouraged Ignatius to proceed in his enterprise; adding, that it appeared to him so excellent, that he was ready to quit the Carthusian convent, where he was yet only a novice, and to attach himself to Ignatius, in order to contribute to the success of so important a work. But Ignatius would not consent to this, and on the contrary, engaged him to bind himself to that holy Institute to which God Himself had called him. After having reciprocally promised to remember each other before the Lord, the two friends parted.*

* *Sanctum Ignatium* (says the Father Don Anthony Martin of Altariba,) anno millesimo quingentesimo trigesimo quinto, e civitate Valentiae in regium vallis Christi Carthusianorum conventum, accessisse, ut suum videret dilectissimum preceptorem P. D. Joannem de Castro; et suum insuper, aperiret animum, de fundendâ societate Jesu, antea conceptum: in ejus ad Deum precibus felicem tantæ rei exitum collocabat. Annuit D. Joannes de Castro votis Ignatii, et illa vespere nocteque proximâ, Deum ardentissime, super hâc una re, precatus est. Sequenti die, sic est Ignatium allocutus. Ita, o Ignati, tuâ de fundendâ Societate Jesu, arriident vota, ut si lubet, Carthusiam deseram, novitius sum nondum votis adstrictus: meam opem, operam, vires, consilium in te unum transferam, dummodò tantæ molis negotium felicem exitum consequatur. Ad quæ Ignatius: nequaquâm, reverende Pater: sta ineptis: tuis me precibus Deo commenda &c. Father Andrew Soler, monk of the same Order, adds some particulars in his testimony: S. Ignatium accessisse hanc Carthusiam *Vallis-Christo* ut videret præfatum P. D. Joannem de Castro, anno 1535, et ut conferret eum illo con-

ceptum de condendâ Societate Jesu animum. Tunc S. Ignatius expectans P. D. Castro novitium, vespertinis horis adstantem cum reliquâ religiosorum familiâ, sedit ad crucem cœmeterii conventus &c. And finally, besides the two testimonies above mentioned, Father Don Nicholas Bonet also attests: Se insuper audivisse à dictis Patribus, S. Ignatium nunquam habuisse animum ingrediendi aliam Religionem, nec Patrum Carthusianorum.

CHAPTER VIII.

Journey to Venice—Reunion of St. Ignatius and his companions—Peter Faber in Paris, adds three new companions to Ignatius.

ST. Ignatius embarked at Valencia, after his return from the Carthusian Monastery, and set sail for Genoa. This navigation was dangerous at that time, on account of the numerous Turkish galleys arrived from the Barbary coasts, which frequently captured vessels with their crews, whom they afterwards kept in slavery. But a peril of another nature delivered them from this one, namely, a violent tempest, which threatened to engulf the vessel. They were forced to throw the merchandise overboard, and a gust of wind having unfixed the helm, and broken the masts, the vessel was abandoned to the mercy of the waves and the hurricane. The cries and prayers of the unfortunate passengers, bore ample testimony to their fears; Ignatius alone, habituated to consider himself as always in the hands of God, preserved all his serenity, had no thought of personal fear, and only, as he afterwards observed, felt a profound emotion of sorrow, at not having responded to the numerous graces which he had received from Heaven, with the gratitude which they deserved. This is truly the greatest affliction which the Saints endure; from their clear perception of the great debts which are contracted by those who receive great benefits; so that the more they are loaded with them, the more

they are afflicted in considering the account which they would one day render.

But God permitted the tempest to be appeased, and the vessel at length entered the harbor of Genoa. Ignatius however encountered yet greater dangers by land than he had done by sea. Traversing the summit of the Apennines, in order to leave the state of Genoa, and to enter that of Lombardy, he lost his way, and followed a stony path, through broken rocks, hoping that it would lead to a plain; whereas it terminated in a precipice, jutting out over a torrent. By dint of climbing from rock to rock, he had gone so far, that when he wished to retrace his steps, he could not do so without the greatest difficulty and the most imminent peril. Obligated to drag himself forward upon his hands and knees, clinging to the rocks and herbage which grew out of the crevices, the slightest movement threatened to make him lose his equilibrium, and to precipitate him into the boiling torrent. This terrible journey was afterwards considered by our Saint, as one of the greatest dangers from which he had ever escaped.

Meanwhile, the winter set in, and the roads in Lombardy were so broken up by the floods, that to make a journey on foot over them, was a serious infliction. Ignatius arrived sick at Bologna, where another accident happened to him, at the entrance of the town. At the moment of passing the bridge, his foot slipped, and he fell into the ditch; he made his way out, wet and bleeding; and this seemed to him a favorable opportunity for humiliating himself. Therefore, instead of divesting himself of his wet garments, he passed along through the city, asking alms in the most frequented streets. He gained what he sought for; an abundant harvest of raillery, and nothing more; a surprising circumstance, however, the hospitality of Bologna being proverbial.

Some Spaniards at length took pity on the traveller, and received him during his illness, which lasted a week. He then set out for Venice; where he arrived during the last days of the year 1535.

This city immediately became the theatre of the labors and success of Ignatius. Two nobles of Navarre, James and Stephen de Eguia, had taken up their residence there at that time, on their return from a pilgrimage to Palestine. Meeting with Ignatius, whom they had formerly known in Alcalá, they not only joyfully received him into their house, but looked upon him as an envoy from God, sent to deliver them from the painful state of perplexity in which they both were. They had been rewarded for their holy pilgrimage, by being inspired with a strong desire to abandon the world, and to serve God with greater fervor; but undecided as to the kind of life which they ought to adopt, they addressed themselves to Ignatius, requesting his advice and assistance. Ignatius made use of his usual method; he advised them to follow the *Spiritual Exercises*. Heaven then made them acquainted with its designs. They attached themselves to Ignatius, and became members of the Society, as soon as it was definitely established.

A similar determination was not so easily adopted, by a bachelor named Diego, a native of Malaga, of the noble family of Hoyes, the different branches of which were originally from Cordova in Andalusia, and who at a very remote period had been invested by the kings of Castile, with the title of Lords of Albayda. He of whom we speak had distinguished himself by his scientific knowledge, and ardently desired to make progress in a spiritual life. Now the experience of many persons had made known to him the efficacy of the *Spiritual Exercises* in this respect. But having frequently heard them calumniated, and knowing that they

had even been submitted to the investigation of the Inquisitors, as being suspected of containing some hidden and dangerous doctrine, he feared lest he might be surprised into error, and could not make up his mind to ask the direction of Ignatius in following them. Yet a mere doubt did not appear to him a sufficiently strong motive for depriving himself of what might prove to be a certain good; and he reflected that besides, should he meet with any hidden poison in the Exercises, he would find sure antidotes in the decrees of the Councils, and in the works of the Holy Fathers and Theologians. But after he had devoted two or three days to the first meditations, feeling himself transformed into a new man, he acknowledged that he owed it to the virtues of the truths of the Gospel, and to no strange or foreign teaching. He immediately confessed his error, and deploring the blindness which had so long deprived him of so great a benefit, disclosed his former suspicions to Ignatius, and showed him the books which he had collected, in order to place himself on the defensive against him. He humbly entreated the Saint to pardon his distrust, and continued the Exercises, the immediate result of which was to place him in the number of the companions of Ignatius, with a view of afterwards entering into the new Institute. It is true, that he dwelt amongst them but a short time; and we might envy him his happiness in having carried to Heaven the first fruits of the Society, as yet but faintly sketched out upon earth.

By the same means, that is, the practice of the Exercises, Ignatius soon gained other followers in Venice; his noble character also procured him another very great advantage, the protection of the Bishop of Baffo, and several members of his illustrious family, who sheltered our rising Society with paternal benevolence.

Nevertheless, such happy beginnings could not last, and

the enemy of souls was again to raise up storms as he had already done elsewhere. His attacks were the more dangerous, that it became difficult to prove the falsehood of the accusations levelled against Ignatius. At first, the report was secretly spread, that he was a skilful heretic, who had escaped from Spain, and had come to propagate his errors in Italy. The miserable author of these calumnies succeeded at first in propagating them without being suspected; and when he had reason to fear that he might be discovered, saved himself by flight from the researches of the Inquisition, and the punishment which he merited. Alcalà, Salamanca, and Paris, had been by turns the theatre of his intrigues. In the last city, not being able to inflict any other punishment upon him, they burned his effigy in public.

But these imputations beginning to spread abroad found credit amongst many persons. Ignatius was informed of this, and was noways astonished, knowing from whence these accusations proceeded, and aware also of their motive. He proceeded forthwith to ask audience of Monsignore Girolamo Veralli, then Nuncio of Pope Paul III. to the Republic of Venice, and requested him to have a public examination of a cause where he must appear, either as the accused or the accuser.

The Nuncio consented, and precisely as before, a sentence was pronounced which attested the innocence of the plaintiff, and declared his accusers guilty of falsehood and calumny.

Whilst these events were passing in Spain and Venice, Peter Faber awaited in Paris the moment fixed for his departure, and that of his companions, who still continued their studies. He began, however, to exercise himself in the art of gaining souls to the service of God, in imitation of his leader, whose place he held. We can form a better idea of

the profits which resulted from his labors, by listening to the decision of a celebrated theologian, than from all the details which we could collect. When this man, whose learning equalled his virtue, heard that Faber was preparing for his departure, he declared that he could not, without sinning grievously, abandon the certain good which he was effecting in Paris, in the doubtful and remote hope of taking part one day in works which, however great they might be, could never be so important as those which he renounced. He even offered to have his decision signed by all the doctors and theologians of Paris. It is certain, that had God himself not placed in the hearts of the six companions of Ignatius, the intimate conviction that in attaching themselves to him, they had been chosen to labor for the glory of God in some peculiar manner; the purpose of Faber would have been strongly shaken, and he would, perhaps, have separated himself from Ignatius, at the risk of turning his companions also from their project. Might he not, in fact, have felt some fear lest he was about to commit, if not a great fault, at least to do great injury, by his desertion, to a vast number of souls who so happily responded to his cares? By transporting himself beyond the seas, to traverse immense tracts of country, in searching for people of whose language he was ignorant, who professed a religion as barbarous as profane, there was, perhaps, but a doubtful hope of being able to labor for their salvation. And if unsuccessful, what other fruit could he obtain as the reward of his immense labors, but the personal merit of his exertions? But the work of St. Ignatius was that of God himself, and the fulfilment of his designs. Nothing therefore could be an obstacle to its accomplishment; neither this first opposition, nor the many others which were afterwards raised up against it. None of the companions of Ignatius

left him ;—on the contrary, others were united to him, and of this, the honor is due to Faber.

One of Faber's happiest gifts, was the singular address with which he mingled spiritual subjects with his most familiar conversation, and with so perfect a union of simplicity and force, that he impressed upon the hearts of all his hearers the knowledge and love of the great truths upon which he spoke. He skilfully joined in conversations which had already begun, as the pilot goes on board the ship to guide her into the harbor. Gradually, he took the helm into his own hands, and led the discourse towards some profitable subject, which had been far from the thoughts of the speakers at the beginning of the conversation. Thus he inspired no distrust, and no one avoided his conversation, which was besides peculiarly agreeable. The sweetness and unction with which he brought forward the most important truths, penetrated all hearts, and often effected the most admirable conversions.

Faber also directed the Spiritual Exercises with so much ability, that in the opinion of Ignatius, no one ever equalled him. By these different means, he gained many souls to God, and acquired three new companions for his master ; Claudius Le Jay, Pasquier Brouet, and John Codure, distinguished men, doctors of theology, and of whom the two first were priests. Claudius, born in the neighborhood of Geneva, possessed an angelic disposition and rare abilities ; Brouet was a native of Bretancourt, five leagues distant from Amiens, and Codure of Embrun, a town in Dauphiné.

Thus the first Fathers of the Company were at the beginning, ten in number, and this very number gave occasion to the heretics for suspecting that some strange mysteries were concealed in it. "The number ten," said the Calvinist Miseno, "was called *Atlas* by the Pythagoreans. It is not then without a hidden motive that it was chosen by the first

Members of the Society of Jesus, which supports the Papacy, as Atlas supported the world."

And as once before of the first members, so did the day of the Assumption and the little Church of Montmartre witness the vows pronounced by these new associates.

CHAPTER IX.

The companions of Ignatius set out for Venice—Dangers of the road—Discussions with the heretics in Germany—Consolations and arrival.

THE death of Francis Sforza, Duke of Milan, had been the occasion of war between Charles V., and Francis I.; and the former had already entered Provence, at the head of a numerous army, composed of Germans, Spaniards, and Italians. The companions of Ignatius, who, according to the arrangements made with him at the time of his departure, were not to rejoin him at Venice until the 25th of January, 1537, now thought it necessary to hasten thither, lest the passages leading from France to Italy should be closed upon their arrival. Some however remained to terminate the affairs which they had in common, and to distribute to the poor the little which they possessed in Paris; whilst the others directed their steps towards Meaux, where they were all to meet, and to continue their journey together. This first departure took place on the 15th of November, 1536. Amongst those who had preceded the others, was Simon Rodriguez, who, while he waited for his companions, received an especial pledge of the protection of God, who first sent him an unexpected malady, and afterwards delivered him from it in a miraculous manner.

A considerable abscess broke out upon his shoulder, accompanied by a burning fever. Suffering the most excruciat

ing pain, he passed the night, rolling in delirium upon the floor of a miserable inn, his only bed, as well as that of his companions. But what most afflicted the sick man, was the thought of delaying his companions, who would probably find the passes closed, unless they decided to separate from him, and to leave him in solitude and loneliness.

Although this appeared to him a precious opportunity for exercising patience, yet, as on the other hand, the delay might prove an obstacle to the holy works which were the aim of all their desires, he prayed with humble fervor to God, that he would be pleased to regard with a propitious eye the virtues of his associates, and to accept of him as their servant, if He judged him unworthy of the Apostolic Mission, towards which Ignatius was leading them. His companions, on their side, entreated the Lord that He would restore to Ignatius the companion whom He had given him, and that He would neither suffer them to be delayed, nor to depart in affliction. Their prayers were granted, and it seemed as if this malady had been sent to Rodriguez, only to give him a miraculous token of the special protection of God. The patient, after having passed the whole night in violent agony, fell towards morning into a short slumber. From this he awoke without fever, without tumor, and without any trace of its having existed. A few hours after, their companions arrived from Paris, and he was able to set out joyously with them, upon their journey. This event confirmed him in his design of following in the footsteps of Ignatius, through whatsoever difficulties he might encounter. Another trial awaited Rodriguez, but one which it was easy for him to overcome. One of his brothers, and an old college companion of his own, learning that his absence was not to be of short duration, as they had imagined, but that he intended to follow Ignatius, and adopt his mode of life, set

out travelling post to meet him. Having overtaken him, his brother threw himself into his arms, bathed in tears, and employed every argument which fraternal love could suggest, to dissuade him from his project. He would never more, said he, dare to return into Portugal, to see their mother pine away with grief, and to hear her reproach him with having allowed her to lose a son whom his dying father had so tenderly committed to her care. To these motives, dictated by filial affection, his friend added others based upon justice. Rodriguez could not, said he, without ingratitude, disappoint the hopes of the king of Portugal, or permit him to lose all the profit of the expenses which he had incurred until then on his account, in the expectation that his services would one day be useful to himself; not certainly with a view to his attaching himself to a man, who was either expelled from every city, or shamed by every one, and whose real projects were still unknown. But neither the tears of his brother, nor the false reasonings of his friend, could shake the resolution of Rodriguez. He answered them both in such a manner as to prove, that it would perhaps be easier for him to persuade his friends to accompany him, than for them to induce him to retrace his steps. Mortified and distressed, they left him, and returned to Paris.

Francis Xavier had also different obstacles to surmount, though the first scarcely merits that name. His was the offer of a canonship of Pampeluna, which he received when preparing to leave Paris. But that noble heart, which had renounced at the foot of the cross all that was not Christ, would have scattered to the winds, as vile dust, the whole world, had he held it in his hand, and he did not deign to bestow even a moment of reflection upon this offer. He ran a greater risk of never seeing Ignatius again, through an excess of fervor, which greatly endangered his life.

Revolving in his mind all the days of his youth, and the faults with which it had been blemished, he resolved, as some other Saints had done, to endeavor to expiate each one in particular. The ordinary recreation of the students in Paris was to exercise themselves in running, and as he was extremely agile, he had perhaps felt a little vanity, on account of his superiority in this exercise. To punish himself for this (and we may conclude that he had no great faults to lament, since he punished this slight one with so much severity), Xavier conceived the idea of binding his arms and legs tightly, with cords covered with knots; and notwithstanding the pain, which increased at each step, he set out thus on foot for Italy. He endured this torture with constancy for several days; but at length his strength and his nature, not equalling his fervor, he felt himself totally exhausted, and obliged to confess that it was impossible for him to continue his journey. To make known the cause was a greater torture to Xavier than the pain itself; for that which in his eyes was but an expiation, would appear in the eyes of others, an excess of holy penance. He was obliged however to accede to the importunities of his companions, and to the necessity of having recourse to remedies, in order that their journey might not be unnecessarily delayed; but when he had informed them of the cause of his sufferings, they remained equally struck with admiration and dismay. The flesh was not only inflamed, but so much swollen, that it entirely covered the cords. They carried him in their arms to the nearest village, and sent for a surgeon who happened to be there. He seeing on one hand, the necessity, and on the other, the danger of an operation, and fearing that he could not introduce an instrument without attacking some nerve, would not undertake it, and declared that the cure of such an evil should be entirely left to God, for the love of whom it

had been contracted. Xavier welcomed this idea, and inspired his companions with so much courage, that their confidence in God increased in proportion to the critical situation in which they found themselves. They remembered the favor which had just been granted to Rodriguez, and joined together in fervent prayer to obtain from the Lord, that He would be pleased once more to make manifest His former goodness towards them, and to continue the protection which, until then, He had granted them. He alone could, at that moment, cure an evil caused by ineffable love for Him. Long supplications were not needed in order to obtain from God a favor, which even the interests of His own glory seemed in some measure to demand. Would he have allowed an Apostle to perish at his very outset, one who was destined to spread even to the farthest extremities of the world, the knowledge of His Divine Son?

During this night, the sick man first fell into a sweet slumber, and the following morning the cords were found broken in pieces; while the flesh, restored to its natural state, not only showed no trace of a wound, but did not even retain the marks of the ligatures.

Yet this accident could not induce Lainez to moderate his austerities; and although at his departure from Paris, his health appeared very delicate, he thirsted after penance, and during his journey wore a coarse hair-shirt, which he continued to do until his arrival in Venice.

After the first difficulties were overcome, our pilgrims considered all the sufferings of their journey as trifling, and surmounted them by an unlimited confidence in Divine Providence. They all went on foot, poorly clad in a robe of moderate length, such as was then worn by the students in Paris. In their hand was a staff, and on their back a small bale of books. Their exterior was so modest, so devout,

that the passers by stopped to look upon them with respect. One day they fell into the hands of some French soldiers, who were guarding certain defiles, and who asked who they were and from whence they came. The answer was embarrassing, for several of them were Spaniards, which would have been a dangerous avowal. During this colloquy, a peasant, who had stopped to look at them, turned towards the soldiers and exclaimed : " Leave these honest men in peace ; do you not see that they are going to convert *some country* ? " A singular remark in the mouth of a man who hardly understood what he spoke of, and which might have been considered prophetic, if, instead of indicating some country as the goal of their efforts, he had announced that they were going to labor for the conversion of the greatest part of the globe. However that may be, the travellers suffered nothing but apprehension. They had so skilfully calculated their occupations for each day's journey, that they were able to divide their time between prayer, recitation from memory, sometimes even the chanting of the psalms in a low tone, and pious conversations ; the subjects of which were furnished by their meditations upon spiritual things. Three of these holy men were priests, and every day celebrated mass, at which the others received the Communion. Each evening, on arriving at the inn, and the following day before continuing their journey, they all knelt down together to thank God for His mercies to them during the past day and night, entreating Him to be pleased to continue His protection towards them.

They had kept a very little money to provide for the indispensable expenses of the road ; but their food was coarse and scanty, and for these holy pilgrims every day was like a fast day. To their voluntary sufferings were added those inevitably caused by the inclemency of the season. While

traversing Lorraine, they were exposed to unceasing rain; and when they entered Germany, the snow had become so deep, that they were sometimes obliged to wait three days at a time, before being able to continue their journey.

Notwithstanding these constantly recurring obstacles, the fervor which animated them rendered the yoke sweet and pleasant; whilst charity, like an ardent flame, burned within them. To judge by their unity and mutual respect, they might easily have been taken for affectionate brothers. Each one found in his friend a zealous servant; all equal, no one sought to obtain authority; and when necessary to take any resolution, each gave his opinion, and the majority decided.

They had taken the route leading through Germany, to avoid a collision with the imperial army; which could not have been prevented had they gone by way of Provence. But they met the French troops, who were marching towards Flanders by way of Lorraine. At that time, the continual depredations committed by the soldiers, rendered the roads so dangerous that the inhabitants did not venture to run the risk of leaving their houses. Wherever our pilgrims appeared, the people, astonished at seeing the special protection of God thus extended over them, and amazed at their temerity, would ask them if they had travelled through the air. But this protection was made still more manifest one day, when having fallen into the midst of the French army, they underwent an examination; whereupon one of them answered that they were students from the university of Paris, and from motives of devotion were journeying towards St. Nicholas, a retired place on the confines of Lorraine, through which they had in truth to pass. No other question was addressed to them, which might have led to the discovery of the Spaniards, who formed part of their number, and who would undoubtedly have been detained by the French troops.

Germany presented new dangers to the travellers, for if they received a favorable reception from the Catholics, who were often affected even to tears on beholding these nine men, whose rosaries were hung around their necks—thus openly declaring their belief in countries peopled by heretics; yet it also frequently happened that they were exposed to the fury of those enemies of the Church, and even their lives endangered. No sooner had they entered a Protestant city, than they were attacked by a crowd of preachers, who defied them to dispute, not from any desire of knowing the truth, but rather to show their assurance by going into their very dwellings, to make profession of a religion opposed to that of Rome. The companions never declined discussion, although there was little hope of converting men whose ill-will almost surpassed their ignorance; but at least they would not incur the reproach of having kept silence, as if unable to defend the faith when it was attacked.

He who most distinguished himself amongst them was James Lainez, who, by the vivacity and soundness of his answers, constantly drove the preachers to despair. There was one, indeed, who did not hesitate publicly to confess himself conquered; but, unfortunately, though Lainez gained the victory, truth did not; for this minister, unwilling to renounce the liberty which he enjoyed in his own sect, did not abandon its errors. Yet that which did not profit himself, was at least useful to those present, who thus learned to distrust the teachings of a man who, while he acknowledged his errors, continued to profess them.

The modesty and humility of these poor pilgrims were as much admired as their talents, and formed a strong contrast to the intemperate conduct and pride of the ministers. When the latter could no longer find any reasons to bring forward, they would supply the want of them by insults, affecting to

despise the blows which they could not parry. But if the ignorant applauded their empty declamation, wise men felt themselves attracted towards our Religious, whose modesty charmed them and won upon their esteem. Frequently, after lodging them and defraying their expenses, they also sent guides to accompany them, both to direct them on their way and to insure their safety.

At sixteen miles from Constance, in a market-town entirely peopled by Protestants, a minister, who, after having been the shepherd of his flock, had by his apostasy become as a devouring wolf for them, saw the travellers enter the inn, and immediately discovering them to be Catholics, hastily collected the inhabitants together, that they might witness the great victory which he expected to gain over the nine papists. Without permitting them to repose an instant, he then went to challenge them, and to propose a conference. They joyfully accepted it; and James Lainez, whose calm temper equalled his ardent zeal, entered the lists first, and sustained the contest for several hours, to the great wrath of the minister; who, having counted upon crushing his enemies in a body, found that he could not even get rid of the first whom he had attacked. At length, fatigued or discouraged: "Let us make a truce," said he; "let us sup together in harmony, and afterwards we shall resume our discussion."

They accepted the renewed discussion, but not the supper. Wisdom was on the side of the papists, whose repast was frugal; as for the minister, he drank with intemperance, and his head became heated. The table being cleared, the dispute recommenced, and the two champions were surrounded by numerous spectators, who having hastened thither at the first attack, awaited the issue of the second; but this gradually became more and more bitter, for the copious liba-

tions in which the minister had indulged, inspired him with a spirit and words which passed the limits of mere discussion. There was between Lainez and him all the difference which exists between a man who is in the full possession of his reason, and one heated by the fumes of wine. The arguments of the Catholic became overwhelming, and the minister, ashamed at this unforeseen result, was moved to exclaim, "Well! you triumph, and I have nothing to answer; do you want any thing more?" "Yes," replied one of the companions; "since you acknowledge your errors, you ought to abandon them, and also to withdraw from these same errors the souls whom you have led into them. Why persist in teaching that which vanishes before the simple light of truth? Are you not aware that to err in the faith, but still more, to propagate those errors, is to hasten forward to eternal death?" At these words, the unfortunate man fell into such a transport of fury, that relinquishing the Latin language, which he had hitherto used, he burst forth into a thousand threats in German, crying out, that on the following morning he would be able to prove that he had other means of defence besides arguments; that he would begin by having them all put in irons, and they would then see what would happen next. After these words, he went away blaspheming.

The words of the minister were soon explained to the pilgrims, and they were advised to take their departure as speedily as possible, because he had a high reputation throughout the country, and might even go further than he threatened. But they would not incur the risk of appearing to abandon by their flight, the Catholic Faith, which they had so ably defended by their arguments. To die for their religion, was the greatest happiness which they could aspire

to. What were they going to seek for in Palestine? Death for the Faith; and they were about to find it in Germany!

They passed the greater part of the night in strengthening and encouraging one another. The following morning, whilst the minister still suffered from the effects of his intemperance, a young man of beautiful countenance and lofty stature, who appeared to be about thirty years of age, presented himself at the Inn, and with an affable air, invited the strangers to follow him. He spoke German, but was not understood. He then had recourse to signs. They all rose and followed him, without knowing whither he was leading them. He left the town by unfrequented paths, and turning round now and then, made signs to them to fear nothing. They felt no fear, but very great wonder, for on the road which they were thus induced to follow, they saw no beaten track. At the first view it appeared impracticable, though it afterwards became very easy. Moreover, the whole country was covered with deep snow, yet none lay upon the path which they passed over.

After having walked thus for about ten miles, they found themselves upon the high road, and their guide pointing out the direction which they ought to take, took leave of them with every testimony of kindly feeling. If he were not an Angel, under a human form, as some believed him to be, he was at least a man who had exercised towards them the ministry of an Angel, by delivering them from the death which threatened them.

Having passed Constance, a town which was entirely Lutheran, they saw, at a short distance from a village, a woman coming out of an hospital. By their rosaries she knew them to be Catholics, and advanced to meet them with every demonstration of joy. When she had reached them, she raised her eyes, all wet with tears, to Heaven, and lav-

ished every mark of respect upon them; then approaching them, kissed the crosses and rosaries which they wore round their necks, saying many things in German which they could not comprehend, but which appeared to them the expression of true Catholic faith and piety. They were further assured of this when after having engaged them by signs to wait for her a few moments, she ran back to the hospital, and shortly returned carrying rosaries, pieces of crosses, crucifixes, and small statues of the Virgin, broken by the heretics, which she had collected with veneration. The servants of God, deeply affected on beholding the insults which had been heaped upon these sacred objects, prostrated themselves upon the ground in the midst of the snow, to render homage to these emblems of the Catholic faith, spurned by the votaries of the new doctrines.

Then the woman, taking back her treasure, walked on before them, and at the entrance of the village cried aloud, pointing to the pilgrims: "You see, unhappy men, it is not true, as you say, that the whole world has embraced the doctrines of your Luther, and that not a trace of the Roman Catholic religion remains! Whence then do these men come? Where are they going? They have come out from the world, and are going forth to preach the Catholic faith; nor does it surprise me, for I have never believed you. But you, did you not all treat me as a madwoman, because I have not been deceived by your discourses? Whereas it was you, on the contrary, who had lost the use of your reason."

After asking and receiving an explanation of these words, which were spoken in German, the Fathers were informed that this woman was a faithful Catholic, whom neither the promises nor threats of the ministers had seduced into Lutheranism, and who, driven from the village as insane, had

been reduced to the necessity of taking refuge in the plague hospital. This adventure attracted a number of ministers, who wished to dispute with the travellers, but the harvest was unfruitful, for the heretics, whenever they were hard pressed by arguments, entrenched themselves behind texts of Scripture, taken from a mutilated and adulterated German Bible.

CHAPTER X.

Labors and charity of the companions of Ignatius in the hospitals of Venice—Journey to Rome—Return to Venice—The companions of Ignatius disperse through different cities—Their preachings—Charity of Ignatius towards one of his sick companions.

THUS passed the journey of the nine companions of Ignatius, from Paris until their arrival in Italy. They performed it in fifty-four days, marked by great suffering and constant danger; but they forgot all their fatigues when, on reaching Venice the eighth day of January, 1537, they once more beheld their venerated father Ignatius, who welcomed them with tears of joy, blessing God not only for having restored his six companions to him in good health, but also for having added three others, not less precious, to their number. He would not permit them to direct their steps immediately towards Rome, but wished them, while waiting for a less inclement season, to take some repose, the repose befitting Saints, and which consists rather in changing the nature of their labors, than in abstaining from them. With this intention, they divided two hospitals between them, that of the Incurables, where Xavier established himself, and that of Saints John and Paul, where Ignatius went to reside. No one has left us any detailed narrative of the examples, both private and public, of charity and mortification which they gave in these dwellings; but from the little which has been transmitted to us, we may conjecture that even amongst

men of extraordinary virtue, they must have found more admirers than imitators. We can hardly venture to relate the austerities to which they submitted; for in order to conquer the repugnance of nature, several, in imitation of Ignatius, went so far as to touch the most repulsive sores with their tongue. On one occasion, when for want of a bed, an unfortunate leper was about to be sent away from the hospital of St. John, one of the companions offered to share his couch with him. The next morning he found himself covered with leprosy, and the sick man had disappeared from the hospital; but the martyr of charity did not repent of his kindness towards the miserable wretch, and thought himself sufficiently rewarded by having found an opportunity of suffering and of exercising patience. His trial was short, for the very next day he was cured, and in as perfectly sound health as before he had contracted that horrible malady. This was the folly of the cross, and of mortification; but the daily services which the ten fathers rendered to the patients may truly be considered as a continual exercise of the most heroic virtues. To dress their wounds, to wash and carry in their arms those suffering from the most loathsome diseases, to watch them during the night, to console them by their conversation and advice, to pray with them, to teach them how to endure their misfortunes so as to render them useful to themselves, and to enable them to receive death with resignation; and finally to bury them with their own hands; such were their constant occupations. They gave themselves up to these works with that modesty, that holy joy, experienced by all those who, in devoting themselves to the care of the poor, behold Jesus Christ in their persons. In a short time, all eyes were fixed upon them and the principal Senators of the Republic frequently

went to contemplate a spectacle so novel for them, and which made them shed tears of emotion.

The Fathers remained in the hospitals until towards the end of Lent, and two months and a half after their arrival in Venice, all, with the exception of St. Ignatius, set out for Rome. He was detained there by motives of prudence, as he had reason to fear that his arrival with them in Rome might have caused an unfavorable result to the object of their journey. In Venice he had found Don Gianipetro Caraffa ill disposed towards him, and as that Cardinal was then in Rome, the opposition of such a personage might have been dangerous to the projects of the holy Founder. The sequel proved that this fear was not without foundation. Notes left by Father James Lainez show us that Cardinal, actuated by unenlightened zeal, though with good intentions, taking part against the cause of Ignatius.

Meanwhile our pilgrims went on their way, and found those opportunities of suffering which they so ardently desired, even more abundant than on their former journey. Once out of Venice, and returned to terra firma, they walked for three days along the sea shore in the direction of Ravenna, without being able to obtain even a morsel of bread. After their austerities and labors in Venice, this was sufficient to prostrate them entirely. Several of them fell, unable to take another step, to the great grief of their companions. They were reduced to such an extremity, that on Passion Sunday, having arrived at a spot planted with pine trees, they began to gather the fir cones, bitter as they were, and to seek some nourishment from them, which they were soon obliged to relinquish. The dampness of the season, which was extremely rainy, exposed them also to constant inconvenience. After being drenched with rain during the whole day, they would frequently pass the night in the open air, thankful when they found a little

straw with which to cover themselves, and on which to lie down. As they had no money to pay for crossing the rivers, they were obliged to give the boatmen at one time an old knife, at another an inkstand, or in short, any trifling article which they had about them; sometimes even they had to part with some of their poor clothing. On one occasion of this kind, in order to satisfy a discontented boatman, one of the pilgrims, who was not in Orders, found it necessary to go and pawn his Breviary, whilst his companions remained as hostages. Having returned with the required price, he delivered them, and then traversed the town of Ancona, begging alms, in order to ransom his Breviary.

They were frequently obliged to travel whole miles in water up to their waists, and sometimes up to their breasts. One of the travellers received the immediate reward of his fatigues, for, suffering from an infirm limb, in consequence of over-heated blood, it pleased God that he should come out of this strange bath entirely cured.

At Ravenna the friends had a momentary rest, being received into the hospital, but they had only one bed amongst them. Three, who were more fatigued than the others, were to profit by it, but on perceiving its horrible state of uncleanness, they resolved to make use of it from virtue, rather than from necessity. Simon Rodriguez, one of the three, gave it up and stretched himself upon the floor, finding that perhaps a harder couch, but more decent than the one offered him. Then feeling himself seized with violent remorse for having fled from this mortification, he resolved to take the first opportunity of punishing himself, which did not fail to occur before long, and of which he eagerly availed himself; but we shall pass it over in silence, in order not to multiply these details unnecessarily.

But those who met our pilgrims, all foreigners, wearing

similar garments, and all going in the direction of Rome, frequently took them for persons of bad repute, who had come to Italy in order to obtain a release from some censures, or absolution for some enormous crimes. They walked three by three, a priest and two who had not yet taken orders; Spaniards and Frenchmen, as closely united in heart as if they belonged to the same country, and were born of the same mother. Each suffered more for his companions than for himself, and through his own personal hardships, and each, before thinking of himself, always endeavored to relieve the others. "When I was going through the streets of Ancona," said one these Fathers, "to collect alms wherewith to redeem my Breviary, I perceived one of my companions, who, wet and barefoot, was addressing himself to the market-women, in order to obtain from them a little fruit, or some few vegetables. I stopped to observe him, and recalling to my mind his noble birth, the riches which he had abandoned, his great natural talents, the extent of his acquired learning, and the virtues which would have given him such great influence in the world, I felt myself deeply moved, and unworthy to be the companion of such men. These reflections often struck me, redoubling my admiration for them, and my desire to serve them."

It pleased God to console them sometimes by giving them testimonies of His especial protection. One example will suffice :—

After having passed three days at Loretto, in the abundant enjoyment of the sweet pleasures of piety, and having taken a little repose, they set out for Rome, and arrived at Tolentino by night, without having eaten so much as a piece of bread, to recruit them after the fatigues of the day. It rained heavily, and they met no one from whom they could ask charity. Three went on first, whilst the others kept

close to the walls, slightly sheltered from the rain, and one walked in the middle of the street, having no fear of becoming either wetter or dirtier than he was, when he perceived advancing towards him, through the rain and mud, a man of noble presence, and, so far as he could judge, of an agreeable countenance, who stopped, took him by the hand, placed some pieces of money in it, and withdrew without saying a single word. When they arrived at the inn, they bought a little bread, wine, and dried figs, a magnificent repast for them and for some beggars, with whom they shared it. The next day each repaired in the first instance to the hospital of his own nation; but they were afterwards all received in that of St. John, where poor diet was given them, though sufficient for men accustomed to subsist upon alms.

We have already mentioned that Peter Ortiz had been very hostile to the interests of Ignatius. It happened that at this very time he was in Rome, where he saw and recognized our pilgrims. He was commissioned to defend before the Holy See, and in the name of Charles V., the cause of Catharine of Arragon, so unjustly repudiated by Henry VIII., King of England; but he had greatly changed his opinion in regard to Ignatius, whose virtue, when better known, had overcome all the prejudices, and outweighed all the interests which had at first rendered Ortiz unfavorable to him. After having ascertained that the Saint was not with his companions, he was desirous, out of respect to him, to present them himself to the Sovereign Pontiff, Paul III. To that Pontiff he praised their virtues and talents; commended their voluntary poverty, their ardent zeal for the salvation of souls; and informed him that they had come to request the benediction of his Holiness, and his permission to pass over into Palestine to preach the Gospel. The Holy Father wished to see and hear them. It was his custom,

whilst he dined, to listen sometimes to conversations, sometimes to discussions between men of letters, and he desired that they might take part in these the following day. Ortiz himself conducted them thither, and the whole passed in such a manner that the Pontiff knew not which he ought to admire most; their modesty in treating the questions proposed to them, or the penetration of their intellect and the depth of their learning. When Paul rose to leave them, he expressed his satisfaction, addressing them in these affable words: "We are happy," said he, "to find so much erudition united to so much humility." He then asked them in what he could be of service to them, and finding that they desired nothing but what Ortiz had already solicited in their name, he extended his arms as if to press them all to his heart, and gave them his blessing. He added, that as a league between the Pope, the Emperor, and the Republic of Venice against the Turks was already in negotiation, he did not believe that their voyage to the Holy Land could be carried into effect that year. By orders of the Pope, alms to the amount of sixty crowns was transmitted to them, with the permission for all those who were not yet priests, Ignatius, who was still abroad, included, to receive holy orders from any bishop whatsoever, as vowed to poverty, and sufficiently instructed. Soon after a dispensation arrived from the Penitentiary for Alphonsus Salmeron, authorizing him to receive holy orders as soon as he should have attained the age of twenty-three years.

The Fathers now made no delay in resuming their journey back to Venice, which was performed in the same manner as the first; for they reserved the alms which they had received from the Pope, and a hundred and forty crowns, which some pious Spaniards had given them, to defray the expenses of their journey to Palestine. When they arrived

in Venice, they resumed their former occupations in the hospitals, and on the day of the feast of St. John the Baptist, made their vows of chastity and poverty to the Nuncio Verralli. They were afterwards ordained priests, and on that solemn occasion the most abundant heavenly consolations were vouchsafed to them. Monsignor Vincenzo Nigusanti, who ordained them, participated in these graces, and declared that his heart had never been penetrated with such tender sentiments of piety in any other of his ordinations. Some time after, the new priests chose a day of peculiar solemnity, for the celebration of their first Mass. St. Ignatius alone desired one whole year of preparation beforehand, and even prolonged the delay far beyond that period. It was not until the month of December of the following year, in the Church of Santa Maria Maggiore, in Rome, in the Chapel of the Nativity, and on Christmas Day, that he offered to the Lord, along with his first sacrifice, the oblation of himself for His greater glory.

Meanwhile their hopes of passing over into Palestine diminished daily. War was declared between Sultan Soliman and the Republic of Venice, and numerous fleets were about to cover the seas. Whilst awaiting the issue of these events, the companions of Ignatius, who remained in Venice, rather in fulfilment of their vow, than with any hope of being able to undertake their voyage, resolved to make a fitting preparation for offering up their first sacrifice. They withdrew into different solitudes, where, far from the tumult and as it were out of the world, they might better commune with their own hearts, and unite themselves with God. Some, with this intention, directed their steps towards Vicenza, others to Bassano, Padua, and different towns or villages. If they found in the environs a deserted cottage, they took up their abode in it. Their couch was the bare

earth, their food the bread which they obtained by begging, and their drink pure water. They passed many hours in prayer, and the corporal penances which they practised corresponded to the fervor of each individual.

As for St. Ignatius, Vicenza proved another Manresa for him. There he had the same celestial visions, the same spiritual delights, the same abundance of the happiest tears, to such a degree, that his eyes suffered to the end of his life, from weakness caused by excessive weeping. After having passed forty days in this holy retreat, they all left it, in order to diffuse amongst others the influence of that truly divine spirit by which they felt themselves animated. They immediately commenced preaching, for which they required neither churches nor pulpits. Their church was the public square, and their pulpit whatever bench happened to be there. Upon this they mounted, by words and gestures, inviting the passengers to stop, and the people imagining them to be some mountebanks or buffoons, never failed to run up to them. But the force of the Spirit of God, which spoke by their mouths, was such that although the Italian language was not familiar to them, many who came in the sole hope of amusement, returned with tears in their eyes. The external appearance of the new priests corresponded with their teaching, which always turned upon the necessity of penance. At the sight of those pale and emaciated countenances, it was easy to form an idea of the extent to which they practised it. When their discourses were finished, they returned cheerfully to their deserted huts.

Whilst they devoted themselves to these holy occupations, it pleased the Lord to try several of them by dangerous maladies, the germ of which had probably been contracted during their anterior sufferings. Simon Rodriguez was among the first who were attacked. He inhabited,

along with Claudius le Jay, a hermitage named St. Vito, situated near Bassano, where they had been received by a holy old man called Anthony. He had been induced to do so by an interior movement of the Spirit of God; for having formerly received several persons who had proposed to live with him, and in the same manner as he did, but who had afterwards abandoned him, unable to support the severity of his penance; he had resolved thenceforward to live entirely alone. To these two holy men he offered a large bare table, which stood in a corner of his cell, for a bed, a relief to men accustomed to lie upon the ground. In the night they all three rose to pray and sing psalms.

Towards the month of September, Rodriguez fell ill, and was soon in such imminent danger, that a physician, whom the hermit brought to visit him, declared that he had no hopes of his recovery. Ignatius received this news at Vicenza, and taking Faber with him, (for Lainez and several others were lying sick at the hospital), he set out for Bassano. Notwithstanding his weakness, and a fever which was undermining him, charity, especially in regard to his children, inspired him with so much strength, that Faber could not keep up with him. The Saint was frequently obliged to stop and wait for his companion, during which time he meditated upon God, and fervently invoked Him for the cure of the sick man. In one of these halts upon the journey, and at the moment when Faber rejoined Ignatius, he remarked that the countenance of the Saint was glowing, as it usually did when he prayed. With the internal conviction that his prayer had been granted, Ignatius immediately announced to his companion that Rodriguez would not die. We may say that there was even a direct communication of health to the invalid, through the agency of Ignatius. He had hardly arrived at the hermitage, when he hastened to embrace

Rodriguez, who immediately felt himself relieved. The Saint assured him that he would be completely cured, but desired him to exchange his couch of wooden boards for one rather less inconvenient, which the good hermit procured for him.

After having regained the companion of whom death had threatened to deprive him, Ignatius was upon the point of losing the second, who lived with Rodriguez in the hermitage, or as some authors pretend Rodriguez himself. Deceived by self-delusion and attracted by the peacefulness of the retreat, he compared the tranquillity of a life of retirement, with one of continual journeyings such as Ignatius led; the contemplation enjoyed in solitude with the distractions of conversation; the happiness of having alone God and himself to think of, compared with the fatigue caused by having the care of the souls of others; and these two kinds of life, placed by him in the balance, he having tried both, it seemed to him that in that of Ignatius, there was more labor than merit, and in that of the hermit, less danger and more repose. Besides, he was only at the beginning of his career with Ignatius, whereas with Anthony, he had only to follow the beaten track. He strongly inclined towards the latter, and was consequently disposed to abandon the Society. Nevertheless, his fidelity to his engagements, the vows which he had taken, the example of his companions, men as spiritual as himself, and with an equal desire to advance to perfection, also formed a great counterpoise in the balance. In his perplexity, unable to decide unaided, he resolved to open his heart to the hermit, and to abide by his counsels. With this intention, he escaped one day from Bassano, where Ignatius had retired along with his companions, and set out for the hermitage of St. Vito; but God, who already directed this rising association, as he afterwards guided the great Society

which sprang from it, would not suffer this faithful servant, who had been called to labor for the salvation of many, to finish by occupying himself solely with his own; and therefore He so thwarted his designs, that he gladly returned to throw himself into the arms of the Father whom he had intended to abandon.

Hardly had this Brother left Bassano, when he beheld an armed man advancing to meet him, whose aspect was imposing, and who, casting a severe glance upon him, threatened to strike him with his naked sword. He stopped short, surprised and troubled. Then, unable to conjecture what this strange meeting might portend, once more took courage, and would have passed on. But the personage in question looked at him with an angry countenance, and again advancing, threatened to attack him. Then the fugitive frightened, retraced his steps, ran back precipitately towards the town, and hastily re-entered the inn. Every one was astonished at his terror and flight, for no one could perceive the object which had caused his alarm.

Meanwhile Ignatius, to whom God had revealed all that was passing, had gone out to meet his companion; and receiving him with open arms and a smiling countenance, addressed him in the words of Jesus Christ, when he reproached Peter with the instability of his faith: *Modicæ fidei, quare dubitasti?*

The relations of Ignatius with the hermit of Bassano did not end here. He was truly a holy man, and I may here mention some particulars in regard to him, both on account of his charity to Simon Rodriguez, and also to make known that which occurred to him in respect to Ignatius himself. The peasants of the environs and those who had lived some time with Father Anthony, relate many wonderful things of

him, particularly concerning his long prayers and his austerities, which he was wont to call a hermit's food.

He had chosen the state of life which most surely leads to perfection, by perfect self-concentration; had thus attained a high degree of sanctity during his life, whilst his death was that of a Saint. But it was with difficulty that he could comprehend the sublimity of a vocation, whose object is above all others to gain over other souls, and to spread abroad the kingdom of Christ. Public report and his new companions had taught him to regard Ignatius with admiration; nevertheless, when he saw him and his friends clad like other men, and in no way externally distinguished from the crowd, the hermit felt his esteem decrease, and the new preachers sank in his eyes to the level of ordinary individuals; but at length, light broke in upon his soul.

One day when Father Anthony was in prayer, he beheld by the light of a divine revelation, to what a sublime degree of sanctity the man whom he undervalued had arrived before God. The good old man related this to his own confusion. He had learnt, said he, from Heaven itself, that the bark of a tree is very different from its sap.

Meanwhile, after the cure of Rodriguez Ignatius returned to Vicenza, and there assembled his companions that they might come to a fixed resolution as to their future plans, by reason of the constantly increasing impossibility of going to Palestine; and also in order that the new priests might now offer to God their first sacrifices, for which they had prepared themselves by so long a retreat. He received them all in his habitation, which was a ruined old monastery, situated at the outskirts of the town. All was in accordance in this old dwelling. The crumbling walls, the dilapidated roof, were all which had been spared by the ravages of war. It had neither doors nor windows, and the Fathers found nothing

but a little straw, on which to repose. Bread was not wanting to them; for although during their forty days' retreat Ignatius and the two companions of his chamber, Faber and Lainez, devoted almost all their time to prayer, they were occasionally obliged to go into the town in search of the indispensable necessities of life; and when they were all reunited and had begun to preach, they were received with so much kindness, that the eleven Fathers who composed the infant Society were enabled to subsist entirely upon the alms bestowed on them.

Nevertheless the incommodiousness of their dwelling, open to all the winds of heaven, was such, that two of the Fathers, Francis Xavier, and another whose name I know not, fell ill. That they might not die without assistance they were carried to the hospital of the Incurables, or rather to a heap of ruined houses near the hospital, where they were hardly better off than in their first habitation, but where they at least found a bed, though but one for the two invalids. This was a terrible trial. Burning with fierce fever each patient was frequently attacked at the same time by a crisis of an entirely opposite nature. Thus while one shivered with cold, the other suffered from burning heat, and it became impossible to relieve them both at once. But in proportion as they were deprived of human assistance, so much the more did the Lord support them by abundant consolations. That received by Francis Xavier, was well worthy of his noble soul, for instead of having his sufferings alleviated, he obtained the consolation of knowing that he should endure yet greater trials. One day St. Jerome, for whom he had a great devotion, appeared to him, fortified him by celestial words, and predicted to him that his companions and himself should be sent into different cities, that Bologna was his portion, and that a cross awaited him there, which would procure him

as much suffering as merit. These things happened as the Saint foretold.

After mature deliberation, it was at length decided that Ignatius, Lainez and Faber should go to Rome, and offer themselves and their companions to the Sovereign Pontiff, whilst the others should be dispersed through the cities where universities were established; to labor amongst the students in gaining souls to God, and in collecting some new coadjutors. But before separating, they wished to establish one common rule as to their mode of life, and to conform their conduct to some uniform principles not to be deviated from except where necessity or prudence required it. The principles laid down were as follows :

First, They were to live on alms and lodge in hospitals. Second, Each member was alternately to fill the office of Superior for one week, in order that no one should be carried too far by his zeal. Third, They were to preach in the public squares, and wherever they were permitted to do so, and especially to discourse upon the rewards promised to virtue, and the punishments assured to vice; but in their discourses, they were to seek rather for the Spirit of God, than for human eloquence. Fourth, They were to profit by every opportunity of being useful to their neighbor; but whatever services they rendered, they were never to accept any remuneration; considering themselves too highly honored in having contributed to the glory of God.

These resolutions were unanimously adopted. Moreover, as the question was frequently asked, who these preachers were, what rule they followed, in short what name they bore, they wished to have one uniform answer by which to satisfy the curiosity of the interrogators; but they came to no decision upon this point, because Ignatius had already decided in his own mind the name which his Order should take. All

those who have lived on intimate terms with him, are convinced that he did not choose this name himself, and that he knew it from the moment in which the Lord himself traced for him at Manresa the first sketch of the new Society, in the meditation of the *two Standards*. He therefore declared to his companions, who all embraced his opinion, that having assembled together in the name of Jesus, and for his love and glory, their association should henceforth bear the name of the *Company of Jesus*. After these preliminaries, they selected the cities where they were to begin their labors; a fraternal adieu terminated the deliberation; and each directed his steps towards the place of his destination. Ignatius, Faber and Lainez, repaired to Rome; Xavier and Bobadilla to Bologna; Rodriguez and Le Jay to Ferrara; Pasquier and Salmeron to Sienna; Codure and Hozes to Padua.

CHAPTER XI.

Death of a companion of Ignatius—He sees his soul received into Paradise—Labors and sufferings at Ferrara and Bologna—Departure of Ignatius for Rome—Vision on the way—First success and first persecutions in Rome—The lawsuit.

THE success of all these new missions was various ; in one place the Fathers had to suffer rather than to act ; in another, the fruits of salvation which they gathered, were in proportion to their labors. A few days after Codure and Hozes had begun their preachings in the hospitals of Padua, and in the public places, the ecclesiastical authority conceived suspicions that they might prove to be dangerous men, who had assumed a mask of sanctity, the better to conceal their designs. They were therefore arrested and put in irons. The manner in which they passed the first, or rather the only night of their imprisonment, is sufficient to prove with what feelings they were animated. They employed it entirely in reciting psalms and communing with God, but with so much sweetness and joy, that the good Hozes could not restrain the outward manifestation of his feelings. When it was known throughout the city that they had been taken to prison, so many persons came forward to give testimony to their innocence and virtue, that they were released the very next day, and permission given them to labor for the salvation of souls, as much as their zeal prompted them. But they did not long profit by this, for one was called to

rest, at the very commencement of his labors ; the Bachelor Hozes. He preached one day in the great square of Padua, taking for his text these words of Our Saviour : " Watch and pray, for you know neither the day nor the hour." He had hardly finished his discourse, when he was seized with a violent attack of fever, and felt that he must this time apply to himself the words of his own sermon. He withdrew to the hospital, and thenceforth occupied himself solely in preparation for death. So sweet and ardent were his hopes of eternal life, that at the last moment his friends almost forgot the premature loss which they were about to sustain. He expired in the peace of the Lord, and like the laborers in the Gospel, though last arrived in the vineyard, was the first called to receive his reward.

Ignatius was at that time at Monte Cassino, where he was occupied in directing Peter Ortiz, agent of the Emperor Charles V., whom we have already mentioned, in the Spiritual Exercises. There he learned the danger which threatened his companion, and whilst recommending him with great fervor to the Divine goodness, he beheld a vision similar to that vouchsafed to St. Benedict, when he saw the soul of the blessed Bishop Germain ascending to Heaven. Thus Ignatius beheld the spirit of the venerable Hozes, surrounded by a halo of glory, and carried by angels into Paradise. This first vision was followed by another. A few days afterwards, Ignatius was hearing Mass, when at the words of the Confiteor, *omnibus sanctis*, he saw the heavens opened, and in the midst of the Blessed, his late companion, radiant with beauty and glory. So great was his consolation, that for some days he could not refrain from shedding tears of joy, while the glorious vision seemed for ever floating before his eyes. The body of the deceased in some degree bore witness to the happiness of his soul ; for whereas in his life-

time his countenance was plain, and his features irregular, they assumed after death so much beauty, and so angelic an expression, that his companion Codure beheld him with surprise and awe, and was never weary of gazing at the face of his friend, whilst he shed tears of joy and emotion.

After the death of Hozes, Simon Rodriguez found it necessary for him to leave Ferrara, and repair to Padua, in order to relieve Codure, who could not suffice alone for so much labor; but soon after, Rodriguez was obliged to support the whole burden himself, for his colleague fell ill. It pleased God, however, to send prompt relief to the sickness of the one, and the labors of the other. A rich and noble ecclesiastic, who had been assisted by Codure to renounce the disorderly life which he had led during a long period, caused him to be transported from the hospital to his own house, where he lavished upon him every care and attention. Rodriguez, on his side, could not remain in the hospital, as he desired, being obliged to yield to the charitable importunities of a lady whose two sons had obtained, through his care, the one a holy death, and the other the grace of consecrating himself to God in a religious Order. Being now entirely alone, this widow earnestly desired to take charge of Rodriguez, as both her sons had entreated her to do.

Before leaving Ferrara, where Claudius Le Jay labored in concert with him for the conversion of sinners, Rodriguez received another benefit from Divine Providence. They both lived in a poor hospital, where a chamber had been given to the Fathers; and their food offered them, which last they declined, persisting in living upon alms. Preaching and pious works filled up their days as elsewhere. An old and pious woman, whose office it was to superintend the treatment given to the patients, was astonished on observing their conduct, to see persons who after taking so much trou-

ble for others, added so much voluntary and personal suffering; for they fasted continually, and occupied a chamber so ill closed as to afford no shelter from the inclemency of the season. Another circumstance excited her curiosity; every night she observed light shining through the crevices of the door. In what were they passing their time? She resolved to watch them; and saw that, after taking a little repose, they rose, and lighted a small lamp; then on their knees, and trembling with cold, they first recited the divine office, and so remained in prayer until daybreak. They afterwards went out to say Mass, and to recommence all their charitable exercises. The report of this fact was spread through the town, together with the fame of their benevolence, and they were generally regarded as prodigies of holiness. About this time, the Marchioness Pescara desired to become acquainted with them, in order to consult them concerning the state of her soul, should she find that the purity of their lives corresponded to that of their discourses. Happening to meet one of them, she inquired of him whether he were not one of those foreign priests, who had come to Italy with the intention of passing on to the Holy Land. Upon his reply in the affirmative, the Marchioness desired to know their place of abode, and as soon as the hospital was mentioned to her, hastened thither without adding a single question, and calling for the woman of whom we have spoken, examined her closely as to the priests and their conduct. Having obtained from her a circumstantial and completely satisfactory account of both, she withdrew the two missionaries from the hospital, established them in a small house near her palace, provided for all their wants, and received from them the advice and assistance which she had hoped for. They were afterwards called to the court, and Claudius Le Jay remaining alone at Ferrara, obtained great spiritual

fruits, particularly in the Duke himself, who chose him as his Director, and afterwards warmly espoused the cause of the rising Society, in a terrible persecution to which it was exposed.

Meanwhile Francis Xavier, at Bologna, was spared neither labors nor fatigue. A few days after his arrival in that city, he went to offer up holy Mass in a chapel where the mortal remains of the venerable patriarch Dominick reposed, and where great honors were rendered him. As he had a tender devotion towards that Saint, he celebrated the holy sacrifice, his heart filled with such sweet emotions of piety, that abundant tears streamed down his face. A noble and pious woman, a nun of the third order of St. Dominick, who had come from Spain to finish her days near the tomb of its holy founder, very desirous of knowing this foreign priest, in whom it seemed to her that she recognized all the external signs of the most exalted sanctity, went, accompanied by one of her friends, and requested an interview with Xavier. He spoke to them upon spiritual subjects, with so much feeling and elevation, that this same companion, named Sister Isabella Cosalina, who was also a member of the third Order, soon discovered that he was filled with the spirit of the Lord. On her return home, she spoke of Xavier in such high terms of praise to her uncle, Don Jerome Casalini de Forli, Canon of St. Petronius, and Rector of the church of St. Lucy, that she persuaded him to withdraw him from the hospital, and to establish him in his own house. The Canon soon recognized the merit of his guest, whose conversation alone might have sufficed to convince him of it; but how could he have any doubts of the sanctity of Xavier, in beholding his life so hidden, so entirely devoted to the most austere mortifications; that sweet joy which always shone upon his countenance, and which seemed to indicate

that the union of his soul with God, and the perfect happiness resulting therefrom, rendered him insensible to all bodily privation and suffering! Never could the good Canon prevail upon Xavier to take any other food than the bread bestowed as alms, nor to relax in the slightest degree from those severities which it seemed impossible for him to endure much longer, especially when the fatigue of preaching, and that of the other charitable works to which he devoted himself, was superadded to them. Xavier, however, continued to await the fulfilment of that prediction which St. Jerome had made him in Vicenza, and which prepared him for great tribulations in Bologna. The first was a quartan fever which lasted several months, and from which he suffered more than he would have done from a more serious malady; one which would not have left him even during a momentary interval; for his fervor prevented him from suspending either his labors or austerities, on account of an illness not considered dangerous. But if exhausted nature suffered doubly from the labors and mortifications which he imposed upon himself, God supported him by innumerable interior graces, and by the conversions which his preaching effected. It is true that we are destitute of documents on this subject, but positive proofs may be found in the circumstances which took place several years after this period, when Xavier made a voyage from Rome to Portugal, from whence he was to proceed to the Indies. He took the road leading by Bologna, and when his arrival was made known in that city, such was the universal joy and desire of seeing him again, and of obtaining his parting blessing, that crowds hastened to the Church of St. Lucy two hours before daybreak, in expectation of his saying Mass. When he appeared, the people surrounded him with every demonstration of the most

lively affection, and he was obliged to hear and console each one in private.

At his Mass, he gave the holy Communion to a great number of the faithful, and the same scenes were repeated during all the succeeding days which he passed at Bologna with the Ambassador of the King of Portugal. He was so constantly occupied in hearing confessions and in satisfying the piety of the faithful, that he wrote to Ignatius in a letter dated the 31st of March, "I have much more to do in Bologna than I formerly had at St. Louis's in Rome;" and yet he had also worked wonders there.

On the day of his departure a multitude of friends and crowds of pious persons hastened to receive the last benediction of the Saint. He recommended himself to their prayers; adding that, according to all appearance, they would never see him again upon earth. At these words, tears and sobs burst forth, and several offered to accompany him wherever he went, even as far as the Indies, but this he would not permit. He could not indeed prevent a vast multitude from accompanying him to a great distance; but the happiness which they felt in crowding around him was changed into bitterness and regret, when the moment of the final parting arrived.

The attachment of this city for Xavier was not weakened by his absence. On the contrary, it was in memory of his labors and virtues that the Society was afterwards called there, and this very Church of St. Lucy assigned to them. The chamber where Xavier had lived was converted into a chapel; and from that period this city, so devoted to him, became the object of his special protection, and owed a long series of miraculous favors to his intercession.

Such are the principal events, the remembrance of which is preserved in Bologna, Padua, and Ferrara, concerning the

abode of the companions of Ignatius in these different cities. He himself was there favored with a miraculous vision, by which the Lord revealed to him that he was pleasing in His eyes. The following are its details :—

Ignatius since his arrival in Italy had again experienced those singular graces, that union with God, those spiritual raptures which he had formerly enjoyed at Manresa, and of which he had been deprived in Paris, whilst he kept his mind constantly occupied with the study of letters and theology. The life which he led was entirely celestial; after having received the grace of the priesthood, he never ceased to implore the holy Mother of God to obtain for him the special grace of being the faithful follower of her Divine Son in all things. The most ardent desire of his heart was to become His living and faithful image, so that his actions and sufferings should be like those of the Saviour, always devoted *to the greater glory of God*, and the salvation of souls.

It was in the midst of these different preparations, and while his heart was glowing with tender fervor, that he undertook his journey to Rome. Reflecting on the offering which he was about to make of himself and his companions at the feet of the sovereign Pontiff, he redoubled his fervent prayers that the Lord would grant his wishes, and would employ him in furthering his glory.

Plunged in these pious thoughts, he had just left Sienna, when, drawing near to Rome, he perceived by the road-side a ruined chapel, and leaving his companions, entered alone. There in a short prayer he recommended to the Saviour this small band of devoted souls, whom he had consecrated to his service, and who were to be the foundation of that so widely extended Society, of which the Lord had so often spoken to the heart of His servant, promising that he should be its founder and father. At that moment he felt his soul as it

were overwhelmed in the most delicious rapture, and was in a manner raised out of himself.

He then distinctly beheld the Eternal Father, who regarded him with an aspect of ineffable goodness, and then turned towards his Divine Son, laden with his cross; and to quote the exact words of Ignatius: "He gave me to Christ as a portion, said He, to be henceforth entirely consecrated to His service." Immediately the Son of God appearing to accept him, looked at him with an expression of the most divine benignity, and Ignatius heard these words: *Ego vobis Romæ propitius ero.*

This vision filled his heart with feelings of deep trust, not unmingled with some apprehension, since the Saviour in showing him that he would be united not only to Him but to His cross, seemed to forewarn him that his residence in Rome would bring him many tribulations. But the divine promise reassured him, and the cross could never be so heavy, but that with such assistance, his strength would be sufficient to bear it.

Having rejoined his companions, and wishing to reanimate their courage, he related to them what he had seen and heard. "I know not," added he, "what sufferings await us in Rome, where God seems to lead us like victims to be sacrificed; but let us joyfully walk forward to encounter them, for if Jesus loads us with his cross, He will help us to carry it, and He has more power to defend us, than the whole world united, can have to injure us."

Our travellers arrived in the Holy City, in the month of October, 1537; and according to their engagement, immediately presented themselves before the Sovereign Pontiff, who accepted their services, with every demonstration of affection, and named Faber and Lainez professors, the first of Holy Scripture, the second of scholastic theology. Igna-

tius was more particularly employed in laboring for the salvation of souls, and induced several distinguished personages, amongst others Cardinal Contarini, to follow the Spiritual Exercises. It afterwards pleased God to replace the companion of whom he had been deprived by death. It is certain, however, that Ignatius had never considered the death of Hozes as a real loss for his rising Society; for having seen the soul of his friend admitted into the eternal beatitude of the Saints in heaven, he hoped to obtain more assistance from his intercession, than he could have received upon earth from his labors. He who replaced him was a young Spaniard of rare talents, named Francis Strada, who having come to Rome to seek fortune and honors at court, like so many others, had discovered that he sowed in so barren a ground, that his very hopes cost him more anxiety than all his success could ever repay. Fatigued with useless efforts, he renounced them, and set out for Naples with the intention of embracing a military career, in which he expected to obtain if not more riches, at least more freedom; but even before arriving in that city, God granted him a much fairer portion, through a meeting with Ignatius, with whom he was already acquainted. Like most persons dissatisfied with their lot, Strada liked to speak of his troubles; and opening his heart to Ignatius, told him with what view he was journeying towards Naples. Ignatius, more moved to compassion for his blindness than for his fancied misfortunes, answered the young aspirant in a manner which surprised him.

“You complain of the world,” said he, “and you are wrong, since in disappointing your hopes, it has only acted according to its usual custom. You ought rather to feel satisfied with it, since by showing you from the very first, how it treats its servants and what they may expect from it, this time at least it has not been deceitful. It would have

been unfortunate for you had the world treated you better, for then you would probably not have known it until the hour of your death ; whereas now you can renounce it with some merit. The world itself teaches you to seek another master, in whose service neither your labors nor your efforts will be lost. Yet you would imitate those whose ship has struck against the rocks, and who, far from renouncing a seafaring life, go out to be again shipwrecked ; you abandon the court for the army, and leave one city for another. Do you hope to find the world more propitious to you, or more faithful to its promises in Naples than in Rome ? If you question the travellers whom you meet upon that route, you will find some who on the contrary are coming from Naples to Rome, urged on by the same feelings which now draw you towards the former city ; searching, alas ! for those things which they would do more wisely to fly from. I pity you, nevertheless, but rather for the hope which you cherish than for that which you have lost, and if I dared to speak to you as a true friend, I would even say that you are not made for the world, nor the world for you. Vainly will you seek elsewhere for that peace, that tranquillity of mind which can be found in God alone. Whatever the world may do for you, were it even to go beyond your hopes, it will never fulfil your wishes, nor satisfy your heart. With God alone you have nothing to desire. Knowing the nothingness of all worldly advantages, how can they ever be the object of your ambition ? ”

These words were like a ray of light to Francis Strada, revealing the truth to his heart. Immediately renouncing his former projects, he returned to Rome with Ignatius, commenced the Spiritual Exercises, became one of his children, and a truly Apostolic man, as was proved by his eminent labors in Italy, Spain and Portugal, and by the innumerable conversions which he effected in those countries.

Such was the situation of Ignatius and his companions, when he judged that the moment had arrived for the establishment of that Society which had so long occupied his thoughts. He invited all his dispersed friends to meet him at the period of the Easter festivals, in the year 1538. They had some difficulty in being permitted to leave the different cities where they were residing, on account of the good which they had effected there. Several of these Fathers were followed to a great distance by persons devoted to them, and admirers of their virtues. Simon Rodriguez and John Codure were accompanied as far as Loretto, by one of the principal Canons of Padua. He parted from them filled with veneration for those indefatigable men, who after a daily fast, took but a short repose during the night, of which they passed the greatest part on their knees in prayer, until the moment when they resumed their journey.

Ignatius, Lainez and Faber, lived at this time in a small house, situated in a vineyard at the foot of Trinità de Monti; but when the new guests arrived, a more spacious lodging became necessary, and the charity of pious souls did not permit them to remain destitute in this respect.

Finding it impossible to cross the seas, Ignatius sent back to Valencia the four golden crowns which Martin Perez had given him in alms for the voyage. He also returned the two hundred and ten which he had received from the Sovereign Pontiff, and from some pious Spaniards, through the medium of Peter Ortiz, for a similar purpose. Then, provided with a permission, granted by Cardinal John Caraffa, he divided amongst his four companions the duties of preaching, of instructing the children, and of fulfilling all the functions of the holy ministry in the different churches. A great multitude assembled to hear them; and the efficacy of the divine word, joined to the force which the example of their holy

lives imparted to their discourses, effected a remarkable change amongst the people. The frequent use of the Sacraments, which had long been abandoned, was re-established, and spread from thence throughout all Christendom; where the public morals were greatly benefited in consequence. Asylums were established for young girls in danger of being ruined, and for women of bad fame; and this was the origin of so many institutions founded by Ignatius, which afterwards became established in perpetuity. These examples awakened a holy emulation in all the other churches of Rome; and the clergy being desirous of imitating the good example of the Fathers in instructing the people and the children, Sunday preachings were multiplied all throughout the city. But though Lainez, Salmeron, and Bobadilla succeeded wonderfully, both by their eloquence and zeal, in making the holy word of God equally beloved and venerated; not one of them equalled Ignatius in the fervor, unction, and strength of his arguments. Thus, the most learned men after hearing him, remarked, that in the mouth of Ignatius, the word of God possessed all its true weight and vigor, and that devoid of all extraneous ornament, it appeared only the more noble and beautiful. His method was to employ the Gospel like a naked sword drawn from its scabbard; to show its sacred truths as they are in themselves, devoid of all ornament, and unaided by any ideas of his own. When these apostolic men reaped the first fruits of their labors, their happiness was so great, that frequently after having worked from the dawn of day till nightfall, they entirely forgot themselves; and more than once waited until sunset, not only before taking any food, but even before begging it from the public pity, which was their only resource.

The rising Society was in this prosperous condition, when so violent a persecution arose against it, that if the powerful

hand of God had not been stretched forth to protect it, its ruin must have been complete and irreparable. The first author of this attack was one Brother Augustine, a Piedmontese by birth, a hermit by profession, a Catholic in outward seeming, but in reality a cunning Lutheran. This man believing that the absence of the Pope, who had at that time removed with his court to the confines of Italy, opened an easy path for disseminating the pestilence of heresy in Rome, endeavored to spread it abroad by means of his sermons. The simple, natural, and agreeable manner in which he expressed himself, attracted him an immense number of hearers. At first he did not dare to explain himself openly, but when he believed himself to be in possession of the public esteem and confidence, he began to mingle some of the new errors along with his orthodox instructions. At first he merely glanced at them in passing, without examining them deeply, and cloaked them with a thick veil, to conceal their true signification. God, no doubt, inspired some of the companions of Ignatius with the idea of going to hear the preacher, and they, familiar with these errors, both by study and from having wrestled against them, soon recognized them in spite of the obscure terms in which they were enveloped. The Fathers returned again and again, were present at several of the hermit's discourses, and each time became more dissatisfied with them. Supposing, however, that the man might err through ignorance, they went to see him, and without appearing to question the sincerity of his intentions, made him remark his different errors, one after the other, showing him how they were all derived from the teaching of Luther; and expressed a hope, that after being undeceived himself, he would not hesitate to undeceive others.

It may appear surprising that this man, seeing himself discovered, should not have dreaded the personal risk which

he ran ; but the favor of the people and the protection of some of the nobles, upon whom he relied, emboldened him. He treated with equal contempt the warning and those who gave it ; accused them of ignorance and malice ; appeared surprised that men whom he would not accept as scholars, should dare to set themselves up in respect to him as teachers. They would do much better, said he, to receive instruction, or at least to be silent, and not to condemn what all Rome had heard and applauded. If they could not without feeling mortified, see the esteem in which he was held, they should rather endeavor to merit a similar reputation, than try to injure him, by accusing of error the pure and holy doctrines which he taught. He then invited them to be present at his next sermon, in order to judge for themselves of the value which he set upon their opinion. There they would hear him repeat all that he had already said, and the applause of his audience would teach them to be humble, or at least to desist from taking the liberty of blaming him.

Finding the inutility of the step they had taken, the companions of Ignatius thought themselves bound to repair, so far as it lay in their power, the scandal which this man was likely to cause ; and in their churches they mingled, along with moral instructions, precepts concerning the utility of Indulgences, the authority of the Pope, the merit of continency, and the necessity of good works ; points upon which the Lutherans disseminated error. This conduct greatly incensed the new preacher, and being convinced that he could not, without injury to himself, make an open declaration of those things which until now he had only ventured to insinuate, he resolved by an odious intrigue to secure to himself the reputation of being a good Catholic, and to transfer the suspicion of heresy to his pretended enemies. One day,

therefore, he insisted very strongly upon the truth of the ancient religion, and the obligation of all men to remain faithful to it, and at the same time endeavored to level some blows at Ignatius. "Every one ought to mistrust," said he, "a wolf disguised not as a sheep, but as a shepherd; one who, but lately a simple layman, had gone through several of the principal universities in Europe, committing the most frightful ravages and depredations amongst the souls whom he seduced; and who now, emboldened by others, men animated by the same spirit as himself, had come to Rome, to cause fresh scandal there." "I warn the faithful," continued he, "that the abettors of heresy usually begin their operations by accusing others of the same sin, hoping that by this means they themselves will not be suspected of the errors which they pretend to condemn. The most dangerous sects are those which are concealed under the mask of sanctity. Rome, although perhaps a little late, ought not to show herself less prudent than Paris, Salamanca, and lastly Venice, where Ignatius, convicted of heresy, escaped by denial and flight from the condemnation of his person and writings. But even in Rome, there are men of incorruptible faith, and who belong to his own nation, who have abandoned him. There is one especially, who, at first attracted and seduced by this man, has left him with horror, on discovering the danger which threatened him."

By these men of "incorruptible faith," the hermit alluded to three Spaniards, Peter of Castile, Francis Muderrar, and a certain Barrera, all of whom he had entrapped into his snares; and who, imbued with his errors, travelled in order to disseminate them from one court to another, to all of which their rank gave them free access.

By the person who had fled from the teachings of Ignatius, the preacher meant Michael Navarro, whom the conver-

sion of Francis Xavier had deprived of his protection, and who, laying the blame of this event upon Ignatius, had endeavored to assassinate him.

At first, moved perhaps by some good impulse, or from some unknown motive, this man had presented himself to Ignatius as one who wished to embrace his rule of life; but this could only suit a truly exalted soul, not a vile nature such as his. Thus, he no sooner discovered to what he had engaged himself, than he renounced it. Afterwards, he repented of having left Ignatius, and rejoining him at Venice, begged to be readmitted into the number of his companions; but Ignatius, knowing his instability, refused his request. Navarro was offended at this refusal, and since he could not be the disciple of Ignatius, became his enemy and calumniator. He preceded him to Rome, formed a league with the Lutheran preacher, and served as his agent in spreading abroad and confirming stories injurious to Ignatius, of which he pretended to have been the eye-witness. In return for a sum of money, this miserable wretch went so far as to carry a formal accusation against Ignatius, before Monsignor Benedict Conversini, then Governor of Rome. The heretical monk hoped that his adversaries would thus be too completely overwhelmed by their own troubles, to occupy themselves with him.

These calumnies having been spread about through Rome, it can hardly be imagined how completely they changed the general feeling in regard to Ignatius and his companions. At first, listened to with so much respect, as great and holy servants of God; now, wherever they appeared, they were pointed at as false, designing men, concealed heretics, whose guilty life had been at last unmasked. All the actions which had caused them to be venerated as saints, were now taxed with hypocrisy, and only rendered them the more odious.

Not only would no one address a word to them, but no one would have dared to confess having any acquaintance with them, fearing to be compromised, for all men were in daily expectation of seeing Ignatius and his companions led forth to die at the stake. This terror had such an effect upon the minds of two priests whom the Cardinal Vicar had associated with Ignatius to hear confessions, that, believing the affair irremediable, they quitted Rome, left even the States of the Church, and succeeded in eluding all pursuit.

Meanwhile public rumor went on increasing hourly, and spreading abroad. Letters written to distant parts announced that these men were at length known and unmasked; that they had been convicted of heresy, and that their crime would shortly be expiated upon the scaffold.

But Our Lord as formerly, when in the bark with his disciples, only slept to give the storm time to rage in all its fury; *commanding*, when he awakened, *the winds and the tempest, so that there was a great calm*. The enemies of Ignatius triumphed, and already received thanks for having dissipated that poison, whose malignant influences it was said could ferment in darkness alone. As for him, he considered this storm as an opportunity for exercising that filial trust in God, which chiefly attains its perfection, when it increases in proportion as our misfortunes appear to become more irretrievable. Ignatius sustained the courage of his companions, when he observed any one amongst them ready to take alarm; humbly reminded his Divine Master of the assurance which he had received on his way to Rome, and entreated God to grant him, along with the cross so formally announced, the assistance and protection which He had also deigned to promise him. It pleased God to grant his fervent prayers, and in order to prove before all eyes, that He

alone had calmed the tempest, assistance came from a quarter where human foresight would never have sought it.

Ignatius was not so entirely abandoned by his friends, but that one at least remained faithful to him ; and this was that very Quirino Garzonio, who at the beginning had received him into his house, and who, from his constant relations with the Saint, had learned to know him too well to listen to the injurious reports now spread against him : besides which, his loyal and noble character would have led him to consider such a desertion as base. Cardinal John Dominic de Cupis, head of the sacred college, and a man of great influence, was the relative and friend of Garzonio, and knew the affection which he bore to Ignatius. He one day reproached Garzonio severely for this friendship, and strongly recommended him to separate from Ignatius, not only on account of the injury which this connection might cause his reputation, but also to avoid the danger to which he exposed his salvation by living on familiar terms with a man whose faith and doctrine were as suspicious as his morals. The Cardinal then went over all the accusations spread abroad against Ignatius. " Why," replied Quirino, " should we give more credit to all these stories, than to the facts of which we are ocular witnesses ? Why listen to improbable assertions, to pretended condemnations of which there is no proof, when here in Rome every circumstance speaks in favor of Ignatius ? " The Cardinal held to his opinion, and replied with an air of compassion : " You have to do with a man who, to his other vices, joins the art of misleading men's minds by enchantments, and, without a doubt, he has made use of them to seduce you."

On his return home Garzonio faithfully repeated this conversation to Ignatius, who was nowise troubled by it, inasmuch that he might have been supposed wholly uninterested

in the matter. He praised the zeal and prudence of the Cardinal, who, believing him guilty, endeavored to preserve his friend from the dangers of such a connection. "Besides," added he, "God can do more to save me, than the whole world to ruin me, and you will see this, when the hour arrives." As for the Cardinal, Ignatius knew him to be a wise and virtuous man, and was quite convinced that if he could obtain an interview with him he could convince him of his error. Quirino Garzonio resolved therefore to obtain an audience for his friend, and hastened to beg it of his kinsman, assuring him that, if, after having heard Ignatius, he persisted in condemning him, he himself would believe him to be guilty, and would part from him immediately. "Let him come then," cried the Cardinal, "and I shall treat him as he deserves." He did so in fact, but in a very different sense from what his words intimated.

Ignatius arrived, and was introduced into a cabinet, at the extremity of the Cardinal's apartments. What he said to his Eminence is not known, but we may form some conjecture as to the nature of the conversation, from the effects produced by this visit. It completely dissipated the unfavorable impressions conceived by the Cardinal against him, inasmuch, that filled with repentance for his injustice, he threw himself at the feet of Ignatius and entreated his pardon. We have this fact from Garzonio, to whom the Cardinal himself related it. That noble friend had accompanied Ignatius, and anxiously awaited the result of the interview, which lasted nearly two hours. At length the Cardinal came out of his cabinet with Ignatius, giving him every possible mark of esteem and affection; and promising him aloud to be henceforth his most zealous defender, both in this affair, and in all others which concerned him. He then gave orders that the bread and wine necessary for the support

of Ignatius and his companions, should be sent them as alms, and this charity the Cardinal continued as long as he lived.

Being now assured by the result of this visit, that God had taken his defence into his own hands, the Saint thought it his duty to act on his side as human wisdom dictated. He therefore solicited the governor of Rome, before whose tribunal the accusations had been brought, to grant him a legal trial and a definite sentence. The day having been appointed, Ignatius and his accuser, Michael Navarro, appeared before the court. The latter began by boldly stating that in Paris, in Alcalá, and in Venice, he being present, Ignatius had been condemned for heresy, and for other crimes; that he had evaded his punishment by flight, but that he, Navarro, having been witness of these facts, could affirm them as he now did, by oath. Then Ignatius, with impassible serenity, drew from his pocket as his first answer a letter which he presented to his accuser, asking him if he knew that hand-writing Navarro, not suspecting his object, acknowledged it as his own. "Well!" replied Ignatius; "so far you have spoken of me, only repeating what has been suggested to you by others; now we are going to see what you said of me formerly under the inspiration of your own ideas, and the charitable opinion which you had then conceived of me." This letter was then read. It was written to a friend, and in it Navarro spoke of Ignatius and of his virtues, of which he declared himself to be an eye-witness, in such high terms of praise, that it would have been impossible to produce a more favorable testimony. The unfortunate man grew pale, and seeing himself convicted by his own writing, of so palpable a contradiction, the words expired upon his lips. Not knowing whether he ought to confess the truth or deny the letter, to seek for some excuse or to invent new calumnies, he muttered some unintelligible words, and the first sitting was terminated. But this was neither

the sole nor the principal proof which brought to light the innocence of Ignatius. It pleased God that the truth should come forth from those very places which had been chosen as the principal theatres of the calumny; Paris, Alcalà and Venice. The course of events was truly providential. It happened that this very year, the three judges who had absolved the Saint in the three cities wherein his accuser swore he had been condemned, were all in Rome at the same time. From Venice had come Gaspar de Doces, the Nuncio's secretary; from Alcalà, the lieutenant of police, John Figuera; and from Paris, Father Ori, the Inquisitor. Private affairs had brought them to Rome, and it pleased God that from this circumstance, glory should accrue to his servant; for they appeared together in court, and publicly testified to the innocence and virtue of Ignatius. Here the persecutions directed against the Saint necessarily terminated; all that now remained, was to prove the innocence of his companions; for although in some degree justified in the person of their head, it was important even for his reputation, that private and personal testimony should be advanced in their favor; and for this the Lord provided. As soon as the odious imputations brought against them were heard of in Bologna, Ferrara, Venice and Paris, the bishops and priests who had known them, eagerly sent them the most honorable attestations. Moreover, Hercules, Duke of Ferrara, ordered his ambassador in Rome to interpose the authority of his testimony wherever it was necessary, in favor of Claudius Le Jay and Simon Rodriguez, as well as the assurance of his respect for their virtues.

It seemed then that the tempest being calmed, Ignatius had only to return thanks to God, and to enjoy in peace his restored tranquillity. All had turned out favorably for him. Michael Navarro had been condemned to exile as a calumi-

niator; and the three Spaniards, his instigators, summoned by Ignatius to prove, judicially, what they had published through the whole city of Rome against him and his companions, had confessed themselves vanquished, and had employed powerful patrons to endeavor to persuade him to rest satisfied with their public recantation; but Ignatius knew that a tree cut down even to the level of the soil, may sometimes shoot forth vigorous branches, if its roots remain; and therefore that no pretext might be left for renewing the malignant imputations of which he had been the object, he demanded that the affair should be settled by a judicial sentence. In fact he feared fresh calumnies, and especially he would not have it said that the proceedings had been hushed up at his personal instigation. These falsehoods had traversed the greater part of Europe, and what credence could be given to their denial but that which proceeded from a public and irrefutable sentence? Ignatius attached the more importance to this, that the sentence once pronounced, annihilated all attacks directed against him, whether in France, Spain, or Italy, and reduced to perpetual silence all those whose malevolence could no longer discover any method of inflicting a new wound upon his reputation.

His position was critical. It was not only his personal reputation that was at stake, for then it would have been easy, nay agreeable to him, to endure these violent attacks in silence; but he was founding an Order destined to be spread over the whole world, and the character of his brethren was at stake. How could they labor to procure the greater glory of God, and the conversion of sinners, if branded at the outset by an accusation of immoral conduct, and of teaching false doctrines? The insult had been public; it was necessary that the reparation should be so also. "I am well aware," wrote Ignatius to Signor Peter Contarini,

“that I cannot prevent men from speaking against us, and I am not so unwise as to hope for this. But I ought not to allow those instructions which are conformable to pure Catholic doctrines, to be stigmatized as erroneous, nor permit a state of life to be condemned, which is in itself holy and irreproachable. Let them treat us as rude, ignorant men, nay even as wicked deceivers; this will not afflict us; but when the holy doctrine which we teach, or the state of life which we have embraced is attacked, it is not lawful for us to suffer it in silence; for these two things are not personal to us, but belong to Jesus Christ and His Church.”

Some of his companions, more humble than prudent, would have dissuaded him from pursuing this affair; it seemed to them as if he were exceeding the limits of actual necessity, and of the right which they had of withdrawing from oppression. They feared lest by making public the imposture of their adversaries, they might appear to have been guided by resentment or a desire of revenge. The just claims of Ignatius were also thwarted by what then appeared to proceed from the dilatory conduct of the Governor, but which was afterwards known to have arisen merely from his objection to decide definitively upon this cause. The importunities of the opposite party had induced him to endeavor to satisfy Ignatius by promises, which he privately resolved never to fulfil. But as our Saint would not be contented with them, the Governor at length declared that the determination of the Legate was that the cause should be considered as already decided, and that both parties should henceforth keep silence upon the subject. Things, however, shortly afterwards assumed a totally different aspect.

The Pope having returned to Rome, went to pass the first weeks of autumn at Frascati, and Ignatius recovered

the hopes which he had almost abandoned, of obtaining from him what he had hitherto vainly solicited from the Governor. In fact his demand was so manifestly just, that it was sufficient to make it known to the Pope, to have it granted. The Pontiff instantly sent an order to the Governor by one of his chamberlains, to judge definitively and in a manner conformable to strict justice, the cause of Ignatius, now pending in his tribunal. Then the three personages who in Paris, Alcalà, and Venice, had already been the judges of the accusations brought against him, and who had acquitted him, were interrogated. Every testimony that could be desired in favor of his companions, was produced. The book of Spiritual Exercises was again examined; and all voices having concurred in witnessing to the purity of doctrine and the innocent life of Ignatius and his companions, the cause was at length decided, the sentence pronounced,*

* *Benedictus Conversinus, Electus Britovoriensis, vice camerarius, almæ urbis ejusque districtus generalis gubernator. Universis et singulis, ad quos præsentis nostræ litteræ pervenerint, salutem in Domino. Cum reipublicæ Christianæ multum intersit, ut eos, qui in agro dominico, vitæ exemplo, et doctrina plurimos ædificant in salutem: et item illos, qui e converso potius super seminare videntur zizania, publice notos esse; et non multi rumores sparsi essent, et delationes ad nos factæ, de dogmatibus, et conversatione vitæ, et spiritualibus exercitiis, quæ aliis conferunt, venerabilium virorum dominorum Ignatii de Loyola et sociorum, videlicet, Petri Fabri, Claudii Jaii, Paschasi Broet, Jacobi Laynez, Francisci Xavier, Alphonsi Salmeronis, Simonis Roderici, Joannis Codurii, et Nicolai de Bobadilla, magistrorum Parisiensium, presbyterorum secularium, Pampelonensis, Gebennensis, Seguntensis, Toletanensis, Visensis, Ebredunensis, et Palentinensis respective Diocesis, quæ quidem eorum dogmata et exercitia a quibusdam dicebantur erronea, superstitiosa, et a christiana doctrina nonnihil abhorrentia. Nos pro officii nostri debito, ac speciali etiam mandato sanctiss. D. N. Papæ, circa hæc diligenter animadvertentes, quæ visa sunt ad pleniorẽ causæ cognitionem opportuna, inquisivi-*

and copies of it forwarded to all those places where the calumnies had been spread.

Such was the sentence pronounced upon this affair ; but something was yet wanting to its proper termination ; this was the fall and punishment of the calumniators. It pleased God that they should be found guilty of the very crimes of which they had accused Ignatius. They had said that convicted of heresy, and condemned to the flames, he had evaded punishment by flight, but had been burnt in effigy. This was precisely what happened to Muderra. He was con-

mus, si forte, de quibus prædicti culpabantur, vera esse deprehendere-
mus. Quocirca examinatis primum quibusdam oblocutoribus contra
ipsos, et consideratis partim publicis testimoniis, partim sententiis de
Hispania, Parisiis, Venetiis, Vicentia, Bononia, Ferraria et Senis, quæ
in predictorum venerabilium virorum dominorum Ignatii et sociorum
favorem adversus eorum criminatores prolatae fuerunt : et ad hæc ex-
aminatis judicialiter nonnullis testibus, et doctrina et dignitate omni
exceptione majoribus tandem omnem murmurationem, et oblocutionem,
et rumores contra eos sparsos, nulla veritate subnixos fuisse comperi-
mus. Quamobrem nostrarum esse partium judicantes, pronunciamus,
et declaramus, prædictum D. Ignatium et socios, ex prædictis delationi-
bus, et susurris, non solum nullam infamiæ notam, sive de jure, sive
de facto incurrisse, verum potius majorem vitæ atque doctrinæ sanæ
claritatem retulisse : cum certe videremus adversarios vana, et penius
à veritate aliena objecisse, et contra, optimos viros optimum pro illis
exhibuisse testimonium. Hanc igitur sententiam, et pronunciationem
nostram ut publicum eis testimonium sit contra omnes adversarios
veritatis, et in serenationem omnium, quicumque sinistram ullam de
eis suspicionem, prætestis talium delatorum, et criminorum con-
ceperint, faciendam duximus. Monentes insuper, et exhortantes in
Domino, et rogantes universos et singulos fideles, et dictos venerabiles
viros D. Ignatium et socios, habeant et teneant pro talibus, quos nos
esse comperimus, et Catholicos, omni prorsus suspicione cessante. Ita
tamen quatenus in eodem vitæ et doctrinæ tenore, Deo adjuvante
(quod speramus) permanserint. Datum Romæ in ædibus nostris, die
decima octava novembris millesimi quingentesimi trigesimi octavi.

victed of heresy, and condemned to the flames, but having succeeded in making his escape from prison, was publicly burnt in effigy. Peter of Castille, for the same cause, was condemned to perpetual imprisonment.

The monk, who by his preaching had been the first cause of all this affair, seeing it turn against him, fled to Geneva. There he quitted the religious habit, which he had used as a passport to obtain admission into Catholic countries, in order to infect them with his errors. He afterwards became a Protestant preacher, and to him is attributed a dangerous work, entitled *Summarium Scripturae*. Finally, a contemporary author relates that his crimes and life were terminated by capital punishment.

We owe it to truth to mention, that all, excepting the monk, finished by listening to the reproaches of conscience, retracting their calumnies against Ignatius, and entreating his pardon. Thus Peter of Castille, after having long persevered in his errors, fretting his curb in the prison where he was shut up for life, was at length moved by divine grace, and died in the hands of one of the Fathers of the Society, named Avellaneda.

Francis Muderra so entirely altered his opinion in regard to Ignatius, that certain of finding in him that charity which is the distinguishing characteristic of the Saints, and which invariably returns good for evil, he had recourse to him in his misfortunes, and received from the Saint the assistance which he solicited. Finally, Barrera, at the hour of his death, which was premature, retracted his unjust accusations, and rendered full justice to the innocence of the man whom he had falsely accused.

CHAPTER XII.

Charity of Ignatius and his companions towards the poor in Rome—The Saint prepares his companions to form a new Order—Difficulties which he has to surmount in attaining this object.

THE credit of the Fathers being now more solid than ever, they reappeared in public, and resumed for the salvation of souls, the pious Exercises, which for a while they had suspended. In a very short time, the public esteem in which they were held surpassed, if it were possible, that which had been momentarily lessened by calumny. It seemed as if God himself gave them the opportunities of gaining this esteem, and of evincing during a period of great calamity, a still greater charity. The very year in which all these events took place, there was a terrible scarcity throughout Rome, by which the inhabitants were reduced to such an extremity, that many of these unfortunate people laid themselves down on the streets and public squares to die, without having sufficient strength to go and beg for bread, even had they been likely to obtain it. Besides, the winter was excessively severe. The Fathers, who themselves lived by alms, animated by that trust in God which is never confounded, undertook to provide for the wants of these poor and wretched beings. In the first place, they lifted up all those whom they found lying in the streets, and taking them upon their shoulders, carried them to their own house, which was

a somewhat spacious building, situated at that time near the Tower of Melangolo. It would be difficult now to ascertain its exact site, because in that old part of Rome, the aspect of which is completely changed by modern buildings, the name and even the remembrance of these old edifices are buried under their ruins. This house formed an angle with the Church of St. Catharine, called Funari, and the Piazza Morgana, where the house of the noble family of the Altieri now stands.

Ignatius passed from that house to the one which we now occupy; but whilst he still inhabited the former, he collected together as many bedsteads as he could procure, and covered them with heaps of straw, so as to place the poor people there with as little discomfort as possible. Several of the Fathers served them, as they were accustomed to wait on the patients in the hospitals; washed their feet, performed the most menial offices in their service, and lavished every care and attention upon them; happy to think that in their persons they served Jesus Christ himself. Others went through the town to beg alms for the poor patients, and it pleased God that they should be abundantly aided by the charity of many pious souls; so that they succeeded in feeding and clothing in their own house alone, more than four hundred persons.

So new and touching a sight soon attracted the attention of a multitude of people; but those who were led there merely by curiosity, were so much affected by the frank joyousness with which the Fathers busied themselves in serving these poor creatures, that many were seen divesting themselves even of part of their clothing, to cover the half naked poor.

The report of these good works spread abroad, and the principal nobles in Rome, thinking it too humiliating for them, that men who possessed nothing were providing for

the wants of the indigent, whilst they with all their wealth had contributed nothing to their support, began to send in assistance of every kind, which helped to maintain during the winter, and to support till the following harvest, nearly three thousand persons.

Moreover, the alleviation of their physical sufferings was not the most precious advantage which they found in the house of Ignatius ; but rather the infinite profit which they obtained for their souls. As soon as they arrived there, they were exhorted to confession, and instructed in the Christian doctrine, whilst religious discourses were frequently addressed to them. At certain fixed hours they all repeated prayers, which not only helped to pass the time when they were assembled together, in a profitable manner, but which gave rise in many a heart, to a fervent desire of leading a more Christian life for the future.

Whether it were these charitable examples or the conviction of the innocence of the Fathers, now so authentically recognised, which had increased the general esteem and good will towards them, certain it is that many persons began to take pleasure in the kind of life which they led, and asked to be admitted amongst them.

Moreover, the Sovereign Pontiff made known his intention of employing some of the companions of Ignatius in the service of the Church. The Saint himself believed that the moment had now arrived for giving the constitution of a religious Order to the Society, which until then had only been kept together by the free will of its members ; and after having fervently recommended to God a work so interesting to His glory, and having entreated Him so to dispose the minds of his brothers that they should wish for nothing but the fulfilment of God's will, he assembled them all together one day, and announced to them that they would shortly be

obliged to disperse, and to proceed wherever the Holy Father thought proper to send them. He then added; "Can we believe it possible that God would have collected men of different countries together in so miraculous a manner; united them by the powerful bonds of mutual charity, given them such perfect uniformity of feeling, and so ardent a desire to labor for the sole object of His glory; in order that, finding themselves after long studies, and long journeys, once more reunited in the City of Rome, they should part without any other mark of union between them, but the mere affectionate remembrance which men preserve towards their absent friends? No, my dear companions, God makes known to my heart, that all which has been done until now, has been for a nobler end, and that the zeal which has led us to abandon our country, our families, our properties and our freedom, shall not be extinguished with us. Yet this is what would happen, were we to leave no inheritors of our desires, none to emulate our zeal, no imitators of the species of life to which we have devoted ourselves. How can it be otherwise, if we do not give to our present Society the stability which it can only acquire by an organization similar to a religious Order? God has closed the road to Palestine for us; and yet zeal for the salvation of souls daily increases in our hearts. Does not the Lord thus give us to understand that it must not be confined to one particular country, whilst the whole world lays claim to it? As we are yet but few for so vast an enterprise, He Himself takes care, as you see, to increase our number. Should we then remain henceforth scattered, independent, and as free to abandon this great work as to continue in it? A religious Order, established by the Apostolic authority, has a very different degree of importance; its strength becomes of a very different nature, when all the parts composing its entire body are firmly knit

together ; its opportunities of practising that perfection to which fixed laws bind its members, are also very different. I foresee that powerful obstacles will be opposed to this great enterprise ; but they will not be insuperable to that Divine virtue which can do all, and in which alone I trust. My courage is therefore unshaken. Had the two holy patriarchs, Dominick and Francis, renounced the idea of founding their respective Orders, through fear of failing in their enterprises, how many blessed souls would not be in Paradise now ! Of how many faithful children would the Church on earth be deprived ! What brilliant learning, what treasures of merit, what heroic examples of perfection would have been lost to the world ! As for me, if my fears are strong, I perceive motives for yet stronger hopes, when I reflect that the Saviour himself has promised that we should find in Rome assistance and protection from Him. We have then nothing to dread except from ourselves, if, after having given ourselves to God by the vows which already engage us, we should hesitate to sacrifice a remnant of liberty, by submitting ourselves to form henceforward one body, under one head.

“In order to reflect more maturely upon this project, it would doubtless be desirable, were it possible for us, as on former occasions, to devote some weeks to commune with ourselves in the presence of God ; but the possibility of the speedy departure of the Sovereign Pontiff forbids this, and when we are once separated, how can we hope to establish that union between us which is so indispensable ? Therefore it seems to me that we ought to prepare ourselves for several days, by the most austere penance and the most fervent prayer, for learning the will of God upon this matter ; after which we shall collect the votes and come to a definitive resolution.”

To this proposal of Ignatius, his companions were ready

to give their immediate consent. The strength of his arguments, the uniformity of their wishes, and the ardor of their zeal, rendered them perfectly disposed to do so. Nevertheless, they all meditated for several days, in communion with God; then at their first meeting, came to the unanimous resolution of establishing such constitutions as should give a regular form to their Society. When Ignatius had traced the first sketch of his Institute in Paris, their souls had been inundated with holy joy; and now that he wished to perfect this great work, similar feelings arose in their hearts. But as their whole days were solely consecrated to unceasing labor for the salvation of souls, they agreed to meet during some hours of the night, to lay the foundations of their Institute. These conferences lasted nearly three months, and were conducted as follows.—In order to decide irrevocably upon any point, they studied it, discussed it, and resolved upon it; it was necessary that it should pass through these three grades. When the subject concerning which they were to deliberate had been proposed, then each one placed himself in the presence of God, and renouncing every personal feeling, considered the matter as if it were perfectly irrelevant to himself.

Their opinions, thus divested of that personal interest which so often guides our decisions, were perfectly independent; and reason alone made the balance incline to one side or the other.

An interior decision once made, it was not communicated to the others, lest respect for the authority of certain opinions should prevail; but in the conferences which ensued, each one expressed his idea, and gave it up to general discussion, until the proposition remaining uncontroverted, it was put to the vote, and definitively adopted. Unanimous consent usually followed the propositions of Ignatius, except however on one

occasion, when Nicholas Bobadilla refused to give his consent to their engaging themselves by a vow, as all the others wished to do, to teach the Christian doctrine to children. Rather out of respect for him, than convinced by the reasons which he adduced, this exercise was left free, and the same was done in regard to several other ministrations to which the Society has devoted itself. But it seems that on this occasion Bobadilla was too much attached to his opinion; and as the obstinacy of one single member might have given rise to serious inconvenience, if his sole voice had possessed the faculty of annulling resolutions otherwise unanimous, it was decided that in other cases of this nature the resolution should pass without reference to it. The plan of the Institution having been traced in five chapters, which I shall analyze in the following book, St. Ignatius sent it by Cardinal Gaspar Contarini to be presented to Paul III.; who received it with kindness, and intrusted its examination to F. Thomas Badia, Master of the Sacred Palace, who afterwards became a Cardinal, under the title of St. Sylvester. He kept it for two months, and then returned it with his entire approbation to the Pope, who read it at leisure, and who doubtless, enlightened by knowledge from above, discovered in it the beginning and the germ of great things; for he said: "The finger of God is here," and openly bestowed his approbation upon it at Tivoli, on the 3d of September, 1539. On the same day Cardinal Contarini, to whom the Society was already under other obligations, sent this happy news to Ignatius, in a letter wherein he expressed the satisfaction with which the Pontiff had read the plan submitted to him, and his earnestness in expressing his approbation.

The question now was, to obtain, as Ignatius desired, an Apostolic bull by which the Institute should be declared a religious Order, and this affair was neither easy nor of prompt

solution. The Pope showed himself disposed to give entire satisfaction to Ignatius; but he affixed to this the condition that his opinion should also be that of three Cardinals known for their wisdom, sound judgment and incorruptible faith. One of the three was to be specially charged with the direction of the affair, which was to be immediately stopped, if it did not appear to emanate from God. This was Cardinal Bartholomew Guidiccioni, a skilful canonist, whose irreproachable life and great talents had so manifestly placed him on the way to the Pontificate, that when Paul III. was informed of his death, he exclaimed; "My successor is dead." But Guidiccioni had very peculiar sentiments on the subject of religious Orders; and far from wishing the introduction of new ones into the Church, he would have willingly reduced the number of all those which were already established, to four; and it is said had even written a work upon this subject.

Therefore, when the project of Ignatius was confided to him, he could hardly be induced to listen to the proposition, far less to examine the plan. According to him, such a thought was in itself condemnable, as being opposed to the true welfare of the Church; since a new Order, liable to degenerate in the course of time, ended by doing more injury than it had done good in its first moments of fervor.

As the opinion of such a man was of great weight, he easily brought over the other Cardinals to agree with him. The courage of St. Ignatius did not sink; still, being well aware that in order to overcome great obstacles we must be armed with great strength, he sought this force according to his usual custom, in the divine protection; certain that could he obtain it, no human power would be able to overthrow his projects. Nor did God delay in giving him cause for hope, through means apparently the most unlikely to serve his

plans. Yielding to the importunities of various princes and bishops, who had addressed themselves to the Sovereign Pontiff, several of the companions of Ignatius had gone forth to resume their labors; and hardly had they arrived at the different places assigned to them, before numerous statements were received in Rome of the wonderful effect of their exertions.

In a short time, Faber had, we may say, regenerated and sanctified the town of Parma; and without now entering into further details, it is sufficient to add, that upwards of a hundred laymen and ecclesiastics were at the same moment engaged in following the Spiritual Exercises in that city. Lainez had no less success in Placentia, and Cardinal Ennius Filodardi never ceased to write to the Holy Father, congratulating himself upon having these Fathers as the companions of his Legation in those two States.

Similar news arrived from Sienna: where Brouet and Rodriguez had reformed the people, and even the clergy by means of the Exercises: moreover a convent of nuns, until then in open opposition to their Archbishop, had submitted to his authority. Bobadilla in the kingdom of Naples, Le Jay at Bagnarea, Strada at Montepulciano and Brescia, made marvellous exertions for the salvation of souls, especially Strada, who, still too young to be a priest, devoted himself, with all the ardor of a fervent novice, to works of zeal and charity.

Besides this the king of Portugal, John III., asked from the Sovereign Pontiff six companions of Ignatius; but only obtained two, Francis Xavier and Rodriguez. To Ortiz, the agent of Charles V. at the Diet of Worms, he granted Father Faber, to support the Catholic doctrine there. Such multiplied proofs of the indefatigable charity of the new Fathers for the service of the Church, and the salvation of

their brethren, showed the Holy Father that Ignatius was the source from which this truly apostolic zeal flowed, and that if he could transmit it to other men similar to those whom he had already collected, the Church, then so cruelly attacked in the North of Europe, might thus obtain the most important assistance.

But notwithstanding such decisive reasons, and the desire of the wise Pontiff himself, Cardinal Guidiccioni continued to persist in his opposition, and the Society was not constituted into a religious Order.

It seemed that God Himself had resolved to take this work into His own hands, to make it succeed against all hope, and to show that he granted its success to the prayers of Ignatius alone, who, after having intrusted these precious seeds to the earth, now watered them with his tears, and never ceased humbly to remind the Saviour of the consoling promise which he had made him. One day when engaged in prayer, the thought suddenly struck Ignatius, that he would unite together in one offering, his own heart and those of all his companions, to make as it were a last assault upon the divine goodness. He engaged himself, in the name of all, to have the sacrifice of the Mass celebrated three thousand times as an act of thanksgiving, whenever he obtained the favor which he so ardently solicited. It was without doubt this last effort which decided the victory; for Cardinal Guidiccioni felt his opinion change suddenly and completely, without being able to explain to himself this new disposition of his heart, which he could only attribute to a gentle violence proceeding from Heaven itself.

He begged to see the plan of the Institute, examined it attentively, and finding it admirable, said that whilst he persisted in his opinion with regard to other Orders he excepted that of Ignatius from this prohibition. Nor was he satisfied

with merely giving it his personal approbation, but became a powerful advocate of the measure, which he had hitherto combated both with the two other Cardinals and with the Sovereign Pontiff. All impediments being thus removed, Paul III., after a mature examination of the Institute submitted to him, raised the Society to the rank of a religious Order, and approved its name and form by the bull *Regimini militantis Ecclesiæ*, dated the 27th of September, 1540.

It would be impossible to describe the consolation and increase of fervor which now filled the heart of Ignatius. After so many fatiguing journeys, so much study, so many prayers and tears, so many persecutions and dangers, he beheld himself at length at the summit of his desires; he could at length perpetuate his labors, his zeal, and his devotion to the salvation of his brethren. He began, together with all his companions, by acquitting the promise which he had made to God, each one keeping an exact account of the holy sacrifices which he celebrated. The society never forgot the immense obligations under which they lay to Pope Paul III., and still consider him as a second Father. His kindness towards us was not even extinguished with himself, but seemed to pass as an inheritance to the princes of his family. A second object of gratitude for the Society, is the illustrious house of Contarini; and St. Ignatius, in a writing addressed to Peter Contarini, whom I have before mentioned, says these very words in speaking of his kinsman, Cardinal Gaspar: "We owe him *all* in the affair which we had so much at heart; and I acknowledge it here, to be preserved as a perpetual confession of our debt to him, and in order that we may at least maintain feelings of eternal gratitude for this great benefit, since it will never be in our power to repay it."

CHAPTER XIII.

Divers predictions as to the origin, spirit, and labors of the Society—Ignatius chosen first General of the Order—Solemn profession without the walls of Rome—Of the name of *Jesus* given to the Society.

It has not been without much hesitation that I have decided to speak of the revelations and prophecies by which it pleased God to announce the birth of our Society, the formation of its Institute, and the great fruits of those labors to which it was to devote itself for the service of the Church. I feared lest this narrative, so honorable to the Society, should rather be attributed to a sentiment of pride than to the sole desire of bearing witness to the truth. Yet, if God has designed to honor, in an especial manner, this lowliest of all the Societies which are devoted to Him, have I right to deprive her of that which she derives solely from His goodness? It is certain that God has sometimes announced beforehand the rise, works, and merits, whether of certain Orders whom He has sent to the assistance of His Church or of their founders. We find examples of this in the dream by which He made known to the Pontiff Honorius, the services which were one day to be rendered to the Church by the Orders of St. Francis and St. Dominick, upon whom he afterwards bestowed his apostolic approbation; in the luminous ladder which St. Romuald beheld stretching from earth to Heaven, and covered with his Religious, clad in robes of dazzling whiteness;

in the seven rays of light which appeared to St. Norbert, surrounding the head of the crucified Redeemer, and the pilgrims who came to him from the uttermost extremities of the earth; in the seven stars which St. Hugh, bishop of Grenoble, perceived in a vision, and which announced to him St. Bruno and his six companions; in that white and blue cross shining upon the heart of an angel clad in white, beside whom were two slaves, one black and the other white, the vision which appeared to Innocent III. as a presage of the Order of the Redemption of Captives; and in many others in which we must acknowledge the immediate intervention of the God of miracles.

Why then should we be surprised that He permitted the same to occur in regard to our Society, announcing it beforehand by its name, its works, and its Institute? First, we hear of Rainolda of Arnheim, a woman whose name and virtue were equally illustrious in Flanders, and who, in 1534, at the very time when Ignatius, in the church of Montmartre, laid the first foundations of his company, predicted to Peter Canisius, then a very young man, that he would one day wear the habit of an *Order of Jesus*, which would shortly be founded for the common benefit of the faithful, and especially for that of Germany.—We know how the sequel verified the prediction. Afterwards came Angela Panigarola, a nun of St. Martha's convent at Milan, who announced long beforehand the establishment of the Society of Jesus, and the fruits of sanctity which it was to produce in that city, as is proved from our archives in Rome, by the most authentic testimony.

The memoirs of the Order of the Holy Trinity, established for the redemption of captives, contain facts of the same nature, which are faithfully transcribed by John de Figueras in his history. The originals are preserved in the

Monastery of Coimbra, from which source I derive my information.

Let us now proceed to the works of the Society. God deigned to make known His designs on this subject to St. Theresa ; and her confessor learned it from her own mouth. Besides, her writings bear evidence to this fact, as well as to her having predicted that the Society should bear the name of Jesus. She relates, that on one occasion she distinctly heard the Lord say these words : “ If thou knewest of what assistance that Society shall be to the Church in days to come, in its necessities and in its dangers ! ” At another time, she beheld in spirit, how the Society was destined to increase, for the greater glory of God, and the energy with which it would defend the true Faith. One day when absorbed in a meditation full of sweetness and peace, (as she herself writes,) surrounded by holy Angels, and very near God, she implored Him in behalf of His Church ; then, says the Saint, she saw great things concerning the Society in general, and some of its members more especially. Above all, she perceived several times in the abode of the Blessed, the children of Ignatius, with white banners in their hands. “ From hence,” said St. Theresa, “ arises the very great veneration in which I hold that Order. Besides this, I have frequently conversed with these Religious, and have found that their lives were in absolute conformity to all those things which it pleased God to reveal to me in their regard.”

To these words I might add others no less honorable to the Society, which have been suppressed in certain editions of her works. But I here declare that my quotations have been copied *verbatim* from the original MS. in the handwriting of the Saint, preserved with all due veneration in the royal library of the Escorial, while the copy itself has been collated and certified by a public notary. And I may also

add, that the suppressions to which I allude, were afterwards solemnly condemned by a general Chapter of the Order of the Carmelites, in 1650.

To the holy women whom I have already cited, I shall add a third, St. Mary Magdalene of Pazzi, a native of Florence. On the 26th of December, 1599, on the feast of St. Stephen, this Saint being rapt in ecstasy, clearly saw that God appeared to regard the soul of St. John the Evangelist, with a degree of love and complacency superior to that which He bestowed upon the other Saints ; but at the same time she perceived that He also granted a similar grace to the soul of the blessed Father Ignatius. She thus expresses herself upon this subject : " The Spirit of St. John and that of Ignatius are the same, for the sole object of both is love and charity to God and to their fellow-men ; and it is through this love and charity that they draw creatures to God. The most blessed Spirit now existing upon earth is that of Ignatius, because his children, in their guidance of souls, especially endeavor to make it understood how pleasing to God are our acts of interior worship ; since these acts lead us to embrace with facility the most arduous and difficult tasks, thanks to the light which they communicate to the soul, whence arises that love which converts all bitterness into sweetness." According to another vision of St. Magdalene, as often as the children of Ignatius endeavored to infuse that spirit into the souls of their fellow-beings, they renewed the tender satisfaction which God himself took in the soul of their blessed founder.

To these we might add the account of many more ancient predictions referring to the Society. The Abbot Joachim, who lived in the year 1200, makes mention of an Order, founded upon the model of Jesus, which was to arise in the sixteenth century of the Church. " This Order," he says,

“ shall be distinguished amongst all others, by its conformity to the Spirit of God, and shall be very dear to His heart. The Lord will love it, as Jacob loved his son Benjamin, whom he had begotten in his old age.” And again he says : “ There shall arise in the Church, doctors and preachers, who shall soften worldly and carnal hearts, and shall reduce to silence haughty teachers, bloated with pride ; this Order shall be devoted to obedience towards the Holy See, &c.” Here I pass over several matters, which, having relation to conversions effected, whether in Asia or America, will find their place elsewhere. It will suffice for the present to quote the words of that apostolic servant of God, St. Vincent Ferrer, which several men of calm and wise judgment have applied to the Society. “ Many persons,” said Rodriguez (one of the first companions of Ignatius), “ asked us if we were those Religious whom a divine revelation had shown to the blessed Vincent, when he predicted that the time would come when there should be formed a society of evāgelic men, remarkable by their zeal for the Faith, and for every species of virtue. None of us knew what St. Vincent had written, and to such questions we only replied as to mockeries ; for it appeared to us impossible that these wonderful predictions should relate to us, since our Fathers were *non alta sapientes, sed humilibus consentientis*, &c. Some years afterwards, being in Portugal, the Bishop of Coimbra gave me the very words of St. Vincent to read, and he held it as certain that the Society was therein described. Would to God that such a prediction could be applied to us ! But the virtues which the holy priest announces in these apostolic men are such, that religious humility could never permit any one to recognize them either in himself or in his brethren. Those which he principally attributes to them, are poverty of spirit, purity of heart, humility, and mutual charity, all

carried to perfection. These men are to know nothing but Jesus crucified; to love but Him, to think only of Him, to speak of Him alone, to have no care either for the world or for themselves; to desire nothing but happiness and glory in Heaven, and death itself in hopes of attaining it. Who can flatter himself with ever arriving at this perfection? Truly, the Saint is right to add, when endeavoring to make us comprehend the blessed condition of these men whom he calls apostolic: *Hæc imaginatio ducet te, plus quam credi potest, in quoddam impatiens desiderium adventûs illorum temporum.*"

Yet we may say with truth, that whoever examines the lives of the ten first Fathers, who composed the whole Society at its commencement, will find that the numerous and sublime virtues attributed by the Saint to the future Apostles, all shone forth in them. They lived in the most absolute poverty, possessing nothing in the world but a cross, and their own existence; nay, one might say that their very life did not belong to them, so ready were they to renounce it whenever the service of God, the salvation of souls, or obedience to the Sovereign Pontiff demanded it! Hence those long and perilous journeys through Asia, through Africa, and throughout all the kingdoms of Europe; hence the persecutions which they underwent, the terrible fatigues which they endured; hence the voluntary sufferings which they imposed upon themselves; hence also that simplicity so admirable, in spite of their learning, that the gentle innocence of their manners had deservedly obtained for some of them the surname of angels; and hence, in short, that humility, so profound, so utterly detached from all that the world considers as honorable and distinguished, that Lainez, Le Jay, Brouet, Rodriguez, and Bobadilla, having been called to the dignity of bishops, and even to one yet more elevated,

considered the offer as a persecution, and rejected it with their whole heart. One of these men declared that one thing alone might have induced him to regret that he had joined Ignatius, which would have been the impossibility of escaping from the ecclesiastical dignity destined for him.

What perfect charity reigned amongst them ! They almost all belonged to different and even hostile nations ; they had the most opposite characters, and yet they felt the sufferings of their companions more painfully than their own. Jesus crucified was the sole object of their love, of their thoughts, of their conversation, and they took His name because they always wore it in their hearts. To please Him, was their only recompense ; to gain hearts to God, the sole object of their ambition. As to measuring their labors by their strength, it would have been counted as puerile, as unworthy. To make known the Lord Jesus, to find new adorers of His divine name, amidst all the nations of the universe ; that was indeed their hope, their secret, and the sole desire of their hearts !

The existence of St. Ignatius, especially during his latter years, was considered by his physicians as miraculous, and they were persuaded that his zeal for the glory of God, alone supplied him with that strength which nature could no longer bestow upon him. When St. Francis Xavier died in the middle of his immense labors in the East, he had only begun all that he had projected for the enlightenment of the infidels and the glory of God's holy name. Faber lived so short a time, that his works were but the simple prelude to what he intended doing, and yet his labors had already surpassed those of the most zealous and aged men. We may with truth say the same of all the others. When we reflect that I am now making only a rapid sketch of the works of our first models, how much more forcible will it be when I

shall enter into a detailed account of all their labors! Shall I then be accused of exaggeration? or shall I not rather incur the reproach of having fallen very short of my subject?

This brings us back to the events which followed the establishment of the Society as a Religious Order. Ignatius immediately gave notice of it to his companions; and as it was necessary to decide upon fixed rules and constitutions, and to choose a General from amongst them, and since that could not be done without the decision of the majority, he summoned them all to Rome, where they arrived at the beginning of Lent, in 1541. But of ten, four were wanting, because Xavier and Rodriguez were already in Portugal, from whence they were to go to the Indies; Faber at the Diet of Worms, and Bobadilla so useful in the kingdom of Naples, that he was detained there by orders of the Pope and in fact also by his feeble health. As for the general approbation required for the rules which were to be established, those who were absent relied upon the judgment of those who were in Rome, and they upon that of Ignatius. However, he never decided upon any resolution, without having taken the advice and received the approbation of all. It was now that he begun to form the external structure and principal parts of those constitutions, to which he continually added, until they had acquired their present form.

As for the election of a General, no vote was wanting but that of Bobadilla, who, in setting out for Naples, had not left it in writing, foreseeing no hindrance to his return; and having afterwards neglected to send it. Ignatius required of his children, now collected together in Rome, that they should take three days to meditate in the presence of God, upon their future choice; that afterwards they should write the name upon a ticket which they were to seal up, and then to devote three other days to prayer, that Heaven would

bless the election which had been made. At the end of that time, the different votes were examined. Absent and present, all had unanimously chosen Ignatius as General of the Company. Some of these written votes have appeared to me worthy of being recorded. I transcribe them from the originals. "I, Francis (surnamed Xavier) do hereby affirm, that apart from all human consideration, and acting by the dictates of my conscience, I am of opinion that we should elect as head of our Society, to whom we ought all to submit, our old and true Father Ignatius, who, having collected us together, not without great difficulties and much labor, will also know how to govern us, and to change well to better, through his intimate knowledge of us all. And after his death, (I speak from my soul and conscience, and as if I were about to die immediately,) I am also of opinion that Father Peter Faber ought to be his successor. God is my witness that I speak only according to my thoughts; in testimony whereof I have signed with my own hand. Given in Rome, the 15th of March, 1540. Francis."

John Codure also gives his vote to Father Faber after Ignatius; and the reason which he assigned for doing so, is even more honorable than the choice itself. "Ignatius," says he, "has always appeared to me the most fervently zealous for the honor of God and the salvation of men; and for this reason, I would wish to see at our head our venerable Father; he who has always made himself the least amongst us all, the servant of all. After him I would choose Father Peter Faber, whose virtue is not less elevated. This is what a union with God the Father and Our Lord Jesus Christ has inspired me with: nor could I testify otherwise, were I at my last hour. The 5th of May, 1540. John Codiurus."*

* *Is est* (he says amongst other things in speaking of Ignatius), *ui testimonium reddo, quem etiam Dei honoris zelatorem, ac salutis*

He had given his vote long beforehand, on account of his intended voyage to Ireland, of which I have already spoken, but which did not take place.

Here is next the vote of Salmeron, equally worthy of him and of Ignatius to whom he gave it. "In the name of Jesus Christ, Amen: I, Alphonsus Salmeron, the most unworthy member of this Society, after having offered up my prayers to God, and meditated upon the affair to the best of my power, do hereby choose and acknowledge as chief and Superior of myself and of all this congregation, Señor Ignatius of Loyola, who, inspired by divine wisdom, after having begotten us in Christ, and fed us with the milk of children, now that we have grown up in the Lord, will lead us forward with the substantial food of obedience, and will guide us towards the rich and fertile pastures of Paradise, as well as towards the fountains of life. So that when he shall give back this little flock to Jesus Christ the great shepherd, we may be truly called *the people of his pasture and the sheep of his hands*; whilst he himself may on his side repeat with joy; *Lord, of all those whom thou hast given me I have not lost one*. May the good shepherd Jesus, grant us this supreme blessing! Amen. Such is our opinion. Written in Rome, the 4th of April, 1541."*

animarum ardentissimum, semper cognovi; ac ideo etiam aliis debere præfici, quia omnium semper se fecit minimum, ac omnibus ministravit, honorandus pater D. Ignatius de Loyola. Post quem, non minori virtute præditum censeo præferendum, honorandum patrem, D. Petrum Fabrum. Hæc est caritas coram Deo Patre, ac D. N. Jesu Christo; nec aliud putarem dicendum, si hanc horam ultimam esse meæ vitæ certo scirem, etc., 5 Mai, 1540. Joannes Codurio.

* *In nomine Jesu Christi, Amen. Ego Alphonsus Salmeron, hujus societatis indignissimus, præmissa ad Deum oratione, et re, pro qualicumque meo judicio, mature pensata, eligo, et pronuncio pro meo, et toti-*

But of these different votes; the most admirable from its wisdom was that of St. Ignatius himself, who, feeling how important it was for a father in a circumstance of such deep interest, to testify no preference amongst his children, who were all equally entitled to his love and esteem, enveloped in an act of deep humility, one of equally deep prudence; and found means to give his vote, as it was incumbent upon him to do, without naming any one in particular. "In the presence of God," he says, "and myself excepted, I give it as my opinion that he who shall have reunited the greatest number of votes, shall be our Superior."

His election produced very different effects on his own mind, and those of his companions. In the midst of the common joy, he alone was overwhelmed with sadness, on seeing himself, contrary to all his wishes, raised above his brethren; he who would willingly be the very lowest amongst them. He could not make up his mind to accede to their desire, and considered it as an error of judgment which had led them to believe him worthy of being placed at their head. He represented to them his incapacity in the strongest terms, reminded them of the worldly life which he had led for thirty years, of all his sins and miseries; and finally, of the weakness of his health, which made it impossible for him to bear so heavy a burden. The more his companions appeared to

us congregationis prælato et superiore, dominum Ignatium de Loyola, qui juxta sibi datum à Deo sapientiam, sicut nos omnes in Christo genuit, lacteque pavit parvulos, ita nunc, in Christo grandiores, solido obedientiæ cibo deducet, ac diriget in pascua pinguis et uberrima Paradisi et ad fontem vitæ: ut cum gregem hunc pusillum Jesu Christo pastori magno reddiderit, verraciter nos dicamus et nos: populus pascuæ ejus et, oves manus ejus: ipse vero gaudenter dicat: Domine ex his quos dedisti mihi non perdidisti ex eis quemquam—quod ipse Jesus pastor bonus, nobis dignetur concedere, Amen. Hæc sententia nostra. Scriptum Romæ, 4 Die Aprilis, 1541.

be grieved by his refusal, the more strenuously he urged them to accede to it. He finished by assuring them that he could not accept of such an office, unless he were to receive fresh knowledge from on high. But he did not perceive, this man so simple in his humility, that the more he considered himself unworthy of the office, the more he confirmed his companions in their first opinion; for the only thing that could have been wanting to a merit so universally acknowledged, was, that whilst all agreed in designating him as their Superior, he alone, through a sentiment of humility, should be of a contrary opinion.

All that Ignatius could obtain was, that his brothers should consent to submit his election to a new trial. They did so, and their opinions remained unchanged. After having passed four days more in prayer and penitential exercises, out of compassion for his sincere grief, and to give it time to grow calm, they returned with votes absolutely similar to the first. Ignatius, who had conceived some hopes from this delay, again testified his disinclination to agree to their decision, and would have brought forward new arguments; but James Lainez rose, and addressing the meeting with modest freedom, declared that if Ignatius thought himself at liberty to refuse to fulfil the will of God so clearly manifested, he also would consider himself at liberty to leave a Society, which by this refusal would be deprived of the head designated for it by God himself. All, following the example of Lainez, made the same protestation, and declared that not one amongst them would accept the government of the Company, or would confer it upon another.

Then Ignatius, without giving positive consent, ceased to refuse, but continued to believe that his companions held him in this high estimation, from not knowing him thoroughly. He therefore placed their decision and his own opin-

ion in the hands of one who, having a thorough knowledge of his life, could perfectly understand both what he had been and what he was likely to become. He whom he selected as umpire, was his own confessor, named Theodosius, a man of great holiness, and at that time a religious of St. Peter Montorio's. During the three last days of the Holy Week, which Ignatius passed without leaving his monastery, and without seeing his companions, he gave Theodosius a detailed account of his whole life, of which he made him a general confession. He then informed him of the double election of which he had been the object, of his refusal, and of the insistence of his brethren; and added, that he had come to place himself in the hands of his director, in order that through the intimate knowledge which he had of his soul, he might decide before God upon the resolution which his penitent ought to take. But the holy monk required little time for reflection. He at once enjoined Ignatius no longer to oppose what he considered as the manifest will of the Holy Spirit.

Ignatius entreated him to put his decision in writing, and in sending it to his companions, to speak of him with the utmost freedom, still retaining a hope that by this means they might be induced to exclude him from the generalship. The Father agreed to do so; and at length, satisfied with this promise, Ignatius on Easter-day went to rejoin his companions.

Three days after, his confessor himself brought the letter which he had promised to write; and after having assembled the Fathers, read it aloud in their presence. It enjoined Ignatius no longer to refuse his consent to the will of his companions. Upon hearing this he submitted, and entered upon the office of General, on the 13th of April, 1541. But before this occurred, and whilst they were yet waiting for the answer of Father Theodosius, it appeared as if God him-

self wished to encourage Ignatius, by showing him that he had been endowed with supernatural gifts.

A young man named Matthew, a native of Biscay, served in the house of the Fathers; and while Ignatius was in the monastery of Father Theodosius, suddenly fell into the power of the demon, who tormented him cruelly. He caused his victim to utter the most horrible cries, foaming at the mouth; he cast him on the ground, and held him there with such strength, that ten men could hardly raise him. His neck and face were horribly swollen. At the sign of the cross, which a priest made over him, this swelling would disappear, and show itself in other parts of his body. One day some persons who were present at this scene threatened the evil spirit, and warned him that Ignatius would soon return, and would expel him from the body of that man, and from the house. Then he cried out in convulsions of rage, that the name of Ignatius should not be pronounced before him, and that he was the greatest enemy whom he had upon earth. When Ignatius came back, and was informed of the misfortune that had happened to the young man, he led him into his chamber, said a short prayer over him, and brought him back, delivered for ever from the power of Satan.

After the election of their General, the Fathers fixed upon Friday of that same week, as the day for pronouncing the solemn vows of their profession. They first made their stations in seven different churches, and arrived at that of St. Paul, outside the walls. There Ignatius said Mass at an altar of the Holy Virgin, which was then on the left of the high altar, near the miraculous crucifix which spoke to St. Bridgit. Before taking the communion, he turned towards the assistants, and holding in one hand the body of the Lord, and in the other the written formula of his vows, read it aloud, and then received the sacred Host. He afterwards

placed upon the paten five other consecrated Hosts, returned to his companions, who on their knees surrounded the altar, and received their vows, which they all made according to the same formula, except that the promises of Ignatius were made to the Sovereign Pontiff, and those of the other Fathers to Ignatius as their head. After the communion and fervent acts of thanksgiving, they visited all the privileged altars of that church; then returning to the foot of the high altar they all embraced Ignatius, after having kissed his hand with great humility and tears of emotion, in which all who were present joined.

We may judge of the abundance of spiritual consolation which on that day inundated the hearts of these holy Religious, by that which was granted to one of their members, Father Codure. Whilst returning to Rome from the Church of St. Paul, he walked on before his companions, and appeared as if truly carried forward by the Holy Spirit. He heaved such ardent sighs, and shed so many tears, accompanied by half broken words, that he seemed as one absolutely beside himself; and as if the fire which devoured his heart required an outlet, that it might not consume him.

He was the first after Ignatius who pronounced the vows of his profession, and he was also the first who ascended to Heaven after the foundation of the new religious Order. Six months had hardly passed, before God, by taking him to Himself, granted his fervent desire. Ignatius was on his way to offer up the Holy Sacrifice for Codure, at St. Peter Montorio's, when suddenly in the middle of the Ponte Sisto, he stopped short in an attitude of surprise; then calmly raising his eyes to Heaven, said to John Baptist Viola, who accompanied him, "Let us return to Rome, Codure is dead." In fact he had just expired. Ignatius never revealed what he had then seen; but it has always been believed that he

beheld the same vision as that seen by a pious man, who wrote some time after to Faber, declaring that he had beheld Codure environed by rays of light, and ascending to Heaven surrounded by angels. Codure was truly a perfect man, and filled with the Spirit of God. Born in Provence, on the day of St. John the Baptist, he had received his name; had been ordained to the priesthood on the same day, and died on the same day as the illustrious precursor of our Lord, and precisely at the same age.

The desire of St. Ignatius was then at length accomplished; and his labors, which might be divided into several classes, had at length received their reward. The object of his first efforts had been to conquer himself, and to arrive at a total detachment from the world, and at a perfect union with God; of the second, to collect companions and to form them to the apostolic spirit, so that they might become, as it were, the foundation-stones of the edifice which he wished to erect. There remained for him in the third place, to give to his Order, now established, an Institute and a form of government. Before speaking more at length upon this subject, I must here make mention of the name adopted by the Society, and of the reasons to which it owes the choice of this name.

Ignatius gave to his newly-founded Order the name of Company of Jesus. The ears of the declared enemies of the Church were strangely wounded by this. At first it produced the most extraordinary exasperation; nothing was heard but mockery, blasphemies and insults. It was a name which could not be tolerated; it was full of pride and injustice; it deprived the generality of the faithful of their precious privilege of being the true *Company of Jesus*, to bestow it upon us alone, without regard to the merits of

others, and without any right on our part to such appropriation.

Thus, the title of Friars Preachers, which was given to the Order of St. Dominick, as a token of their destination, and as a reward for their labors, had also excited much murmuring and reproach. It was asked, whether the whole Church had become mute, that these men alone should be designated as Preachers. But the authority of Innocent III., Honorius III., Gregory IX., and other Sovereign Pontiffs silenced envy, and maintained for that Order a title which it so well merited by its zeal and learning. In the same way, the holy Council of Trent, together with many Pontiffs, approved of the name which we had borne from our origin; while Gregory XIV. in his bull, *Ecclesiæ Catholicæ*, solemnly confirmed it.*

Besides, notwithstanding all these reproaches, Ignatius felt assured that the Society would never be deprived of this august name. He was heard to say, that should the discussion of this question ever be renewed (which in fact occurred), it would be determined by the authority of the Church; because it was the express will of God that the Order should bear this name, and no other; nor can we doubt that his conviction on this point proceeded from a higher source than his own thoughts.

"It is manifest to us," wrote his secretary (John Polancus), "that Ignatius had been informed, by revelations from Jesus Christ himself, of the name which his Order was to bear. For whatever warnings or reproaches he received in consequence of our pretended usurpation of this holy name,

* Quæ vero, ad reliqua, quæ in controversia vocata erant, sic statuimus—Nomen Societas Jesu, quo laudabilis hic Ordo nascens, a Sede Apostolica nominatus est, et hæcenus insignitus, perpetuis futuris temporibus retinendum esse.

he always remained firm in his resolution to preserve it, unmoved by any human opinion; excepting from this hypothesis those persons only to whom he owed obedience under penalty of sin. Now, to all who knew the humility of Ignatius, and his readiness to renounce his own opinion, and to rely upon the judgment of others; this decided resolution, and the calm refusal with which he met all the advice given him upon this subject, were sufficient to impress them with the conviction that he did not consider this as a mere human affair. He never acted in this manner unless his resolution had been decided by heavenly inspiration. It is, besides, probable that the first Fathers consulted with each other and reflected upon this name, as upon many other matters connected with the Society; and, consequently, every thing leads us to believe that the Lord himself had revealed or confirmed it to Ignatius.

“It must also be observed, that we do not entitle ourselves, Company of Jesus, as having the presumption to think ourselves worthy of being truly His companions. We do so only in the military sense, in which a company takes the name of its commander.” Thus speaks the Secretary of Ignatius, and his explanation is correct. The name of our Society is in truth nothing but a military title; it dates back to the origin of the Society, when at Manresa, God himself revealed the first sketch of the Order to Ignatius, in the Meditation of the Two Standards, which represents the enlisting of a company of warriors under the banner of which our Lord Jesus is the chief. In fact, this title denotes the object to which the Sovereign Pontiffs as well as Ignatius attribute it. By an admirable conformity of sentiment, they call it *the Militia of Christ*, and declare that we ought to live in its bosom, solely in order to fight under the banner of the Cross; *sub crucis vexillo Deo militare*. The whole

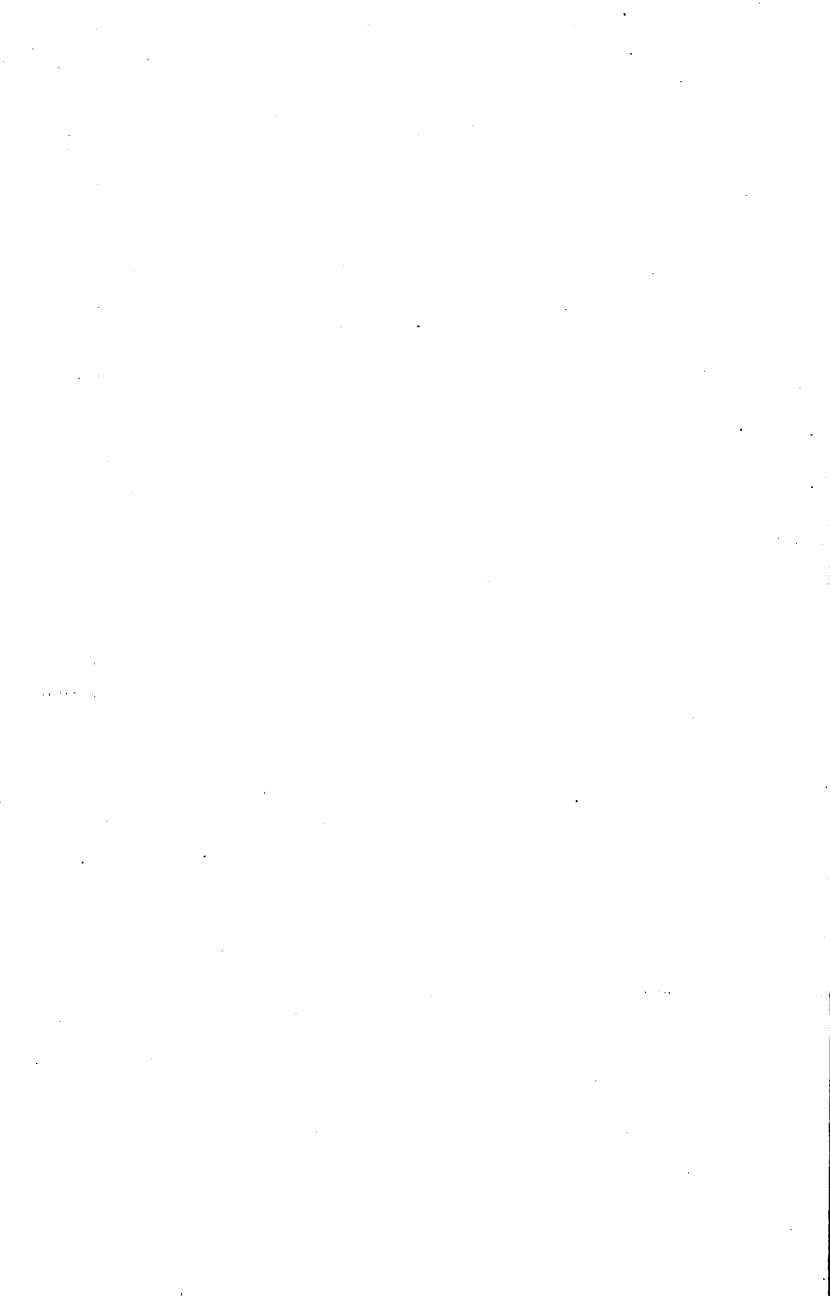
existence of the Company, its whole force, its whole learning are to be consecrated *to the greater glory of God*, which it keeps much more in view than is done by the generality of the faithful. To combat with Him, to die fighting in His service, to aspire to nothing but to imitate Jesus in His work, by leading a life of perfection, and by laboring for the salvation of souls; and always, and only *for the greater glory of God*; that is their life, that is their only object. Do not all these reasons give it some title to call itself *The Company of Jesus*? And hence it is manifest how ill-advised was that celebrated theologian, adverse to the Society, who took occasion to remark upon these words of St. Paul; "God is faithful; by whom you are called unto the Society of his Son Jesus Christ." "How could this Society, which is truly the Church of Christ, have been limited by Ignatius to his own? 'As this Society is undoubtedly the Church of Christ, let those who arrogate the title to themselves, see whether like heretics they do not falsely say that the Church exists only in them.'"

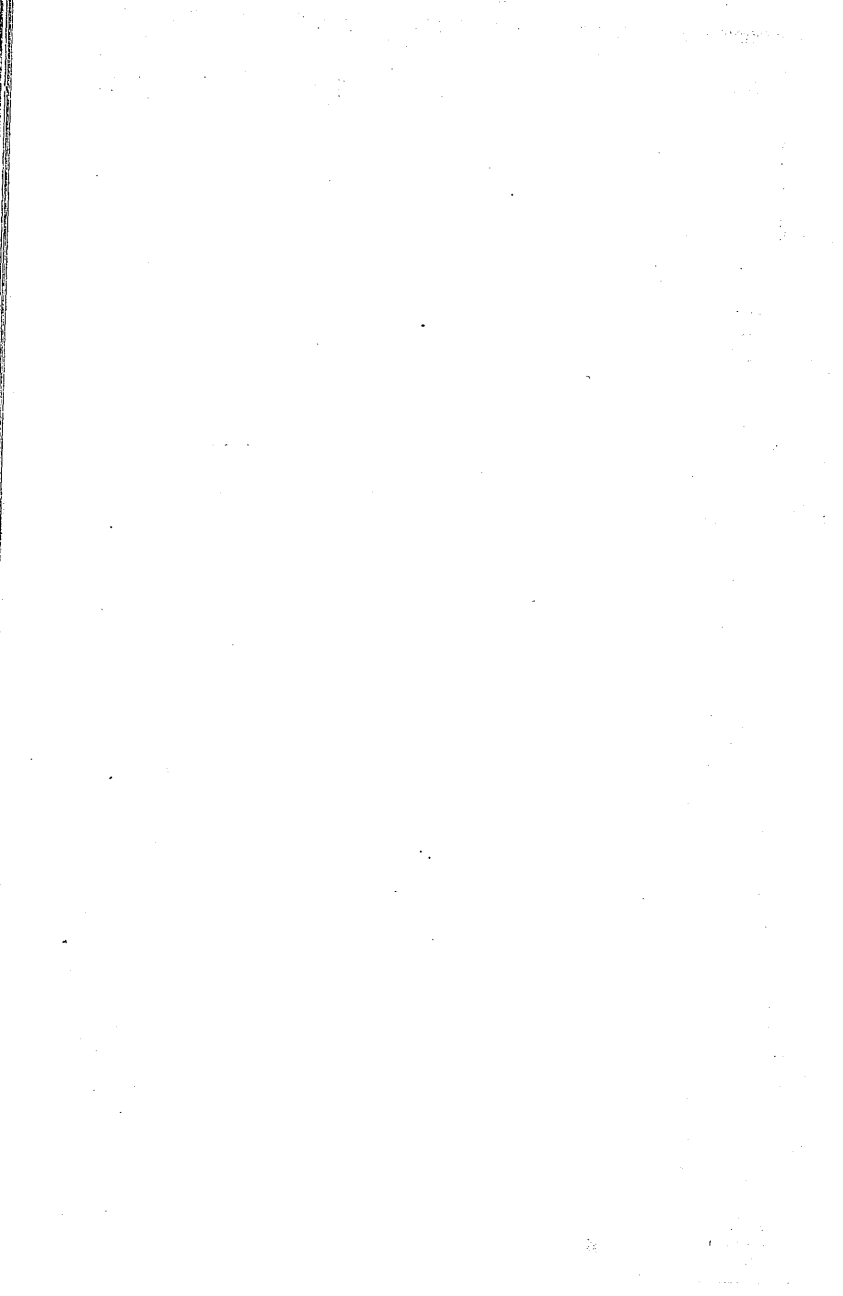
But in the first place, we do not *arrogate* to ourselves, a name conceded to us by the Apostolic authority of the Sovereign Pontiffs. Then, thanks be to God! the Society is so far from thinking of confining the whole Church within itself, that its only object, thoroughly proved by facts, is to extend the Church, and to spread her dominion over the whole universe, at the price of the sweat and blood of so many of her children, and in furtherance of this great object alone. Moreover, this name is not in our eyes a vain title, or one devoid of meaning; but a constant and tacit exhortation to practise those virtues, without which we cannot hope

* *Quæ sine dubio societas, cum Christi Ecclesia sit, qui titulum illum sibi arrogant, ii videant, an hereticorum more, penes se Ecclesiam existere mentantur.*

to bear it worthily ; it reminds us unceasingly, that we must never abandon our standard, nor the examples which Jesus has given us ; that we must live to labor for our own sanctification, and for that of our brethren ; that we must ever preserve that mutual union which gives unconquerable strength ; it reminds us also of that obedience to the orders of our chiefs, which is the soul whether of military or religious discipline ; it teaches us to dread neither the number of our enemies, nor the persecutions which may assail us ; for if no power can overcome Him, whose we are, and for whom we combat, it suffices for our defence, that we belong to Him ; for we are not the Company of *Ignatius*, and when he died, we did not lose our true head.

Father Peter Ribadeneira wrote from Ghent to one of his friends, upon learning the death of Ignatius, as sad for us, as it was glorious for himself. " I should have felt my heart break, if in raising my eyes towards the Father whom I regretted, and towards that Divine Providence, in which he always trusted, I had not felt myself wonderfully consoled by the recollection that the *Company of Jesus* did not rest upon Ignatius, but upon Jesus himself. Yes, Jesus has established it by the hands of His servant, and He is able to give us other chiefs, who, without being such as Ignatius, will nevertheless be all that is necessary for us ; and I repose upon these words, uttered by Father John Hurtado at the moment of his death : *Our Lord formerly deprived his rising Church, in one day, of the two pillars upon which it seemed to lean, St. Peter and St. Paul ; in order that we might understand, that it is He and He alone who supports it.*"





CATALOGUE

OF

NEW & CHEAP

Standard Catholic Publications.

EDWARD DUNIGAN & BROTHER

Invite the attention of the Catholic Hierarchy and Clergy, Colleges, Convents, Religious Institutions, Catholic Institutes, and the public generally, to their extensive assortment of Catholic works in various languages, consisting of BIBLES, PRAYER BOOKS, HISTORICAL and DEVOTIONAL WORKS, and SCHOOL BOOKS.

They ask special attention to their extensive list of superior SCHOOL BOOKS, especially adapted for the use of the Catholic Schools in the United States; all of which are approved by most of the Archbishops and Bishops, as well as Heads of Religious Orders, including the BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS.



EDWARD DUNIGAN & BROTHER,
151 FULTON STREET, NEAR BROADWAY,
NEW YORK.

Any work in the within Catalogue sent by Mail, free of postage, on receipt of the price annexed.

COPY OF A LETTER,

Accompanying a Gold Medal sent by the Holy Father,

TO EDWARD DUNIGAN & BROTHER.

Most worthy and respected Gentlemen :

Some books, which, as it appeared by your most courteous letter, you wished to offer to our most holy Lord Pope Pius IX., have been lately handed to him. This act on your part could not but please his Holiness, and the zeal you constantly show by the publication of works in defence and protection of the cause of the Catholic Religion, gives him great joy.

The Sovereign Pontiff, therefore, with great pleasure encourages you in your course by this letter, and returns you his thanks for the gift which you offer.

I am, moreover, ordered to transmit a gold medal, which the same benign Pontiff sends, impressed with his august effigy, and with it, as a pledge of his paternal and especial affection towards you, his Apostolic blessing, which, as an auspice of all heavenly good, he lovingly grants you with the most sincere affection of his heart.

I have only to profess my respects to you, Gentlemen, on whom I earnestly implore all that is saving and propitious from our Lord.

Gentlemen,

Your most humble and obedient Servant,

DOMINIC FIORAMONTI,

Rome, July 6th, 1853.

Latin Secretary to his Holiness.

To E. DUNIGAN & BROTHER, New York.

I.—BIBLES AND TESTAMENTS.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF THE
MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

—♦♦—
DUNIGAN & BROTHER'S

NEW, CHEAP, SUPERBLY ILLUSTRATED, AND UNABRIDGED EDITION OF

Haydock's Catholic Family Bible and Commentary,

The most comprehensive in the English language.

THE HOLY BIBLE, translated from the Latin Vulgate, diligently compared with the Hebrew, Greek, and other editions in various languages. The OLD TESTAMENT, first published by the English College at Douay, A. D. 1609; and the NEW TESTAMENT, first published by the English College at Rheims, A. D. 1582, with useful notes, Critical, Historical, Controversial, and Explanatory, from the most eminent Commentators and able and judicious critics,

By the Rev. Geo. Leo Haydock, D. D.

Splendidly embellished by eminent Artists, after the great Masters. This edition contains in full the many thousand Critical, Explanatory, and Practical Notes illustrative of the Text, with References, Readings, Chronological Tables, and Indexes of the great Original Work, being an exact reprint of the edition approved by the Catholic hierarchy in England and Ireland. It is published under the approbation of the Most Rev. JOHN HUGHES, D. D., Archbishop of New York, and honored with the patronage of most of the Archbishops, Bishops, and Clergy of the United States and the Canadas.

Price —American morocco, embossed,	\$14
Turkey morocco, gilt edges,	16
“ “ super extra gilt edges,	18
“ “ “ bevelled,	20
“ “ “ panelled sides,	25

Also in 38 parts, at 25 cents a part.

APPROBATION OF THE ORDINARY.

"This new edition of the English version of the Bible, with the complete notes of Bishop Challoner, Rev. Geo. Leo Haydock, and others, known as Haydock's Catholic Bible, having been duly examined, we hereby approve of its republication by Edward Dunigan & Brother, of this city.

"Given at New York, this 5th day of May, 1852, under our hand and seal.

✠ John,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK."

Additional Approbations.

"I most willingly adhere to the approval of this edition of the Holy Bible, given by my Most Rev. Friend and Brother in Christ, the Archbishop of New York; and I shall not fail to recommend its use to the clergy and faithful of the Ecclesiastical province of Quebec.

✠ P. F.,

ARCHBISHOP OF QUEBEC.

"I return you thanks for your splendid edition of the Bible with Haydock's notes. I am happy to find that you have completed your arduous undertaking, and trust that a rapid sale will reward your noble enterprise.

✠ Francis Patrick Kenrick,

ARCHB'P BALT."

"I feel proud of adding my approbation to that of your illustrious Archbishop, and unite with all the Prelates and Catholics of this country, in felicitating you on the auspicious consummation of so noble an undertaking. Wishing you a long succession of years distinguished by labors and virtues, such as merited for you the letter and gold medal from the Holy Father with his Apostolic blessing,

"I remain, &c.,

✠ J. B. Purcell,

ABP. CIN."

"Please accept my thanks for your new and unabridged edition of Haydock's Catholic Bible, and enlist my name among your subscribers, who, I sincerely hope, will be as numerous as you have unquestionable right to expect, for the unsurpassed care which you have given to this precious publication. I have the honor to remain

Your affect. serv't,

✠ Ant.,

ABP. OF N. ORLEANS."

Additional Approbations-

"At the request of Messrs. Dunigan & Brother I cheerfully join in recommending their new edition of 'Haydock's Catholic Bible,' a work so much esteemed, and now republished with the approbation of the Most Rev. Dr. Hughes, Archbishop of New York.

"† John,

BP. OF BUFFALO."

"I most willingly give my approbation to the useful undertaking of Messrs. Dunigan & Brother in their publication of the Holy Bible.

"† Mathias,

BP. OF DUBUQUE."

"Having examined the beautiful new edition of Haydock's Bible, published by E. Dunigan & Brother, I believe it to be a faithful version of the Holy Scriptures, enriched with learned and copious commentaries by approved Catholic writers; and I cheerfully recommend it to the faithful of my Diocese, as a choice family Bible, elegant in appearance and rich in learning.

"† M. J. Spalding,

BP. OF LOUISVILLE."

"The larger will be the circulation of your unparalleled Family Bible in the Diocese of Toronto, the happier will be, &c.,

"† Armandus Fr. Ma.,

BP. OF TORONTO."

"Having examined the new edition of Haydock's Catholic Bible, by E. Dunigan & Brother, I cheerfully unite with the other prelates in recommending it to the faithful of the Diocese of Charleston, and of the United States.

"† J. A. Reynolds,

BISHOP OF CHARLESTON."

"I cordially recommend Messrs. Dunigan & Brother's edition of Haydock's Bible, published under the sanction of Abp. Hughes, to the attention and patronage of the Catholics of the Diocese of Erie.

"† J. M. Young,

BP. OF ERIE."

Additional Approbations.

"I know not in what terms to express my admiration of your energy, enterprise and success, in producing a work that reflects credit upon our country and religion. I will do all I can to further its circulation.

"Yours, in our Lord,

"† George Aloysius,

"BP. OF COVINGTON."

"If my approbation be deemed of any service, most cheerfully do I give it. I will also do all in my power to make this new publication known through the diocese of Galveston. Your zeal to enrich the country with useful books, cannot be sufficiently praised. God, I hope, will reward your generous efforts, and prosper your religious undertakings, so favorable to the diffusion of our holy faith.

"† J. M. Odin,

"BP. OF GALVESTON."

"I most cheerfully concur with the Most Rev. Archbishop of New York and other prelates of this country in approving of this republication, and do strongly recommend it to the clergy and faithful of the diocese of Detroit.

"† Peter Paul,

"BP. Z. C. A. DETROIT."

"I take great pleasure in joining with the other prelates in the approbation of your Bible with a sincere desire not only to warrant, but also to encourage the circulation of this splendid work throughout the extent of my diocese.

"† John Martin,

"BP. OF MILWAUKEE."

"Your noble edition of Haydock's Bible is far superior to any edition of the Bible heretofore published in the United States, and I cheerfully unite my approbation with those of the prelates that have preceded me.

"† Richard Pius Miles,

"BP. OF NASHVILLE."

Additional Approbations.

"You may place my name among those of the other Prelates, who recommend your edition to the public.

"† Peter Richard,

"AB'P OF ST. LOUIS."

"I greatly admire and commend your beautifully illustrated edition of the Holy Bible, with Haydock's valuable notes. Your zeal and enterprise are certainly deserving of all praise, and will, I hope, be rewarded by a widely extended patronage.

"† John,

"BP. OF ALBANY."

"Of the circulation of your edition of Haydock's Bible in my diocese, I do not merely declare my cordial approval, but my most earnest wish, that it may find a home and readers in every family.

"† Richard Vincent,

"BP. OF WHEELING."

"The correctness of the edition of which yours is a reprint, and the value of the notes attached to it, are facts which need not now be proved, for they are well known to all who read the Holy Scriptures in English. The testimony of the Most Rev. Archbishop of New York, prefixed to your edition, furnishes sufficient evidence of the accuracy and faithfulness with which you have performed your part in its reproduction. If, however, you think that my approval may be of any benefit, you are free to make use of it.

"Yours respectfully,

"† John B. Fitzpatrick,

BP. OF BOSTON."

"I feel extremely anxious to see this splendid edition among the Catholics of my diocese, and I shall do every thing in my power to circulate it—at least to recommend it. It will prove a rich mine to refute the objections and remove the prejudices of the enemies of our holy religion.

"† James Oliver,

BP. OF NATCHEZ."

Douay Bible.

THE HOLY BIBLE, translated from the Latin Vulgate. Illustrated Family Edition. Imperial octavo. Printed in double columns, with parallel References, being the only octavo edition printed in the United States that contains them, with Illuminated Title, Family Records, from original designs, and many exquisite Engravings, from the great Masters.

Price—Superb Turkey morocco, 15 illustrations, . . .	\$9 00
American morocco, illuminated, gilt sides and edges, 14 illustrations,	5 00
American morocco, gilt edges, 14 illustrations, . .	4 50
Embossed morocco, fancy edges, 14 illustrations, . .	3 00

Douay Bible.

Cheap Edition. Royal octavo.

Price—American morocco, illuminated, gilt sides and edges, 6 illustrations,	\$4 00
American moroc., full gilt sides and edg., 6 illus.,	3 50
“ “ gilt edges, 6 illustrations, . .	3 00
“ “ gilt back and sides, fancy edg., 6 illustrations,	2 50
Embossed moroc., gilt back, fancy edg., 4 plates,	2 00
Sheep bindings, 1 plate,	1 50

Approbation.

“The present edition of the Douay version of the Old and New Testament, published by Edward Dunigan, New York, having been revised by our direction, we have great pleasure in recommending it to the faithful, to be read with that reverence and respect which are due to the word of God, and with that humility of heart and docility which the Church enjoins upon all who would read the Scriptures with advantage to their souls.

“Given at the Episcopal residence, this 27th day of January, 1844.

✠ “JOHN HUGHES,
“BISHOP OF NEW YORK.”

Approved also by the Archbishops and Bishops generally.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Translated from the Latin Vulgate, and first published by the English College at Rheims, A. D. 1582, with Annotations, a Chronological Index, Table of References, &c., &c. Neat 12mo. edition.

Price—Cloth, plain, \$0 31
Gilt edges, 0 75

El Nuevo Testamento de Nuestro Señor i Salvador Jesu Cristo.

Nuevamente traducido por el exmo. Sr. Don Felix Torres Amat, Obispo de Astorga. Lleva algunas notas tomadas del P. Scio i otras calificados interpretes—con la aprobacion del

Ilmo Fr. Jose S. Alemany,

ARZOBISPO DE SAN FRANCISCO.

A cheap and accurate edition of the approved Spanish translation.

Price—Cloth, plain, \$1 00
American morocco, 1 25
Turkey morocco, 2 50

The Acts of the Apostles, the Epistles of St. Paul, the Catholic Epistles, & the Apocalypse.

8vo. Uniform with the "Four Gospels." With Notes, Critical and Explanatory.

By the Most Rev. Francis Patrick Kenrick, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF BALTIMORE.

This volume is a supplement to the "Four Gospels," already published by us, and completes Archbishop Kenrick's new version of the New Testament.

It contains a most valuable commentary, and is invaluable to the clergy, and all who study the sacred volume.

Price—Cloth, \$2 50

NOTICES.

Any work from the pen of Bishop Kenrick must be received with interest and with respect by every Catholic who speaks the English language.—CARDINAL WISEMAN in *Dublin Review*.

This laborious work is highly creditable to the American Church.—*Tablet*.

II.-PRAYER-BOOKS & BOOKS OF DEVOTION.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF
THE MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, D. D.,
ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

EDWARD DUNIGAN & BROTHER

PUBLISH THE LARGEST ASSORTMENT OF

Standard Catholic Prayer-Books

IN THE

ENGLISH, GERMAN, FRENCH, AND SPANISH LANGUAGES.

ALL NEW AND BEAUTIFUL EDITIONS,

In various sizes, and in every variety of Cheap and Elegant Bindings.

Their new and splendid Presentation Editions are the most beautiful Prayer-books printed in the English language. In artistic style, superb illustrations, broad clear type, fineness of paper, uniqueness of binding, from the most simple and exquisite to the most gorgeous style of past centuries—the richest royal velvet, with pure silver adornings—these books unite an elegance never before attained in the art of bookmaking in this country; being admirably adapted for HOLIDAY PRESENTS, KEEPSAKES, &c.

Price—From \$50 to 12½ cents, to suit all purchasers.

Ursuline Manual.

New and superb edition, large type; 868 pages. 18mo. and 24mo. 12 newly engraved illustrations. Universally recommended as the best and most useful Catholic Prayer-book ever printed.

Price—From \$50 to \$1 25

Ursuline Manual.

Cheap edition. 18mo.

Price—From 50 cts. to \$1 00

Catholic Piety.

Large type, 24mo., finely-engraved Illustrations.

By the Rev. William Gahan, O. S. A.

Newly revised and greatly enlarged by a Catholic Priest.

Price—From \$10 to \$0 88

Catholic Piety.

Cheap edition of the same standard book.

Price—From 38 cts. to 75 cts.

Key of Heaven.

One of the most favorite Prayer-books. 24mo.

Price—From 38 cts. to \$2 00

Mission Book.

The Manual of the Redemptorists.

Price—From 50 cts. to \$3 00

Flowers of Piety.

New, large type, and elegant edition, splendid embellishments; two sizes, 32mo. and 48mo.

Price—From 38 cts. to \$5 00

Flowers of Piety.

Cheap edition of the Gem of Prayer-books.

Price—From 19 cts. to 50 cts.

Devout Manual.

The Prayer-book of the Aged. Very large clear type. 32mo.

Price—From 25 cts. to \$1 50

Daily Piety.

Large type, and 36 Illustrations of the Mass. 32mo.

Price—From 19 cts. to \$1 00

Catholic's Pocket Companion.

With Illustrations. 32mo.

Price—From 19 cts. to \$1 00

Child's Catholic Piety.

A new, beautiful Child's Prayer-book. 48mo.

Price—From 18½ cts. to \$1 00

Pocket Catholic Manual.

Smallest Prayer-book published in the country; large type. 64mo.

Price—From 12½ cts. to \$1 00

Mass and Vesper Book.

Containing the Mass and Vespers only; large type. 64mo.

Price—From 12½ cts. to \$1 00

Weg Zum Himmel.

New German Prayer and Hymn Book. 24mo.

Price—From 37½ cts. to \$2 00

Das Paradies Gärtelein.

New German Prayer-book, with Thirty-six Illustrations of the Mass. 32mo.

Price—From 25 cts. to \$1 50

L'ange Conducteur.

New and beautiful French Prayer-book; fine Illustrations. 24mo.

Price—From 37½ cts. to \$10 00

El Diamante del Americano Catolico.

New and elegant Spanish Prayer-book; exquisite engravings. 24mo.

Price—From 56 cts. to \$10 00

Ursuline Manual.

New and superb edition, 864 pages.

This Prayer-book, as issued by us, is now too well known to require recommendation. Originally compiled at the famous Blackrock Convent, near Cork, it has been recognized as the best manual of prayer by all classes of the public, especially the Religious Institutions of Ireland, Great Britain, Canada, and this country.

The new edition has been got up with the utmost care and unsparing expense, printed from beautiful large type made expressly for this edition, and is illustrated with a beautiful Illuminated Presentation Page, and 12 newly-engraved Illustrations of the highest finish and beauty, from designs of the great masters, Overbeck, Carlo Dolci, Sassoferrato, and others. The copies bound for presentation or gift-books, in superb Turkey morocco and rich silk-velvet and gold, are particularly desirable for all who wish a BEAUTIFUL GIFT-BOOK of permanent utility and extreme elegance.

Price —Velvet, full ornaments, 13 fine plates, . . .	\$8 50
“ clasps and corners, 13 plates, . . .	6 00
“ embossed, with clasp, 13 plates, . . .	4 50
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, with clasp, 13 plates, . . .	3 00
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, with 13 plates, . . .	2 50
Turkey morocco, gilt edges, 10 plates, . . .	2 00
American “ gilt edges, 10 plates, . . .	1 50

Ursuline Manual.

Cheap edition. 18mo.

Price —American morocco, full gilt sides and clasp, 10 plates, . . .	\$1 50
American morocco, gilt sides and edges, with 6 plates, . . .	1 00
Roan morocco, gilt edges, 2 plates, . . .	75
“ “ gilt back, 1 plate, . . .	50

Catholic Piety.

The admirable collection of Prayers and Devotions, originally compiled

By the Rev. William Gahan, O. S. A.

Newly revised, corrected, and greatly enlarged by a Catholic priest. Large type, 768 pages. 24mo. An Illuminated Presentation Page, and 10 of the finest line Engravings, from Overbeck, Sassoferrato, Carlo Dolei, and other great painters.

A new and elegant presentation edition of this universally approved and widely known Prayer-book is just published in a peculiarly neat and handsome manner, the type being large enough for the weakest vision. It is, too, more comprehensive than any Prayer-book of the kind yet issued.

Price —Velvet, full ornaments, illuminated presentation page, and 10 splendidly engraved plates, . . .	\$6 50
Velvet, clasps and corners, 11 plates, . . .	4 50
“ embossed, with clasp, 11 plates, . . .	3 50
Turkey morocco, super ext. gilt edges and clasp, 11 plates, . . .	2 38
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, 11 plates, . . .	2 00
Turkey morocco, gilt edges, 10 plates, . . .	1 50
American morocco, gilt edges, with clasps, 10 plates, . . .	1 00

Catholic Piety.

Cheap edition. 24mo.

Price —American morocco, full gilt edges and sides, with clasp, 7 plates, . . .	\$0 88
American morocco, illuminated sides, gilt edges, “ “ full gilt sides and edges, 7 plates, . . .	0 88
American morocco, gilt sides and edges, 7 plates, “ “ gilt sides, 7 plates, . . .	0 75
Roan morocco, gilt back, 1 plate, . . .	0 63
	0 50
	0 38

The Mission Book.

A MANUAL OF INSTRUCTION AND PRAYER, ADAPTED TO PRESERVE THE FRUIT OF THE MISSION. Drawn chiefly from the Works of St. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI, published under the direction of the Fathers of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer.

Besides being a manual to revive and renew the good effects of the mission, this Prayer-book contains all the necessary and general devotions; namely, Morning and Night Prayers, Prayers for Mass, Vespers, and Benediction, and an excellent preparation for Confession and Communion. It embraces, too, all the particular devotions in most common use among Catholics, and other very useful and animating devotions, such as the Visits to the Most Blessed Sacrament of the Altar, and to the Blessed Virgin Mary. Besides these it contains wholesome reflections for daily or frequent meditation, which will prove a powerful means to maintain all in the fear of mortal sin, the desire of a holy life, and the practice of every virtue. Compiled by such practical directors, the work must needs be suited to the time and country, and as it is drawn mainly from the writings of St. Alphonsus Liguori, it is useless to say that it is replete with unction and tender piety.

Price —Neat sheep binding,	\$0 50
American morocco, gilt sides and back,	0 75
“ “ gilt edges,	1 25
Turkey morocco,	2 25

NOTICES.

Its title-page bears upon it the stamp of merit.—*Catholic Mirror*.

Like the stamp of the mint, the title shows the full value of the gold offered the devout Catholic in this excellent compilation.—*Metropolitan*.

Flowers of Piety.

Elegant edition, large type. 48mo.

Price —Velvet, full ornaments, illuminated presentation page, and 10 exquisite engravings,	\$6 00
Velvet, clasp and corners, 10 plates,	3 50
Turkey morocco, super extra, 10 plates,	1 25

Flowers of Piety.

THE GEM OF PRAYER-BOOKS.

New large type, and elegant edition of this most comprehensive and beautiful Prayer-book; with a splendid illuminated presentation page, and 10 fine engraved Illustrations, by the first artists in America, from designs of Overbeck, Steinle, and other great painters.

From the earliest publication of the Flowers of Piety by the subscribers, it has obtained universal favor for its comprehensiveness, its neat and portable form, and the unequalled elegance of its mechanical execution. This new edition has received such improvements in its contents, illustrations, and binding, as to be the most beautiful small-sized Prayer-book ever issued, with type large enough for the weakest vision.

Price —Velvet, full ornaments, illuminated presentation	
page, and 10 exquisite plates,	\$6 00
Velvet, clasps and corners, 10 plates,	4 00
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, clasp, 10	
plates,	2 25
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, 10	
plates,	1 75

Flowers of Piety.

Cheap edition. 32mo.

Price —American morocco, gilt edges and clasp, 8 plates,	\$0 63
“ “ “ “ illuminated sides,	0 63
“ “ “ “ 8 plates,	0 50
“ “ gilt sides, 4 plates,	0 38
Roan morocco, gilt back, 1 plate,	0 25

Flowers of Piety.

Cheap edition. 48mo.

Price —American morocco, gilt edges and clasp, 8 plates,	\$0 63
“ “ “ “ 8 plates,	0 50
“ “ gilt back and sides, 1 plate,	0 31
Sheep,	0 19

Devout Manual.

New Prayer-book, large type. 32mo.

As a manual of prayer for all ages and stations, comprising such devotions, exercises, &c., as are universally needed, it is believed to possess advantages over any other Prayer-book printed in the English language. It is beautifully printed on a large open type, selected with especial reference to ease and comfort in reading, and is believed to be the most useful, the cheapest, and most elegant Prayer-book printed.

Price —Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, 8 plates,	\$1 50
“ “ full gilt, clasps, 8 plates,	1 75
American morocco, full gilt sides and edges, and clasps, 8 plates,	63
American morocco, illuminated sides, gilt edges, 8 plates,	63
American morocco, full gilt sides and edges, 8 plates,	50
American morocco, gilt sides, 2 plates,	38
Roan morocco, gilt back, 1 plate,	25

Daily Piety :

A Guide to Catholic Devotions ; for general use.

Daily Piety contains, in the most compendious and intelligible form, the most indispensable prayers and exercises of devotion, including the Prayers at Mass, with thirty-six Pictorial Illustrations, selections of the best Litanies, Hymns, &c., accompanied with explanations designed to convey the most information in the least possible space, and at a very low price.

Price —Turkey morocco, super extra, 8 plates,	\$1 50
“ “ full gilt sides and edges, and clasps, 8 plates,	1 75
American morocco, full gilt sides and edges, and clasps, 8 plates,	63
American morocco, illuminated sides, gilt edges, 8 plates,	63
American morocco, full gilt sides and edges,	50
“ “ gilt back and sides,	38
Roan, gilt back,	25
Handsome cloth binding,	19

Key of Heaven.

24mo.

Price —Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges and clasp, 9 plates,	\$2 25
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges, 9 plates,	2 00
“ “ gilt edges and clasp, 6 plates,	1 75
“ “ “ 6 plates,	1 50
American morocco, gilt edg. and clasp, 6 plates,	88
“ “ “ illuminated sides,	88
“ “ “ 6 plates,	75
“ “ “ 4 plates,	63
“ “ gilt sides, 2 plates,	50
Roan morocco, gilt back, 1 plate,	38

Child's Catholic Piety.

New, cheap, and beautiful Child's Prayer-book. 384 pages. 48mo. From 15 cents to \$1 00. Numerous fine wood illustrations.

This pretty little embellished Child's Prayer-book contains morning and evening Prayers, Prayers for various occasions, Devotions for Mass and Vespers, Instructions for Confession and Communion, with other devotions which a child would delight in, and by which the feelings of the young mind might be excited to fervor. Litanies, and beautiful Hymns, from *LYRA CATHOLICA* and other sources, Translations and Paraphrases of the Church Hymns, with many pleasing engravings, make this little book altogether what a child would treasure.

Price —Turkey morocco, super extra, 8 plates,	\$1 00
American morocco, or cloth, gilt edges, 8 plates,	38
Cloth, gilt sides and back, 4 plates,	25
Handsome cloth binding, 1 plate,	19

Catholic Pocket Companion.

48mo. A beautiful and well known collection of Devotions.

Price —Cloth, plain edges,	\$0 19
Roan, gilt back,	0 25
American morocco, gilt back and sides,	0 37½
“ “ full gilt sides and edges,	0 50
“ “ illuminated,	0 63

Pocket Catholic Manual.

Smallest size Prayer-book printed; with beautiful wood Illustrations, and plain type. 64mo.

Price —Cloth, plain edges,	\$0 12½
“ gilt back,	0 19
“ gilt edges, 2 plates,	0 25
Turkey morocco, extra, 6 plates,	0 75

Mass and Vesper Book.

A Pocket Prayer for Mass and Vespers, in large type. 64mo.

Price —Cloth,	\$0 12½
Gilt edges, 2 plates,	0 25
Turkey morocco, extra, 6 plates,	0 75

Das Paradies Gärtlein.

New German Prayer, with 36 Illustrations of the Mass. Containing the most indispensable Prayers and Exercises of Devotion, with beautiful Litanies, Hymns, &c. 32mo.

Price —Roan morocco, gilt back,	\$0 25
American morocco, gilt sides,	0 38
“ “ full gilt sides and edges,	0 50
“ “ “ “ “ clasp,	0 63
“ “ illuminated sides, gilt edges,	63
Turkey morocco, gilt sides and edges,	1 50

Weg Zum Himmel.

New German Prayer and Hymn Book. 24mo., 608 pages.

In presenting this manual for the use of the numerous body of Catholics speaking the German language, the publishers claim for it the merit of being the most complete prayer-book of the kind in print, as containing all the Prayers and Devotional Exercises used by Catholics in the public or private practice of their religion, together with a full collection of the more approved German Hymns, for Sundays, Holidays, &c.

Price —Roan morocco, gilt back	\$0 38
Imitation morocco, plain edges,	0 50
“ “ gilt edges,	0 75
American morocco, gilt edges and clasp,	0 88
“ “ illuminated sides,	0 88
Turkey morocco, gilt edges,	1 75

L'ange Conducteur.

This new and beautiful French Prayer-book, is considered one of the best and most complete Prayer-books published, containing in fact almost every thing required. 674 pages. 24mo.

Price —Rich velvet, full mounting, 9 fine plates, . . .	\$6 00
Turkey morocco, super extra gilt edges and clasp, 9 plates,	2 25
Turkey morocco, super extra, gilt edges, 9 plates, . . .	2 00
“ “ gilt edges, 8 plates,	1 50
American morocco, gilt edges and clasp, 6 plates, . . .	88
“ “ gilt edges, 6 plates,	75
“ “ gilt edges, 4 plates,	63
“ “ gilt sides, 2 plates,	50
Roan morocco, 1 plate,	38

El Diamante del Americano Catolico.

This beautiful Spanish Prayer-book has been pronounced by eminent judges as the most comprehensive and best Spanish Prayer-book ever printed.

Published with the approbation of Right Rev. FR. S. ALEMANY, Bishop of Monterey in California. With 36 wood-cut Illustrations of the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass, and 9 fine steel Illustrations.

Price —Rich velvet, full mounting, 9 steel plates, . . .	\$6 00
Turkey morocco, super extra, gilt edges and clasp, 9 plates,	2 25
Turkey morocco, super extra, gilt edges, 9 plates, . . .	2 00
“ “ gilt edges and sides, 8 plates,	1 50
American morocco, gilt edges and sides, and clasp, 9 plates,	1 13
American morocco, gilt edges and sides,	1 00
“ “ gilt sides, 4 plates,	75
Roan morocco, 1 plate,	50

The Golden Book of the Confraternities,

Adapted to the Rosary, Living Rosary, Scapular Societies, Confraternities of the Blessed Sacrament, Sacred Heart of Jesus, Immaculate Heart of Mary, Cord of St. Francis, &c., &c.

Price—One vol., neat cloth, 37½ cents.

This new and entirely original book of devotion supplies a want long felt by Catholics at large. The members of the numerous Confraternities had no manual containing their rules and devotions, with such other indulgenced prayers as are generally in use among the pious.

The present volume contains Prayers for Mass, for Communion, and in general the devotions to be found in ordinary prayer-books, which it may in most cases replace.

The following is a part of its contents:—

Rosary of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and the various modes of saying it.

Living Rosary, Rules, Indulgences, &c.

Scapular of Mt. Carmel; its rules, indulgences.

All the other Scapulars.

Confraternity of the Blessed Sacrament:

Confraternity of the Sacred Heart:

Arch-confraternity of the Immaculate Heart, and the miraculous medal:

Cord of St. Francis:

With the rules and devotions of all these confraternities.

The Way of the Cross, by St. Alphonsus Liguori.

A short treatise on Indulgences.

The fullest collection of Indulgenced prayers in the language, comprising the Litany of Jesus, of the Blessed Virgin, of the Dolorous Mother, of the Passion, and others duly approved at Rome,—

Prayers to Jesus Crucified, to the Blessed Sacrament, Sacred Heart, Blessed Virgin, &c.

The Illustrations for the work are all newly engraved, and carefully adapted to the text.

The Seraphic Staff.

A Manual for the Members of the Third Order of St. Francis Seraph, compiled for the accommodation of those living in America by a Priest of the Order of St. Francis. 32mo.

This little manual just compiled contains the Rules of the CORD OF ST. FRANCIS, and a selection of suitable Devotions, including the famous Stations of Jerusalem.

Price—Neat cloth, 18 $\frac{1}{2}$ cents.

Exercise of the Way of the Cross,

As it is performed at Jerusalem and in the Colosseum at Rome. Translated from the Italian by a Priest of the Order of St. Francis. 32mo.

Price—Paper, 4 cents.

The Rosary of the Blessed Virgin Mary.

This is the first complete Rosary Manual published in this country. Besides the usual explanation of the Mysteries and appropriate Prayers, it contains various methods of reciting the Beads, especially that used in the Redemptorist Missions, and an explanation and the Rules of the Living Rosary.

The Engravings are new, highly finished, and got up expressly for this work.

Price—Paper covers, 6 cents.

The Scapular Book.

Containing a full explanation of the Scapular of Mount Carmel, the advantages of that excellent devotion, and a list of the Indulgences to be gained by its use. Besides this, the reader will find in it the devotions of five other Scapulars approved by the Holy See and enriched by the grant of indulgences.

Price—Paper covers, 4 cents.

Works of the Most Rev. William Walsh, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF HALIFAX.

Lenten Manual, and Companion for Passion Time and Holy Week.

Translated and compiled from various sources, by the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D. 476 pages. 24mo.

Price—Cloth, 37½ cents.

Via Crucis; or, The Holy Way of the Cross.

By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D.

Price—6½ cents.

Stations for the Holy Time of Lent.

From the French of PERE BERTHER, S. J. By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D.

Price—6½ cents.

Seven Words of Jesus on the Cross.

From the French. By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D.

Price—6½ cents.

Exposition of the Lamentations of the Prophet Jeremiah.

From the French. By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D.

Price—12½ cents.

The Real Presence of Jesus Christ in the Most Holy Eucharist.

By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D. 18mo.

Price—12½ cents.

The Loving Testament of Jesus.

By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D. 18mo.

Price—9 cents.

Eucharistica ; or, A Series of Pieces, **Original and Translated, on the Most Holy and** **Adorable Sacrament of the Eucharist.**

By the Most Rev. WM. WALSH, D. D.

The Blessed Sacrament, the keystone of Catholic faith and worship, is no less the source of true piety. A Eucharistic Manual, whence we may from day to day draw new motives of fervor, cannot but be most acceptable, when we reflect that the Visits of St. Liguori is almost the only one accessible to English readers.

The name of the Metropolitan of Halifax is such a guarantee of the present work, that no encomium is needed.

It is both doctrinal and devotional, and contains many articles of exceeding value. Here in a small compass the Catholic will find treatises on the Real Presence, the Adoration of the Eucharist, the Mass, the Altar, the Sacred Heart, Corpus Christi and its procession. In addition to this, we have Bourdaloue's Instruction on Communion, and Bossuet's Instructions for First Communion, with a Memorial to preserve its fruits ; and besides all this, devotions and pious readings for the time of approaching the Holy Sacrament.

In this excellent selection of devotions are the Eucharistic Week, the Rosary of the Blessed Sacrament, Prayers for Mass, the Litany, Psalms and Hymns adapted to those happy moments, or to times devoted to the honor of the Sacrament.

Price—One vol., neat cloth, 63 cents.

NOTICES.

This is another added to the many admirable ascetical works that his Grace of Halifax has given to the readers of the English language.—*Freeman's Journal*.

We commend it to the attention of every Catholic.—*Catholic Telegraph*.

We cannot too highly recommend it to the patronage of our readers.—*Truth Teller*.

Every Catholic reader will here find matter to edify and instruct.—*Catholic Mirror*.

It deserves a place in every Catholic family.—*Metropolitan*.

Lyra Catholica,

The most comprehensive and elegant Catholic Hymn-book printed in the English language.

This unique work is the only collection of Catholic Hymns and Devotional Poetry in the English language. It is not only a work of devotion, but one for general perusal. It comprises all the hymns of the Roman Breviary, all the hymns and sequences of the Missal, with a selection from the Breviary of Paris and Cluny, and from the Italian "Raccolta." Of these pieces, every one is newly translated by Mr. Caswell, and probably more than half of them appear in English for the first time, from his hand. Altogether, his version combines, in a very high degree, elegance, vigor, and poetical fire of thought and diction, with the still more important requisites of fidelity to the lofty religious spirit of his originals, and a most exact transfusion of their Catholic faith, fervent piety, and doctrinal integrity, and is a most valuable addition to our devotional literature.

The second part comprises a selection of Hymns and Anthems, for particular occasions of devotion, from various approved sources, viz: Archbishop Hughes, Faber, Pise, and others of the highest genius.

The third part is devoted to sacred poetry, of a less strictly devotional cast, from the compositions of writers of the most unquestioned Catholicity, genuine piety and pure morality.

Price —Superb Turkey morocco, fine frontispiece, 16mo.	\$2 00
Fine cloth, gilt edges, 16mo.,	1 00
Cloth, gilt edges, 24mo.,	0 75
Handsomely bound in cloth,	0 50

NOTICES.

It is, above all, fully and fearlessly Catholic in its spirit, in its tone, in its imagery, and in its language. And, in addition to these negative, but very important excellencies, its positive merits, in a literary point of view, are of the very highest order.—*Dublin Review*.

As a composition, it is one of the most perfect specimens of translation in the English language, and so excellently adapted to devotional purposes.—*London Tablet*.

A book which every Catholic will welcome us in welcoming with delight, as supplying a want which we have long felt.—*Pittsburg Catholic*.

Altogether by far the best and most complete collection of really Catholic Poetry, that has yet appeared amongst us.—*Catholic Herald*.

Catholic Hymn Book;

Containing a collection of Hymns, Anthems, &c., for all the Holy Days of Obligation and Devotion throughout the year. 32mo.

In this are to be found the most beautiful of Faber's Hymns, as well as a choice selection of those most generally approved and admired.

Price—Cloth,	\$0 25
American morocco,	0 38
“ “ gilt,	0 50
Superb Turkey morocco,	1 50

Little Catholic Hymn Book;

Principally designed for Sunday Schools.

All these Hymn Books can be had, bound with the CATHOLIC CHORALIST, at 9 cents extra, making a course of musical instruction for children, adapted to the use of Sunday Schools or others where musical instruction is given. 32mo.

Price—Paper,	0 06
Cloth,	0 19
“ gilt edges,	0 31

Catholic Choralist;

Containing a selection of Catholic Hymns, Psalms, and Litanies, set to music; being the cheapest Catholic music book published.

The Hymns are admirably adapted for conveying to children the instruction necessary to fit them for performing the service of the choir. 24mo.

Price—Neat paper binding,	0 09
Half bound,	0 19

Katholisches Gesangbuch;

a new German Hymn Book.

Price—Paper,	0 09
Neat cloth, gilt back,	0 19

III.—CATECHETICAL WORKS.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF

THE MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

The Doctrinal Catechism.

Being a new and enlarged edition of Scheffmacher's *Controversial Catechism*,

By the Rev. Stephen Keenan.

No controversial work is more popular in Europe, than Scheffmacher's *Catechism*, the master-piece of the celebrated Jesuit. A translation was much needed, but in adapting it to English readers, the Rev. Mr. Keenan has made such improvements and additions, in order to suit it to our times, that it may justly be considered a new work. In the present shape it is invaluable. It discusses every point.

Being in the form of question and answer, the best ever discovered for conveying instruction, solving objections, and expounding truths, it is peculiarly adapted for general circulation.

Price—Fancy paper,	\$0 25
Half cloth,	0 31½
Fine paper, cloth,	0 50

NOTICES.

It is well calculated for giving the inquirer an insight into the tenets and practices of the true Church.—*U. S. Catholic Magazine*.

It is an epitome of Controversy, in which the various controverted points are examined with great learning and judgment. It bears the impress of deep research, and shows how much the author has mastered the subject which he handles.—*London Tablet*.

The *Controversial Catechism* is a masterly instance of special pleading, and is admirably fitted both to strengthen the attachment of Catholics to their own creed, and to bring over to that mode of thinking no inconsiderable number of those who, calling themselves Protestants, are yet but partially informed as to the reason of their hope.—*Macphail's Ecclesiastical Magazine*.

The Douay Catechism; or, an Abridgment of the Christian Doctrine.

With proofs on points controverted, by way of question and answer. Composed, in 1649.

By the Rev. Henry Tuberville, D. D.,

of the English College of Douay. Approved and recommended by the Right Rev. Benedict Fenwick, Bishop of Boston. 18mo.

In the great essentials of clearness and brevity, this celebrated exposition of Catholic dogma has long been and still is unrivalled.

Price—Paper binding,	\$0 12½
Half bound,	0 18½

Butler's Catechism.

Revised, enlarged, improved, and printed in large type. 18mo.

By the Most Rev. James Butler.

Price—6½ cents.

The Catechism; or, a short Abridgment of the Christian Doctrine.

32mo.

Price—3 cents.

SPANISH CATECHISM.

El Catecismo de la Doctrina Cristiana.

Por el P. Ripalda,

Corregido y aumentado, para el uso de la Diocesi de Monterey, California.

Price—6½ cts. \$4 a hundred.

IV.—CONTROVERSIAL TREATISES.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF

THE MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

THE EIGHTH EDITION OF

Kirwin Unmasked.

A Review of Kirwin, in Six Letters.

Addressed to the Rev. Nicholas Murray, D. D., of Elizabethtown,

By the Most Rev. John Hughes, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

These letters appeared originally in the New York Freeman's Journal, and are now republished in book form.

They are marked by all the clearness of language, felicity of illustration, and closeness of logic, which invariably characterize the productions of the distinguished author, and possess the additional merit of treating the subject in the most easy and familiar style. It is admirably adapted for circulation among all who lack either the time or inclination for reading more extensive volumes.

Price—6½ cents, or 50 cents per dozen.

NOTICES.

In these letters the Rev. Nicholas Murray is exhibited to the public in a very unenviable light, and is lashed with the power and sarcasm which he well deserves.—*United States Catholic Magazine.*

It is probable that Mr. Murray designed to get into a religious controversy with Bishop Hughes, and from being thus made the champion of his own portion of Protestants, to elevate himself by the controversy. The *American Bossuet* had already annihilated the best champions of the Protestant cause, and could not well stoop to argument on religious matters with one such as these valuable letters show Mr. Murray to have been.—*Truth Teller.*

The Manual of Controversy,

Containing in one volume, 16mo. size, the celebrated works of the
Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine;

The Papist Misrepresented and Truly Represented;

AND

**Fifty Reasons why the Roman Catholic Religion ought
to be Preferred to all others.**

Price—Cloth binding, 63 cents.

The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine,

Contained in the Profession of Faith published by Pope Pius IV.;
to which are added REASONS WHY A CATHOLIC CANNOT CONFORM TO
THE PROTESTANT RELIGION.

An authoritative statement of Catholic Doctrine. Its simplicity
and clearness of form, by way of Question and Answer, and its
established accuracy, have given it a wide popularity. 18mo.

Price—Neat paper binding,	9 cts.	per doz.	\$0 75
Cloth,	18 $\frac{1}{2}$ cts.	“	1 50

Fifty Reasons why the Roman Catholic

Religion ought to be Preferred to all others.

By Anthony Ulric,

Duke of Brunswick and Lunenburg, a Convert from Lutheranism.

This little book has long enjoyed the highest reputation as a
succinct and useful summary of the most solid and convincing
Reasons that should conduct men to the light of Catholic truth.
This edition has several valuable papers annexed.

Price—Neat paper binding,	9 cts.	per doz.	\$0 75
Cloth,	18 $\frac{1}{2}$ cts.	“	1 50

The Papist Misrepresented, and truly Represented; Or a Twofold Character of Popery.

The first containing a sum of the Superstitions, Idolatries, Cruelties, Treacheries, and Wicked Principles laid to their charge. The other laying open that religion which those termed Papists own and profess; the chief articles of their faith, and the principal grounds and reasons which attach them to it. 18mo.

By the Rev. John Gother.

Gother perfectly understood the calumnies and prejudices which influence men most strongly against the Catholic Church and faith, and how to expose and dispel them. His little book is a perfect controversial magazine in miniature.

Price—Neat paper binding,	9 cts.	per doz . . .	\$0 75
Cloth,	18½ cts.	“ . . .	1 50

Milner's End of Religious Controversy.

THE END OF RELIGIOUS CONTROVERSY, IN A FRIENDLY CORRESPONDENCE BETWEEN A RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF PROTESTANTS AND A CATHOLIC DIVINE,

By the Rt. Rev. John Milner, D. D.

Printed from the last edition, revised by the author. 1 vol., 12mo. With the APOSTOLICAL TREE.

This celebrated work, which so many Protestant divines in England and this country—from the period of its first publication down to Bishop Hopkins—have attempted to answer, but which must ever remain unanswerable, is a perfect treasury of texts and facts from Scripture and History. With a view to securing for such a work the most extensive circulation possible, the subscribers have published an edition at the prices stated, which it must be obvious are so very low, that only the widest sales can remunerate them.

Price—Neat paper covers,	25 cents.
Sheep and cloth binding,	50 “

The Clifton Tracts,

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY THE BROTHERHOOD OF ST. VINOENT OF PAUL, UNDER THE SANCTION OF THE BISHOP OF CLIFTON, AND WITH THE APPROBATION OF CARDINAL WISEMAN, AND ALL THE CATHOLIC BISHOPS OF ENGLAND. 4 vols. 12mo. **Price**—38 cents per volume.

This series of Tracts was originated with the view of supplying a want long and generally felt, of a number of CHEAP single publications, which, at the same time that they afforded useful reading to Catholics, and the numerous converts that from all sides are being gathered into the fold of the Church, might also furnish inquirers with a plain and simple statement of Catholic doctrine, principles, and practice, together with an exposure of Protestant errors, and a refutation of some, at least, among the many absurd and foolish charges brought against the Catholic religion.

Nothing ever written in the English language is so admirably adapted for general distribution, and for spreading a knowledge of the great truths of the Catholic religion, as this series of Tracts, being written with rare ability and care, and in the best possible spirit of charity, zeal, and good taste; and it is hoped they will win their way into every family, as each tract discusses in a masterly and condensed manner a single subject only. Their diversity, embracing as they do, Historical, Controversial, and Devotional subjects, must render them also highly attractive not only to the Catholic but to the general reader. They are published in a neat and attractive style and form, with beautiful type and good paper, and sold so CHEAP in price, that they can hardly fail to meet with a large circulation.

The success of the English editions induced their reprint here. Catholics need only to know these excellent tracts, to appreciate them and aid in their dissemination.

- 1.—**Rosary of the Blessed Virgin Mary**, and the Use of the Beads
no "vain Repetition." **Price**—4 cents.
- 2.—**The Church, the Guardian of the Scriptures.**
Price—4 cents.
- 3.—**The Church, the Witness of the Scriptures.**
Price—4 cents.
- 4.—**The Church, a Kingdom.**
Price—4 cents.
- 5.—**The Church, the Dispenser of Scripture;** or, Are Catholics
Allowed to Read the Bible? **Price**—4 cents.
- 6.—**The Church, the Interpreter of Scripture;** or, How do we
Know what the Bible Means? **Price**—4 cents.

- 7.—**Protestantism Weighed in its own Balance and Found Wanting:** The Bible and the Bible only. Price—4 cents.
- 8.—**Protestantism Weighed, &c.:** The Church. Price—4 cents.
- 9.—**Protestantism Weighed, &c.:** The Sacraments. Price—6 cents.
- 10.—**Protestantism Weighed, &c.:** Devotion to Saints and Angels. Price—4 cents.
- 11.—**Protestantism Weighed, &c.:** The Supremacy of St. Peter. Price—4 cents.
- 12.—**Benediction of the Most Holy Sacrament;** or, What Catholics do when the Candles are Lighted. Price—3 cents.
- 13.—**The Catholic Missionary.** The Jesuits in Paraguay. Price—6½ cents.
- 14.—**The Catholic Missionary.** Father Claver in India. Price—4 cents.
- 15.—**How did England become Catholic and how did England become Protestant?** Price—6½ cents.
- 16.—**Queen Mary and Her People.** The Smithfield Fires. Price—6½ cents.
- 17.—**Queen Mary and Her People.** How Mary Restored the Catholic Religion. Price—6½ cents.
- 18.—**How the Pope became a King.** The People Deserted by their Rulers. Price—4 cents.
- 19.—**How the Pope became a King.** The Fall of Pagan Rome. Price—4 cents.
- 20.—**How the Pope became a King.** The People Choose a Protector. Price—4 cents.
- 21.—**Corpus Christi;** or, The Feast of the Most Holy Sacrament. Price—4 cents.
- 22.—**Christmas Day;** whose Birthday is it? Price—4 cents.
- 23.—**How Anti-Christ Keeps Christmas;** or, A Peep at Christmas in a Catholic Country. Price—3 cents.
- 24.—**The Religion of Catholics, the Worship of Jesus.** Price—4 cents.
- 25.—**The Feast of the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin Mary.** Price—4 cents.
- 26.—**The Litany of the Blessed Virgin;** commonly called the Litany of Loretto. Price—4 cents.
- 27.—**Know Popery;** or, Are all these Conversions Nothing to Me? Price—4 cents.
- 28.—**The Intention of the Minister;** Necessary to the Valid Administration of the Sacraments. Price—4 cents.
- 29.—**The Holy Sacrifice of the Mass:** Sacrifice the Highest Act of Worship. Price—4 cents.
- 30.—**The Holy Sacrifice of the Mass:** The Sacrifice of the Altar one and the same with the Sacrifice of the Cross. Price—4 cents.
- 31.—**The Holy Sacrifice of the Mass:** Scripture Proofs of the Doctrine. Price—4 cents.
- 32.—**Holy Week:** Palm Sunday; or, The Procession. Price—3 cents.
- 33.—**Holy Week:** Maundy Thursday; or, The Holy Sepulchre. Price—3 cents.
- 34.—**Holy Week:** Good Friday; or, The Adoration of the Cross. Price—3 cents.
- 35.—**Reasons for not Worshipping or Communicating in Religion with Non-Catholics.** By the Right Rev. Bishop HAY. Price—6½ cents.

Sure Way to find out the True Religion, in a Conversation between a Father and his Son.

By the Rev. T. Baddeley.

This standard little work has long been a favorite with English Catholics. It discusses the chief points at issue in a simple familiar style.

Price—One volume, paper binding, 12½ cents.
Cloth, 19 “

Defensa de Algunos Puntos de la Doctrina Catolica o Sea Contestacion a las Nuevas Observaciones, del Sr. Espinosa, contra el Retrato de la Virgen.

Aprobada y recomendada por el

Reverendísimo Fr. Sadoc Alemani,

ARZOBISPO DE SAN FRANCISCO.

A thorough Spanish work of controversy, on the Bible as the rule of Faith, and the Church as the interpreter of Scripture.

Price—Paper, 38 cents.

Das Primat des Apostolischen Stuhls.

The Primacy of the Apostolic See Vindicated.

By the Most Rev. Francis P. Kenrick, D. D.

Translated into the German language by the Rev. NICHOLAS STEINBACHER, S. J. 8vo.

Nearly three large editions of this important work having been sold in the English language, and it being universally acknowledged the best Vindication of the Primacy ever written, and a most triumphant answer to the entire Protestant statement, has induced an eminent clergyman to make a complete Translation into the German language, for the benefit of those that only read the German. It is printed on good paper and type, and bound in handsome cloth.

Price—Cloth, \$2.

V.—DEVOTIONAL AND HISTORICAL WORKS.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF

THE MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

Beautiful Gift-Book for all Seasons.

The Catholic Offering.

By the Most Rev. Wm. Walsh, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF HALIFAX.

Elegantly printed on the finest paper, and illustrated in the most exquisite style of the art; with FOUR BEAUTIFUL ILLUMINATIONS IN THE STYLE OF THE ANCIENT MISSALS, from original designs, and NINE SUPERB ENGRAVINGS of the highest finish and beauty, from designs of Overbeck, Carlo Dolci, Steinle, and other great masters; and a number of FINE WOOD ENGRAVINGS, by eminent artists. Small 8vo., 550 pages.

Price —Turkey morocco, gilt edges, 13 plates,	. . .	\$3 00
Beautiful cloth, gilt edges, 13 plates,	. . .	2 50
Cloth, gilt edges, with 8 plates,	. . .	2 00
Cloth, plain edges, with 5 plates,	. . .	1 50

NOTICES.

A volume which, for illustrations, letter-press, and binding, is unsurpassed by any of the fashionable annuals of the country, and a suitable gift-book for the holidays or any season of the year. There can be no doubt the Catholic Offering will be a favorite.—*Brownson's Review*.

This is a magnificent *livre de luxe* which, indeed, does high credit to the Catholic press of New York; elegantly printed, with illuminated title-pages and presentation fly-leaf, profusely adorned with engravings, and arrayed in costly binding of azure and gold. The Work itself is sufficiently recommended to the favor of the Catholic public as the composition of the eminent Bishop of Halifax. Each great festival has an article devoted to it, written with great fervor, and the miscellaneous papers are very interesting.—*Dublin Tablet*.

The Practice of Christian and Religious Perfection.

By Alphonsus Rodriguez,

OF THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

This invaluable work, the treasure of Seminaries, and religious houses of every order, so justly styled the "daily bread" of the novice in the ways of perfection, is not less valuable for every Christian family. It is written with a knowledge of the heart, an unction and power rarely equalled. The Saints of the later centuries have been lavish of praises on the work of Rodriguez. St. Francis de Sales and St. Alphonsus Liguori, those consummate masters of the Spiritual life, are alone sufficient to stamp it with the seal of worth. 3 volumes, 8vo.

Price—\$2 50.

NOTICES.

The present edition, the only one now published in this country or in England, is by far more accurate and convenient in form than any which preceded it.—*Dublin Tablet*.

There is nothing to compare with it in its kind in the English language. This complete edition, brought out by Dunigan & Brother, is in their usual style of excellent typography, and deserves the wide circulation we expect it to receive.—*Freeman's Journal*.

In its present cheap and convenient form, it will be hailed as a valuable accession to an increasing stock of Catholic works published here.—*Truth Teller*.

These volumes are not only most creditable to the publishers, for their elegant and convenient shape, but are indispensable in a Christian library.—*Western Tablet*.

The Following of Christ.

32mo., cheap edition. From the original Latin of THOMAS À KEMPIS.

By the Rt. Rev. Bishop Challoner.

This pocket edition of this golden book, it is hoped, will find its way into universal favor, for its cheapness, large type, and accuracy. In one vol. 32mo., extra cloth, gilt backs.

Price—Cloth binding, . . .	0 25
“ gilt edges, . . .	0 50

The Following of Christ.

New and beautiful edition. 24mo. Translated from the original Latin of THOMAS À KEMPIS.

By the Rt. Rev. Bishop Challoner,

with a new translation of a Practical Reflection and Prayer at the end of each chapter. From the French of FATHER DE GONNELIEU, S. J.

Bishop Challoner's translation of this invaluable work has ever been considered the best in the language, and the new translations of the Reflections and Prayers from the French of Father Gonnelieu, is by one of the best scholars in this country; the addition of which, it is hoped, will render this new and beautiful edition one of the most attractive volumes ever published.

Price—Handsome cloth binding, 1 plate, . . .	\$0 38
American morocco, . . .	0 50
“ “ full gilt edges and sides, 6 plates, . . .	0 75
Turkey “ gilt edges, 6 plates, . . .	1 50
“ “ super extra, gilt edges, 8 plates, . . .	2 00

The Glories of Mary;

Translated from the Italian of *St. Alphonsus Liguori*; under the direction of the Fathers of the Congregation of the Holy Redeemer; with the approbation of the Most Rev. Archbishop of New York. One volume, 16mo., nearly 700 pages.

This new edition of the "Glories of Mary," translated under the direction of the Redemptorist Fathers, is the first complete translation that has ever been made into the English language of that most beautiful book. As a manual of devotion for the use of Catholics, it is one of the most admirable books ever written. Its simplicity, its fervor, its lucid arrangement, examples, and its beautiful and comprehensive prayers, must make it a great favorite.

Price—Handsome cloth binding, full gilt, edges, 2 plates, \$1 50
 " " " gilt back, 1 plate, . . . 1 00
 " " " 1 plate, 75

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

The *London Tablet* says: "A magnificent edition, which certainly does great credit to the well-known Catholic firm in New York who have brought it out."

The *Brownson Review* says: "A very beautiful edition of one of the sweetest and most admired of the Devotional Works of that great saint, Alphonsus M. Liguori. The translation has been made by one that is abundantly able to do it faithfully, tastefully, and effectually."

The *New York Freeman's Journal* says: "The most beautiful book of devotion in the English language."

The *Catholic Instructor* says: "This book is eminently calculated to enliven the affectionate devotion of the faithful towards the immaculate Mother of God. The typography and paper are most excellent, and the binding very neat."

THE COMPLETE WORKS

OF

ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI,

FOUNDER OF THE CONGREGATION OF THE MOST HOLY REDEEMER.

The only Unbridged Edition of the Works of the Saint.

VOLUME 1.

**The Christian Virtues, and the Means
of Obtaining them.**

CONTAINING:

- I. The Practice of the Love of our Lord Jesus Christ.**
- II. Treatise on Prayer.**
- III. Directions for acquiring the Christian Virtues.**
- IV. Rule of Life for a Christian.**

*The work will appear in 12mo. volumes, on superfine paper, in cloth.
Each volume is complete in itself, and may be had separately.*

Price—63 cents.

No name is more familiar now to the pious reader than that of the holy Bishop of St. Agatha, the doctor of the eighteenth century; the man marked by Divine Providence to exercise in our days a special influence over the whole Church of God.

He wrote and labored not for one circumscribed kingdom, but for the universe; not for one rank or class, but for all. Rich and poor, learned and unlettered, all are instructed by him in the practice of Christian virtues proper to their respective states; but above all, by what may be called his particular gift, are led to the most tender love of our Lord Jesus Christ and of his Blessed Mother, and to the true spirit of prayer.

Many of his works have appeared in various shapes and forms, often indeed sadly altered from the original. This has led to the present complete edition of his works, faithfully translated from the Italian, and edited by the Rev. Robert A. Coffin, Priest of the Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer.

THE COMPLETE WORKS
OF
ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI,

FOUNDER OF THE CONGREGATION OF THE MOST HOLY REDEEMER.

Translated from the Italian, and edited by Robert A. Coffin, priest
of the same Congregation.

The only Unabridged Edition of the Works of the Saint,

— • • —
VOLUME II.

**Meditations and Discourses on the In-
carnation.**

CONTENTS:

**I. Meditations on the Incarnation for the first week of
Advent.**

**II. Other Meditations for Advent, with affections and
Prayers.**

These are adapted to the remaining weeks of Advent.

**III. Novena for Christmas, with Discourses and Medita-
tions.**

Beautiful devotions for passing the Holy Season from Christmas to Twelfth
Day.

IV. Meditations for Epiphany and its Octave.

To this are added special meditations on the Circumcision and Holy Name.

V. Way of Bethlehem, or Stations of the Infant Jesus.

A most pious devotion to the New-born Saviour.

The present volume contains all that ST. ALPHONSUS wrote on the Incarnation and Infancy of our Blessed Lord. It is exclusively a volume of devotion and spiritual reading: a Manual for Advent and Christmas. It brings out in a more touching and striking manner than perhaps any other of his writings, the deep, but at the same time simple and child-like love and kindness of the Saint.

The treatises in this volume are, for the first time, presented to the English reader, but unless we greatly err will be no less esteemed than the Preparation for Death, or Way of Salvation.

The Elevation of the Soul to God,

By Means of Spiritual Considerations and Affections.

Translated from the French of L'ABBE BARAULT.

Extract from notice of the Catholic Mirror.

"We are pleased to see another edition of this excellent work presented to the American public. It is a series of readings and meditations on the principal truths of religion and virtues of a Christian life, which are explained with force and unction of style, and cannot fail to be most useful to all who seek strength and encouragement in the performance of duty. This is a most admirable work, and one which should command an extensive circulation. In point of typography, it is a most handsome volume. 1 vol. 18mo.

Price—Cloth, 50 cents.

Think Well On't; or Reflections on the **Great Truths of the Christian Religion for every** **day of the Month.**

By the Rt. Rev. Dr. Challoner, D. D.

To which is added Devotions to the Sacred Heart of Jesus.

1 vol. 24mo.

Price—Cloth gilt, 18 $\frac{1}{2}$ cents.

Spiritual Maxims of St. Vincent of Paul. **Arranged for every Day in the Year.**

By the Most Rev. Wm. Walsh, D. D.

TO WHICH IS ADDED, A NINE DAYS' DEVOTION, IN HONOR OF ST. VINCENT; AND BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICE OF MRS. SETON, FOUNDRESS AND FIRST SUPERIOR OF THE SISTERS OF CHARITY IN THE UNITED STATES. 32mo.

Price—Cloth, 25 cents.

Hay on Miracles.

The Scripture Doctrine of Miracles Displayed,

IN WHICH THEIR NATURE, &c., ARE IMPARTIALLY EXAMINED AND EXPLAINED ACCORDING TO THE LIGHT OF REVELATION AND THE PRINCIPLES OF SOUND REASON. 2 vols. 12mo., 2 plates.

By the Rt. Rev. George Hay, D. D.

Price—Cloth, . . . 75 Cents.

Butler's Feasts and Fasts.

The Movable Feasts, Fasts, and other Annual Observances of the Catholic Church.

By the Rev. Alban Butler.

With a Continuation. 12mo.

Like every other work of Alban Butler, this series of treatises is replete with erudition, piety, and useful knowledge. To complete his design, left unfinished at his death, a treatise on Corpus Christi and the Sacred Heart, have been added by an eminent prelate. It is invaluable in every Catholic family, as it unfolds the real meaning and due mode of honoring the Sunday, Lent, Advent, Ember Days, and the various movable feasts of the year.

Price—Cloth, . . . 75 cents.

The Catholic Christian instructed in the Sacraments, Sacrifices, Ceremonies, and Observances of the Church.

By the Rev. Dr. Challoner.

1 vol. Price—Cloth, 25 cts.
Paper, 18 $\frac{1}{2}$

The Youth's Director; or, Familiar Instructions for Young People, with a number of Historical Tracts and Edifying Examples.

Translated from the French,

By the Rt. Rev. Wm. Tyler,

BISHOP OF HARTFORD.

1 vol. 18mo. Price—Cloth, 31 cts.

Life of the Blessed Virgin Mary, Mother of God:

Taken from the Traditions of the East, the Manners of the Israelites, and the Writings of the Holy Fathers. From the French of M. L'ABBE ORSINI,

By the Rev. Patrick Power, D. D.

This translation from the French of the Abbe Orsini, who collected his facts from traditions of the East, the manners of the Israelites, and the Writings of the Holy Fathers, is written in a peculiarly graceful and felicitous style. The most prominent events in the life of the Blessed Virgin; her seclusion in the gorgeous temple of Solomon; her laborious life in the picturesque village of Nazareth; her sufferings on Calvary; her wanderings with St. John, and death at Ephesus, are brought before the mind with more than the vividness of painting. 16mo.

Price —Cloth binding, 1 fine engraving,	\$0 50
“ “ gilt edges, 4 plates,	1 00
“ “ full gilt edges and sides, 6 fine plates,	1 50

NOTICES.

This is truly a beautiful book. Its typography, and binding, and frontispiece (with a plate of the Blessed Virgin and Child, in the new or Christian style), would do honor to any work.—*Charleston Catholic Miscellany.*

This is an opportune book, which has given us much pleasure. It conveys a holy and lovely idea, and we can be certain that some such life as this the Blessed Virgin must have led, according to the circumstances related of her by a constant and harmonious tradition.—*London Tablet.*

This is a work of European reputation, and has received the highest testimonials of approbation from authorized judges.—*London Rambler.*

It is a valuable and charming volume, replete in every part with learning and eloquence of the most captivating description.—*Catholic Herald.*

A Brief Sketch of the History of the Catholic Church on the Island of New York.

By the Rev. J. R. Bayley, D. D.,

SECRETARY TO ARCHBISHOP HUGHES.

Every contribution to our ecclesiastical history should be warmly welcomed, as the annals of the past cannot but stimulate all to greater exertion in advancing the interests of the Church. No portion of the country offers a more interesting subject than the city of New York, where the early struggles of Catholicity for more than a century—checkered by the visits of the heroic missionaries of Canada, glorious prospects under the Catholic Stuart, penal laws, and frenzied fanaticism—resulted at last in the erection of a see, which has covered the island with churches, convents, asylums, hospitals, and literary institutions of every grade.

The position of the author has enabled him to make it accurate as a work of reference, not only for the city but for the State of New York, as it embraces a list of all the clergymen ordained in the diocese and their present location. 1 vol. 12mo.

Price—Handsome cloth, . . . 0 75

NOTICES.

"This is an exceedingly clear and interesting sketch of the early struggles of the Church on this island—now become the most crowded and important spot of earth in the New World. The Right Rev. author, so long Secretary of the Archbishop, had all the originals of the matter of his sketch."—*Celt*.

"This little work of Bishop Bayley's is a good outline for a future historian. His 'Sketch' is well worthy of attention. Its style is unambitious, consecutive and clear."—*Citizen*.

"For this work of Catholic zeal the Catholics of New York and of the country owe Bishop Bayley many thanks, as it will be an important contribution to the future general history of the Church in this country."—*Freeman's Journal*.

"With every claim to accuracy, great judgment in his authorities, calmness in his style, the Bishop of Newark has left us cause to regret his departure."—*Truth Teller*.

History of the Life and Institute of St. **Ignatius Loyola,**

FOUNDER OF THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

Translated from the Italian of Bartoli,

By Madame Calderon de la Barca,

Authoress of "Life in Mexico," &c. 2 vols. small 8vo.

Price—English cloth, . . . \$3 00

The works of Bartoli have long been esteemed as classics in Italy, for the beauty of their style and the genius of the author. His Life of St. Ignatius is not a mere biography of the Saint: it is a full history of his order, in its foundation, rise, spirit, and progress. It is, therefore, an historical work of rare value, presenting to Catholic readers, we may say, the only accessible account of the rise and institute of the Society of Jesus. The translator is one well known to the American public, no less for her literary talents, than for her many amiable qualities.

A General History of Modern Europe ;

**From the Beginning of the Seventeenth Century to
the Restoration of the Empire in France.**

Second edition, corrected and continued,

By John G. Shea.

1 vol. small 8vo.

Price—Half bound, . . . 0 75

Library edition, . . . \$1 00

No period requires a well written and impartial history more than that from the Reformation to the present time. The present convenient, yet sufficiently extended manual, has long enjoyed a high, and not undeserved reputation. To bring it down to our times, and correct any thing which might be too national, the publishers have engaged Mr. Shea, whose familiarity with historical studies must commend it to the patronage of all.

To enable Catholic institutions to introduce it as a text-book, it is published in cloth, half bound, at an excessively low price.

History of the Catholic Missions among the Indian Tribes of the United States;—1529—1854.

By John Gilmary Shea,

Author of the "Discovery and Exploration of the Mississippi,"
&c. &c. 1 vol. small 8vo., 6 steel plates and 4 other illustrations.

No American Catholic work has received higher commendation than this exceedingly valuable history of the Catholic Missions; and the publishers, anxious to make it a standard work, have spared no expense to make it one of the handsomest books in the market.

Price—English cloth, . . . \$1 75

NOTICES.

"This most interesting and eloquently written volume, is a valuable contribution to our literature, and will be read with interest and gratitude by every Catholic in the United States, who can read our mother tongue."—*Brownson's Review*.

"It is not a barren list of tribes and missionaries; it is a work full of interest, pathos and edification. Now, fortunately, we have a household book, which will make the names of our early missionaries familiar to every Catholic family."—*Metropolitan*.

"This volume is one of the noblest and most praiseworthy contributions to Catholic literature that has appeared in our days in any language. There is no man so well fitted to be the historiographer of the Catholic Missions in America as John Gilmary Shea. . . . We say then, and wish it remembered and repeated, that this volume is one that every Catholic on the American Continent, who reads English ought to buy."—*Freeman's Journal*.

"This book is, in our humble judgment, the most valuable which has ever appeared from the American Catholic press."—*American Celt*.

VI.—CATHOLIC TALES.

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROBATION OF

THE MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES, D. D.,

ARCHBISHOP OF NEW YORK.

Home Library.

Thornberry Abbey; a Tale of the Times.

1 vol. 18mo.

"Thornberry Abbey" is addressed especially to the most striking phase of modern religious controversy. High Church and Low, Puseyites and Evangelicals, and all the workings and results of the present remarkable movement, which divides and must destroy Anglican Protestantism, supply a subject of the utmost interest. The process by which the principal characters are conducted, some to the truth, others confirmed in error, is delineated with a force of style scarcely surpassed in any other similar work.

Price—Cloth, gilt back, . . . 0 38

NOTICES.

"It is one of the best little works, treating important matters in a popular manner, we have recently met. It is written with fair artistic skill, the characters are well sustained, and the controversy is managed with adroitness, delicacy, and success."—*Brownson's Quarterly Review*.

"It is a beautiful and interesting Catholic story."—*Freeman's Journal*.

"The tale is well conceived, and written with those graces of style which must certainly be interesting to the reader—but what is far more valuable, is full of instruction."—*Catholic Magazine*.

"A beautifully printed little volume, containing a tale written with considerable force and power of description, and intending to set off the claims of the Roman Catholic Church to the pure succession, in opposition to those of the Church of England. The three parties, Romanist, Puseyite, and Low Church or Evangelical, are each represented; and the object seems to be to show that the Puseyites have gone so far as to be enemies with themselves, if they do not go the whole figure."—*American Review*, Oct., 1846.

Home Library.

The Shipwreck; or, The Desert Island.

The above is one of the best books of the kind yet issued from the American press. It is not only delightful and agreeable as a story, but it also conveys to the mind of the reader an instructive moral, and in an impressive way, which renders it especially suitable for the young.

Price—Neat cloth binding, gilt back, . . . 0 38

NOTICES.

"A beautiful little story, to illustrate the baleful effects of an un-governed temper."—*Detroit Vindicator*.

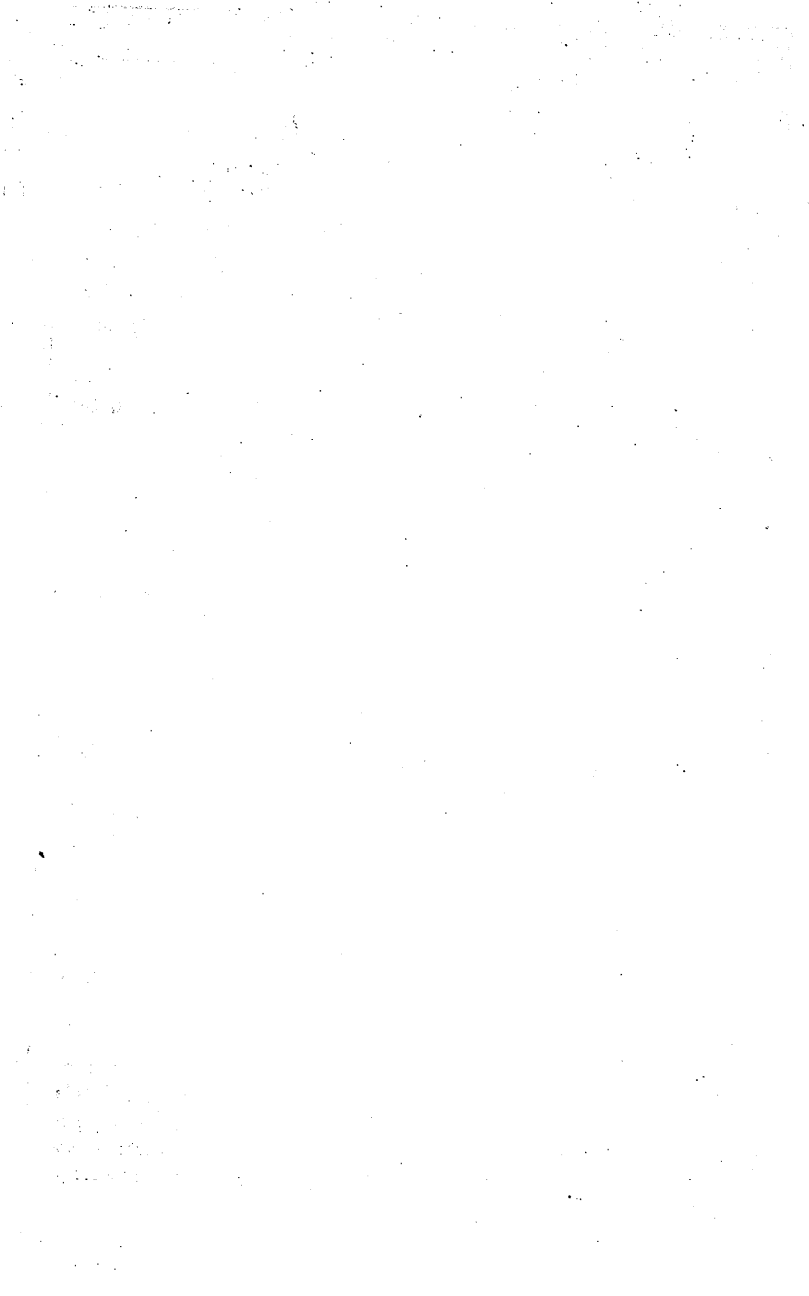
"'The Shipwreck; or, The Desert Island, 18mo.'—We suppose that this little book is a translation from the French. By whom written in the original, and by whom translated, does not appear. Stories of shipwreck, and the lives of men thrown on desert islands, are always interesting. Robinson Crusoe and a host of imitators are a perpetual proof of it. But here the interest is made to illustrate a moral—the evil and folly of anger, pride, and resentment, especially between different ranks of society."—*Metropolitan*.

"A story admirably told, and calculated to benefit those for whose perusal it is intended. Dunigan and Brother have made the family their debtor by producing such excellent volumes."—*Irish American*.

"The Shipwreck, is an interesting, instructive, and well written moral tale, inculcating an important lesson to old and young."—*Pittsburgh Catholic*.

"These tales are just the thing for presents at our colleges, and other institutions."—*Boston Pilot*.

"To all who, by their habits, are wont to indulge in feelings of coldness, aversion, and ill-temper towards those with whom the business of life brings them into frequent contact, we especially recommend this book. Parents would do well to read it, and have it attentively perused by their children, in whom pride and obstinacy of heart is too often suffered to grow to such a height as to obtain a complete mastery over the will."—*Catholic Instructor*.



UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



45 240 520

<p>BX 4700 .L7B3 v.1</p>	<p>Bartoli, St. L. de Toyola.</p>
<p>FEB 1 '22 FEB 20 '22</p>	<p>E a Ducer 1160 E 54th</p>
<p>MAY 8 '22 MAR 12 '22</p>	<p>H. Broad 5534 Blackist</p>
<p>JUL 27 '22</p>	<p>R. Lussanbo</p>
<p>AUG 16 '22-14</p>	<p>7031 Knibba</p>

BX4700
.L7B3
v.1

Vc

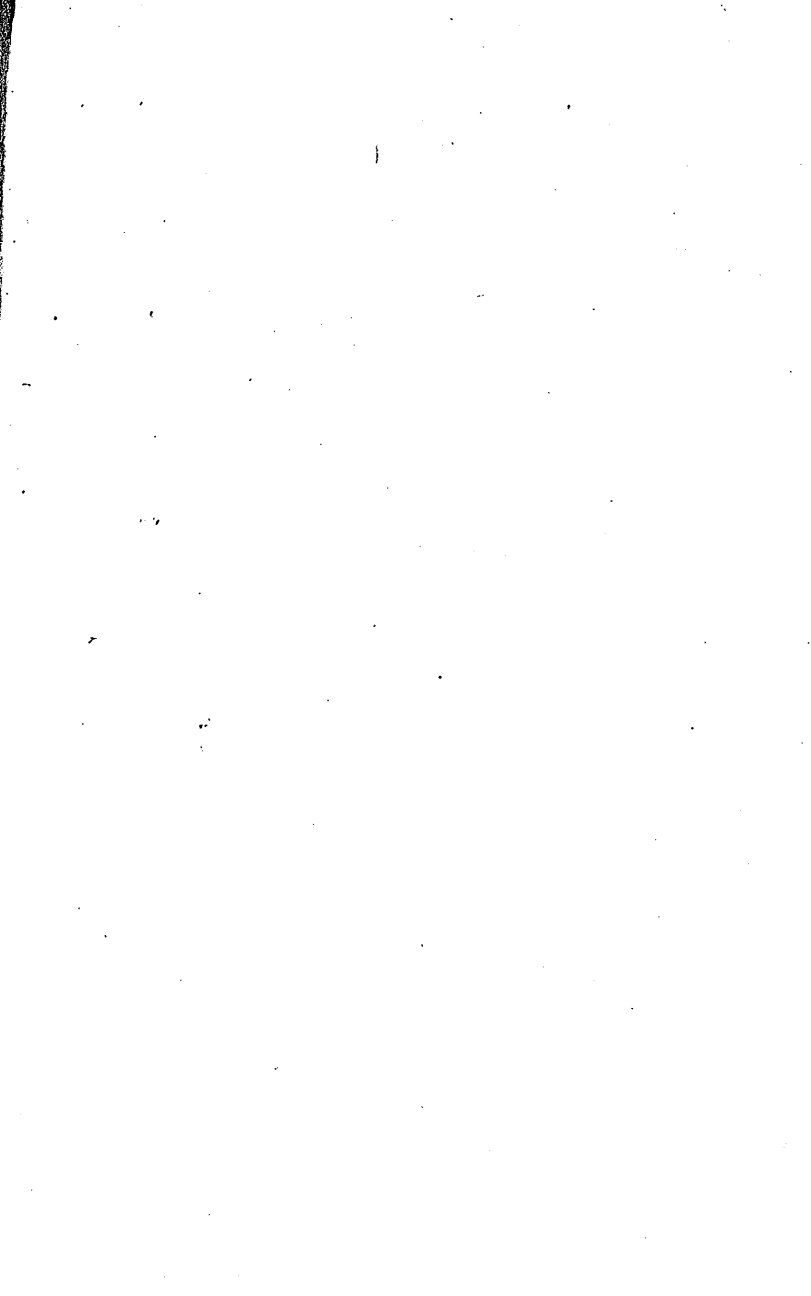
me 2

The University of Chicago
Libraries



GIFT OF

Chicago Institute





These Portraits are taken from very ancient originals, and are no doubt true likenesses of St Ignatius and the first nine.

NEW YORK
Edward Dungan & Bro.

HISTORY
OF
THE LIFE AND INSTITUTE
OF
ST. IGNATIUS DE LOYOLA,

FOUNDER OF THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

BY
FATHER DANIEL BARTOLI,

OF THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

TRANSLATED BY THE AUTHOR OF "LIFE IN MEXICO."

These are they whom we had sometime in derision, and for a parable of reproach. We, fools, esteemed their life madness, and their end without honor. Behold! now they are numbered among the children of God, and their lot is among the Saints.



Given by Chicago Institut

VOLUME II.

NEW YORK:
EDWARD DUNIGAN & BROTHER,
151 FULTON STREET.

1855.

W. B. KIRKER

W. B. KIRKER

BX 4700
L7B3
V.2

W. B. KIRKER

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1855,

By JAMES B. KIRKER,

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States, for the
Southern District of New York.

CONTENTS.

BOOK III.

CHAPTER I.

Rules for a religious life—Method adopted by St. Ignatius in writing his Constitutions—New favors from Heaven,	9
--	---

CHAPTER II.

The end which Ignatius had in view when he founded the Society—Means drawn both from the active and contemplative life, in order to attain the object of the Institute—Examination of the reasons which induced Ignatius to place his children in the rank of Clergy—Examination of the observances of the Order,	20
---	----

CHAPTER III.

Examination of the Constitutions,	33
---	----

CHAPTER IV.

Examination of the different degrees or grades to which we are subjected in the Society,	52
--	----

CHAPTER V.

Harmony of views between St. Ignatius and St. Francis Xavier—Simon Rodriguez upon the expulsion of members—Of the union of the members by the virtue of	
---	--

225077

obedience—Monarchical and oligarchical form both given to the Company—
Again upon the virtue of obedience, 79

CHAPTER VI.

Fraternal union prescribed by Ignatius—He forbids his Order to accept ecclesiastical dignities—His firmness in maintaining this rule—Some examples—His motives in adopting it—Professed members called to occupy a prelacy, bind themselves by a simple vow, to follow the counsels of the General of the Order—Explanation and justification of this vow, 101

CHAPTER VII.

St. Ignatius a model in the art of governing—His admirable prudence united with his entire relinquishment of every thing to God—Empire of St. Ignatius over the emotions of his soul—His conduct in regard to Novices—His circumspection in the choice of the persons whom he employed—His esteem and tenderness towards his followers, 127

CHAPTER VIII.

Care of Ignatius for all his children, but especially towards the sick—Different examples of his talent and skill in assisting his children in their spiritual necessities, and supporting them in their temptations, 151

CHAPTER IX.

Zeal of Ignatius for religious discipline—His scrupulous justice in regard to his best friends—His antipathy for novelties—How Ignatius defended the honor of his Company—The means which he employed to form good Superiors, . . . 169

BOOK IV.

CHAPTER I.

Virtues of the Saints difficult to describe or to be made comprehensible—Humility of St. Ignatius, and his sentiments concerning that virtue—He wishes to abdicate his post—His care to conceal the celestial favors with which God loaded him—Revelation of the Blessed Magdalene de Pazzi—Fragments from the Notes of St. Ignatius—His death, 192

CHAPTER II.

The perfection of obedience as manifested in St. Ignatius—His practice of evangelical poverty—His gratitude for benefits—New examples of the empire which he exercised over himself, 211

CHAPTER III.

Exterior deportment of St. Ignatius—The importance which he attached to outward demeanor—Rules laid down on this point—Circumspection of the Saint in his words, writings, and the management of his affairs—His conduct was an image of the *Following of Jesus Christ*—His influence on those who surrounded him—Difficulty of appreciating the interior virtues of the Saints, 228

CHAPTER IV.

Utility of the works founded by St. Ignatius—Report of the different missions—Letter of the Saint to the College of Coimbra, 241

CHAPTER V.

Establishments founded by St. Ignatius for the good of souls, especially in Rome—House of Jewish catechumens—Foundation of a house of refuge for penitent women—Establishment of a German college—Courage and constancy of St. Ignatius in all his undertakings—Other good works, 261

CHAPTER VI.

Useless efforts of the heretics to penetrate into the Society, and infect it with their new doctrines—Success of St. Ignatius in an opposite sense—His zeal for the conversion of England—His unlimited trust in Providence, whose protection is manifested to him in various circumstances, 279

CHAPTER VII.

The particular methods practised by Ignatius for living in God, and for purifying his conscience—The book of fourteen lives—Ardent love with which the heart of the Saint was kindled for God—The gift of tears—Passion for music and flowers—Extracts from a journal to which Ignatius confided his most secret thoughts, . . . 294

CHAPTER VIII.

St. Ignatius desires death that he may be reunited to God—Gradual decay of his strength—His task upon earth accomplished—His last moments, related by an eye-witness—General mourning caused by the death of the Founder of the Society of Jesus—Extraordinary testimonies of veneration which he received during his life, and after his death, 312

CHAPTER IX.

Maxims of Ignatius concerning religion and government—Circumstances which followed his death—Baronius and Bellarmine—Miracles and canonization of the Saint,	344
--	-----

BOOK V.

CHAPTER I.

Account of the different miracles performed by St. Ignatius during his life, and after his death,	375
---	-----

HISTORY
OF
SAINT IGNATIUS DE LOYOLA,
OF
THE SOCIETY OF JESUS.

THIRD BOOK.

CHAPTER I.

Rules for a religious life—Method adopted by St. Ignatius in writing his Constitutions—New favors from Heaven.

THE Society of Jesus being now formed into a Religious Order, necessarily required a fixed Rule. Those who had assumed the habit of the Order, had it is true a living rule always before their eyes, in the example and teaching of Ignatius; but they were destined to be soon scattered over the whole world, and it therefore became necessary to determine under a stable form, the spirit which ought to animate each member in particular, together with the mode of government common to all. In the presence of God and in concert with his pious companions, Ignatius had long since conceived the plan of his Institute which he daily improved upon, and the sketch of which had been approved of by the Apostolic authority; but it was a work requiring as much prudence, as

skill, both for its complete development, as well as in its most minute details. He wished also to unite experience to theory, and by the success of what he had already accomplished, to judge of that which might be hoped for in future. He therefore permitted several years to elapse, before definitively tracing the plan of his constitutions in a detailed form. He established however some general rules to direct the conduct of the Fathers in their various duties to God, to their Superiors, to their fellow-men, and to themselves. We shall now give an account of these rules before proceeding further.

First. The Fathers were to endeavor to have their hearts constantly occupied and filled by God; to love Him only, to think of Him only, and whether alone or in public, in the silence of their cells, or in the most crowded assemblies, never to leave His divine presence. Their first aspiration was to be, that His holy will should be the centre and moving power of all their actions, His divine essence the only object of their discourse, the only aim of their hopes; they were to choose the life of Jesus Christ as their example, and to imprint the seal of this divine model upon their souls

Second. They were to see in their Superiors the image of God Himself; to respect their will, to execute their orders with zeal; assured that obedience is a guide which cannot err, an interpreter of the Divine will which cannot deceive; such, according to Ignatius, is the second rule for a religious life. Each Father is also bound to make known either to his Superiors or Directors his most private thoughts, lest the Enemy should find an entrance into his heart, and should there secretly labor for his destruction; nor can he be permitted to direct himself, for we must always mistrust our own judgment, which is the more blind in proportion as we believe it enlightened.

Third. Whilst conversing with a fellow-creature, in

hopes of withdrawing him from sin, the same precautions have to be employed as in regard to a drowning man, so that he who endeavors to save him may not run the risk of perishing along with him. But the sinner should be dear to every Religious of the Society, not only as his brother and the child of one common Father; but he should love him as himself. It is not uncommon when persons are engaged in difficult discussions, that some sparks of contempt escape during the argument. This must be carefully guarded against, so that when there is a diversity of opinions, no one must be carried away by the desire of seeing his own triumph over that of the others. There is but one rational end to be proposed in discussion; one only desire; that of making the truth known, and of destroying error; the spirit as well as the words of the argument should be guided by this alone.

Fourth. The fourth Rule is that of silence, when our own necessities or those of others do not require it to be broken; but even then, neither proud and haughty language, nor that curiosity which listens to worldly news, nor the idleness which takes pleasure in vain and jesting remarks, must in any way mingle in the conversation.

Fifth. Whatever great things it may please God to operate through our means, we must count ourselves as absolutely nothing, and never usurp a glory which cannot belong to a mere worthless instrument, which (like the jaw-bone of the ass in the hands of Samson) depends solely upon the arm which has directed it. To take pride in the acuteness of our own mind, in our own wisdom, in our prudent conduct, would be a mark of folly; a Religious must never consider himself so well rewarded for what he has done in his neighbor's service, as when he reaps a harvest of ignominy and contempt; the only payment which the world granted to the labors of his Divine Master.

Sixth. If any of the members should fall into a public

error, likely to injure their reputation, or to diminish the esteem in which they were held, they ought not to feel discouraged ; but on the contrary, to render thanks to God for having unveiled the real weakness of their virtue : so that their brothers, warned by their sad fall, may beware of running into the same error, may remember that all men are formed of the same clay, and may earnestly pray for the conversion of the sinner.

Seventh. During the short time set apart for recreation, the Fathers should never lose sight of that modesty which the apostle requires of us at all times ; they must neither abandon themselves to immoderate mirth nor entrench themselves in sad and sombre gravity.

Eighth. They must never neglect the opportunity of doing good when it presents itself, in the uncertain hope of effecting some still greater good at a future period ; for it is a subtle artifice of the devil to make us conceive great projects and design admirable plans, which will never be executed, in order to turn our minds from the common and more ordinary good works which we might have performed.

Ninth. In fine, let each member remain firm and unshaken in his vocation, as if its roots were laid in the foundations of the Lord's house ; for in the same way as the enemy of our salvation often inspires the heart of the Solitary with the desire of living in a community, he frequently causes those who are called to exterior labor for the conversion of souls, to feel a desire for solitude ; with the sole view of turning them from the service of God by this instability, and of leading them to their ruin, by making them enter upon a path directly contrary to that which they ought to pursue.

Such were the first rules which the holy founder established for the direction of his children. We cannot fail to observe that they resemble those seeds which under a small



envelope contain the germ of a beautiful plant; and the fruits which they produced proved their intrinsic virtue.

As it appears proper to advance some proof of this, I shall here quote the testimony of Martin Navarre, a great canonist, a man of superior good sense, and one who led an irreproachable life. "An illustrious Senate," said he, "requested me to make known my opinion concerning the new Institute of the Company of Jesus, and its future destiny. My answer has been based upon observations made during seven years in the college of Coimbra, at present the principal college of the Order. One thing appears to me miraculous; and it is this: More than a hundred students of the Society were assembled there, and instructed at the expense of the King; all young, all full of life and ardor; permitted to go out at all times, and to communicate with persons of all sorts and conditions; they were thus as likely to meet with temptations to vice, as with encouragements to virtue; moreover, almost all the inhabitants were secretly hostile to them. Yet, although in all countries there is a general disposition amongst men to examine whatever is new, as well as to criticize and slander their neighbors, I have never during the space of seven years, heard one single person, openly or in a whisper, seriously or in jest, say one single word unfavorable to these students. Nothing has been found fault with but their mortifications, which were considered excessive; their coarse clothing, by which it was said they disgraced their families; and their custom of performing the most humble offices in the interior of the house. They have been blamed for reproaching the world, and not without effect, with its follies and vanities; and of too frequently recalling to men's minds that they are but dust and ashes; but all reflective minds will acknowledge that such accusations were positive eulogiums. I must again repeat, that all this

appears to me miraculous; for no one has ever before seen so great a number of young men living in perfect liberty, in the midst of people ill-disposed towards them, of whom not one has given occasion for a single word of reproach. "It is very uncommon," says St. Augustine, "that in a community however small, even if it is composed of old men, there should not be some of the number stained with immorality." I have wished to give this testimony, first for the glory of God and of our Lord Jesus Christ, whose name this Company has taken, and by which He shows the truth of these words applied to the Holy Spirit:

*"Tu spires ubi vis, tu munera dividis ut vis,
Scis cui das quod vis, quantum vis, tempore quo vis."*

"In the next place, I have been desirous to make known to the other Colleges of the same Order, now dispersed all over Christendom, the marvellous manner in which this first College of Coimbra is established, and thus to inspire them with the desire of preserving, as they have hitherto done, the reputation acquired by so good a beginning, in order that the future may correspond with it."*

It seems to me that before making known the Constitutions in detail, it would be proper to speak of the order followed by Ignatius, and of the manner in which he traced them. He united in this work two things, which appear incompatible; on the one hand, extreme prudence, precisely as if it were to be his own work; and on the other, a complete abandonment of his thoughts to the Spirit of God, and as entire a dependence upon His directions, as if the Lord himself were to dictate the work, and he were only to transcribe it.

* *Relect. in c. Ita quorundam de Judæis, recognita et impressa Romæ, 1580.*

He began then by examining with extreme caution, all the points which he was to determine, and carefully noted down the different reasons for and against each, which presented themselves to his mind, and which were frequently neither few nor trifling; he then divested himself of every inclination of his own, of every personal opinion; in order that reason alone should decide his will to choose what was preferable. He then weighed carefully and separately all the different reasons which he had collected together, to ascertain the value of each in particular. He passed a great part of the night and often even whole days in this occupation, laying aside all other business, and retiring into a small garden which had been lent him, or else into his own chamber, the door of which was usually guarded by Benedict Palmia, to prevent all interruption.

Ignatius had read the Constitutions of other Religious Orders with great attention; and we still preserve extracts from them in the handwriting of his secretary Polancus. He, no doubt, made careful observations upon the causes whether of their progress or decay; but whilst he wrote his Constitutions, he never had any other books in his chamber but the Holy Scriptures and the Imitation of Jesus Christ. Being thus freed from all partiality for any particular rule, he had recourse to prayer alone, and devoted several hours to it; then by the light of that supernatural knowledge which God usually accorded him, he revised all that he had already conceived and meditated; and with the simplicity of a child that feels itself incapable of deciding upon important affairs, he entreated the Lord, with tears, to let him know what would contribute most to His glory and to the perfection of his Order; and finished by ardently invoking His holy Mother as a mediatrix with our divine Saviour, to obtain this favor for him.

When he felt himself inwardly resolved upon a point which he had carefully examined, he still did not cease to offer up fervent prayer; and in one particular instance after having passed ten days in consulting the Lord, and having taken a resolution in His presence, he passed four more in fresh deliberation and prayer. In truth this divine light, the grace of which he implored, was perhaps the smallest of those graces which were accorded to him; in the same way as Isaiah and Ezekiel, who were chosen in former days as interpreters of the will of God, and messengers to deliver His orders, received a favor which was rendered still more precious by the manner of its communication, when the Heavens were opened before their eyes, and they beheld the Majesty of God and the glory of His kingdom.

Thus Ignatius also, whilst meditating before God upon the rule which he was to establish, received far more than he asked. We should be still more fully aware of this, if we knew in greater detail what passed within his soul at that time. Yet it has come down to our days like a distant echo, in some papers written by his own hand, and found after his death, but probably mislaid or forgotten by him, since he had not burnt them with many others. These remains make us appreciate more highly the value of what we have lost; and we shall see in the following book, the interior sentiments and heavenly visions with which he was favored, during the forty days which he devoted to examine before God, whether the churches belonging to religious houses should be endowed, or maintained by the alms of the faithful. We find there, frequent apparitions of the Holy Virgin and of our Lord himself; celestial visions as sublime as the intelligence of man, while still confined within a mortal body, can admit of; visions which by the aid of sensible images, raise his soul to

the most intimate knowledge of the Almighty and Omnipotent Being, the adorable and incomprehensible God !

Ecstasies and ravishments in God, internal flames, rays of the most brilliant light, transports of the most ardent charity, vehement impressions, gentle and profound tranquillity, tears so abundant as to give rise to fears that they might produce blindness, in short, such clear views of the glory of God, that they penetrated even to the Heaven of Heavens ! All these things, and many more of a similar nature, are noted down by the hand of Ignatius, in pursuance of the habit which he had of rendering a daily account to himself of every thing that passed within his soul. And as the Holy Spirit descended upon the Apostles in the form of tongues of fire, so one day when Ignatius was engaged in writing his Constitutions, a fiery arrow or tongue of incomparable splendor was seen to hover above his head, as if to show that the Spirit of God presided over his work. Not satisfied with having taken so much time for reflection, with having so fervently implored knowledge from on high ; as soon as he had decided upon and transcribed one of the Rules which he wished to be followed, he placed it upon the altar, and offered it up to his Heavenly Father ; then, while celebrating the Holy Sacrifice with his usual fervor, he entreated Him to look down from the highest Heavens upon the work of His servant, and if it should contain any thing not in conformity with His holy will, to enlighten him with His divine light, so that he might discover his error.

But the interior sentiment by which the Lord deigned to make known to Ignatius that he approved of the projects which He himself had inspired, could leave no doubt upon his mind as to the Divine will. The Saint having one day asked Father Lainez, whether he believed that God had revealed to the founders of the holy Orders, the form and

rule of their several Institutes ; he answered in the affirmative, at least as to all that was essential. " I believe it also," replied Ignatius, who probably judged from what he had himself experienced.

It appears to me that nothing proves more strongly that his Institute was truly the work of God, than the fact of its having withstood all human assaults, without any injury to the smallest portion of its fabric. On the contrary, the points which had been particularly attacked by its adversaries, having been confirmed in an especial manner by the holy Apostolic See, have become invincible. This must invariably happen to whatsoever things are truly in accordance with the Holy Spirit. Being first decided in Heaven by God himself, they afterwards receive upon earth the approbation of those who govern the Church universal in His name. Amongst their number is the Institute of the Society, which, as St. Francis Xavier remarked in one of his letters from Asia, having been first inspired by the Lord himself to His servant, our venerable Father Ignatius, and then supported by the authority of His Vicar upon earth, has become impregnable.

We must understand that under the name of Constitutions, are comprehended both the text and the marginal explanations ; which circumstance not being sufficiently known, has given rise to the belief and assertion that the explanations were the work of Father Jerome Nadal, and Father Polancus ; whereas they incontestably belong to our holy Founder, who from the very first, divided the body of the Institute into three parts, and wrote separately the Constitutions properly so called, the explanations which were necessary for greater clearness, and the part intended to be expressly stated in the Papal Bulls approbatory of the Institute. These divisions are found in the old Manuscript which we


possess; and as for the marginal explanations, the erasures, and the different changes in the handwriting of St. Ignatius, still exist. In several parts of the Constitutions, we find occasional passages underlined, and written in the margin in the Saint's handwriting, with a note stating that all which is marked in this manner, relates to the explanations. So that they have the force of a law, as proceeding directly from our blessed Founder; and their authority is thus not derived solely from the approbation of the Sovereign Pontiffs,* who have put them in the rank of *Papal Constitutions* as they are entitled by the venerable tribunal of Roman Rota. They therefore belong to Father Ignatius, like the rest of the Constitutions, of which they form a part. We are now going to penetrate into the heart of this work, and to explain several of those things which have been blamed, from not being sufficiently known.

* Decis. 245, N. 11.

CHAPTER II.

The end which Ignatius had in view when he founded the Society—Means drawn both from the active and contemplative life, in order to attain the object of the Institute—Examination of the reasons which induced Ignatius to place his children in the rank of Clergy—Examination of the observances of the Order.

As in all works of intelligence, the object proposed is the constitutive foundation which gives form to their existence, determines the efficacy and regulates the choice of the means to be adopted; the first study of Ignatius was to decide what this object was to be. In all that regarded the service of God, he always took a very high aim; and as the end to which all our actions ought to tend, appeared to him the most important of all considerations, he raised his eyes to the most perfect of all models, in order to trace its exact copy in his Institute.



He therefore meditated upon the object of Our Saviour's Incarnation, and upon all the acts of His divine Life, since undoubtedly no human being could comprehend and serve the interests and glory of God as did His divine Son. Being convinced that all the acts of this divine life, and all the sufferings of Our Saviour's Passion had no other object but His own perfection and the salvation of men, Ignatius chose these two sublime intentions, which are inseparably united to each other, as the fitting and only object of his Institute, and declared it in these terms: The object of this Society is not only to seek the salvation and perfection of our own souls, with the Divine grace; but also therewith to

labor earnestly for the salvation and perfection of their neighbor.*

This Society is then consecrated entirely to *the greater glory of God*, since as the same Saint observes elsewhere, its real aim is the universal welfare and salvation of souls. The apostolic bulls approving of our Constitutions are subjoined to them. We may cite amongst others, that of Gregory XIII., in which he expressly says: "As the object of the aforesaid Society is the propagation and defence of the Faith, the progress of souls in the doctrine and practice of a Christian life, so also it is appropriate to its vocation to traverse different countries, according to the orders of the Roman Pontiff and of the General of the Company."

I have already said that Ignatius had established a mutual dependence between these two objects, because to labor for the welfare of our neighbor, is an intrinsic and inseparable part of the perfection proper to this Institute; whilst every method which can contribute to our own individual perfection, must necessarily serve to render us more and more capable of exerting ourselves for the salvation of others. "We ought thoroughly to understand," says Father James Mirone, one of the best-beloved children of Ignatius, "that prayer and meditation are not the objects of our Institute, but only powerful means of acquiring the virtues which are indispensable for the fulfilment of the duties which we contract in it, and which are not only obtained by prayer, but also and especially by mortification. For this reason our Father Ignatius has laid down as a principle in his Constitutions, for the foundation of the solid virtues which should uphold our Institute like so many pillars, the practice of continual self-denial. Thus our Lord himself has given it

* In exam. gener. C. 1.

as the basis of all Christian perfection, since he says : Let him deny himself and take up his cross.

“ We must nevertheless employ prayer and meditation in order to acquire a perfect mortification of all our disorderly inclinations ; but he who should neglect his duties to his neighbor, to enjoy the sweetness of prayer, would act contrary to the spirit of his vocation ; in the same way as he who does not offer up a prayer in conformity with the spirit of the Institute, who remains attached to his own judgment, and has difficulty in submitting to these orders of the Superiors which thwart his own will or inclinations.

“ As all religious Orders have some method peculiar to themselves for attaining the object of their Institute, so the Society has a species of prayer which is peculiar to it, and which is intended to lead it to an internal renunciation of its own opinion, and to submit its will to obedience ; and it is through this means that we become instruments worthy of laboring in the service of our neighbor and for the salvation of souls, or in other words, for the greater glory of God, which is the true aim of our Institute.”

But although the only object of the Company must be, according to the precise words of the Constitutions, “ to assist their own and their neighbors’ souls in attaining their last end for which they were created,” our vocation must not be confounded with that of bishops, who ought to be perfect in themselves, and the duty of whose office it is to lead on others to perfection, for their position is much more elevated than ours, since the bishop by his condition ought no longer to be under the necessity of laboring like us for his own perfection ; but is supposed to have already attained the goal towards which our vocation only leads us.

The holy Founder, having decided what the particular object of his Institute was to be, employed himself in select-

ing the methods which were to enable him to attain it. He meditated profoundly upon the spirit and works suitable to those two celebrated states of life; the active, whose votary following the example of Martha, is entirely occupied with others and forgets himself; or the contemplative, where like Mary, sitting in holy idleness at the feet of Jesus, he repulses every thing capable of turning his mind from contemplation, and only endeavors "to draw food from the Lord." Taken separately, neither of these two states of life suited his designs; neither that purely contemplative life, which might prevent him from flying promptly wherever the service of God or the wants of his neighbor demanded his assistance; nor the merely active life; for we must not neglect our own soul in saving those of others, and thus resemble those mountains which, while they pour down upon the valleys their most fertile substance, with the rains which they receive from Heaven, render them fruitful and remain barren themselves. He labored therefore to bring about a perfect union between these two states, after all not very difficult to reconcile, for Mary and Martha are sisters, not enemies. If each might injure herself by following her individual predilection too closely, they may, on the contrary, help each other by a mutual interchange of good offices. Whilst the labors of an active life render the holy idleness of contemplation fruitful, the latter imparts the strength necessary for enduring these labors. Thus St. Ignatius borrowed from the one the habit of daily mental prayer, the principal means of attaining perfection, which inflames the soul and prepares it for an intimate union with God; the Spiritual Exercises, during which four hours prescribed for daily meditation, are sufficient to raise us above the world and ourselves; he also took from it the renewal of the vows twice every year, after preparation by prayer, general confession, the exercises of penance, and

the thorough reformation of the inner man ; the examination of conscience in the middle and at the end of each day, which tends to correct our internal and external acts ; the particular examination which I shall notice more in detail in the following book, and the special object of which is to acquire some virtue in which we are deficient, or to extirpate some predominant fault ; purity of intention both in detail and in the whole of our lives, acquired by aspiring to nothing but God and God only ; the duty of laying open the whole heart to our spiritual director ; the daily habit of reading spiritual books, the frequent receiving of the sacraments ; finally, constant mortification, and the most scrupulous fidelity to the religious vows ; such are the aids for advancing towards religious perfection, which are to be found in the Company. We may add to this two or three years of novitiate, during which the sole occupation of each member is to form and cultivate his soul ; and it will be allowed, that in employing himself afterwards in the service of his neighbor, he runs no risk of resembling those dry poles which sustain the branches of the vines ; remaining arid and lifeless themselves while supporting rich clusters of fruit.

On the other hand, what is termed active life is not neglected. In order to be useful to his fellow-men, Ignatius did not limit his attention only to that which has an immediate connection with the good of the soul ; he also wished to gain this end by cultivating the intellect. I allude here to the study of letters, in which all may participate in the colleges opened by the Society, and where the Religious do not disdain to instruct the scholars from the first rudiments of grammar, leading them on to scholastic and moral theology, without requiring any other reward from them than the innocence of their morals, Christian piety, and the frequent reception of the Sacraments.

As for the means employed by the Society more immediately tending to the benefit of the soul, I shall defer their exposition till the following book, and we shall see how the most untiring zeal for the salvation of his brethren, shone forth amongst the other virtues of Ignatius.

Having succeeded in forming a Society whose immediate object was entire devotion to the spiritual service of mankind, it was consequently necessary that it should be a Society of *Clerks*, whose special profession is to instruct the people in the science of eternal salvation. This was the light in which St. Ignatius viewed it; and since then the Sovereign Pontiffs have always recognized us as *clerks* or *priests*. The same was done at the Council of Trent.

Two important consequences result from our right to the name of *Regular Clerks*. The first is, that we occupy in the ecclesiastical hierarchy the place of the ecclesiastic, whose office it is to direct the people in the worship which they owe to God, and in the way of salvation; for if, both by its Institute and Order, the Society is not *monastic*, still it presents no point which is not perfectly suitable to the ecclesiastical state, and every thing which it has added to the obligations of that state, has been but an increase of the perfection proper to it. For which reason several Popes had the habit of calling us *clerks*, or *reformed priests*.

Although the Company, by a particular dispensation are not subject to the jurisdiction of bishops, like the secular clergy, it cannot be said that this produces any disorder in the ecclesiastical hierarchy, nor that they are excluded from it by their solemn and particular vow of depending solely upon the orders of the Sovereign Pontiff, who is the universal Bishop; for in watching over the flock confided to him by Jesus Christ, he sends us to carry assistance to all the churches, for the greater good of the faithful.

Had the Society been consecrated by vow to the Bishops, as well as to the Sovereign Pontiff, they would in the first place have been almost useless for the good of their flock, and secondly, the Church itself would have suffered; because in those infidel or heretical countries which have no particular bishop, no one could have employed us as the Popes have been enabled to do; and win innumerable souls to the Faith. Besides, it was fitting for the dignity and authority of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, that he should have thousands of men, ever ready to fly without delay at his command, to the most barbarous or most distant countries, to carry assistance to the inhabitants, undismayed by the greatest difficulties or dangers.

So much was required at all times, and for the general welfare; but in these days, such an institution has become indispensable. Is it saying too much, if we repeat with the Pontiffs themselves, and with many distinguished writers; God has given a mark of His protection to the Church and to her Head, by sending them new auxiliaries for new necessities. It cannot be said that they have limited themselves to vain protestations and deceitful appearances, when the effects have so visibly answered the expectations which they have raised. But if a palpable, unexceptionable proof were still wanting—question the hatred of the heretics; for they hate every thing pertaining to the Society; its name, doctrine, Institute; nothing has escaped them!

The incredible torrent of insult which proceeds from them, is in fact our greatest glory. First, according to Lermeo, if we promised to perform great things for the service of the Roman Pontiff, we have like true-hearted men surpassed our promises by our deeds; since not satisfied with attacking the ministers of the reformed religion, we also infect the simple youth of Germany and France; and have such an art of attaching

them to the Holy Roman See, that it would be easier to render a scarlet stuff white, than to resist the torrent of papistical doctrine with which we deluge them. Then the Calvinist Misco calls the Society the *Atlas* of the Papacy; Elias Hasenmüller, the *bailiffs* of the Roman Bishop; Whitaker, the *marrow* of Papacy; Ennius the Evangelists of the Roman Pontiff,* “so earnestly maintaining its cause, that they could scarcely do more for Christ;” in short, we are at all times prepared to rush forward, to strengthen the Chair of Peter, shaken by Luther. But by the side of these testimonies extorted from the enemy, there are others which it is more agreeable to quote. Cardinal Stanislaus Osio, writing to the Religious of the Society, says: “The more cruel are the persecutions which you suffer from the enemies of Jesus Christ, the greater is your felicity: but you have nothing to fear, for all the hairs of your head are numbered, and of you it may be said with truth: ‘In your patience you shall possess your souls.’ And not only will you possess your souls in patience, but you will also gain over to Jesus Christ those of your enemies who hate you no less than the Jews detested the Saviour. Thus after having partaken of His sufferings, you will share His consolations and His everlasting felicity. Let your strength and courage then revive. Those who now abhor you will one day come to you, and anxiously implore you to instruct them both by your teaching and example.”

“This Order,” says another illustrious Cardinal, William Allen, “and the mode of life adopted by its members, are new; but the Faith and doctrine are the same as those taught by antiquity and by the Fathers, and, the same as the Church now teaches. And the Order itself, and the life which is led

* De Orig. hæer., lib. 5, C. 3.

there, are objects of hatred to the heretics, which St. Jerome esteemed a great glory; for in his time, the holy men sent to combat the heretics were as odious to them as these now are, who have been raised up by God himself to repair the devastation caused in the Church by Luther, Calvin, and other such scourges." Here another consideration presents itself: the Society has renounced all ecclesiastical dignities, even while vowing entire obedience to the Sovereign Pontiff. Now, it has been acknowledged by men eminently distinguished both for learning and virtue, that persons invested with these dignities, had frequently failed to succeed amongst the heretics on that very account. They were accused of fearing the power of the Pope, or the censures of the Bishops; they were suspected of professing the Faith through vile motives of interest, and not in consequence of their sincere attachment to the truth. "For this reason," says Stanislaus Rescio, "God has sent new men without money, without place, without bishoprics, without abbeys; mean in the eyes of the world, fearing nothing but God, and hoping in Him alone; whose only ambition is to die for the name of Jesus; who may be slaughtered, but cannot be subdued."

A second, and very important consequence of our clerical organization is, that without binding us down to the different holy practices, which to the great edification of the Church have been adopted by other Orders, our Founder has nevertheless been careful not to deprive us of any of the means necessary for walking in the path leading to perfection.

The imposition of too many obligations upon a Society is hardly less injurious than the suppression of such as are useful. For there is nothing absolutely or infallibly necessary in the adoption of certain practices; and the means most calculated to attain the proposed end, ought alone to decide them. For example, in architecture, the different

orders cannot be indiscriminately employed for every sort of building: the one is suitable for a temple, the other for a palace, a third for fortresses; and although certain parts, such as the foundations and walls, are common and indispensable to all buildings, they must, in others, vary according to the destination of the edifice; the one being intended to serve for the worship of God, the other for the dwelling, or for the defence of man. It is precisely the same with regard to the different Religious Orders, which are alike in all those essential points without which they could not exist, such as for example in their vows, and in the fidelity with which they must be preserved; but in other respects they are as varied as the ends for which God and their founders instituted them. If I am not mistaken, the military forms of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, the monastic forms and those simply clerical, are as distinct as the different styles of architecture of a fortress, a temple, or a palace. Therefore, those who would wish to impose upon the Carthusian monks the duty of passing several hours daily in the schools, as we do, in instructing children, or who would have them sent forth upon distant missions — although these are most excellent works of charity, would destroy the whole harmony of that beautiful Order, and would place obstacles in the way of its particular object, which is a perfect union with God by means of contemplation.

It is not given to all men to understand the art of availing themselves of what is intrinsically good. Whoever were to bind the Society to the duties of the choir, of retreat, or other like observances, would overthrow it even in its very foundations. Any one who understands the art of wisely governing a Society which is solely instituted with a view to labor for the salvation of men, and who will examine the Institute of Ignatius with no other interest but that of being

able to form a correct judgment of it, cannot fail to find a proof of superior intelligence in its organization, where the laws of the most perfect prudence, both divine and human, are observed.

Even the heretics, who feel so deep a hatred for the Society and for him who unfortunately for them founded it, have been unable, with very few exceptions, to attack it upon this point, or to condemn, as ill conceived, a plan from which they had so much to dread. Yet as, in their opinion, the results, which were to draw men over to the faith of the Roman Catholic Church, and from thence to the observance of the laws of God, destroyed the soul, under the pretext of afterwards curing it, they have never praised the Constitutions of St. Ignatius, except as being like a strain of perfectly harmonious music, but to which certain magical words are united, which seem to transform all who listen to the Jesuits into *monsters*.

But he who has his compasses in his eyes (as Michael Angelo says of good sculptors and architects), and who while he admires the effects produced, can also comprehend all the art which combines the different parts into one harmonious whole, will speak of the work of St. Ignatius, or rather of that of God who suggested it to him, as did Cardinal Philip Lega, when he said: "The art by which that beautiful body was so aptly, so excellently formed, was divine, not human; and its architect, Ignatius, built it not so much by toil-acquired skill, as by light from heaven."

The same judgment has been given upon this subject by the Sovereign Pontiffs, whose elevated position as well as ability in deciding upon all that regards the interests of the Church, ought to govern the opinions of those who, less favorably situated for forming a just estimate of affairs of this nature, are apt to judge of them rather by their affec-

tions than by their understanding, and consequently to diminish or exaggerate their merit.

The Sovereign Pontiffs have declared that the Institute of the Society emanated from a divine inspiration, and that by enabling it to fulfil so entirely its two objects, individual perfection and that of its fellow-men, the Holy Spirit had inspired Ignatius de Loyola with the means best calculated for rendering it useful to the Holy Roman See.

Thus speaks Gregory XIII. in his bull *Quanto fructuosus*; where, in making mention of the Order established by St. Ignatius, and the manner in which he organized the body of his Company, and composed it of different members, he expressly acknowledges his *divine instinct*. Gregory XIV., after having recognized in the bull *Ecclesiæ Catholicæ*, the necessity of maintaining in all their integrity those rules which had been established by founders who were animated by the Spirit of God, and who had acted with the approbation of the Apostolic See, afterwards adds; "It would greatly endanger all regular discipline and spiritual perfection, and would tend to the ruin and overthrow of the whole Order, were the Institutes of the founders to be changed or subverted under any pretext whatsoever, after they have been accepted in the congregations or general assemblies, and confirmed by the holy Apostolic See."

We may apply to this subject what an ancient writer says of portraits; that when time or some accident has effaced their colors, and lessened their resemblance, we ought not to retouch the features, but merely to refresh the coloring, while preserving the original drawing; thus restoring them to their first appearance, instead of making a new portrait under the same name.

Finally, to prove the wisdom and solidity of all the different parts of our Institute, I shall merely add, as the

résumé of all eulogiums, that the Roman Rota justly styles them Papal constitutions, in a decision wherein, after having enumerated the approbation received by the Institute from Julius III., from the two Popes Gregory XIII. and XIV., and from Paul V., "by whose letters the Institute, Constitutions, Statutes, and Decrees are confirmed," it adds, "so that no doubt can be entertained of the validity of said Constitutions, which are to be deemed Papal." Four Pontiffs have since confirmed them in the most formal manner by bulls, wherein they have expressly forbidden any person whatsoever, and under the heaviest penalties, to have the rash presumption to condemn or attack them, under the pretext of doing good, or under the shadow of zeal for the re-establishment of their correctness. Nor is it more permissible for the members of the Society itself to lay a hand upon it, as we may see in the constitution *Ecclesiæ Catholicæ* of Gregory XIV.

CHAPTER III.

Examination of the Constitutions.

AFTER having shown in a general point of view the wisdom of the Institute of St. Ignatius, we are now going to describe more particularly the organization of the whole body of the Constitutions, as written by him. They are distributed into ten parts, all united together and dependent upon each other, according to the natural union which subsists in every well-regulated community, between its formation, its increase, and its preservation.

In the first part, Ignatius enumerates the qualities of soul and body which must be required from each candidate, as well as those which must exclude him, and which if unknown at first, and afterwards discovered, would annul his admission. But as all the members do not answer to the hopes conceived of them, which renders their removal from the Society advisable, our holy Founder points out in the second part the cases which render expulsion necessary, and the manner of the expulsion.

Those who remain, and who undergo the trials of the novitiate, require assistance in their spiritual advancement, as well as a rule for assisting them to preserve their physical strength, without which they could not endure the fatigue, which each, according to his talents, must support in the service of his neighbor. This is especially treated of in the

second part. But as no one could be capable of fulfilling the duties necessary for attaining the particular object of the Institute, without a more than ordinary knowledge of literature, the holy Founder lays down very much at length in the fourth part, every thing relating to the studies, grades, schools, sciences, languages, in short to the formation and government of a university. He also speaks of the discipline of the colleges, and the means of supporting them, because the course of study is followed there, and not in the professed houses.

So far then he treats of the qualities which prepare an individual for his admission into the Society, *by the profession of the four vows*; so that if he also satisfies all that is required of him, in science and virtue, he may then be admitted if he desires it; but in the fifth part, the conditions of this admission are laid down, as well as those of the inferior grade of *spiritual coadjutor*, in which those whose want of capacity prevents them from rising higher, usually remain.

The sixth part contains rules for the conduct of those who are admitted into the Society, towards themselves especially in all that concerns the observance of their vows. The seventh prescribes their duties towards their neighbors, whether in the different ministrations of the Order, or in the special mission in which the holy Apostolic See or the General may employ the Society.

Up to this point, all that concerns the formation of the Order as a whole, has been treated of. The two parts which follow relate to the Head or General. The eighth treats of the union which must exist between the Head and the Members, and of his election by the general congregation, to whom the nomination of the General of the Order belongs. In the ninth, the relations of the General with the Company are treated of, together with his authority over them, and

theirs over him ; as well as certain rules tending to render the government useful. Finally, in the tenth part, the means for the maintenance and increase of the Society are laid down.

Such is the order and the connection which unites and divides the ten parts of the Constitutions written by St. Ignatius.

However, before his death he had not yet given them forth as absolutely terminated and positively decided upon ; and for this reason, in the first general congregation held after him, the question was put as to whether any alteration might be made in Constitutions which had not received the seal of immutability from the Founder. Our ancient memoirs explain to us why he had not printed them. He wished, in his prudent foresight, that wherever his Society might afterwards be established, it should present a uniform aspect, which he considered essential to its union, and even to its existence. Now this identity could not subsist in those countries where the difference of customs influencing the mode of life, and the means of action, would appear to divide the same Order into several branches ; presenting the appearance of so many different Orders, which would probably be productive of the most unfortunate consequences. It required the sanction of experience to avoid this serious evil, for the spirit frequently conceives what it is impossible to execute.

Therefore, in the year 1550, Ignatius called as many Professed as he could collect, to Rome, and gave them the Constitutions to examine, in order that they might decide, according to their knowledge of the different countries which they had travelled through, whether or not they contained any rules which could not be universally observed. He did not stop there. At the end of three years, he sent copies

of them to all the Superiors in the different parts of Europe, desiring them to require their observance, and to form their definitive opinion concerning them, according to the results of their application.

When the first general congregation assembled after the death of the holy Founder, it found the Constitutions in this condition. It was decided that nothing that was essential could be changed, before being submitted to general deliberation; that some variation might be made in things of less importance, yet only when this should be proved necessary by strong reasons, or from experience. The same assembly decided wisely concerning certain regulations which were not contained in the body of the Constitutions. They did not know whether they had received a last sanction from Ignatius, and assigned to each its place and suitable degree of importance.

The Constitutions were then transcribed from the original, faithfully compared with the text, and afterwards signed and sealed according to the orders of the Assembly, by Father John Polancus, the Secretary of St. Ignatius. They were then translated by him from the original Spanish into Latin; and when they had been again examined and compared with those which they had adopted, were given to be printed. I shall now give some explanations as to our dress.

There is no particular costume in the Society. As for the upright collar which we wear, St. Ignatius, who was a Spaniard, had borrowed it from the modest costume of the priests of his country; and the surtout which our students wear instead of cloaks, was adopted by him in imitation of those of the University of Paris, where he had himself studied, and which had sent the first students to his Society.

Yet this dress is not so exclusively adopted by us,

as to make it necessary for us to wear it in all countries. We may adopt another, if there is any good reason for doing so, or if the customs of the place make it advisable; but in our clerical quality, it ought always to be an ecclesiastical habit. As for the form and material, three conditions were prescribed by St. Ignatius; modesty, conformity to the customs of the place where we live, and to the spirit of poverty.*

Another reason also existed for not subjecting us to a particular and singular dress; the new heresies having excited in the north of Europe an extreme antipathy for the religious habit, and the Society being destined to be perpetually in contact with them, it was prudent not to impose a dress upon us, which would have caused us to be shunned like wild beasts, by the very persons whom we hoped to lead back to the right path, by having familiar intercourse with them. Thus, amongst the Gentiles, where the habit of the literary men, such as is worn by the mandarins in China and the brahmins in India, is held in the highest honor, we lay aside our ecclesiastical garments for a time, and adopt the former; and in wholly heretical countries where the latter would not be tolerated, we dress as shopkeepers, doctors, artists, or even servants, that we may communicate with the concealed Catholics, without exciting suspicion.

There is another point in which we differ from other Orders: we have not the obligation of the choir in our Society, but each recites the office in private; which appeared so improper to Father Dominick Soto, that having in the first place advanced the proposition, that no approved Order can by any means be dispensed from this so essential part of prayer, he adds: "I speak of the ancient Orders; for any new Society, withdrawing itself from this obligation, would

* *Ut honestas sit; ut ad usum loci, in quo vivitur, accommodatus; ut professioni paupertatis non repugnet.*

not deserve the name, since it would be deprived of that which gives to an Order its greatest lustre." Words which an author, who is at once very solid and very modest, cannot avoid calling most badly said, since they would annihilate as an *Order*, every Society where the choir is not in use ; as if the essence of a religious Order consisted in the public chanting of the Office ; while it is notorious that in many very regular Orders, the preachers, professors, and others employed in functions highly important to the Church and to the faithful, are dispensed from assisting at the choir.

All the establishments of the Company are composed either of novitiates, colleges, or professed houses. In the first, all the novices are daily occupied for five hours in purely spiritual exercises, such as meditation, reading, and four examinations, two of which refer to all the actions of the day, whilst the two others, called particular examinations, are, the one upon mental prayer or the neglect of it, and the other upon the quality most essential for each individual, whether to eradicate or to acquire. Besides this, the novices have several months of pilgrimage during the year, of serving the sick in the hospitals, and they are also employed in the most humble labors and in the meanest offices. Their only subject of conversation is of things relating to God ; they never labor together in manual works, such as in making hair-shirts and disciplines, without listening to the reading of some pious book ; in short, it may be said that sleep alone suspends their spiritual exercises. If the days were longer and their strength greater for the endurance of such a tension of mind, they would be prolonged.

The novitiate lasts two years ; which time is necessary for acquiring a spirit proper to the Institute, which especially consists in perfect purity of conscience, a contempt for

and an entire abnegation of self, a complete empire over our passions, unshaken firmness in virtue; and, in short, in the union of the whole soul with God. Could such mental labor, so unceasing and so severe, be compatible with the service of the choir? In the colleges, moreover, the students teach and study; yet this does not dispense them from meditation, self-examination, and other spiritual exercises; and it would be impossible to add other intellectual labors to these, which already seem to demand more strength than nature usually gives; insomuch that there are many of these young men, whose slight form and frequent raising of blood, prove too clearly how unwise it would be to add more labor, even in the case of those whose constitution has hitherto resisted such trials.

These literary labors comprehend no less than thirteen years, from the instructions given in the lowest classes up to rhetoric, and from rhetoric to theology inclusively. In the professed houses we find the evangelical laborers, who, as Ignatius observes in one of his letters, must always hold themselves ready girded to set forth upon the distant Missions on which they may be despatched, at any moment, according to the spirit of their vocation, and the object of their Institute. When not sent thither by the orders of their Superiors, they find continual occupation in the pulpits, in the confessionals, in the hospitals, or in the other exercises of their holy ministry: whether in assisting the sick, or in instructing children in the Christian doctrine; for such are the labors of the Fathers who live in our colleges, without occupying themselves in the office of teaching.

In regard to penitential practices, the Society has not laid down any fixed or determined rules. Can this be believed by those who have read the strange and unheard of declamations and assertions of our enemies? Thus, for in-

stance, the Lutheran preacher, Melchior Tolet, and those who have repeated his assertions, have represented the Society as being divided into two parts, the one composed of executioners, and the other of the condemned victims; the first an assemblage of infamous wretches, the latter of malefactors. To prove this, they pretend that our houses contain certain subterranean caverns, to which we descend by secret passages. There are collected the machines and instruments for inflicting the most cruel tortures; red-hot irons, wooden horses, chains, whips, &c.; destined for the unfortunate individuals who have been imprudent enough to descend into this infernal abode. We, ourselves, are the executioners; and to render us more formidable, we wear horrible masks and are dressed as brigands. The victims are taken from amongst our own brethren. Some have their bodies broken, their arms twisted until the joints are dislocated; others are sprinkled with freezing or boiling water; some are tied to stakes, others are crushed between two boards; all are treated according to the inspiration of the moment. The miserable sufferers must not give a sign of existence by the slightest motion, nor allow a sigh to escape them; for as the eagle accustoms her little ones to gaze upon the sun, such is the manner in which, say they, the Society accustoms her children to suffer torture with patience. By these trials, she judges whether or not they deserve to enter amongst the professed members, and of their capability of going forth to convert the heretics and Gentiles, so as to insure the honor and reputation of the Order. For the man who leaves these caverns, coming forth as from an assault in which he has combated with death, will fear it so little when afterwards threatened by it, that he will preach upon the scaffold, and sing upon the funeral pyre. And even should their courage sink under these atrocious tortures, they at least learn from them to count the

severity of our observances as trifling, and especially to obey at the slightest sign from their Superiors.

This is the dark side of the picture ; but here is a more seducing description. Certain authors pretend that our houses are a terrestrial paradise, where no sign of penance can be found ; where we live in the midst of abundance and delight. Thus some crown us with thorns, and others with roses ; and each forms for himself an imaginary portrait, like the sculptor whose chisel can produce from a block of marble, either a monster or a god. But a truce to these puerile fictions. We shall only observe, that between no penitential practices being admitted into an Order, and the adoption of general observances of that nature, there is a wide gulf. The rule of the Society in this respect, has been inspired by the most profound wisdom, and is perfectly in harmony with the object of its Institute.

Ignatius was well aware, after the experience of so many years, how useful penitential exercises are, and how far we require their aid towards leading a spiritual life. He knew also how absurd it would have been in tracing a plan for the most perfect mode of life, to prohibit those means which facilitate its practice. For this reason, he wished his Society to be subjected to hardships and mortifications, but wisely regulated according to the special aim proposed by the Institute, by the judgment of the Superiors, and by individual strength ; so that their excess alone might be prevented. All the rest is admitted in the Society, and those members who should entirely abstain from exterior mortification, when the state of their health permits it, would not comply with the rule.

The examples of Lainez, Francis Borgia, Peter Canisius, Silvester Landini, and a thousand others, are sufficient proofs of this, and I should find it more difficult to justify the ex-

cess to which these practices have been carried, than to excuse ourselves from the contrary reproach.

During the lifetime of St. Ignatius, who however watched so carefully over the maintenance of his children within the exact limits of the Institute, and held the submission of the will in higher estimation than the sacrifice of the strength, I find in whole colleges, numerous societies of young men imposing such severe penances upon themselves as to injure their health. Letters from all places reached Ignatius, some even written by laymen, accusing some of his children of using corporal penance with more fervor than discretion, and entreating him to constrain them, in virtue of obedience, to preserve the strength necessary not only for their holy labors, but even for their existence. This was one of the motives which induced Ignatius to write the famous letter upon obedience, which we shall afterwards transcribe, and to restrain the practice of corporal mortifications with a degree of prudence, which drew forth expressions of sincere approbation from Pope Julius III.

In the first place, penitential exercises being in themselves nothing more than useful means for bringing about the cure of the soul, ought to be employed only in a subordinate manner to the chief end towards which these very methods, and all those which assist us in attaining to perfection, and which tend to the welfare of our souls, should lead us. Is there then any thing which ought to astonish us, in the principle laid down by St. Ignatius? Corporal penance, he says, ought to be neither indiscreet, nor excessive, lest it should prove an obstacle to a still greater good.*

The same is applicable to solitude, clothing, and other

* *Corporis castigatio immoderata esse non debet, nec indiscreta, in vigiliis et abstinentiis, et aliis pœnitentiis externis, ac laboribus, quæ et nocumentum afferre, et magna bona impedire solent.*

such matters, which have all been determined by the same motive. In fact, it is easy to prove that an ordinary mode of living, at least in appearance, might facilitate our relations with our fellow-men; and to be convinced of this, we need only observe the conduct of the Son of God himself. Having come upon earth for the instruction of men, He no doubt knew the means most calculated for succeeding in this object. He mingles with all—He converses with all—He repulses no one. We meet Him in the desert, as at the feast of the rich man; we see Him attracting the attention of the Samaritan woman beside the well, and that of the Centurion; He adapts Himself to all, and yet He is every where Christ the Lord.

In what did His clothing differ from that of the crowd that surrounded Him? Yet I am far from saying, that Our Lord in not leading an austere life externally, or in wearing an ordinary garment, condemns those who act differently in these respects. Who has commended as He did the life of his great Precursor, who wore a garment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle; whose meat was locusts and wild honey? One man is attracted towards virtue by an amiable exterior, which harmonizes with his character and education; whilst another seems only to be affected by the astonishment which he feels in observing a life of extraordinary austerity, a living picture of elevated holiness. Let each one adopt the mode of life which suits his vocation; there is room for all in the bosom of our common mother.

God indeed often grants to those whom He has chosen to fulfil the apostolic duties, a certain suavity and natural amiability, added to their great supernatural gifts, which enable them to gain over souls to the faith, and to lead them to salvation. When reflecting upon the powerful attraction which drew us first towards them, and afterwards towards

spiritual things, we might apply to them what Gregory Nazianzen relates of himself; that when he appeared in public to instruct the people, the inhabitants of Constantinople flocked to hear him, and seemed to hang upon his words. He compares them also to rings detached from an iron chain; if a piece of loadstone is presented to them, the nearest becomes fastened to it, then the next of those first rings, which soon form a long chain united by invisible attraction.

This was more especially the case with the Apostle of the Indies, Francis Xavier, who united to his admirable sanctity such pleasing manners, that he seemed to attract, as if by enchantment, those who conversed with him. It frequently happened that when forced to proceed where God and the wants of so many nations called him, he was obliged to set out by night, and without giving any warning, in order to escape the tears and entreaties by which the people would have endeavored to detain him.

Besides, in regard to penance, St. Ignatius has decided that the Superiors are to be the judges upon that point. They being placed in a position to judge between the true object of the Institute and the strength of the members, are competent to direct their exterior mortifications, so as to make them beneficial to their individual progress, without injuring the entire Society.

Nature taught the barbarians themselves to act with wise discretion towards animals, in proportion to the nature of the labors required from them for the public utility; hence the punishment decreed by Theodoric to whoever should make a race-horse carry a weight above fifty kilograms.*

* *Nimis enim absurdum est (says he), ut a quo celeritas exigitur, magnis ponderibus opprimatur.*

Nevertheless, apart from the Constitutions written by the hand of the holy Founder, other very salutary rules have been traced regarding corporal penance.

First. We should have recourse to it in order to conquer the temptations of the devil, when they incline us to sin.

Second. If we are inclined to any predominant passion, which impels us to act in a manner unbefitting the holy state which we have embraced, we should treat ourselves with rigor until we have overcome it, and especially at every relapse we should impose a fresh penance upon ourselves.

Third. In all times of public or private distress, or when we would obtain some especial favor from God, we ought to humble ourselves before Him, according to the ancient practice of the Saints, by watchings, by fasting, and by bodily mortifications.

Fourth. We must select from amongst the different penitential acts, those which, whilst they mortify the senses most, are least injurious to the health, since were it to become too much enfeebled, we could no longer endure any.

Fifth. As we ought always to distrust the weakness of the senses, which too easily induce us to believe that every thing which is repugnant to them, is impossible to be endured; we are enjoined never to abandon one austerity without replacing it by another, different in its nature, but not less severe.

Sixth. Our chief object ought to be to conquer the spirit rather than the flesh; and the passions more than the body. For both these victories are necessary; but the first always, for all men, and above all things; whilst the other is so only according to the opportunities or particular dispositions of each individual.

And yet, although the Society admits of no decided measurement of external penances, it nevertheless is entitled

to be considered as an Order of strict and austere observance.

In the first place every member must undergo a novitiate of three years; two at his entry, and one when his studies are terminated, and when he must resume as a child his first lessons in spiritual things, *in schola affectus*, as St. Ignatius calls that year of probation. The object of this is, that drawing near to God by long and constant meditation, that fervor of heart may be rekindled which it is difficult to preserve in the midst of studies which occupy the mind and fatigue the body. Thus the holy Founder would frequently remark, that he was in general quite satisfied when his children finished their studies with the spirit which animated them at their commencement. During this last year, they must first follow for one whole month the Spiritual Exercises, which usually comprehend four hours of meditation daily, passed in complete retirement. Another month is consecrated to the Missions; a third to the most humble domestic services; and during these different periods, they are accustomed "to the constant practice of every thing calculated to foster humility; to an entire abnegation of all the pleasures of the senses, of their own will, of their own judgment; to every thing in short which can tend to increase the knowledge and the love of God within their hearts." These trials, comprehending the time devoted to study, may be prolonged for eighteen years; during which period they live under the guardianship and censorship of the different Superiors, by whom the conduct of each individual is scrupulously examined. If they find at length that any one does not possess the necessary moral strength or virtue for living in the Society, and that there appears no possibility of his acquiring these qualities, the Superiors have the right of separating him from their number, and restoring him to the world. It is on this account

that they delay so long before incorporating a member into the Order, or placing him in a superior grade, suitable to his talents.

Another rule is peculiar to us. It is that which leaves us so long upon the road as it were, which keeps us in suspense for the greater part of our lives, exposed to be expelled if any serious fault on our part renders it necessary. Moreover, we must always be ready to accept an humble or an elevated rank, a low or an honorable position, during our whole life, according to the pleasure of the General Superior. This circumstance alone, in the opinion of men capable of appreciating it, will be considered as a more severe mortification than any which could have been introduced into the Society by a more austere rule of life. It is evident that in order to endure it, a man must live an interior life, in perfect obedience and absolute submission to the will of God, and in a state of complete disengagement both from the world and from himself.

There is another trial not less painful, of which I have already spoken. It is the thirteen years' probation of a student, during which he is subjected to the strictest examination, and remains in constant dependence upon his superiors, as to whether he must cease or continue the courses he has commenced; bound to act according as they decide, whether they consider him unfit for certain studies, or whether they consider certain studies as injurious to him. Amongst these there are many who have to pass four, five, and in certain provinces eight or ten years in teaching; a laborious work, and requiring a degree of patience and humility which nothing can conquer. For it is necessary to devote at least five hours daily to instruct the children in religious knowledge, and in the elements of profane literature. Nor do we men-

tion here those particular cases which greatly increase their habitual occupations.

We must also add, that they are under a strict obligation never to receive any compensation for services rendered to their fellow-beings; nor any other reward but that of having contributed to the glory of God and the welfare of men; from whence it follows, that whatever alms may be offered to a member of the Society, he must not retain the value of a single farthing for himself.

Nor can any reward be received in the interior of our houses, for personal merit. The most learned, the most noble, the most useful, or even the oldest, are not treated differently from the others. Perfect equality reigns amongst all the members; and he who after having been distinguished in the world, becomes distinguished in religion, is not raised above the lowest of his brethren, and does not obtain a shadow of preference over him. All await their reward from God alone, who weighs each one in the balance of His justice, and Himself judges of their merit. In the spirit which animates the Society, their actions and motives having the glory of God as their sole object, pass unnoticed; nothing remains but the result which they produce.

Neither does age, nor labor, nor do the high offices which any one has held, give him a right to the slightest exemption; not even to the privilege of receiving or writing a letter without submitting it to the Superior; or of disposing of the most trifling object without his permission. In a word, each finds himself after a life passed perhaps in the performance of great, glorious, and unceasing labors, precisely at the same point as on the day when he began his novitiate. Thus we may truly say, that in the Society, the old men live like youths, and the youths like old men, for from the first are required the exact observance of the rules

and the zeal of youth; and from the second, all the constancy and maturity of advanced age.

What can be more complete than our submission to the orders of our Superiors, in every thing that concerns our state of life, the places we are to dwell in, the employments, the offices we are to be engaged in! Let the man of the world, let the Religious, who still preserves some portion of his independence, compare with his own lot, the burden imposed upon him who must depend entirely upon the will of others, even to the most intimate actions of his being, and in the smallest details of his life; and let them judge, whether such a system can belong to a relaxed Order.

For amongst us, no one can select his own place of residence, or establish himself in a room, or apply himself to any exercises, without having received an express order to do so; nor can he take possession of any thing which his Superior bestows upon him, without being always ready to give it up, whenever he thinks proper to require it.

We are also under the obligation of making known the secret thoughts of our soul to the spiritual father who directs and governs us in spiritual matters. Although for our own tranquillity and consolation, this must be done under a seal of inviolable secrecy, this circumstance does not prevent the natural repugnance of the human heart to have every thought which crosses it laid bare, however humiliating it may be, whether proceeding from inherent vice, or from the suggestions of the Evil One. Another and not less painful mortification is the complete surrender which we must all make of our reputation, since any one who becomes informed out of confession, of a fault, whether serious or slight, committed by one of us, may denounce it to the Superior, without even giving previous warning to the guilty person. It is true that he gives the information not to a judge, but to a

father, in order that he may assist the sinner to return to virtue. For this reason, amongst the different interrogatories in the examination which all must undergo before entering upon this religious life, is the following, expressed by the holy Founder, in these words: For the furtherance of his spiritual progress, and especially in order to inspire him with a more entire submission, and to inflict a salutary humiliation upon him, he is asked, whether he will consent to have all his faults and imperfections henceforward denounced to the Superiors out of the tribunal of penance, by whosoever may observe them? *

This Constitution, approved of by the Sovereign Pontiff, conformable to strict justice, and holy according to all the rules of perfection, has appeared so extremely rigorous, that it has been held by a modern writer as madness, and an extravagant relinquishment of personal honor; while before him, Banez, without precisely indicating the Society, appears to have had it in view, when writing upon the observances of his own Institute, he says, that it certainly appears to him a hard thing to see a whole religious community subjected to so severe a regulation; and that it would be apt to trouble the mind of one still imperfect, thus to see his hidden faults revealed to his Superior.†

* *Ad majorem in spiritu profectum, et precipue ad majorem submissionem, et humiliationem propriam, interrogetur, an contentus sit futurus, ut omnes errores, et defectus ipsius, et res quæcumque, quæ notatæ in eo, et observatæ fuerint, superioribus per quemvis, qui extra confessionem eas acceperit, manifestentur.*

† Contr. Theol. mor. tom. S., tract. 3, contr. 3, n. 28. These are his words: *Mihi profecto durum videtur, ut tota communitas religionis profiteatur tantum rigorem, in cujus executione postea, qui non fuerint valde perfecti, facile perturbabunter, videntes passim sua delicta occulta, nota esse Prælato.*

Yet this rule is practised in our Order, and no trouble has resulted from it. We no doubt owe this fact to that heavenly assistance termed the grace of vocation, which God always grants according to the necessities of the Institute to which each one belongs.

Finally, for those faults which are so slight as not to amount even to venial sins, public penances are imposed, and no one would be suffered to remain in the Society, whose mortal sins should be known to his Superiors otherwise than through confession, as was intimated at the commencement of the Society, by order of St. Ignatius, through the medium of Father Martin Olave, to the Roman college, and through it to the whole Society.

I have thus exhibited a part of the austerities and moral severity of our Institute. It is easy to understand that the necessity of renouncing our own judgment, that the annihilation of self, whatever natural talent we may possess; that complete obedience, entire dependence upon the will of others, perfect abandonment of personal reputation, are all of them matters to which the soul does not grow accustomed, as the body may do to fasting and hair cloth; but on the contrary, that we are more disposed to feel their severity as we advance in age, in authority, and in every species of merit.

CHAPTER IV.

Examination of the different degrees or grades to which we are subjected in the Society.

I AM now going to treat of the different grades or classes which exist amongst the members of the Society. Some are there in a progressive state, others in a permanent situation. Amongst the first, we must range the novices, who are submitted to trial for two years, until two things are discovered; whether the Order suits them, and whether they suit the Order. When the satisfaction is mutual, they are admitted to the three customary religious vows; they then begin a second probation, longer and entirely different from the first.

In this they are tried by the Order, with a view to discover for what offices they are suited; but they themselves have no longer a right to examine the subject; on the contrary they are bound by a particular vow, to accept whatever position the General pleases to assign them. The positions to which these trials lead them, are of two kinds; one is that of spiritual coadjutor, the other of professed Religious; and in order that we may better appreciate the propriety and even necessity of this system, we must observe, that as nature usually aspires towards forming a perfect work, though not always successful in its endeavors, so the first object of the Company is to prepare all whom it receives, to become *professed religious of the four vows*, which are as

it were the foundation and substance of its being. But to follow the same comparison; as natural objects are not equally endowed with the inherent qualities which dispose and lead to perfection, but are formed of a more or less noble intermixture, from whence they draw an existence, which was not the primary object, yet is not without its utility; so, in the Society, all do not possess a capacity for learning or virtue, sufficient to obtain their reception as professed Religious; for which reason, there is an inferior grade, that of spiritual coadjutors, who are only permitted to take the three ordinary vows.

As nothing here below ever attains perfection at once; as every thing approaches towards it little by little, by degrees which at once prove a disposition to perfection, and the possibility of reaching it; so when the object is to form the professed members who take the four vows, the labor cannot be accomplished in a day, but must be effected by gradually infusing the spirit necessary for the object of their ministry into their hearts, along with science and learning. This new period of trial usually lasts several years, and those who are to be eventually admitted to the profession, are termed approved scholastics.

All this is clearly explained in the bull *Ascendente Domino*, of Gregory XIII., confirming our Institute. "Those," said he, "who are to be admitted to the profession of the four vows, require such a vocation that, according to the Constitutions of the Society and the Apostolic Decrees, they must be men humble and prudent in Christ; skilled in letters, perfectly pure in their lives, and having been long and diligently tried. They must be priests, long versed in all the works proper to the Institute; because they will have arduous ministrations to perform, for which reason all are not worthy of being admitted to this profession; and to

prove that they are so, long trials are necessary. For which cause, Ignatius, guided by divine inspiration, judged that the different members composing the body of the Society, should be so distributed that, besides those admitted by the General to the four vows, other priests, equally subjected to long and difficult trials, as to their doctrine and the purity of their lives, should be admitted only to the rank of Spiritual Coadjutors, after having publicly pronounced the three simple vows, in presence of the Superior."

These arduous ministrations, of which the Sovereign Pontiff speaks, as belonging to those who profess the four vows, regard their services to their fellow-men generally, and principally their duties as Missionaries; since by this fourth vow, which truly constitutes the *profession*, they are solemnly bound to go in the service of the Apostolic See to whatever part of the world they may be sent by order of the Pontiff; whether amongst barbarous or civilized people, or to idolatrous or heretical nations, without examination or excuse, as also without reward. Thus the professed members may be considered as nothing more than travellers, always ready to set off to the furthest extremities of the world, and daily awaiting the order for their departure; as the same Pontiff expresses it in another bull.*

It is easy to perceive that this disposition of mind requires a total abnegation of self, a mind continually prepared to sacrifice life in the service of God, whatever that service may be; profound learning and ability to support the trial of discussions with heretics; ardent zeal for the salvation of souls, patience in suffering, courage in the midst of danger, humility when successful, an entire union of the heart with God; and in the midst of so much labor and distraction of

* *Veluti viatores, omne tempore parati, expectantesque diem et horam, qua, vel ad extremas orbis regiones, cum venit usus, emittantur.*

thought, perfect purity of conscience, having often to live alone, without other witness of their actions than God, and surrounded by a thousand temptations to offend Him.

Those Jesuits who do not attain this superiority, remain in the grade of spiritual coadjutors; though in some circumstances, a useful talent, or a signal service rendered to the Society, will induce the General to raise a priest who has only taken the three vows to the grade of a professed member. This rarely occurs, and a dispensation is necessary to enable him to leave the class he is already in, and to incorporate him more intimately with the Society. On such occasions, this step is taken more out of regard to the individual than for the good of the Order; whereas in all that concerns the professed members of the four vows, the good of the Order, whose existence chiefly reposes upon them, is principally consulted. The ordinary course, therefore, is that the simple vows are taken by those only who are never destined to rise higher. These simple vows also require some observations.

In the first place, when after the novitiate these vows are taken by one of the members, he is as truly and absolutely a Religious, as the Professed members of the Society or of any other religious Order; and this is expressly declared by Gregory XIII. in his bull *Quanto fructuosius*. Notwithstanding this, many writers have boldly affirmed that there are no Religious in the Society but those who have professed; and that all those who have not taken the four solemn vows are seculars, subject to the jurisdiction of the bishops, and at perfect liberty either to enter into any other Order, or to return into the world.

But as the Pontiff had clearly made a statement to the contrary in the bull already mentioned, these writers had recourse to a new expedient. The Pope, they said, had only

spoken doctorally in his private capacity, and his decision might be erroneous. Two years afterwards he published another bull, *Ascendente Domino*, to decide the question. In it he repeats in the most precise terms, that the simple vows taken by a member of the Society constitute him truly a Religious, precisely as solemn vows do in other Orders. He also declares that he does not speak thus in a doctoral and private capacity, and condemns the bold rashness of those who have given so false an interpretation to his words.

In the second place we must observe, that these vows are in their nature perpetual, and cannot cease to be so but through some extraneous cause. He who has pronounced them binds himself to live and die in the Society, which has no right to expel him as long as his conduct is regular. But, as we have already observed, he still remains, after taking the simple vows, in a state of trial, the very nature of which implies a possibility of being accepted or rejected, according as he is considered qualified or the reverse, for the fulfilment of his duties and the object of the Institute. It would also have been impossible to receive candidates upon trial for so many years, during which period they remained free from all engagement. What disorders might have taken place amongst so vast a number of young men, had they not been held to obedience, poverty, and chastity! Or in the supposition that they might have been subject to these simple vows only during the time of trial, and until their admission to another degree, the danger would not be less imminent; for as Pius V. wisely remarked in his bull *Æquum reputamus*: "Their studies being finished, these young men might have returned into the world, and the Company, deceived and frustrated in their expectations by men who had been instructed at their expense and by their care, would be deprived of able members, who might have labored in the vineyard of the Lord,

according to the rules established by the Society, and have observed its regulations and practices." *

It is clear that perpetuity was an indispensable condition of simple vows. A man is perfectly aware of what he binds himself to before he takes them; his consent is freely given, and there is no injustice done him in his obligation to remain in the Society, although they are not bound to keep him, should his dismissal be considered necessary from just causes and after mature examination.

Besides, every member of the Order who has been lawfully rejected, is by that circumstance disengaged from his vows, and freed from every obligation. He finds himself precisely at the point from whence he started, and the reason is evident. The bond which he had contracted towards God and towards the Society, was not the direct object of his vocation; it was a preliminary step towards its attainment; and when the object fails, the means for attaining it become useless.

The vow of poverty does not deprive the person who is under trial of the ownership of the property which he before possessed, nor of the possibility of acquiring more, until he has attained a fixed and determined position, although he is indeed deprived of the use of his property, and cannot, any more than a professed Religious, dispose of a single farthing without the consent of his Superiors. Were this not the case, and were those who are undergoing the preliminary trial, to lose all after-right to their property, they would be exposed to a grievous disappointment should the Society not receive them, and it would be too cruel to send them back into the world in a state of miserable beggary.

* *Delusa et defraudata viris sua impensa et labore doctis, carere literatis, qui operam in vinea Domini juxta ipsius Societatis instituta, moremque præstari solitam, valerent adimplere.*

That in a regular Order, a member may be considered as a true Religious when he has taken simple vows, from which bishops cannot dispense him; that the vow of poverty does not preclude the possession of property; that a man may be bound to remain in the Order, and yet that the Order is not in so strict a sense obliged to keep him there; that his expulsion loosens him from every vow; all these circumstances form, it must be confessed, a totally new organization. For this reason, as Gregory XIII. says, "some persons, judging according to the usual customs, forms, and statutes of other Orders, and not comprehending either the Institute of the Society, nor its particular constitutions, nor the force of the simple vows approved of in its case by the Holy Apostolic See, have made great efforts to destroy it." Yet this Institute is firmly based upon the Apostolic authority, which has approved of all its various parts by numerous bulls, and which has even forbid their being again questioned, under any pretext, or any interpretations or commentaries made in regard to them.

Having thus made known the hierarchy established in the Society, the nature of its existence and its means of action, we must now show our readers the measures prescribed by the holy Founder for its preservation and increase.

The first is undoubtedly the selection of the members admitted into it; for however great the natural strength of a body may be, unwholesome food will introduce vitiated humors into the system, which weaken the constitution, and finish by destroying the health. In the same way, if an Order is not scrupulously attentive in its choice amongst the candidates for admission, it becomes recruited with vicious or corrupt members, of whom it cannot afterwards rid itself without difficulty, and whom it cannot keep without danger. Every other mode of entrance into the Company, excepting

by that gate which St. Ignatius opened in the first part of his Constitutions, may be called, as St. Francis Borgia truly remarks, a gate of perdition.

The world is then wrong when it complains that we do not fish with nets, which, according to St. Ambrose, would bring in the multitude, *turba concluditur*; but rather with the line, which enables us to choose; for Religious Orders are not destined to disembarass families of their useless members, whom they would willingly offer to God; it is on the contrary necessary that the precautions taken in the selection of a candidate should be in proportion to the sublimity of the vocation, and to the difficulty of the functions which it requires. Therefore, an Order whose members are not destined to remain shut up in their cells, to devote their time solely to working out their own salvation, but who must constantly leave their retreat and devote themselves to the welfare and utility of their neighbors, must necessarily seek for more than ordinary individuals.

"I act as they do;" said Henry IV. of France, in answer to the Parliament of Paris who made this objection to us. "When I levy a body of troops, I choose the best soldiers, otherwise my armies would be composed of men more ready to fly than to fight." Such was also the motto of a skilful master in the art of war. "That the strength of the kingdom and base of the Roman name depend on the first choice of the soldiers."*

However, not all the care taken by a prince can prevent him from frequently finding himself unsuccessful, and his hopes frustrated, or from discovering that he possesses mere machines, where he thought to find brave and vigorous men. The same would happen in a Society which counted only by

* Veget, lib. C. 7.

numbers, without weighing the true value of each member. It would be like a *Leah*, fruitful indeed; but who would multiply the children of the Church without increasing its joy.

According to the laws laid down by St. Ignatius, a candidate in order to be received amongst us, must possess certain virtues, and be exempt from certain faults. And first, he must not have been stained with heresy, through his own fault, nor separated from the Church through schism; he must neither have been a homicide, nor publicly known to have been guilty of any great crime. Whoever is bound to another by marriage or servitude; whoever is incapable, through weakness of body or of mind, of rendering himself useful; whoever has already worn the habit of a monk or a hermit, excepting in a military Order, cannot belong to the Society.

A dispensation from these engagements can never emanate but from the Pope, or from him to whom the Pope has delegated a special authority for that purpose. The fifth Congregation has for wise reasons added another rule, though not so rigorously enforced; against the admission of such as are of Jewish or Mahometan lineage. Besides these impediments there are others less important, and the prudence of the Superiors decides, whether or not they render a candidate incapable of attaining the object proposed by the Institute. Such are, for example, the circumstance of his being less than fifteen, or over fifty years of age; a notable absence of judgment, memory, or intelligence; a natural stiffness of disposition, which might prevent him from bending under the yoke of discipline; long habits of disorderly living; a want of rectitude of intention; the having contracted debts; weakness of health; although this last objection was usually set aside by the holy Founder, when the postulant had no want

of virtue or capacity; for he would often say that men who appeared scarcely alive, would frequently render greater services than those who enjoyed robust health.

As for the qualities required of those who desire to live amongst us, they consist of all those in general, whether of soul or body, which dispose a man to live virtuously; but there is one especially which seems to predominate over all the others, and which I shall describe in the words of one of the Fathers of the Society. "I have said," he writes, "that Father Ignatius possesses a certain Christian magnanimity which, by the assistance of God, has led him to embrace, in order to the perfection of our Institute, many great and excellent things for the service of God. This virtue is therefore not less necessary to us than to him, since we ought always to be prepared to practise all the most perfect observances prescribed by our Constitutions. And let us not be accused of presumption or confidence in our own virtue, when we undertake, through obedience, the difficult things which are prescribed by our Institute; for the magnanimity which gives us the strength to do so, has humility and self-knowledge for its basis."

Nor after all these details, shall we fear to be accused in our turn of presumption, if we say with so many men of eminence, whether belonging to our Institute, or acquainted with it solely from observation; that a very particular vocation is necessary for living in it.

Philip Melancthon, when on his death-bed, heard his friends conversing around him upon the arrival of Francis Xavier in the Indies; and of the conversions which he was effecting there. The privileged disciple of Luther then began to regret that he had lived long enough to hear news capable of making him die of grief, had his last hour not come; and starting up suddenly, and looking angrily around him;

“Good God!” said he, “What do I behold? I see the whole world filled with Jesuits!” “What would he have said,” adds the Counsellor Florimond, “had he seen the Society as it now is; spread over the whole universe, with its provinces, professed houses and colleges?” Arnold, with the same feelings as Melancthon, afterwards bitterly complained that Nature, usually so wise in the forethought with which she renders animals so much the less fruitful in proportion as they are more savage, had transgressed her own law in regard to us, since we were daily seen to multiply to such an extent, that we should soon inundate the world. That man in his blindness could not perceive and still less admire the cause of an effect which appeared to him as fatal as odious; his ears were closed to the truth, and for him the words of the holy Pontiff Pius V. addressed to the Archbishop of Cologne, were without effect: “The various and immense fruits which the Church has derived from that Society, by the piety, charity, purity of morals, and sanctity of life of its members, has been acknowledged; and it has increased so rapidly within a few years, that there is hardly a single Christian country where it does not maintain colleges; and would to the Lord there were more of them, especially in the cities infested with heresy! For which reason we ought to protect and support that Society,” &c.

It appears to me that I can hardly dwell too long upon the difficulty of selecting candidates, and all the severity employed in their examination and trial can hardly be considered superfluous, if we judge from the portrait drawn by Father Nadal, of the qualities required in a Member of the Society, or rather by the words of Father Ribadeneira, the author of a letter which remained for a long period affixed to the first sketch of the Constitutions. “The rule which we follow,” says this Father, “requires that we should be

men crucified, and for whom the world itself is crucified; men who strip themselves of all their natural affections, to clothe themselves with Christ Jesus, and who, according to the words of St. Paul, show themselves to be the ministers of God in labors, in watchings, and in fastings; by their chastity, their learning, their sincere charity; who combat to the right and to the left with the arms of justice, in glory or in vileness, through good report or through evil report; patient in tribulation or in prosperity; men, in short, whose whole efforts tend to reach their celestial country, and who encourage others in the same desire by every means in their power, and by every effort which can be inspired by constant zeal for the furtherance of God's greater glory." *

"If I were ever to desire," said St. Ignatius one day, "that my life should be prolonged, it would be more especially that I might redouble my watchfulness in the choice of our subjects." And this he did as long as he lived; and for this very reason, refusing a vast number of candidates, he gave more positive strength to the Society, than if he had increased its numbers to those of a mighty army. This skilful architect examined his materials with scrupulous attention, and when he did not find them suitable for the construction of an edifice destined to become the house of God, and the abode

* *Homines mundo crucifixos et quibus mundus ipse siteru cifixus, vitæ nostræ ratio nos esse postulat. Homines, inquam, novos, qui suis se affectibus exuerint, ut Christum induerent: sibi mortuos, ut justitiæ viverent. Qui, ut divus Paulus ait, in laboribus, in vigiliis, in jejuniis, in castitate, in scientia, in charitate non ficta, in verbo veritatis se Dei ministros exhibeant per arma justitiæ à dextris et à sinistris, per gloriam et ignobilitatem, per infamiam et bonam famam, per prospera denique et adversa, maginis itineribus ad cælestem patriam et ipsi contendunt et alios etiam, quacumque possuit ope studioque compellant. maximum Dei gloriam semper intuentes.*

of the apostolic spirit, neither prayers nor importunities would ever induce him to employ them.

After admission came the trials which St. Ignatius imperatively required. "We prescribe in the first place," said he, "to those whom we have received, a certain number of days devoted to the *Spiritual Exercises*, accompanied by absolute retreat, general confession, long prayer, and in short by all which can conduce to an entire reformation, and a thorough knowledge of their vocation. We afterwards form them to mortification and humility, by employing them for some months in the most abject offices in the house, then in the service of the sick in the hospitals, for about one month; for the same space of time they are obliged to travel without money, or provision of any sort, so that being received with the poor in the asylums of misery, they may lay aside all human respect; and that, living upon the alms which they receive upon the road, they may lose all their attachment to the comforts of their paternal mansion, or to the refinements of the world. We also wish to teach them to depend upon God alone, and to consider as coming from Him alone the good or bad treatment which they receive." Ignatius afterwards examined how these different trials had been supported. He either went himself or sent the Father Minister to make inquiries amongst the patients in the hospitals where the newly admitted members had been severely treated during their residence, by the attendants of the Infirmary, who had purposely spared them neither reproofs nor fatigue, and had constantly imposed upon them the most loathsome employments in the service of the patients. It was also the custom for the novices to continue to wear the dress which they wore when they lived in the world, until it fell into rags. This was done for example to Don John de Mendoza, who had been Governor of the Castle of Saint Elmo in Naples, to Andrew

Trusio; to his kinsman Antonio Araoz, and to many others who like them, richly clad in velvet embroidered with gold, were obliged to wear the same dress for two whole years, and with it to serve in the lowest offices of the kitchen, and to beg in the streets of Rome. By this, it was intended to show them that it was not the external habit, but the spirit of mortification, which rendered them true Religious, and worthy members of the Society. The novices themselves acknowledged all the advantages which they derived from these trials, as is related by Father Gonzalez Silverio himself, who afterwards suffered glorious martyrdom for the Faith, in the kingdom of Monomotapa.

However rigorous the trials were to which the holy Founder subjected all who presented themselves to him for admission, he increased their severity in regard to those who were distinguished by their elevated rank in the world, and put them to still more difficult tests. For when the great ones of the earth contract a spirit suitable to a Religious Order, they are, as St. Ambrose says, like the beautiful Tower of David in Jerusalem, "a bulwark and a glory;" but if, on the contrary, their strength and courage fail them, and they will neither turn backwards nor advance in virtue, they are very apt, in order to distinguish themselves, to employ the arms which they made use of in the world, and to resume its spirit, which they ought to have thrown off at the gate of the novitiate. Then they may be seen pushing themselves forward in courts, despising their inferiors, claiming more respect than other men, discontentedly fulfilling offices which they consider unworthy of them, constantly complaining of being arbitrarily governed, of no regard being paid to merit; and attributing to the injustice of their Superiors that which proceeds in fact only from their own incapacity.

It happens that these complaints too frequently make a great impression upon those who hear them, for the world cannot comprehend that riches, glory, and nobility add nothing to the merit of a Religious, unless he despises them himself. "Horses," says St. Ambrose, "have also their nobility, when they descend from certain royal or warlike races; but when they have entered the arena, where swiftness of foot can alone gain the prize, if they have hardly passed the starting-post when the others have reached the goal, of what advantage is their noble race, or who can complain if they are not valued on that account? *Nihil istud currentem juvat. Non datur nobilitate palma, sed cursui.*" And thus, in an Order where offices are never bestowed as a reward, it would be insupportable were the members to found their pretensions upon those things which the world admires, but which the man of the cloister must despise.

Another means of preserving the prosperous condition of the Society is, to banish those who would introduce disorder by failing to observe its regulations. This is a measure as necessary to its existence as for the human body to be purged of its vitiated humors, before their acridity entirely destroys its organs.

There ought, therefore, to be no toleration in the Company for certain faults, slight in themselves, but which persons accustomed to observe these matters, know to be the forerunners of much more grievous aberrations; which will be seen whenever those who commit them, being incorporated into the Order, shall enjoy greater freedom. It would be a source of immense detriment to the Society were such persons to be admitted, whether through that charity which Ignatius designates as imprudent, or through human considerations and a credulous hope of their amendment. Thus, to some who interceded for those whom he was about to dis-

miss, the Saint observed : " Had you been better acquainted with him for whom you intercede, would you have received him in the first instance ? Certainly you would not ; you must then dismiss him, for the trial which follows the first admission has no other object but that of ascertaining whether or not the candidate is suitable for the Society. I leave the reception to you ; leave the expulsion to me." Sometimes, when showing the house to strangers, who had come to visit it, he said to them at the door : " This is our prison ; it dispenses us from having any other in the house, or any people to imprison."

Nor had the advantages of birth and learning any greater influence upon Ignatius in inducing him to retain those who supported with difficulty the yoke of discipline. Thus he delivered the Society and himself from the uneasy spirit of Don Teotonio, son of the Duke of Braganza, and nephew of Emmanuel, King of Portugal ; and dismissed a cousin-german of the Duke of Bivona, related to John de Vega, viceroy of Sicily, the friend and benefactor of the Saint. In vain, Peter Ribadeneira prayed, wept, and supplicated in favor of this young man, who with tears in his eyes, offered to submit to the severest punishments ; his importunities could not touch what he called the mercy of St. Ignatius.

Besides several men of great learning, whom I shall afterwards mention, Ignatius also dismissed Christopher, the brother of James Lainez, who was nevertheless very dear to him. As Christopher had neither wherewith to live in Rome, nor to return to Spain, the same Ribadeneira entreated Ignatius to give him some money. He refused positively, and added these words : " Peter, had I all the gold in the world, I would not give one obolus to those who by their own fault have rendered themselves unworthy of being kept in the Order. They cannot expect that turning

their back upon God and religion, they are to be reimbursed in leaving the Society for the labors they have endured in it; as if they had not been given to God, but only lent to the Society; or as if after having daily received their necessary maintenance as interest, they were also to require that the capital should be restored to them as their due."

As for the motives which ought to determine an expulsion, instead of commenting upon what our holy Founder has written on the subject, in the second part of his Constitutions, I shall endeavor by mentioning some particular occurrences, to indicate the spirit which has guided the Society since its foundation, and the practice which it has followed. By this means we shall give a clearer idea of both.

My principal guides shall be St. Francis Xavier and Simon Rodriguez. The former required in the first place, and above all things, perfect innocence and a purity of conduct absolutely angelic; to preserve this unblemished, he would not tolerate even the shadow of the contrary vice. We learn from his Secretary that he dismissed a young man in high favor with the Duke of Bivona, together with eight of his companions, all of noble birth, and versed in Greek and Latin literature, on account of some slight faults which he had observed in them.

The second cause of expulsion was, inflexible obstinacy. Francis Marino, a native of Andalusia, was a man of great learning, and who had been employed, whilst living in the world, in managing the most important affairs. St. Ignatius named him minister* of a Professed house in Rome; but there he showed himself so much attached to his own opinions, when he had once decided upon them, that they could hardly be shaken even by superior authority, still less by

* In the Society of Jesus, the Minister is he who directs the material administration of a house, under the orders of the Superior.

entreaty or argument. Ignatius did not consider a man whose obstinacy rendered his obedience so difficult, as a fit person to govern others. He begun by depriving him of his office, and then endeavored to soften his character by subjecting him a second time to the *Spiritual Exercises*. It might have been supposed, could his promises and good resolutions have been relied on, that the remedies had been effectual; but their true spirit had no more penetrated his heart than a refreshing rain would soften the marble upon which it falls, when the water flows over the exterior surface, but all within remains hard and dry.

Jerome Nadal had judged correctly of his character, when he said that the obstinacy of Marino would throw discredit upon the Religious Exercises, because they would not produce their usual effect of transforming him into a new man. Nevertheless, Ignatius permitted Marino to resume his office, but he continued to give proofs of his former inflexibility. Ignatius being at length informed at a late hour of the night, of a fresh instance of this besetting sin on his part, instantly sent him an order to leave the house, without even waiting till morning. He acted thus peremptorily in hopes of giving a warning to others, and in conformity to his frequent remark, that he would not pass a night under the same roof with a man whose hard and obstinate spirit was incorrigible.

The same thing happened in the instance of another Spaniard, also named Marino, a doctor of the University of Paris, and the first who had professed philosophy in the college of Rome. There were some points of the Institute which did not suit him, and upon which he gave his opinion very freely. Ignatius sent for him, endeavored to bring him back to other views, and to make him understand that Aristotle could not be a standard for the Gospel, nor philosophy decide upon

spiritual things; but he found him so much wedded to his own ideas, that all the arguments of the Saint failed to make any impression upon his obstinate mind. He immediately dismissed him, and as the want of men capable of giving instruction was so much felt at that time, that during the course of the year they made trial of ten other professors; Father Louis Gonsalez could not help complaining to Ignatius of the loss which they had sustained in Marino; but he, with a smile, merely answered: "Well! go yourself and endeavor to convert him;" which he well knew was to propose an impossibility, because Marino was one of those men who may break but will never bend.

A third example was made of a German, who had been inspired by the demon with a strange madness; that of considering himself exempt from all subjection, and of having a right to govern every thing as he pleased, because the spirit of St. Paul resided in him. The most skilful theologians of the house, and Ignatius himself, were never able to restore him to common sense, or entirely to efface this dangerous fancy from his mind, so that they were at length obliged to expel him.

Nor would the holy Founder consent to keep those who struck out new paths of spirituality for themselves. There lived in the Roman College a priest and theologian, named Soldevilla, a native of Catalonia. He invented a new method of mental prayer, whose object was to produce raptures, which were in fact caused by an ardent imagination. Leaving the route usually followed in the Society, and not satisfied with deviating from it himself, he endeavored to lead others to partake of his error. For this purpose he had recourse to secret means of action, and succeeded in persuading several members of the college to meet him every night in a chapel, where they passed hours together in long

and fantastic meditations. It followed from this, that many lost their health, and one of the most learned amongst them fell into a decline.

Thanks to the vigilance of the Rector, these nocturnal meetings were at length discovered. Anxious to find out the origin of various extravagant notions upon spiritualism which he remarked amongst certain members, he surprised them at length in this meeting, which was entirely contrary to the rules. Ignatius was informed of it, and laid all the blame upon Soldevilla, its author. After having given him a long and serious reprimand, both in the refectory of the college and that of the house, he dismissed him to make, if he pleased, a public profession in the world of a code of spirituality, which he did not dare to teach in religion, excepting under a veil of mystery; besides assuming the office of teacher when he had scarcely begun to study as a scholar.

He nearly came to the same resolution with regard to two distinguished men, Francis Onofrio and Andrew de Oviedo, who was afterwards patriarch of Ethiopia. Enchanted with the pleasures of contemplation, they were desirous of becoming members of the Society, but at the same time wished to lead the life of hermits in a desert. They wrote upon the subject to St. Ignatius, not so much to obtain his permission, as to explain to him the motives of their conduct. At the same time, as they were men of solid virtue, and ready to submit to obedience rather than abandon the Society, they deferred their will to his. Ignatius reproved them in the severest terms, and threatened them with the punishment which those deserve, who by new and whimsical ideas bring trouble and division into the Society; namely, an entire separation from their brethren. He wrote upon the subject to the blessed Francis Borgia, begging him to use his endeavors to bring them back to the right path; but

they returned to it of themselves; and it was sufficient for them to know that they could never please God by displeasing those who governed them in His name.

Still less would Ignatius tolerate those defects, which might become a source of danger to his children, by giving them a bad example. Father Nadal having, on one occasion, preached aloud in the middle of a street in Rome, as much for his own mortification as for the good of his hearers; a noble Spaniard named Francis Zapata, denounced this holy action, as vile and unworthy of an honorable man. He even went so far as to go about the house turning it into ridicule, and calling the holy preacher a charlatan. It was midnight when Ignatius was informed of this. Without consulting any one, which he was usually in the habit of doing, he instantly decided upon Zapata's expulsion; ordered him to rise and resume his secular dress, and by daybreak he had left the house. The culprit acknowledged his error, and deeply repented of his conduct; but notwithstanding his sorrow, and ardent entreaties for readmission, Ignatius would never consent to receive him again amongst his children. After losing all hopes of returning to the Society, he took the habit of St. Francis, attained the highest reputation for learning and virtue, and although in a different Order, always preserved the respect and affection of a son for Ignatius and his Institute.

As a last example, I shall relate the follies and punishment of a priest, named William Postell, celebrated for his profound knowledge of mathematics, philosophy, theology, and medicine; who possessed, moreover, so thorough a knowledge of Greek, Latin and Hebrew, of the Syriac, Chaldean, and other languages, of which he himself published grammars, that he would sometimes boast that he could travel from France to China, without requiring the aid of an interpreter.

We are assured that he had wandered over the whole world to make observations upon the manners, forms of government, and different religious rites of all nations. He was greatly beloved by Francis I., King of France, by Margaret de Valois, Queen of Navarre, and by many of the Cardinals. In Paris, where he had taught for some time, he was regarded as a prodigy of learning, and the extent of his memory was considered miraculous.

This man, inflamed with an ardent desire to serve God in the Society, bound himself to do so by a vow; and one day, visiting the seven churches of Rome, laid his written engagement upon the high altar of each church. He particularly declared in these writings that he submitted his will and conduct to the orders of St. Ignatius, or of the Superior who should govern him in the name of God.

He then presented himself to St. Ignatius, was admitted, and from his piety and devotion, at the beginning of his residence in the Society, the most flattering hopes were conceived of him by the Superiors. But suddenly, he set himself up for a prophet, and announced future events by the aid of cabalistic mysteries, rabbinical chimera, and astrological science. He held so firmly to his belief in this art, that Ignatius vainly employed Lainez, Salmeron, and other grave and learned men to convince him of its puerility. Nothing could change his opinions, or induce him to renounce his errors.

Meanwhile, his predictions, far from being confirmed by events, were clearly proved to be false. It would occupy too much space, were we to relate all the means unsuccessfully put in practice by St. Ignatius to cure this man of his dangerous folly. At length, forced to apply an unusual remedy to so strange an evil, he put him into the hands of the Vicar of the Holy Office, a man of remarkable wisdom, in hopes

that his mildness and authority, joined to the arguments of the most skilful men in Rome, might awaken him from his error. But he decided, should the result be unfavorable, that he would not permit him to re-enter the Society. The Pope's Vicar was completely successful in his cure, which he operated partly by his own arguments, and partly by the raillery of several men of learning, who convinced the philologist of his manifest error.

Postell then wrote a recantation, in his own hand, in which he disavowed all his former prophecies, and promised that he would never again employ either his pen or his mind in so dangerous an occupation.

The Vicar of the Holy Office sent him back to Ignatius with this recantation and this promise, entreating him to receive him, and assuring him that he would find him transformed into a new man. Ignatius received him kindly, but as a means of precaution, as well as from charity, he gave him no other book to study but the Summa of St. Thomas, occupied him in manual offices in the house, and for some time would not permit him to celebrate the Holy Mysteries.

Postell assented to every thing with cheerful submission; but the angel of darkness had only given this truce to his criminal curiosity to renew his guilty suggestions with greater strength, and to enable him to drag others into the same error. This last intention was, indeed, defeated; for Ignatius, who watched him narrowly, no sooner perceived him returning to his former course, than he resolved to expel him from the house, and forbade all his brethren to speak to or even to salute Postell when they met, so greatly did he dread those dangerous errors for his children.

After this relapse, Ignatius was again entreated by one of the Cardinals to pardon him: but nothing could induce him to yield, or consent to receive the guilty man again.

The same Cardinal then received Postell into his house, where he made a number of extraordinary predictions ; after which, changing his plans, he went through the country preaching.

Soon after this, abandoned by the Spirit of God, he fell into grievous errors, and at length openly taught manifest heresies, and fled precipitately to Venice. There he formed a connection with a certain woman, and increasing in the wildness of his prophecies, announced that she was destined to be the Redemptrix of Woman as Christ was of Men, when the second coming of the Messiah, which he predicted, should take place. But in the midst of these chimerical prophecies, he was put in irons and sent to Venice, where he remained some time in prison.

Postell now saw to what his pride had reduced him ; he feared a punishment proportioned to his faults, and resolved to endeavor to escape from it by flight.

In pursuance of this resolution, he leaped from a window of his prison, fell heavily upon the earth, bruised his body severely, and fractured one arm. His cries led to his discovery ; he was again imprisoned, and a captivity of several years duration taught him to acknowledge the vanity of an art, which had proved unavailing in giving him a foreknowledge of these important events. When the period of his imprisonment had expired, or, according to some writers, when he had succeeded in making his escape, he withdrew to Basle ; and afterwards returning to France, again taught his follies and errors. He lived for nearly a hundred years ; and we are assured that before his death he was converted, and disavowed his false doctrines.

Although I have cited but a small number of members expelled by St. Ignatius, we must not conclude from this that he ever hesitated to dismiss those whom he had reason

to suspect. On one occasion, on Whitsunday, he sent back twelve at once to the Roman College, and no one ever saw him with a more serene countenance than on that day; for he was of the opinion of St. Francis Borgia, who would frequently say, in speaking of the members of the Society, that three things more especially pleased him: their entrance, their death, and their dismissal.

Ignatius required of all the Superiors, that they should follow the example which he gave them in this respect. Having learnt that in Portugal there was an occasional want of strict subordination, he reprimanded the Superior severely for having tolerated these abuses so long, through a feeling of mistaken charity; and sent him a positive order, in virtue of the obedience which he owed him, to dismiss irrevocably, whatever rank they belonged to, all those who should give proofs of a restless or insubordinate spirit.

According to this general order, Father Leonard Cleselio, Rector of the College of Cologne, out of fifteen of the members, dismissed more than the half; but soon after, reproaching himself for having acted with too much severity, he wrote to Ignatius to inform him of what he had done, and imploring his pardon, professed himself willing to submit to whatever punishment he thought fit to impose upon him. Ignatius returned a reply, in which he praised and blessed the Rector for what he had done, and desired him to pursue the same line of conduct in regard to the members whom he had retained in his college, should they resemble those whose dismissal he announced to him.

Now that the Society is so much more numerous, were five or six of the members to be dismissed in one day, the world would exclaim against us as abusing our privileges, and would insist upon it that we should not be permitted to dismiss any one, without a trial and without sentence being

pronounced. I ought however to remark, that an expulsion rarely takes place until not only the private Superiors have been consulted, but also the General and his assistants.

I know not if I ought to excuse myself for having hitherto represented our holy Founder under so severe an aspect; it is certain that these traits of character will again appear in the narrative which I have yet to write, concerning the severe punishment which he inflicted upon the slightest faults; but in writing the life of a man whose actions are worthy of remaining upon perpetual record for the benefit of posterity, we ought undoubtedly to draw from these actions as closely resembling a portrait as possible. Nor should any one presume to judge and condemn that spirit in Ignatius which God undoubtedly was pleased to communicate to the Fathers of different religious Orders, as that most appropriate for the government of their respective Institutes, and also that they might afterwards become models for imitation in their actions, as they had before been legislators, to whom obedience was due.

Yet the reader has a right to know from what sources we have drawn these details. Sometimes we have done so from those who were eye-witnesses of the facts which they relate, and who have frequently been even parties interested in these different circumstances. Thus I may first quote Father John Polancus, the Secretary of Ignatius and first historian of the Society, who has enriched it with the treasures of all the ancient memoirs arranged in order, and forming three thick volumes; then, Father Peter Ribadeneira, who wrote a certain work, containing amongst other things a history of the sad fall and expulsion of various persons, and which for this reason he would not allow to be published during their lifetime. It was a just provision for the future, which decided so many wise men to preserve so great a number of facts in

writing, which they did not wish to render public at the time; for if we had been ignorant in later days of the conduct pursued by our holy Founder, we could not have known the moderation of those who now govern the Society, but might have supposed them to exercise usurped rights.

In the course of this work, I shall have the opportunity of making known not only the great prudence of Ignatius, but his paternal tenderness towards those who were yet far from perfection, and tempted with discouragement; as well as the admirable diligence of his charity and wisdom in leading them forward to persevere in the service of God. We shall conclude from the whole, that the severity which he prudently exercised upon some occasions, arose from no natural hardness of heart, but from the firmness and wisdom of his character, which dictated towards certain individuals and in certain circumstances, a line of conduct which would one day be looked up to as an example. By this we may easily see how mistaken those would be who should imitate him in one particular only, and who should act with constant severity, without any regard to prudence. Having made this explanation, we shall now pass on with security to make known the sentiments of one of our most illustrious Fathers upon this point; of St. Francis Xavier.

CHAPTER V.

Harmony of views between St. Ignatius and St. Francis Xavier—Simon Rodriguez upon the expulsion of members—Of the union of the members by the virtue of obedience—Monarchical and oligarchical form both given to the Company—Again upon the virtue of obedience.

FRANCIS had such a perfect understanding with Ignatius, that without concerting together, and solely guided by the Spirit of God who had founded the Society and supported it by their ministry, whatever the one did in the West the other executed in the East. I cannot give a better idea of the sentiments of St. Francis Xavier upon the important point of the admission of members, than by quoting some passages from his letters. I find one written from Cochin to St. Ignatius, in which he expresses himself thus: "I am of opinion that no other influence excepting that of charity, should be used to retain any one in the Company against his desire; and I add that whoever has not a spirit suitable for the Society, should be removed from it even against his own wish."

In another letter written from Sancian to Father Gaspard Barzee, Rector of the College of Goa, he says: "I must again recommend you, to receive few subjects, and only those who are addicted to study, or who can, be employed in the service of the house; but for the latter, rather employ servants. I prefer them to men who, after being admitted into the Company, prove themselves unworthy of it. If any

of those whom I have dismissed should present themselves, beware of receiving them, because they will never suit our Order. Or even when after long and public penance they have in your opinion repaired their former sins, and given every prospect of amendment for the future, yet do not receive them yourself, because they will never be fitted for the Indian Mission; but send them to Portugal, recommending them by letter to the Superiors. And should it happen that any one of the Society, priest or otherwise, should fall into any scandalous fault, dismiss him immediately, and let nothing induce you to re-admit him, whatever applications you may receive to that effect. Especially beware of doing so, if notwithstanding his repentance, he has not done that penance for his fault which might induce you to believe in the sincerity of his sorrow. In that case, I would not have you consent to his re-admission into the Society, were it even at the request of the Viceroy, and of all India united."

Finally, the last recommendation of Francis, written from the Island where he died, and only three weeks before his death, still turns upon the necessity of removing all unworthy members from the Society. He writes these words to the same Rector of Goa: "I engage you to observe exactly the orders which I have left you; but especially to admit but few members and those well chosen; and to put those whom you admit to severe trials, in order to become thoroughly acquainted with the number and quality of the virtues which they possess. I say this, because persons have been received into the Society, at least I fear so, whom it would be better to expel even after they have obtained the favor of admission than to have received, being unworthy of it. I pray you to behave towards such as I myself have done towards several, and laterly towards a companion of my own, whom I found unfit for becoming a member of the Society, and whom I

have sent away. Regulate your conduct by this, and fear nothing, even were you to remain alone."

Yet whoever has read the letters of this great Apostle, whether to St. Ignatius or to Simon Rodriguez, will see with what importunity he conjured them to send him fellow-laborers from Europe. He describes the vast kingdoms of these immense regions, peopled with poor idolaters, who do not enter into the bosom of the Church, less from the hardness of their hearts, than from the want of workmen to labor for their conversion. But the members of the Society were then so few in number, and their labors in Europe so multiplied, that very few could be granted to Xavier. If then in the midst of this dearth, and in prosecution of an enterprise whose object was the glory of God, he did not fear to deprive himself of men who might have been useful for the conversion of the Infidels, but yet who were deficient in certain good qualities, and especially in the virtue of obedience, so important in the members of the Society; we may form an idea of the vast importance which he attached to maintaining it in its fundamental and primitive spirit. In order to attain this end, it was better, according to the judgment of this zealous man, to renounce the abundant fruits which might have been gathered had the workmen been more numerous, by the conversion of these heathen nations. And from this we may draw an inference as to whether, from motives of minor importance, and in hopes of obtaining some uncertain good, we should hesitate to act as he, without any regard to great and certain advantages, resolutely did.

Amongst the number of those whom he rejected, was a Portuguese, named Francis Mansilla, whom he had taken with him to India, where he employed him in converting the Infidels, and in improving the new converts. The cause of his dismissal was his obstinate attachment to his own opinions,

which made obedience too hard a task for him ; and not even the regret of leaving him in a barbarous country, so far distant from Europe, with scarcely the means of subsistence, could induce Xavier to change his resolution.

A man still more distinguished by his talents, was a noble Portuguese, named Antonio Gomez, a skilful canonist, and who before entering the Society had bestowed his rich patrimony upon the poor. He had labored in the Portuguese missions with so much success, that whole populations flocked together to hear him and to confess their sins. Father Simon Rodriguez, believing that such a man would be exactly suited to the Apostolic labors in the Indies, and knowing his great zeal for the conversion of the heathen, sent him out to Goa as Rector of the college.

Unfortunately, his zeal was greater than his prudence ; and he had scarcely arrived before he began to introduce new customs into the college, and as if India and Europe were the same country, to reform or rather to transform the manners and customs of Goa upon the model of those of Coimbra. One novelty leads to another, and in a short time he had put every thing into disorder. Yet he did not fail to labor earnestly and successfully, both amongst Gentiles and Christians ; attacking and confounding the Brahmins, instructing the King of Tanor, and founding a college in Cochin. On the other hand he committed strange indiscretions, which gave rise to much discontent. He deprived Father Paul Camerino of the direction of the college of Goa ; he dismissed a number of young Indians from a seminary which had been established for their instruction in religion and learning, and filled their places with Portuguese.

Such was the state of things when Xavier returned to Goa ; and on seeing the restless spirit of this man, and the disturbance which he caused, he resolved to send him else-

where. But Gomez, feeling strong in the support of the Viceroy of the Indies, with whom his friendship was more intimate than discreet; relying also upon the kind feeling entertained for him by the Portuguese, whose children he had received to the prejudice of the Indians; eluded the orders of Xavier, had recourse to importunities, and even appealed to the Viceroy's authority; steps which instead of dissuading Xavier from his determination, strengthened him in it. Had Gomez been guilty of no other fault but that of having recourse to secular authority, in order to exempt himself from religious obedience, it alone would have justified his expulsion, not only from Goa, but from the Society.

This happened accordingly. Xavier, whom nothing intimidated, when the service of God was in question, was inflexible to all entreaty; Gomez was banished from Goa, and expelled from the Society, drawing with him in his ruin two other members, who were his followers, Michael Nobrega and Andrew Montero.

A prompt punishment awaited them. Both fell into the hands of the Turks. Nobrega was decapitated, and Montero languished in captivity for many years. Having at length learned from experience, that chains and bondage amongst the Turks were harder to endure than religious discipline and submission, he obtained by his repentance and a thorough reformation, permission to re-enter the Society. Gomez, in returning to Europe, to solicit the compassion of St. Ignatius, was shipwrecked and drowned.

These examples might suffice, since they clearly prove the manner in which our two illustrious leaders, Ignatius and Xavier, governed the Society; and the means which they considered most effective for maintaining it in its primitive purity. Their conduct may serve as a model for ours; seeing what they have done, we can comprehend what we ought

to do. Nevertheless it may be useful to relate two other events which happened in Portugal, under the government of Simon Rodriguez, one of the first companions of St. Ignatius; not only because they confirm what we have already said, but because they also contain valuable spiritual instruction.

The building of the college of Coimbra had begun, and our brethren assisted in the labor; some making mortar, some carrying the stones, others employed in various works connected with the construction of the edifice, and all laboring with as much zeal and forgetfulness of self, as if they had been simple workmen from necessity and not virtue. It was a spectacle conducive to the glory of God, and the edification of the whole city. People flocked eagerly to see so many young men belonging to the most noble families, working with so much cheerfulness and modesty, that they moved the beholders to tears of piety and emotion. Hell seemed to envy so pious a work; and in order to thwart it, made use of the usual artifices; unfortunately with some success.

The spirit of darkness suggested to some of these young men, less strong-minded than their companions, that they were engaged in labors of a mean and sordid nature, rather than in an act of mortification; and that to the world they appeared nothing but what they outwardly were, mere laboring men, made for these degrading employments. They felt themselves so much humiliated by this idea, that they first tried to find a pretext for withdrawing from the work; and at length openly protested that they would willingly work in the interior of the house, but not outside and in public, which did not suit persons of their rank and condition.

The Rector, who was at that time Father Luis Gonzalez, was much grieved by this declaration, spoke to them on the

subject, and tried to convince them of their error; but seeing that he could not persuade them to conquer themselves and despise the world, he gave information of the circumstance to Father Rodriguez, the provincial of Portugal, who sent him the following answer: "Make another attempt: see if these brothers can be induced to resume their labors; if they continue to refuse, may God protect them, but they must go! I would willingly offer myself to work in their place, and would greatly prefer it to the office of tutor to the Prince. The Society requires no members who are governed by human respect. Let them go out from amongst us, and let the world go with them. Let us never march under the banners of vanity. Jesus carried His cross, not in His own house only, but through the whole city of Jerusalem, and even beyond its walls. He who does not love Christ crucified, let him be cut off from all communion with us. He who does not love the dishonors of the cross of Christ, is not of Christ. I have already told you many times, that I should prefer to see our Society reduced to the smallest number; to four, to one if necessary. He who will not follow Christ, let him depart; let him seek another Head; ours is Christ crucified."

Another circumstance occurred in the same college, and under the same Rector. Three members, of whom one was a priest, were, for I know not what fault, condemned to the customary penance. Instead of repenting and weeping over their error, they looked with ill-will at their Superior, thinking that he had treated them too harshly and injudiciously. Their discontent gradually increased, and the evil spirit seeing them on the brink of the precipice, found it an easy matter to hurl them over, by inspiring them with the idea of returning to a worldly life.

Whilst consulting together, they remembered a friend

whom they had in the college at Lisbon, and resolved to persuade him also to leave it, and to go with them. In pursuance of this plan, they wrote him a letter filled with bitter complaints, rather directed against the Society than the Superior; and added, that if he were a wise man and a faithful friend, and would consent to accompany them, he would withdraw from it at the same time as they did. This letter was secretly confided by the three friends to a servant, who was going upon some business from the College of Coimbra to that of Lisbon; and they promised him a good reward if he delivered the letter safely into the hands of their friend. He did so, and the young student considering their invitation as a counterpart of that which the demon addressed to Our Lord, and despising the friendship of men who, because they were falling, would have willingly dragged others with them over the precipice, immediately went to the Father Provincial, Simon Rodriguez, and delivered the letter to him, that he might act as he thought proper. He sent back the messenger to Coimbra, and ordered the Rector to read the letter of the three malcontents in public, then to expel them, and with them the servant whom they had employed in this unfortunate commission. Father Luis Gonsalez obeyed his injunctions. Having assembled all the members in the college chapel, he read aloud with tears of sorrow, the letter of these restless spirits; then stripping them of the habit, whose spirit they did not possess, he sent them back into the world, filled with shame and confusion. The words in which Rodriguez intimated this order to the Rector, deserve to be recorded.

“Christ has said, he that is not with me, is against me. Those are not with Christ, who, enrolled in his service, do not follow His banner, under which all must be of one heart and of one mind. And since some have endeavored to de-

tach the hearts of the companions from the Superiors, it is a just judgment from God that they themselves should be separated from us. Say then to those three members, that they must depart quickly, for they are no longer fitted to remain in the Society, after having endeavored to sow discord between the Head and the members. The axe is laid to the root of the tree. Let him who will follow Christ, renounce himself, take up his cross, and follow Him. Should I learn (and let this be publicly known), that any one of the Society has written a letter without showing it to his Superior, he shall be instantly expelled; for it is neither by our numbers, nor by our natural strength, nor by a curious and inquiring spirit that we shall please God. Whoever is not resolved to carry the cross of Christ in all humility, is not suited to us, nor we to him. And if it seems to you that the chastisement is great for so slight a fault, know that this mode of action is indispensable, when these faults are hurtful to the common welfare; otherwise the laws would become mere fallacies, whence might arise the most serious injury to religion. For the love of Heaven, impress upon all our brothers the importance of our being what we ought to be. If you do not succeed in this, perhaps it might be better for me to return to Coimbra, and form the college anew. I place Jesus crucified between me and all my brothers, and I would have you to repeat to them that He is the Master whom we will follow, without interpretation or comment. Let them on their side declare to me whether they consent to devote themselves to Him, by exact obedience to the Constitutions of the Society, and to maintain their fidelity loyal and entire to Him, and also to the Superiors who govern in His name. Were I in the Indies, where it was my intention to go when I came to this country from Italy, it would not surprise me to meet with infidels unwilling to fol-

low the perfection of the life of Jesus Christ; and if henceforward no such persons are found amongst us, I shall flatter myself that I have employed my time well since my arrival in Portugal. You will tell the bearer of this letter, a servant of the house, that having carried one without your permission, and delivered it without showing it, as he ought to have done, he can no longer remain amongst us, nor be employed in future in the service of the college."

We shall now proceed to show the other methods by which St. Ignatius established a spirit suitable to the Society, and assured its duration.

Of these, the chief is a strict union between the members and the Head, consequent upon that entire dependence which results from perfect obedience. Ignatius established a monarchical form of government in the Society, and placed the whole administration of the Order in the hands of the General, with an authority absolute and independent of all men, with the sole exception of the Sovereign Pontiff. The General then decided absolutely, both in the choice of the Superiors, as well as in every thing which concerns the members of the Company. Yet the Saint would not deprive the supreme power of the advantages which may be found in an aristocratic government, that is to say, of the advice of wise and capable men. For this reason, he gave the General four assistants, for Italy and Sicily, Germany and France, Spain and Portugal, and for the Indies. Since the year 1608 the sixth General Congregation has added a fifth, by separating Germany from France, whose provinces are so numerous as to require an assistant for itself alone.

The office of the assistants consists in watching with particular care over the provinces intrusted to their guardianship; in studying and discussing the interests of the Order, to the end that according to their well-matured counsels,

and well-decided resolutions, it may be more easy for the General to take in the presence of God, the determination which he considers most advantageous and suitable.

Ignatius also established *General Congregations*, where the most distinguished members of the Order, chosen by the different Provinces, were to be assembled. The General can neither annul nor modify the decisions of these assemblies; he is even so subordinate to their authority, that if he should fail in his duty, he may be judged by them, reprimanded, deposed, and even, should they consider it necessary, expelled from the Society.

There is, moreover, a monitor elected by the whole body, who must be well versed in the affairs of the Order, a man of great wisdom, and whose duty it is before God, to watch over the conduct of the General, and to warn him with equal modesty and freedom of every thing which he considers reprehensible in his conduct or government.

Ignatius also provided all the other Superiors, whether of colleges and houses, or of whole Provinces, with Counsellors and Monitors; and neither the Rectors nor the Provincials can form any important determination either concerning affairs, or the persons subject to them, without asking the opinion of these Counsellors or Consulters.

This form of government, so perfectly conceived, because it united all the members to the Head, by equal dependence, and yet assured them a distinct and necessary existence, enabling them to form one solid and durable whole; this form of government has nevertheless encountered turbulent and rebellious spirits, who have violently opposed it by various machinations, and even by having recourse to the support of secular princes. Their audacity has gone so far as to lead them to submit false memorials to the Sovereign Pontiff, presented to him in the name of the whole Order,

whilst in reality they proceeded from a few individuals, desirous of freeing themselves from obedience to the General, along with certain Provinces which they hoped to carry with them, in order to live under the authority of a Commissary or perpetual Visitor. They have not feared by this conduct to divide the unity of the Order, to form it into several societies, and thus to break through that concord, so necessary, as Paul V. says, not only to its glory, but to the maintenance of its original Institute.

This is the usual march of baffled ambition. When its projects fail, it accuses others of prejudice and ignorance. In this case, the malcontents endeavored to throw blame upon a government confided to one man alone, who, said they, established in Rome, as perpetual Head, could judge of nothing personally, and dispensed rewards arbitrarily, and not according to merit. Several, they argued, would see more clearly than one, who regarded objects in the reflected light of a mirror, and that not unfrequently a false one; and every thing might be remedied if he whose solitary position prevented him from knowing all that occurred, would divide his obligations and authority with others. Thus, what was taken from one alone, would be restored to the whole Order, and it would be much more just that he should not always follow his own will, without having the opportunity of being enlightened, &c.

The fifth General Congregation calls these innovators, treacherous and degenerate children, disturbers of the general peace, who condemn that which the whole Order has received and approved, and who, still more unpardonably, venture to blame and endeavor to reform that which the holy Founder, inspired by God himself, had laid down and determined; that which the Holy See, after multiplied examinations, had so often approved of; that which St. Ignatius

had endeavored to render immutable, by inflicting excommunication and other very weighty punishments upon all who, under the pretext of zeal, or any other motive, should raise doubts or disputes upon this subject.

These innovators were then declared excommunicated; and thus, after endeavoring to produce division, they themselves suffered the separation they had wished to effect. They were for the most part driven from the Order; those who were retained, were declared incapable of holding any office, and served as a warning to all who should conceive similar designs in future.

Soon after, Paul V., by a particular bull, approved the first plan of government instituted by Ignatius, and preserved up to that period, the perpetuity of the General, his residence in Rome, and the entire dependence of the Society upon him, wherever it happened to be, or of whatever nation its members were composed. The same Pontiff also addresses grave counsels to the Generals and other Superiors, to the effect that they must never allow themselves to be influenced, either by the entreaties or threats of the great, when they have any thing in view, prejudicial to the perfect observance of the Institute; and that all members bold enough to endeavor to introduce new customs into the Society, were they even supported by the authority of kings be punished as disturbers of the public peace, and abettors of scandal.

The holy Founder, certain of having received knowledge from above, in his Constitution of the Society, with regard to the manner of governing, was also anxious to lay down fixed rules for his children as to the mode of obeying. And upon no other point did he require greater trials, nor did he punish any other transgression with more marked severity, than that of disobedience; and he did so, as an example to

his successors. Obedience he declared, was the foundation of the Society, and the virtue from whence it would derive force of action and duration. He wished it to be the distinctive mark of our Order, although others might surpass it in the multiplicity of their fasts, in corporal austerities, or in retreat.

Amongst the different rules which St. Ignatius laid down for the observance of his brethren in Rome, while laboring to form the Constitutions, and from which Father Everard Mercuriane, the fourth General of the Company, has drawn a great part of those which we call general rules, as well as of such as are applied to certain particular offices; there was one by which the Superiors were required, in the general exhortations which it was their duty to make to us, in order to excite us to religious perfection; to take once a month, as the subject of their discourse, the virtue of obedience. He attached so much importance to it, that feeling his end approaching, he wished to bequeath us a public recommendation of this virtue, as his last remembrance.

He therefore called for Father John Philip Viti, his Secretary's assistant, and saying to him, "Write down what I think on the subject of obedience, that I may leave it as a memorial to the Society;" dictated the following words.

First. At my very first entrance into a religious life, I must place myself entirely in the hands of God, and of him who holds the place of God by His authority.

Second. My desire must be that my Superior should oblige me to renounce my own judgment, and to subdue my own understanding.

Third. In every thing which is not sinful, I must do the will of my Superior, and not my own.

Fourth. There are three different ways of obeying; the first is when the obedience is of precept; and then it is good;

the second, when being able to choose between two actions, I prefer doing what I am advised to do; and this is better. But the most perfect of all is the third, and consists in doing a thing without having received any express order; merely from believing that such would be my Superior's will.

Fifth. I must make no difference between one Superior and another, nor examine whether it is the chief, the second, or the third who commands me; but consider them all equal before God, whose place they hold; for if I make a distinction of persons, I weaken the virtue of obedience.

Sixth. If it seems to me that the Superior has ordered me to do something against my conscience, or in which there appears to me something sinful; if he is of a contrary opinion, and I have no certainty, I should rely upon him. If my trouble continues, I should lay aside my own judgment and confide my doubts to one, two, or three persons; and rely upon their decision. If all this should not satisfy me, I am far from the perfection which my religious state requires.

Seventh. I must no longer belong to myself, but to my Creator, and to those who govern in His name; and in whose hands I should be as soft wax, whatsoever he chooses to require of me; whether as to the writing or receiving of letters—speaking or not speaking to such or such a person, and other things of that nature; and I ought to employ all my zeal and fervor in executing his desires with promptitude.

Eighth. I should regard myself as a dead body, without will or intelligence; as a little crucifix which is turned about unresistingly, at the will of him who holds it; as a staff in the hand of an old man, who uses it as he requires it, and as it suits him best. So should I be in the hands of the Order, doing whatever service is judged best.

Ninth. I must never ask my Superior to send me to

such a place, nor to employ me in such an office ; I can only make my wishes known to him, deferring absolutely to my Superior, and ready to acknowledge as best whatever he orders.

Eleventh. With regard to poverty, I must depend upon the Superior alone; consider nothing as my personal property, and myself in all that I use, as a statue, which, allows itself to be stripped, no matter what the occasion may be, and offers no resistance.

Ignatius had not waited for the approach of death, at which time he dictated these eleven maxims, to write his thoughts upon obedience; but he then did for the general instruction of the Society, what he had already done a few years before for the particular use of several colleges.

He had been desirous of laying down a rule, and putting a curb to the immoderate fervor of some of our Religious in Spain and Portugal; who thought it lawful to govern themselves in spiritual things, and who conducted themselves with more courage than prudence, from whence serious evils resulted. Some gave themselves up to austerities injurious to their strength, and others, intoxicated with the sweetness of contemplation, became hermits or Solitaries; all equally forgetful of the object of their vocation. Ignatius addressed letters to them, filled with wise instructions and solid reasoning, to prove to them, that in withdrawing themselves as they did from their duty of obedience, to follow their own inclinations, they deviated from the right path, and took back the better part of the holocaust which they had offered up to God, namely, their own will; so that all which they offered to Him in its place, was valueless.

But above every thing that has been written upon the subject of obedience, whether coming from the pen of the Saint, or from all those who have treated of this virtue, we

must place the admirable letter which he addressed to the whole Province of Portugal, in 1553. It points out through all its gradations the perfection to which it may be carried. Thus St. Francis Borgia, after he became General of the Society, wishing to discuss this important subject in a private letter, can find nothing to add to what St. Ignatius had already written. "As for the virtue of obedience," he says, "to which every thing in the Society must be reduced, a virtue which is at once the object at which it aims, the banner under which it combats, the stronghold in which it rests secure; although I should wish to speak to you again of it; our holy Father Ignatius has left us upon this subject, a letter worthy of admiration, from which nothing can be retrenched, to which nothing can be added, and to which I refer you, with this one sentence from Holy Writ: *Hoc fac et vives!* If we are faithful to his precepts, we may truly call ourselves the children of obedience."

In this epistle, the Saint establishes the three degrees of obedience, which we before mentioned, by the clearest authority taken from the Holy Scriptures, and from the Fathers, and based upon irrefutable arguments. To obey orders, is the first and lowest degree. Not only to obey, but to conform our will to the will of the Superior, is the second and a degree higher. To believe that a thing ought to be, because the Superior orders it, is the last and most perfect degree. We cannot arrive at this degree without recognizing in the person of our Superior, be he wise or imprudent, ~~holy or im-~~ perfect, the authority of Jesus Christ Himself, whom he represents.

Nor does this obedience at all differ from that which the holiest and most ancient Fathers, who lived in the monasteries, and who have been such great masters in religious perfection, called by names apparently contradictory: Such

as, the folly of the wise, the ignorance of the learned, the imprudence of the prudent, the blindness of the clear-sighted; for he who blindly obeys, is as one who cannot see; yet he is illumined by the brightest light, since in the person of his Superior, he never loses sight of God, who has established him in His place.

If we observe the effects of this blind obedience, we shall see that it has produced men of singularly perfect virtue, as in the ancient monasteries.

St. Ignatius was then always consistent, both in tracing rules for perfect obedience; and in requiring them to be exactly fulfilled. His invariable custom was never to keep men in the Society, who were of an obstinate disposition, and attached to their own opinion, whatever their virtues or talents might be. Thus he writes to the students of the College of Gandia, whom he did not find sufficiently disposed to obedience: "Let every one who does not feel himself resolved to obey in the manner which I have pointed out, choose another state of life; for the Society cannot suit those who are unwilling to submit to the form of obedience which I have prescribed." To accustom his children to obedience, he would sometimes command them to perform actions which seemed perfectly useless, or unseasonable, or even in appearance impossible; such as for instance to be preacher and procurator at the same time; or professor of philosophy and of grammar. He who had the office of cook, was obliged to be prepared to teach theology, and the professor of theology to leave his pulpit for the kitchen. He would sometimes send for the priests, when already clothed in their sacerdotal habits, and ready to celebrate the holy mysteries; desire them to take off their vestments, and then send them back to the altar, merely as a trial of their prompt obedience.

Those who had delayed executing certain orders, by an

arbitrary interpretation of the Superior's will; would sometimes be called for unexpectedly by Ignatius, even whilst hearing confessions; and on one occasion, an individual who did not obey immediately, was punished on that account.

He would permit no layman to meddle in any thing which concerned the employments or residence of any of the members. He once imposed some works of mortification upon a priest, who was too importunate in his entreaties for permission to make a pilgrimage; not that the request was in itself wrong, but because he made it with more desire to satisfy himself than to obey. This may explain the strange punishment which he imposed upon Father Emerio de Bonis, then a very young man, and who had just entered the Society as a novice. A worthless woman, who lived opposite our church in Rome, had got into the habit of throwing all the filth and refuse of her house before the door. Ignatius, after having endured this inconvenience for some time, desired Emerio, who was then Sacristan, to remonstrate with this woman, and request her to have these things carried to a more suitable place. The young man, who was extremely modest, in order to avoid speaking with her, desired another person to do so. Ignatius was informed of it, and even whilst approving his modesty, thought it right to punish his disobedience. His punishment lasted six months; during which period he was obliged to remain in the refectory, with a bell round his neck, and every day to say these words aloud: "*Volo et nolo, non habitant in hoc domo.*"

If any one threw himself at his feet to entreat pardon and penance, and still remained in that position, after Ignatius had desired him to rise; he would go away, leaving him on his knees, with the observation that there is no merit in humility when it is contrary to obedience. Thus on one occasion, having made a sign to a brother coadjutor to be

seated, and he not having obeyed, out of respect to Ignatius and a gentleman who was present; he made him carry his stool upon his head the whole time the conversation lasted. A Flemish priest, who was tormented by scruples, was accustomed to pass a great part of the day in reciting the office, which he would repeat over and over again, notwithstanding the advice of many learned and conscientious men. To an extraordinary evil, Ignatius applied an extraordinary remedy. He expressly forbade him to employ more than one hour in reciting his office, and sent him an hour-glass that he might measure the time. When the hour had expired, he was obliged to stop, whatever part of the office he had arrived at; and thus between his personal obligation to obey, and his general duty to recite the whole of his office, he found himself so hurried, that the very first day he finished the recitation of his office before the hour elapsed, having had no time to do battle with his scruples, or to confuse his brain.

This positive determination to require and obtain perfect obedience from his children, had detached them so completely from their own sentiments, that even when they were most occupied in the execution of some work, important to the glory of God; if the holy Founder recalled them, with a view to employ them in some other ministry, he found them as ready to abandon the fruits of their labors, as if, in the voice of Ignatius, they had heard that of God himself. Thus, amongst several other instances, Father Anthony Araoz, who labored in Barcelona with immense benefit to the inhabitants, having received an order to set out for the interior of Spain, neither grieved on his own account, in being deprived of so great an opportunity of acquiring merits; nor on account of those who profited so much by his care; nor even on account of the glory of God, which would

apparently suffer from his removal ; but promptly and cheerfully prepared to obey, and answered as follows :

“ As for the order which you send me to go elsewhere, towards the beginning of September, *paratus sum, et non sum turbatus*. I shall obey you, by the grace of our eternal and good Master, with sincere joy of heart ; and although many here are murmuring at my departure, on account of the good which has been effected ; because I am convinced that your voice is for me like that of Christ my Redeemer, which all those that are of His fold shall hear. So much occupation is given me here, that, wishing to attend to every thing, there remains no time for me to attend to myself, and I am obliged to steal some hours from the night, having no moment of the day free. Hearing confessions, of which the greater part are general ; giving the Spiritual Exercises ; laboring to bring about very important reconciliations between certain noble families,—all these things occupy my time so completely, that often (and I tell you this that you may take pity on my poor soul), I have not even time to celebrate Holy Mass.”

But for promptitude in abandoning, at the first signal, his most cherished works, and those most important for the service of God, no one can be compared to the holy apostle Francis Xavier. At the first order, he was ready to leave the East, with all his hopes of conquering it to the Faith, and to return to Europe.

“ Your charity,” he writes to Ignatius, “ makes you express a great desire to see me once more, before you leave this world. Our Lord knows the impression which these words, so full of tender affection, have made upon my heart ; and how many tears they make me shed every time that they come to my remembrance ! It consoles me to think that this

desire may be accomplished, since nothing is impossible to perfect obedience."

In another letter written the same year, which was the last of his life, "God grant," said he, "that we may meet again in Paradise! If it is for His glory, perhaps He will reunite us in this world also; for if you command it, obedience will make it easy to me." And if this holy apostle had lived a little longer, St. Ignatius would have seen his dear son return from the furthest extremity of the Indies; and this whilst he was in the midst of his labors, and at the summit of his hopes of penetrating into China, and of converting that great Empire, together with Japan, both given up to the same idolatrous and superstitious rites. The Saint had in fact recalled him to Europe in virtue of his vow of obedience, as he had already done several of his most cherished children, in order to increase their merits. He wished to confer the administration of the whole Company upon Xavier, and thus to prepare him for succeeding him as General; but when the letter which bore the order arrived in India the holy apostle was no more.

CHAPTER VI.

Fraternal union prescribed by Ignatius—He forbids his Order to accept ecclesiastical dignities—His firmness in maintaining this rule—Some examples—His motives in adopting it—Professed members called to occupy a prelacy, bind themselves by a simple vow, to follow the counsels of the General of the Order—Explanation and justification of this vow.

HAVING now seen how all were linked together in the Society, by the laws of perfect obedience, one grade following another, it remains for us to show how all the members were united amongst each other by mutual charity; so that neither the distance of places, nor the difference of employments, nor the natural diversity of dispositions in a Society composed of persons from so many different countries, ever caused the slightest division in the body. We shall understand more clearly the efficacy of the means employed by St. Ignatius for attaining this object, by seeing the effects which they produced, than by any mere theoretical statements. "Certainly," wrote Father F. Louis Strada, a monk of the Order of St. Bernard; "what I have witnessed in several houses of that holy Society, appears to me marvellous and even supernatural. Men not only of different birth, but differing in country and language; some, young students; others, old teachers; become in a short time so entirely united in spirit, so bound together by the ties of mutual charity, that they have really but one heart and one soul. One might suppose

them to be all children of the same mother, and to have all the same natural dispositions."

These words of a stranger who was an ocular witness of the union which he admired, confirm the truth of what was written about the same time, by one of our Fathers. "I do not know," said he, "any consolation comparable to that of seeing in the Society so great a variety of individuals, united by such complete conformity of will; such perfect equality amongst so many different ranks; such affectionate union amongst people belonging to so many different nations. There no distinction can be seen between the Superior, the man of learning, he who in the world was noble and rich; and the man of low birth, or the poor or the ignorant man. To say, such a one is my friend, or I am his, would be to speak an unknown language, and rejected as worldly. It would indeed cause astonishment in those who heard it, for where each loves his neighbor as himself, all must be friends. When we part, because obedience separates us, when we come back from the most distant lands, what demonstrations of heart-felt good-will from our brothers! what joyous greetings on our return, what cordial welcomes! Every one who arrives finds himself at home, and surrounded by his own family. Let us acknowledge the grace of God in all this, and let us be grateful for it. Let us rejoice that up to this day, such holy charity is maintained amongst us; and let us hope that it will be preserved in the Society for ever."

Hence, there was no hesitation felt in composing whole colleges, of preachers, professors, superiors, and other evangelic laborers, who by birth belong to different sovereigns, or even to countries at war with each other. On the contrary, it was one of the wisest calculations of the prudence of Ignatius, as well as one of his greatest consolations, thus to collect men of all countries together; for by this means, the

company became, as it were, absolutely universal. In every college, wheresoever the Society was established, all the different languages of the earth were spoken; so that it seemed in some degree to renew the miracles of the primitive Church, where in the midst of so many different languages, one sole heart spoke; and in the confusion of so many barbarous tongues, that of charity was equally understood by all.

Thus in the College of Messina, founded in 1548, out of twelve Fathers, two alone were countrymen; the rest were all of different origin and language; which excited the wonder and admiration of that city, bringing back to mind the words of St. Augustin, when he says that each chord of the lyre has a distinct sound, yet in such concord with the others, that when struck together, they produce harmony; forming a sweet concert of sounds; differing, but not dissonant. *Fit suavissimus concertus, ex diversis, sed non inter se adversis.**

Divesting themselves of all partial affection towards their own countrymen, they were not only to love each other without any exceptions, but were to prove this outwardly by every token of good-will towards their neighbor, to whatever country he belongs. And for this reason, from the very beginning of the Society, those who came to our Fathers, and put themselves under their direction, never thought of inquiring to what nation they belonged; it was regarded as certain, that from the moment they had become members of the Company, they considered each city as their birthplace, each country as their native land. Thus John III. king of Portugal, replied to Father James Miron, who would have excused himself from the office of his confessor, because he

* In Psal. 150.

was a foreigner : " I consider no member of the Society as a foreigner."

As for the means which were employed for bringing about this union of hearts, so rare, but so necessary amongst subjects of the same Order, it will be sufficient to mention some which the Holy Founder traced in his Constitutions, of those which appear to me most efficacious. In the first place, he wishes us, as men who have renounced the world, to root up from our hearts all particular attachment to our own country. Nor is this sufficient; he wishes that our charity should incline us more particularly to foreigners; like those waters, which, whether they precipitate themselves from the mountains, or traverse the plains, or water the depths of the valleys : seem after leaving their own source, to flow in search of waters of other origin, till having reached them, they are all mingled and as it were, lost in each other.

The words of Father Everard Mercurian, addressed to the third general Congregation of the Order, deserve to be held in eternal remembrance. Their object is to recommend that mutual union of heart, which is disengaged from every private or national affection. " I beseech you, by the mercy of the Lord, to watch as much as possible over this; think of one another in goodness, that we may think well of each other; for ye are all brethren, and sons of the same vocation. Let there be, then, I pray you, no Poland, no Spain, no Italy, no Germany, or Gaul, but one Society, one God in all, all in one Lord Jesus Christ, whose members you are."

And as accounts of battles between princes at war with each other, of their victories and defeats, might have caused different emotions in the hearts of their respective subjects, St. Ignatius absolutely interdicted all such topics of conversation in our houses. He also obliged every one to learn the language of the country in which he resided, and renewed

this order the last year of his life ; because, adds his Secretary, charity cannot be preserved without a mutual communication of thoughts by means of words ; without which, we are either silent when others speak, and are as it were absent ; or we speak without being understood, and are as strangers to them ; and there can be no stranger, where all are of one heart, and one mind.

To facilitate the execution of this wise provision, our holy Founder gave orders that in Rome a lesson should be given daily to the members in Italian, at which all the Fathers belonging to foreign countries should be present. It was observed by Father James Miron, whom we have already mentioned, as a fact worthy of notice, that in our Roman college, where, between professors and students, sixteen different languages might have been spoken, since there were natives of as many different nations amongst them ; the Italian language alone was heard, as if all the others had been forgotten, and it had become the native tongue of each, and the language common to all.

Ignatius also desired us to see in each other Christ alone, whose living image we ought to be ; since the eye, charmed with an object so worthy of admiration, would no longer be struck with the natural defects, or the variety of inclinations, still less with the faults of our brothers ; for when we fix our thoughts on these things, they cause a sort of repulsion in the soul, or at least diminish the mutual affection which we owe each other. Another obstacle which must if possible be surmounted, is a diversity of opinions, because it is apt to produce division in the will, as naturally as the waves of the sea follow the impetus given them by the winds. Moreover, as the first law of self-interest is to take from others, and to draw every thing towards ourselves, and as pretensions give rise to secret divisions among the competitors, sometimes

even to open disputes and jealousy; Ignatius placed every thing which concerns the members of the Order, as to ministry, employments, and places, at the sole disposal of the Superiors. By this entire dependence upon those in authority, he destroyed all pretension to possess or to command. If any rising antipathy manifested itself amongst the Brothers, or even if any uncharitable words escaped them, the punishment which followed was intended to give a wholesome warning to others, as well as to chastise the offender. Thus a severe penance was inflicted by St. Ignatius upon one of the Fathers, a man of great merit, who had inconsiderately related to some strangers by way of a jest the wanderings of a delirious patient. How much more dearly would he have paid for his fault, had he spread abroad any thing to his disadvantage or dishonor!

As for those disseminators of dissension, those artificers of discord, who carry about offensive remarks from one to the other, he never suffered them to remain half an hour in the house, after they were made known to him. It happened one day, that of the twelve Fathers assembled in council to deliberate upon the expulsion of one of these men, ten were of opinion that he should be kept, and an effort made to reform him, in case of the scandal which might result from his dismissal. Ignatius, contrary to his usual custom (for he generally adopted the opinion of the majority), followed the advice of the two other Fathers, saying that if there was any fear of scandal, none so great could arise, as to have it reported throughout Rome that division had arisen in their house, and that the author of it was permitted to remain through their imprudent toleration. It would be easy to multiply examples of this Christian severity in the conduct of our Saint; but those already given may suffice.

Besides these two means for preserving peace amongst us,

namely, obedience to our Superiors, and mutual charity amongst the brethren, there is a third, which refers more particularly to God Himself, and which was regarded by Ignatius as essential to the very existence of the Society. This is an extreme purity of intention, through which all our actions have but one object, that of pleasing God and contributing to the increase of His glory. Therefore we must never expect any reward, from our neighbor or from the Society, whatever we may have done for either. By this means, our labors will be more holy in themselves, more useful to others, and also more unceasing; for he who labors for God alone may always say with truth that as yet he has done nothing.

In regard to dignities especially, all pretension is forbidden, since we are as much prohibited from aspiring to those of the Order, as to those of the world; and as for these last, we are forbidden to accept any, even from the Sovereign Pontiff, unless he requires it formally, and in virtue of the obedience which we owe him. All the professed members bind themselves to this by a particular vow, according to the formula left us by Ignatius, in the tenth part of his Constitutions.

In the first days of the Society, several of the members were chosen by the Pope, some as bishops, others to be raised to the rank of Cardinals; but the holy Founder, desirous to repel entirely all the demands of temporal Princes, had recourse to God as well as to men, persuaded that if dignities entered into the Society by one door, ambition would drive out humility by the other. He therefore left an example to be followed in similar circumstances by all his successors in the Generalship.

New hopes having been held out that the Emperor of Ethiopia was about to join the Church of Rome, Pope Julius

III. was induced to grant the King of Portugal a Patriarch and bishops chosen from the Society, for the prosecution of this apostolic enterprise. Our holy Founder resolved that on this occasion it should remain duly on record, that in consenting to their election he had not been actuated by any hopes of the good which they might effect, but had done so solely because it was not in his power to prevent it. Thus in his explanation of the tenth part of the Constitutions, he leaves it in writing, that he had been *unable to resist*.^{*} Father Jerome Nadal in commenting upon these last words in his explanations of the Institute also says: "There was no way of resisting the will and command of the Sovereign Pontiff: for he alone can command the Society."

Finally, in defining how far the Society ought to resist the acceptance of any ecclesiastical dignity, according to the spirit of its Institute, and the example of its Founder, he immediately adds these words: "Every means and plan then of resistance and hinderance is to be used and employed, no stone as they say, left unturned to prevent the acceptance of dignities, nor should we desist or despair till every art fail; and this will never be, till the Apostolic See obliges under pain of mortal sin, and will admit of no excuse."

On several occasions, Ignatius himself found this resistance necessary. When Ferdinand, king of the Romans desired to have Father Le Jay for bishop of Trieste, our Founder induced the latter to present a fervent supplication to the Sovereign Pontiff, Paul III., that he would exempt him from accepting this dignity. He united to his own supplication the entreaties of the whole Society of which His Holiness was the Father, since he had truly given it life,

^{*} In patriarchatu et episcopatibus Æthiopiæ admittendis, resisti non potuit. And he adds shortly after: Resistendi modus deficit.

by making it a religious Order. He entreated the Holy Father not to deprive it of this life, by destroying the spirit which could alone preserve it. But knowing that the definitive resolution would be taken in the next Consistory, which was to meet in three days, Ignatius went to see the Cardinals, and gave them such powerful reasons against the introduction of dignities into his Order, as to bring nearly all of them round to his opinion. But as some amongst their number rather regarded the general interests of the Church in this affair, than the eventual detriment to the Company, and therefore refused to concur with him, he endeavored to obtain a delay in the first instance, and profited by it to express his motives and his trouble in such strong terms to Ferdinand, that the prince renounced his request, and thus delivered Father Le Jay from a source of great trouble, and the Society from great danger.

Some years afterwards this same King Ferdinand addressed himself to Pope Julius III., and requested him to send Father Peter Canisius as Bishop to Vienna. St. Ignatius raised new batteries to oppose this nomination; and the reasons which he stated to the Holy Father were so convincing, that he obtained a promise from the Pontiff, that he would take no step in the matter without his consent. Don James Lassa, the ambassador of Ferdinand, despairing of this consent being ever obtained, conjured the Pope with the most pressing importunity to order Canisius to accept the bishopric, notwithstanding this repugnance of St. Ignatius; but Julius positively refused, in these remarkable words; "Oh never! never! we have need of them;" that is to say, as he afterwards explained it to Cardinal Santa Croce, that an Order which was so useful to the Church would be destroyed, if ambition were to enter it along with ecclesiastical dignities; which would certainly have been the case.

St. Ignatius, who foresaw this from the first, acted wisely in opposing it, and in considering the future evils likely to result from it, rather than the present advantages which it was expected to produce. In opposing another attempt of the same kind, Ignatius showed the same determination. This was when the Emperor Charles the V., had asked the Cardinal's hat from the Pontiff, for Father Francis Borgia. A letter from the Secretary of St. Ignatius to Borgia himself, will best explain the conduct of the Saint on this occasion. "My very dear Father in Jesus Christ: We have heard through many channels how pleasing your Reverence is to God, by your spirit of humility and simplicity; and we now observe this still more clearly in seeing how He has preserved you from the high dignity which they wished to impose upon you. It happened ten or twelve days ago, that in leaving the Consistory, Cardinal della Cueva gave our Father to understand that they were resolved to make you a Cardinal. I was obliged to go that same day to see Cardinal Maffeo, and he also made known this news to me with great joy. I rejected the idea, as entirely contrary to the spirit of our Order. 'And I,' said the Cardinal, 'would like to see your Order become a nursery for Bishops and Cardinals.'

"But our Father Ignatius, after having conferred with Cardinal della Cueva, and sounded his dispositions, as well as those of several others, resolved to speak directly to the Pope on the subject, and did so in such a manner as to convince His Holiness that your present state of life was more conducive to the glory of God than your elevation would be. The Pontiff even added, that he envied your position, and preferred it to the Sovereign Pontificate; for you, said he, had only to think of serving God, whilst his mind was absorbed by too many different cares.

"And with this it was settled that you should not have

the hat sent you against your will, or unless it was positively certain that you would accept it. Your Reverence can now decide whether you wish for it or not. Our Father told the Pope, that the sole fear of receiving the Cardinal's hat had impelled you to leave Rome, notwithstanding the cold and inclement weather. He also spoke of this to the principal Cardinals, and sent messages to the others, as also to the Ambassador Don James de Mendoza; that they might clearly understand the disposition of the Pope. It is true that every one would gladly see you in the Sacred College; but after all, many are now convinced that the thing would not have been suitable.

“The project is therefore abandoned, since the decision is left to your Reverence, who I know would prefer going bare-headed in the sun and rain, to covering your head with this hat. In return for the good news I send you, I pray you to say for me a Mass of the Holy Spirit, that I may obtain the Divine grace to enable me to serve Him better. Rome, 1st June. By order of our Father St. Ignatius, your Servant in Our Lord Jesus Christ.

“JOHN DE POLANCO.”

Before entering upon this negotiation, Ignatius had consulted the Lord during three days; and not by his own prayers alone, for he had desired all his priests to offer up the holy sacrifice, in order to obtain from God the grace to know what would most contribute to His glory. The will of God upon this subject was made known to him so clearly, that he resolved to spare no effort to exclude the dignity of Cardinal from the Society, even should the whole world incite him to the contrary. He had taken this resolution, when Pope Paul IV., who had a particular friendship for Father James Lainez, thought of conferring the rank and title of

Eminence upon him. On this occasion, Ignatius said these words: "Within a few days, we shall perhaps have a Cardinal Lainez; but if that happens, I shall speak loud enough to let the whole world know after what fashion the Company accepts dignities."

Such have ever been until now, thanks be to God! the spirit of our Society. There have been many more of its members who have refused bishoprics, pressed upon them with the utmost importunity, than there have been Jesuits invested with that dignity by the express order of the Sovereign Pontiff. And there have been many more Cardinals who have given up their rank, and changed the purple for the lowly habit and humble condition of the Jesuit, than there have been Jesuits raised to the rank of Cardinal. For had we any ambition, I shall not say to be named to simple prelateships, but to obtain the most eminent dignities (one of the many thousand calumnies invented against us by Arnold, and after him by other heretics,) how does it happen, that amongst so many members of the Society of Jesus, who have been the Confessors of kings and emperors, not one has ever attained any such ecclesiastical rank? Yet so it is, up to this period. And not surely because no men of great merit have been found amongst them, worthy of every reward, and dearly cherished by these princes. But they had taken other engagements with God, and by a life of voluntary humility and submission, had learned to form other desires.

This absolute aversion to every species of dignity, has always appeared in its true light to wise and holy men, namely, as one of the most efficacious means employed by the Society, not only for maintaining itself as a religious Order, but for preserving the true spirit of its Institute, to which ambition would be at once more easy and more dangerous than to any other. Besides the two Pontiffs already mentioned,

several others who knew it well, and loved it with paternal tenderness, could never be induced to choose Pastors from amongst its members, however great their own desire to do so, or however strongly urged by the most powerful princes, or however aware of what their utility to the Church would be; because they looked to a still more important good. On the contrary, Gregory XIII., so partial to the Society, and who employed it so frequently in the service of the Church, conversing one day upon this subject with Cardinal Cornaro, said to him; "We shall both pass to a better life; but you are younger than me, and will survive me. Remember then, never to give your consent to the elevation of a member of the Society to any dignity whatsoever; for their ruin would enter by that door, were it ever opened." He moreover advised him to reject every proposition of this nature, unless it were to happen, that amongst all the secular priests, there were not one capable of governing a church, which was supposing an impossibility.

It is true that Cardinal Santa Croce, afterwards Marcellus II., and successor of Julius III., thought very differently; and argued that the most efficient method of reforming the Clergy, was to provide it with learned and holy pastors. Did they wish to found a religious Order, the object of whose Institute was to introduce amongst its members piety, learning, and zeal for the salvation of souls; those three gifts so important to bishops; where could they find an Order which reunited them as did the Society of Jesus? since its children are brought up from their earliest years to the study of sacred literature, to labor for their own advancement in perfection, and to practise that fervent charity for the salvation of souls which leads them to embrace so many different ministrations for the service of their neighbor. Therefore to deprive the Church of men who were so

especially capable of serving her, was to do her an injury. One day, when the Cardinal was discussing this point at great length with Father Martin Olave, whose arguments had entirely failed to convince him, the latter, as a last resource, referred him to the authority of St. Ignatius, who, wishing to form a Society entirely devoted to the necessities and service of the Church, yet thought so differently upon this subject. This remark was like a ray of light to the pious Cardinal, and he was convinced that even without understanding the motives which actuated the holy Founder, it was wiser to follow up his opinion. "I surrender to that argument," said he, "and acknowledge myself conquered; for the mere name of Ignatius has more weight with me than all the arguments in the world. It is, indeed, most improbable that we should know the will of God better than he whom God himself chose, and to whom He vouchsafed so much assistance in founding your Order, in days which were so disastrous for His Church. It cannot be believed that, after having given him the grace and knowledge necessary for forming the plan of this Institute, and learning how to govern it, God should have left him in error as to the surest means of employing it in His service, without danger to itself."

It is certain that St. Ignatius, whose mind was evidently enlightened from on high, upon less important subjects than the acceptance or refusal of ecclesiastical dignities, could not have been less in doubt upon a point where knowledge was so indispensable to him. Many who have not had the advantage of his penetrating mind, have understood very clearly, that he followed the most exact rules of piety and prudence upon this matter, in his Constitutions. Were that zeal for salvation, which might alone have opened an entry for these dignities in the Society, to have held the keys al-

ways, and never to have opened the gate but to the most deserving, the danger would no doubt have been less imminent, though always serious ; for to deprive an Order of those very men most calculated to fulfil the object of its Institute, is as if we were to take away from a body destined to labor and fatigue, all the active and subtle spirit by which its vigor is infused and preserved. And it was a wise answer which was given by the General of a regular Order, when he was asked what Institute was best provided with the means of preserving the first spirit of its vocation : " That of the Company of Jesus," replied he, " since it preserves all its good members, who never can be carried away from it by ecclesiastical dignities, and dismisses all the bad."

But even setting aside the danger resulting to the Society of the loss of her most valuable members by their elevation to Church dignities, there is another yet more to be dreaded. It may easily be foreseen, that what was granted in the first instance to zeal, might in the future be refused with difficulty to ambition, and that the nomination of bishoprics might not always be restricted to merit alone. Assuredly, those who sought these honors, would not be the most worthy members, who would on the contrary avoid them as dangerous, or at least as undesirable.

No pastoral dignities could ever be sought for through zeal or favor, by any member of an Order so entirely devoted to the salvation of souls ; because it contains within itself so many methods for furthering that object, that it would be hardly possible to go beyond what it permits or requires. Therefore the honors of the prelacy would be chiefly desired through weariness in the observance of our rules, love of independence, or ambitious views ; or perhaps from motives of family interest, or from a distaste to the Superiors. Were a Society which contains so many subjects,

equally distinguished by birth and talent, once to open the door to ambition, the effects which spring from that principle, would necessarily have their natural result upon its members. Would they not then desire to be employed in important and brilliant affairs, which give credit and gain esteem? neither of which can be procured by teaching the Christian doctrine and grammar to children, nor by assisting the poor in the hospitals, and ministering to criminals in the dungeons; nor by apostolic journeyings through villages and over mountains, or often to the furthest extremities of the earth, amongst barbarous nations. Perhaps we might then be seen endeavoring to introduce ourselves into courts, coming to open dissension with our rivals, seeking the favor of the great, by encouraging their inclinations, by defending their interests, or by directing their consciences in a manner more useful to ourselves than conformable to our duty; putting powerful springs in motion, whilst guiding the affairs of princes or their families; and, in short, employing all those means destined in our Order to be consecrated solely to the service of God, in endeavoring to obtain mere temporal advantages.

I pass rapidly over the necessity we should feel of securing the good-will of the great, the degradation to which we might be exposed in acquiring it, the egotism which penetrates the soul, the infirmity of things which make a courtier monk blush for his brethren; for were there nothing more to be dreaded than the serious inconveniences arising to a Religious, from too habitually frequenting the court (and for him who wishes to succeed, it is necessary to do so as much as possible), it would be difficult to explain how serious and important these are. He who frequents the courts of princes with any other object in view, than the pure service of God, soon becomes a courtier in the cloister, rather than

a Religious at the court. Humility, a love of retirement, poverty, mortification, the simplicity of a regular life; all these things, when looked at by an eye accustomed to the contemplation of pomp and grandeur, of effeminacy and honors, assume a mean and even a degrading aspect; are submitted to with regret, and would be abandoned with joy.

I shall only add what experience has told us concerning the vocation with which the Lord has favored us. It bears within itself innately and intrinsically such a repugnance to holding dignities, that those members who, by the express orders of the Sovereign Pontiff, have been raised to them in consequence of their superior intelligence, have never lived as happily as they did before their elevation, and have always endeavored to get rid of them. I may cite as an example, the first Patriarch and the first Cardinal chosen from the Society, Father John Nuñez Barretto, Patriarch of Ethiopia. He was a man of great virtue, and consequently greatly beloved by Ignatius. He left Europe to go to Goa, intending to repair to his diocese, and found there one John Bermudes, who (whether right or wrong it is not my province to examine), declared himself to be the true Patriarch. Upon the arrival of Nuñez, he prepared to plead his cause against him. Ethiopia, said he, had been intrusted to his care for several years. Pope Paul III. had given him the charge of it. If he could not show his bulls, the habit which he wore was at least one proof of what he advanced, and witnesses were not wanting, who, both there and in Portugal, had seen him treated as a Patriarch. But the worthy man had no need either of good reasons or of pleadings to gain his cause; for Father Nuñez, to whom this dignity was an insupportable burden, regarded it as a signal piece of good fortune that he should thus find one who by claiming it as his, might deliver him from it. He immediately wrote

letters to Ignatius, filled with expressions of pious joy, entreating him, with as much importunity as it was permissible for him to use, to employ all his credit with the Sovereign Pontiff, in order that being once delivered from this burden, no other should be imposed upon him. If Ignatius refused this request, he was ready, said he, to recross the seas, and going to Rome, to prostrate himself at the feet of the Sovereign Pontiff, and to supplicate him with so much fervor, that he hoped to induce him to consent that he should no longer be loaded with the care of the salvation of so many other souls, to the peril of his own.

But as he was in fact the legitimate Patriarch, he was obliged to bend his head under the yoke of obedience. He could not, however, obtain admission into Ethiopia, because the Emperor of that country, disappointing the expectations which he had held out of joining the Catholic Church, refused him permission to enter. He remained at the College of Goa, only distinguished by being the most humble, the most submissive, and the poorest of all its inmates.

After the death of St. Ignatius, Nuñez again wrote letters to Father James Lainez, his successor in the Generalship, couched in the most pressing terms, entreating him to obtain permission for him from the Sovereign Pontiff to renounce his dignity, offering to exchange the honors of the Patriarchate for the humblest office in the poorest college of the Society.

The next Cardinal after him was Father Francis Toledo, equally distinguished for virtue and learning. From his own pen the reader may judge better than from any narrative of mine, how strong was his disinclination for that eminent dignity, and all the efforts he made to escape from it. But he was so much beloved by the Pontiff Clement VIII., who had promoted him to the Cardinalship, that his Holiness

did not hesitate to assure him that he was dearer to him than his own nephews.

Opportunities for laboring in the service of the Church were not wanting to him, for the most important affairs of the government were intrusted to his care. But his first vocation, so essentially opposed to such honors, always made it highly displeasing to him to have been forced, as it were, into this elevated position, and inspired him with the most ardent desire of returning to the tranquillity and security of his humble condition. The first year of his Cardinalship had not yet expired, when he wrote to the Pope the following letter, which I here transcribe exactly from the original :

“ MOST HOLY FATHER,—I entreat your Holiness not to attribute the humble representations which I am now going to make, either to lightness or to precipitation, since I have been reflecting upon the subject for many months, and have recommended it to God, and to the prayers of the glorious Virgin Mother, and of all His faithful servants.

“ After mature deliberation, I have resolved to return the Cardinal's hat to your Holiness, and to withdraw into solitude, where I may finish the short residue of my mortal life. Four important reasons have induced me to take this resolution. The first is, the little progress which I make in a spiritual life, since my elevation to this dignity. It seems to me that far from advancing, I go backwards, and fall off.

“ The second is, that I meet with many impediments, troubles, distractions, and occasions of becoming lukewarm in the service of my God, which service I prefer to every thing in this world. The third is the ardent desire which I experience, aided by divine grace, to abandon for the love of God, all that I possess, and for this sole reason, I would that I possessed more, so that I might sacrifice more for Him.

These three first reasons, which can be so shortly expressed, are, in practice, so ample and multiplied, that their details might fill a volume. And speaking as in the presence of God, I may truly say that they cause me constant sorrow and sadness of soul, and a violent distaste to all the external affairs of life, which I cannot always entirely conceal.

“ A fourth reason, secondary and unimportant, it is true, is my bodily weakness. My strength is absolutely exhausted in assisting at Consistories, Congregations, and other public assemblies, where I suffer extremely, and am of very little use in the service of God. I find no words strong enough to express my feelings upon this subject ; but they may be judged of from their effects, and from my ardent desire to renounce all that so many others aspire to and desire.

“ I conjure your Holiness, with as much importunity as I may be permitted to use, by your love for Our Lord Jesus Christ, who has done so much for us, *Qui cum dives esset, propter nos egenus factus est*, who, possessing all things, yet lived in poverty ; by His most holy Virgin Mother, for whom your Holiness has so much devotion, and for whose love I act at this moment ; to accept the renunciation which I now make of the dignity of Cardinal, with the revenue attached to it, and to permit me to retire from the world, to die in tranquillity, as I have long desired to do. Your Holiness will lose little or nothing by my retreat. And do not refuse me the favor which I solicit, without first praying to God and His glorious Mother, that He may enlighten your Holiness, and make you know His holy will. In this hope, I present my humble request in writing, praying your Holiness to believe that it has no other object before God, but His divine service, and the salvation of my own soul, for which I would henceforward labor with the perfection which is due to all that we do for God, and His holy Mother.

"Once more, then, I entreat your Holiness most earnestly and in all humility, to show forth on this occasion the paternal love with which you have treated me for so many years, and which you have proved to me in so many ways. Above all, do not consider my humble request as a proof of ingratitude towards your Holiness, which God, who judges our hearts, knows is very far from mine. Were I to owe nothing more to your Holiness, but the happiness of being able to sacrifice to God the favors which your Holiness has bestowed upon me, my heart would be penetrated with the most lively gratitude. For not only the benefits bestowed upon me by your Holiness, but the love with which they have been bestowed, deserves it all from me.

"May the Lord ever be with your Holiness, and grant you every grace. I remain waiting for the commands of your Holiness, whenever it is your pleasure to send them to me, your very humble, obliged, and devoted servant,

"THE CARDINAL TOLEDO.

"3d of September, 1594."

This letter served to increase the merits of the Cardinal, but not to deliver him from the dignity which troubled him. Whilst he was enjoying the idea that God and the Sovereign Pontiff would grant his petition, and deliberating in his own mind upon the choice of a retreat, far from the troubles of the world, he was sent for by the Pope, four days after, and received from him the following answer, which he afterwards transcribed in his own hand.

"We command you, with all our authority, to think no more henceforward of renouncing the Cardinal's hat. These are not our words, but those which God Himself has put in our mouth. You have asked us to consult Him in this matter, and we have done so; and we can assure you in all

truth, that whenever we have lifted up our heart to Him in prayer, we have heard as it were an interior voice which said : Use all your authority over him, and command him to desist from his intention. Thus, then, the order which we give you, emanates from Him, who has placed the words in our mouth."

After having said these words, the Holy Father conversed with him upon other affairs; which being finished, he embraced him, and said smiling, " We shall go to the desert together."

All these facts appear to us to have been the immediate consequence of the first vocation of these two prelates, rather than the usual result of great humility. These may suffice as examples for the present, although others may occur in the course of this history.

It is not surprising that men, the spirit of whose Institute inspires its members with a total indifference to rank and honor, should feel if forced to accept them, none of that peace and satisfaction which others may enjoy, who are not obliged by the most rigorous precepts, to renounce them. The aversion which they feel, arises from the vow which binds them so strictly to God, and infinitely surpasses any repugnance induced by mere humility. Yet the history of the Church presents many examples of Saints, who to escape from the mitre with which their brows would have been adorned, concealed themselves in the depths of caverns, or in the solitude of deserts; and of many others who forced to accept the episcopacy, in compliance with the respectful violence of the people, after having borne the burden as long as they could endure it, became unable to resist their feelings of repugnance, and seized the first favorable opportunity of retiring into a monastery, or escaping into solitude.

Thus the holy Father Ignatius had provided for the wel-

fare of his Order, by removing all ambition from it, and for that of the Church, by preserving it from ambitious men. But in the event of a member of the Society finding himself obliged by one of the Vicars of Jesus Christ, who alone had the right to do so, to accept of a Bishopric, he had also with admirable prudence provided means of interior government, calculated to tranquillize the conscience of the new prelate, and at the same time mainly conducive to the public good. To attain this double object, each professed member engaged himself by a special vow, that when he was chosen to the prelacy, he would follow the advice of the General or of whosoever he should substitute in his place, and conform to whatever was pointed out to him as being most conducive to the service and glory of God. A few remarks must be made concerning this vow.

Two years before his death, St. Ignatius placed it in his Constitutions, and not satisfied with taking this determination in the presence of God, submitted it, according to his usual custom, to the judgment of the Fathers, and requested their opinion. The original of this proposal, and its examination by nineteen theologians, is preserved in our archives in Rome. The sentence which they passed bears their signatures. It is as follows :

“In presence of all the Fathers assembled, the following has been unanimously agreed upon: 1st, It is lawful for a member, in case of his being raised to the prelacy, to engage himself by a simple vow, to listen to and even to follow the advice of the General of the Society, or of a Commissary named by him to that effect. Yet the prelate must himself feel convinced that this advice is the best that he can follow. Moreover it would not seem advisable to promise such obedience to the General as if he were in fact constituted the Superior of the Bishop; 2dly, The vow in question is ex-

pedient; 3dly, It is admissible and even advisable to give this disposition the form of a Constitution, but with sufficient explanations, so that no one's feelings may be wounded; 4th, There must be no mention made in this of scruples, or of anything of that nature. Given in Rome, in the house of the Society of Jesus, the 17th of September, 1554.”*

At the head of the signatures figures that of James Lainez, alone worth that of a thousand other men. It is followed by those of Andrew Oviedo, who was afterwards Patriarch of Ethiopia, Melchior Carnero, Bishop of Nicea, Martin Olave, Doctor of the Sorbonne, Christopher Madrid, Peter Ribadeneira, and others; all distinguished for great learning and extreme prudence. The decree was then issued, and inserted in the Constitutions, which were thoroughly examined by four Cardinals, by order of Paul IV. Their opinion was that no alteration was required.

Perhaps I have dwelt too long upon these details, but attacks on this subject have become equally numerous and unjust. Even the authority of the Sovereign Pontiffs has been called in question, as if they were ignorant of what they did, when they heard and approved, *ex certa scientia*; as if, notwithstanding the most profound and minute investi-

* Communi omnium Patrum, qui congregati sunt, consensu, conclusum est: 1º, Licere votare voto simplici, quod si quis ex Societate assumatur ad prælationem, audiet consilium Generalis Societatis Jesu, vel ejus in hoc commissarii, et exequetur quod ei consultum fuerit, modo prælatus judicaverit, id, quod consulitur, melius esse. Non tamen videbitur licitum, ita obedientiam dicto Generali votare, ut is per hoc constituatur superior Episcopo; 2º, Hoc votum expedire; 3º, Licere et expedire Constitutionem de hoc facere, modo ita explicetur, ut nullus merito offendi possit; 4º, Non expedire mentionem facere de scrupulis, vel aliis hujusmodi. Conclusa sunt prædicta omnia Romæ, in domo Societatis Jesu, 17 Septembris, Anno Domini, 1554.

gation, they had not been able to discover in this vow all the evil which others have perceived at a single glance; or as if a whole Order, whose members are certainly not destitute of conscience or of knowledge, had yet been so ignorant as to be unable to distinguish a vow from a sacrilege, or so impious as to pronounce it knowing it to be sacrilegious.

That this vow is holy and lawful, and that it can in no way be prejudicial to the sublime dignity of the episcopacy, there can be no doubt. A man does not become subject to another, because he takes his advice; nor does giving advice constitute superiority on the part of him who gives it. To engage one's self to listen to advice, which is even less than asking it, and which is all that this vow requires, without even any obligation on the part of the General to give it; cannot confer on any man a jurisdiction over another, which could only arise from the personal will of the individual who receives the advice. Moreover, when we bind ourselves to act in the manner which we consider most conformable to the service of God, we certainly rather take an obligation towards ourselves and our own judgment, than towards him who, according to the terms of the decree, has simply to give his advice. That this was the only intention of the holy Founder, we may find positively expressed in the 6th paragraph of the 10th part of his Constitutions.*

“He who has been raised to the prelacy does not find a Superior in any member of the Society. His only obligation is to do in the presence of God, and with a good grace, all that appears to him best for the divine service. He ought,

* Non quod habeat, qui prælatus est, aliquem de Societate superioris loco, sed quod sponte in Dei conspectu, vult ad id faciendum obligari, quod ad divinum obsequium melius esse intellexerit quodque placeat esse aliquem, qui sibi eum charitate ac libertate Christiana ad gloriam Dei, et Domini nostri id proponat.

indeed, to receive with pleasure all proposals made to him with Christian freedom and charity, to adopt any plan tending to the glory of our Lord."

From these words it is clear that whoever were to infringe this vow, would offend God alone, and that no one can be constrained to observe it by coercive measures, whether directly or indirectly. Finally, to bind ourselves to any thing, the execution of which cannot take place until we are disengaged from all ties of obedience to the Order, is not leaving the limits of that obedience; in the same way as Cardinals do not leave it, when they swear, according to the Constitution of Pius V., that should they ever become Popes, they will not alienate the goods of the Church.

The accomplishment of the vow which a Bishop has made while he was a member of the Society, does not take place in virtue of any authority which the Order preserves over him, but in virtue of the vow itself, which is binding upon him. When he was a Religious, he was also bound to this vow, through subjection to his Superior, who held jurisdiction over him, by apostolic authority. In the same way as to pronounce a vow and to fulfil it are two very distinct acts, so we may very easily take a vow from obedience, and fulfil it when no longer under obedience.

CHAPTER VII.

St. Ignatius a model in the art of governing—His admirable prudence united with his entire relinquishment of every thing to God—Empire of St. Ignatius over the emotions of his soul—His conduct in regard to Novices—His circumspection in the choice of the persons whom he employed—His esteem and tenderness towards his followers.

THE Society had thus received from its holy Founder the plan on which was to be built up the edifice of a life equally perfect in regard to themselves and to their neighbor; but as it would have been manifestly prejudicial to the Order had it been unable, along with this perfect plan whose results and remembrance were to endure so long, to learn from St. Ignatius himself the most difficult and important art of all, that of government; it pleased God to give us by his example, a practical and living rule of all that he had taught. I consider it as a mark of the divine protection towards us, not to have permitted the repeated efforts of Ignatius to dissuade his brethren from choosing him for their General, to have succeeded. In this circumstance, God had less regard to the humility of his servant, than to the public welfare, and to the infinite advantage of this election to the Order. It was ordained by Him, that he who had been the Father of the Company should also, and with equal success, become its Head.

It is certain that in religious Orders, where the temporal administration is the part of least importance, we may easily

acknowledge the truth of what St. Gregory Nazianzen said; that "to direct the minds of men well, is the art of arts, the science of sciences, and a very much more arduous task than that of curing the body. For when the professor of the healing art considers the state of the patient whom he wishes to restore to health, he sees it such as it really is; nature not combating against herself, or endeavoring to struggle against the efforts of art. But on the contrary, we bear within our hearts that intelligence, that self-love, that ignorance, that dislike to submission, which are great obstacles to virtue, and put us as it were in a state of warfare with those who endeavor to teach us to practise it. All the care which we ought to employ in making known the wounds of our soul to those capable of curing them, we use to fly from their remedies, and we become valiant against ourselves and skilful to our own hurt."

As in the judgment of all the wisest men who lived with St. Ignatius, he was unequalled in his power of conceiving speculatively the idea of a perfect government, as was proved by his Constitutions,—a book, according to Father Lainez, capable of promptly reforming the whole face of the globe; so was he also unrivalled in his method of reducing this idea to practice. It will, therefore, be advisable to give some details upon this subject, to assist those who govern, to form themselves upon so admirable a model.

Father Oliver Manares, who was more than once Rector, Commissary, and Provincial, declared that in every thing regarding the government, he endeavored to inspire himself with the spirit of St. Ignatius, to ask himself what he would have done when it was in question to take such or such a resolution, after which he went forward with confidence. All the other Superiors followed this example, from whence it resulted that even those who had not lived with Ignatius and

had not been able to observe his conduct with their own eyes, yet preserved his spirit, as contained in his Constitutions, and also his practical method of governing. Thus they would sometimes endeavor to guess whether in such or such a case he would have shut his eyes, and passed over some slight fault, which might be the beginning of greater remissness, or whether on the contrary he would not have insisted on the strict observance of those Statutes, conceived rather by inspiration from Heaven, than by the strength of his own intellect, and over which he had perhaps shed more tears than he had used letters in tracing them. Again, it was his spirit which they consulted when they debated as to whether they ought to yield to certain obstacles which opposed the maintenance of religious discipline, in order to keep peace with those confided to their care, or to obtain esteem as discreet and indulgent Superiors. "As we should vainly seek for support," says St. Gregory, "from him who should be guilty of the very faults which it is his office to correct in others;" so it would be useless to put our trust in him who should fail to keep those rules of prudence which Ignatius required even more if possible than holiness in those who govern; but as discretion is truly a rare gift, the want of this essential quality may be partly supplied by imitating him who possessed it in so eminent a degree.

In fact, if we observe the extreme attention, the long deliberation, the foresight, the examination, the opinions by which he surrounded himself, we shall soon acknowledge that he acted according to the rules of the most consummate prudence, and that it alone regulated his conduct. He first made a thorough examination, both of the nature of the affairs and of the spirit of the persons with whom he had to discuss them, then considered the most opportune moment, the means most likely to produce success, and finally every

thing which might cross or overthrow his projects. Every evening, he wrote out exactly what was to be done the next day, and gave directions to those whom he charged with this duty as to the course they were to pursue, and the means they were to employ. He submitted all important affairs, after long meditation, to the deliberation of a council; never admitting those men who are always ready to pronounce judgment, and who, upon the mere statement of an affair, take a decided resolution, whether its execution be easy or dangerous. Ignatius always looked rather to the end than to the beginning of an enterprise. Before deciding, he calculated the effects, whether unfavorable or beneficial, likely to result from his determination; what difficulties awaited him, whence they would come, and how they might be surmounted. He foresaw these things from such a remote distance, that between him and the most eminently wise men whom he consulted, there existed as much difference in the manner of viewing a subject, as between him who discovers a country from the summit of a mountain and one who looks around him in the plain below.

It was for this reason that Father Lainez so earnestly desired that Ignatius should form one of the number of those Fathers who were to assist at the Council of Trent; for besides all that might be hoped for from the efficacy of his prayers, he foresaw of what incomparable utility his clear intellect would be in that august assembly, charged to watch over the most important interests of the Church.

It was his custom in all important affairs, never to execute immediately what he had resolved upon. He allowed his mind to rest for some days upon the same object, then caused it to be discussed again in his Council; and as he had on the first occasion thoroughly examined the affair, he then weighed its execution, and in order to assure himself

that he was guided neither by passion nor by any self-interest, he considered it as some irrelevant matter, submitted only to his examination. The letters which he found it necessary to write upon this subject, he corrected and copied three or four times over.

Endowed with these habits of prudence, and especially with that extreme clearness of intellect which enabled him to foresee the remotest consequences of each step that he took, he sometimes formed resolutions which appeared strange to persons who viewed them superficially, and which were perhaps entirely opposed to those which a less provident man would have taken; or in order to insure the success of his projects, he was observed to select methods apparently quite insufficient; yet the results, unforeseen by those who had not calculated them like him, proved the wisdom of the plan which he had followed.

He united with this consummate prudence the greatest self-distrust, and such absolute confidence in God, that whilst on the one hand he acted as if every thing depended upon himself alone, on the other, he abandoned them to God as if his care could have no influence over them. When he had reached a conclusion with his counsellors, he would recommend it to the Lord for a long while before acting upon it, and then would habitually say to them, "Now, let us sleep upon this;" that is to say, let us recommend it to our heavenly Father in our prayers; and however infallible the means upon which he had concluded appeared to him, he never put them in practice until he felt himself certain that the Lord approved him. He therefore always attributed his success to God alone. And when he undertook important works for the service of God, he was never guided by the dictates of mere human wisdom, but used to observe that in such circumstances he sails most securely who sails against

the wind. He thus commenced, and thus conducted to a happy termination, great works and important enterprises, not only without natural assistance, but notwithstanding the most extreme difficulties and opposing obstacles.

Another virtue of St. Ignatius most worthy of our admiration, was the absolute empire which he exercised over his passions, and especially over his indignation and sensibility; whose effects, whether severe or consoling, he managed so completely, having his words and actions so entirely under his control, that they never failed to have all the weight which the different circumstances of time, place, persons, and things required. Thus it happened that frequently, while engaged in conversation with some of the Fathers, his countenance serene, and his soul calm and tranquil as it ever was; if one of the members whom he had ordered into his presence because guilty of a fault requiring a severe reprimand, suddenly appeared before him, he became as it were transformed into another man. From the grave expression of his countenance, from his energetic and impressive words, one would have thought that his whole soul was overwhelmed with horror at the sin which he condemned. When the guilty man had left his presence, he immediately resumed his former serenity, and continued his conversation with as much tranquillity as if the emotion of anger which had interrupted it, had been but a mask placed upon his countenance and drawn off without any disturbance having been excited in his soul. Hence it resulted, that his words which, according to the testimony of an eye-witness, were sometimes so vehement that they seemed to shake the very walls of the apartment, were at the same time so wise, so composed, that not one syllable appeared to have been dictated by anger. They owed their efficacy to reason alone. Never was he heard to address an insulting or contemptuous word

even to the most dissolute or disorderly. The whole force of his reprimand consisted in setting forth the deformity and hatefulness of the error committed, and all its aggravating circumstances towards the criminal himself, his brethren, and his God. He did not desire that a Superior should feel no anger, but that he should be able to mortify and subdue it; for in a house governed with imperturbable softness, vices will soon find a sure asylum.

Thus when Father Oliver Manares wished to resign the government of the Roman College, because after having believed when he was a novice, that all emotions of anger were extinguished in his heart, he still felt them after he became a Superior; Ignatius told him that it was not necessary to root out that disposition, but only to govern it—so that, without permitting it to be his master, it should enable him to maintain his inferiors in the path of duty. It is true, that when Ignatius reproved with the extreme severity of which I have spoken, it was a proof that he discovered great defects or great virtues in the individual whom he addressed. He constantly warned the Superiors that they ought not to use great severity, except on important occasions, or to give some necessary public example; for there are some of timid or easily alarmed virtue, who might see in any excessive rigor, a dislike to them personally, rather than to their faults. The same feelings towards their Superiors might arise in their breasts, and the evils arising from such sentiments would greatly surpass the advantages derived from the correction. It also happens that when severe reprimands are too frequent, they appear rather the result of natural impatience, than dictated by zeal for the enforcement of discipline.

I have observed that Ignatius usually treated with most rigor those in whom he recognized great defects or great

virtues. He generally reprov'd with extreme severity, even for the slightest faults, men of solid minds and manly virtue. Amongst these were the Fathers Jerome Nadal and John de Polanco, whose rare virtues made them especially beloved by St. Ignatius, and towards whom he was more than usually severe. He had a double motive in acting thus; that of purifying more and more those souls which he considered capable of advancing to the highest state of perfection, by awakening their vigilant attention towards the slightest faults; and that of giving examples of humility and patience to weaker minds, whose more serious faults he was accustomed to reprove with greater gentleness. It is true, that this apparent harshness towards men of distinguished virtue was practised by Ignatius with so much prudence, that it never weakened the esteem due to them by their brethren. He never failed, in their absence, to praise before the others their virtue and progress in a spiritual life. He thus excited great admiration for those who became the more strengthened in the practice of virtue, in proportion as they were tried by mortifications, both public and private.

Another proof of eminent wisdom was also remarked in Ignatius, in the skill with which he knew how to adapt himself to the peculiar character of each individual; so that he seemed to be the particular Superior of each member, rather than that of the whole Order. This extreme prudence enabled him, in the first place, to anatomize, if we may so express it, the soul of each individual, by observing his habitual disposition, the inclinations of his mind, the movements of his passions, until he attained a more perfect knowledge of him than he had of himself. Thus he knew how to contrive opportunities by which the novices, without remarking it, would display their character or ruling passion, by words or sudden impulsive actions. Hence, also, arose his manner of

treating them, whether grave or affable, severe or gentle, confiding or reserved, according as he considered it most appropriate to each, and which he always adopted so naturally that he appeared to have no other. Superficial minds were filled with wonder at seeing the same things treated so differently, not only according to the different individuals concerned, but even in regard to the same individual, according to the different dispositions which he remarked in him. The results proved that the indulgence or the severity practised by Ignatius, was precisely what was most required.

As a thorough knowledge of those whom it is our duty to direct, is the most important point towards constituting a good method of government, Ignatius never sent one of his children from Rome to another country, without sending minute information to the Superior of his good qualities or defects. He was equally prudent in his guidance of each member towards perfection, by the path which best suited him. His own life had been strewn with all those great trials which lead to holiness; such as rigorous austerities, long watchings, distant pilgrimages, spiritual dryness and consolation, etc. But he never measured the strength of others by his own. On the contrary, he severely reproved those who give whatever suits themselves best, as an infallible rule for others, and who look upon all those who do not follow the path which led them to virtue, as having wandered from the right way. "In material things," said he, "we must accommodate ourselves to affairs, and not expect them to accommodate themselves to us." In leading on his children to perfection, this was precisely the line that he adopted. He so completely assimilated himself to each individual, that he seemed to inoculate himself with the spirit of each, in all things not contrary to the Institute. By this means he easily gained their confidence, so that they opened their

whole hearts to him, showed him their most secret thoughts, feeling assured that he would cultivate whatever germs of good he found there, instead of rooting them out in order to implant those higher virtues which he himself possessed, but which God did not demand of them.

Yet, while he guided his children by various paths, Ignatius never encouraged cowardice or lukewarmness in them. He would never permit them to be satisfied with a merely Christian life, which would not have responded to the sublimity of their vocation, or to the means which it afforded them of attaining perfection. He daily spurred them forward by his counsels, by mortifications, particular examinations, spiritual exercises; in short, he neglected no method capable of increasing their virtue.

But his efforts were guided by so much discretion, that he never required from any one more than he could give, and, on the path of virtue, could always distinguish children from giants. Those of great courage, he exposed to difficult and dangerous enterprises, to long and painful voyages, to the hardships of apostolic labors, to extreme privations and persecutions. Those who, on the contrary, were weak, and especially the newly-arrived members, he employed in offices even inferior to their strength and abilities, in order that by this indulgence granted to their feeble virtue, they might be excited to take courage, and to merit the companionship of those who were further advanced in perfection. Thus, for example, he used that moderation and circumspection necessary towards novices in the faith, in the case of brother Bernard, a native of Japan, sent by St. Francis Xavier to Europe. Notwithstanding all his entreaties, he would never intrust him with any difficult or fatiguing employment, until he had made him promise that whenever he felt too much fatigue or lassitude, he would inform him of it. With re-

gard to correction, he did the same thing, carefully proportioning it to the strength and capacity of the subjects ; and as his eyes could always express his meaning, he would sometimes reprove the more timid merely by a glance ; “ Giving utterance by the very look,” as St. John Chrysostom says of the Saviour, when he looked at Peter, and that one glance made a torrent of bitter tears fall from the eyes of the Apostle. Sometimes the Saint would reprove those whose minds were still feeble, by words which contained more praise than reproach. Thus he corrected a novice whose eyes expressed too much warmth and vivacity, by saying to him in a gentle and affectionate tone : “ Brother John Dominick, how comes it that you do not allow us to read in your eyes the modesty and gentleness with which God has adorned your soul ? ” He acted very differently towards Father Oliver Manares, a man of well-tried experience in religion, and of consummate virtue ; who loved Ignatius as a Father, and revered him as a Saint. Being named Rector of the new College of Loretto, and obliged to leave Rome, he went to take leave of him, and receive his parting blessing. Fearing that he might never see Ignatius again alive, he fixed his eyes upon his countenance during the whole time that he spoke to him, which Ignatius did not appear to remark ; but, as Manares was leaving the house, he was recalled by Father John de Polanco, the Secretary of Ignatius, who told him that he had orders from the Saint to tell him that he was greatly displeased at the freedom of his manner of gazing at him, which he considered as wanting in modesty, and which he must endeavor to correct. He enjoined him to make a particular examination on this subject daily, and to repeat a certain number of prayers ; moreover, to render a weekly account to Ignatius of the fulfilment of this penance,

which he did for more than fifteen months, after which he was permitted to give it up.

As for the very young novices who, like tender plants, have still a little earth attached to their roots, belonging to the worldly soil from whence they have been taken, Ignatius treated them with equal gentleness and skill. He imitated, in his treatment of them, that of our Lord, who, to detach them entirely from terrestrial enjoyments, permits them to taste the honey of spiritual consolations, and weans them from it gradually, when they become more robust. Thus Ignatius showed them at first nothing but compassion and indulgence, gathered the few fruits which they were able to produce, and felt no uneasiness at their scarcity when he foresaw an abundant harvest for the future.

A young man, who in the world had been possessed of riches and affluence, entered upon his novitiate as brother-coadjutor, and brought with him a crucifix, with an image of Our Lady standing at the foot of the cross, both objects of great value, and to which our novice was deeply attached, partly on account of their exquisite workmanship, and partly from a feeling of extreme devotion. Ignatius, without appearing to feel any displeasure at his retaining them, or to think that he must one day renounce them, left them in his possession. Meanwhile, the young novice made rapid progress in virtue, and especially in the spirit of mortification and self-denial—in which none of the oldest members equalled him. When the Saint observed that he was not only detached from the things of this world, but from himself; “Now,” said he, “that this young brother has the crucifix in his heart, it is time to withdraw it from his hands.” And he did so, at which the novice felt no more regret than if it had never belonged to him.

Still more remarkable was the toleration with which he

so long endured the levity of Father Peter Ribadeneira, who was then very young, and of so lively a disposition, that he had great difficulty in submitting to the different rules. But although the Fathers frequently importuned Ignatius to dismiss him, he, who in his wisdom observed that these failings proceeded from the ardor of youth rather than from a bad disposition, and foresaw that a noble edifice might be raised in time upon this foundation, supported him against them all, and persisted in treating him as a child.

When Ribadeneira, wearied of a life which he found too monotonous for his ardent temper, or discontented on account of some punishment, wished to leave the Society, he was retained by the paternal kindness which Ignatius showed him, and which, finally, had the effect of transforming him into an entirely new man, to the great advantage of the Order and of his own soul.

As for those members who had but lately left the world, Ignatius treated them with particular consideration, and even continued to address them by their worldly titles, as long as he thought that their weakness rendered it necessary. They themselves were invariably the first to blush at the difference subsisting between them and their brothers, and to entreat their Superior to lay aside these forms of respect.

But when spiritual things had taken deep root in their hearts, and their courage might be relied upon, then they, even more than others, were subjected to severe trials and mortifications. The most learned were the most often put to confusion; the most noble were most frequently humiliated, until both had entirely forgotten both their nobility and their learning, or behaved as if they had never possessed either.

In the first place, it was exceedingly important that it should be understood in the Company that worldly advantages were of no importance, and that spiritual advancement alone

could be of any value ; that no man could be considered great because he held a high position in the world, but on the contrary, because he had made himself of no account for the love of Christ, and had trampled the world under his feet. In the next place, the more or less exemplary conduct of men distinguished by their high birth or literary attainments, was a matter of no small moment, for daily experience has shown us that in a religious Order, such persons exercise a more than ordinary influence for good or for evil.

In the third place, Ignatius was aware that when men of great importance are not suited to a religious life, and have in consequence to be dismissed from an Order, they become the more injurious to it, in proportion to their worldly credit, and that therefore, while it is necessary to use the greatest circumspection before receiving them, no trial should be spared them after their admission.

Amongst those whose virtue was more particularly put to the proof, we may mention Father Gaspar Loarte, a very celebrated preacher and doctor of theology in Spain ; who had been sent to the Society with several others, by a holy man named John de Avila. When Ignatius judged that the time had arrived for strengthening him in virtue, he put him under the direction of Father Louis Gonsalez, at that time minister in the house, charging him to treat Loarte with great severity, to observe how he stood his trials, and every evening to render him a minute account of all that took place. Meanwhile, as if unaware of what was passing, he himself treated the novice with excessive leniency ; for it was one of the rules which he in his admirable prudence laid down in regard to those whose virtue was put to the test, in order not to discourage them ; that when one of the Superiors of the house used severity towards a novice, the other should treat him with extreme gentleness.

Before he confided the novice to the charge of Father Gonzalez, he took particular care to praise him in their presence, for his spiritual attainments, his justice, and his zeal both for the public good and for the particular progress of each individual, which led him to watch over the conduct and to reform the faults of those who were intrusted to his care, and for which they owed him a double debt of gratitude. These two different plans of consolation and mortification succeeded admirably with Loarte. The minister having asked him one day what his opinion was of Father Ignatius; "I think," replied he, "that he is truly a fountain of oil, all softness and unction." "And I," said the Father, "what is your opinion of me?" "You?" said Gaspar frankly,—"you appear to me a fountain of vinegar."

This answer repeated to the Saint pleased him exceedingly, but he now advised the minister to diminish his severity a little, and to show him some gentleness. In fact he had exercised the patience of Gaspar by such severe trials, that only the strongest mind could have supported them, and moreover it seemed as if God Himself concurred in purifying his soul, by trying him with as many internal afflictions as he experienced outward troubles. While in the world, he had enjoyed great consolations in prayer; but now when the severe trials imposed upon him in the Society, seemed to render some spiritual comfort more especially necessary to him, he found himself abandoned to the most painful dryness which to any man less advanced in spiritual perfection, would have been a dangerous temptation, and which he might have interpreted as a proof that God did not wish him to remain in this Order, since He seemed to turn away his face from him. And, as if the trials to which Father Gonzalez himself subjected Loarte were not sufficient, he had consigned him to the direction of a young novice, chosen on account of

his want of intelligence, who by sharp and cutting remarks often humbled him before the others to such a degree, as to force tears from his eyes as if he had been a child; a useful lesson in self-knowledge to Loarte, and necessary to one who in leaving the world, had entertained a high opinion of his own spiritual advancement. For although these tears were no doubt a mere tribute paid by suffering nature, yet they proved to him how far he was from loving humiliation and contempt, since they troubled him to such a degree. It is true that Ignatius, like a skilful physician, would call Loarte to himself at these moments of discouragement, and would speak to him with so much unction, with so much sweetness upon spiritual topics, would address exhortations to him so appropriate to the state of his soul, that he soon restored him to animation and cheerfulness, until forgetting all that he had suffered, he felt himself inspired with courage to support whatever else he might be called upon to endure.

“As for me,” writes Gonsalez, “I spoke to him incessantly of internal mortification, the renunciation of all self-will, of the perfect obedience required in the Society, and I frequently repeated those words: *You must reach the goal.* One day he asked me to explain my idea to him more clearly, which I did by the following comparison. If a man were to fasten himself to a rope attached to a beam, and suspend himself from it so that his feet still touched the ground, he could not decide whether or not it was strong enough to support him. But if he is raised from the ground, and remains suspended in the air, he will soon discover whether the rope can sustain his weight without breaking. And thus it is with our Father Ignatius and the Society. Although his members have by their own free will devoted themselves to the service of God, and are strongly attached to it, yet if their feet still touch the earth, that is, if their

affections are still fixed upon earthly things, those which are spiritual will be insufficient to sustain them. But if all that has hitherto attracted their affections is withdrawn from them, if without touching the earth, they are nevertheless supported, then it is evident that the spirit sustains them, and they are entitled to perfect confidence. That, added I, is what I call arriving at the goal. I had tried to explain all this to him in so persuasive a manner, that tears came into his eyes. 'Oh unfortunate that I am!' said he; "by these words thou tellest me to prepare for punishment!"

But the expectations of our holy Father were fulfilled, and Loarte, who had dreaded a life which appeared to him so full of hardships, found his mind so calm and contented, that before many months had elapsed, he himself sought for mortification and contempt. Ignatius soon found him so worthy of his confidence, and so capable of guiding others in a spiritual life, that he sent him to Genoa, as Rector of the new college in that city.

If a member of the Society showed any symptoms of self-love, or any will of his own, as to whether he would or would not labor for the execution of some project, Ignatius considered him as tacitly taking leave of the Society, since he who withdrew his obedience from it, could no longer belong to it. His desire was to find in all his children such perfect forgetfulness of self, such a complete renunciation of their own will into the hands of the Superior, that they should be equally ready to be theologians or porters, to cross the ocean and to go to the end of the world, or to remain at home; to be, in short, like a piece of clay in the hands of the potter, who gives it the form he desires. Any one who preferred his own judgment to that of his Superior, had but one foot in the Company, according to the habitual expres-

sion of St. Ignatius. Thus when he received novices into his Order, he would always warn them that this first step would lead to nothing stable, unless they could bend their will and judgment to the sole arbitration of him who was to hold the place of Jesus Christ in his authority over them.

Yet notwithstanding this formal admonition, his order always resembled an entreaty rather than a command; and his authority was entirely paternal, accompanied by every proof of trust and affection. Frequently when requiring some important but unforeseen and difficult service, he would go so far as to give the reasons for which he required it; reasons invariably based not only upon human prudence, but still more upon the service of God and with a view to his greater glory.

In employing his Religious in the different functions of the Order, he paid particular attention to the natural inclinations of each, and endeavored as much as possible to find out not only their peculiar talents, but the employment which would give them most pleasure and satisfaction. Knowing that nothing which is forced can be enduring, and that all which is performed with good-will and according to the natural inclinations of the heart, is usually more successful than that which is the effect of a superior force contradicting the will; he usually, before deciding upon the office or ministry in which he was going to employ any of his members, presented them with three points to examine in the presence of God. Were they prepared to obey, whatsoever should be the office assigned them? Had they any inclination for any one employment more than for another? If placed in such or such circumstances, to which would they give the preference?

It is true, that when he found one whose disengagement from all self-will was so perfect, that after mature reflection he could only express his readiness to obey, he was filled with

heart-felt joy, at having found one according to his own soul. Such a one was Father Oliver Manares, who never would consent to say to which of the three residences offered him he gave the preference, and whose only answer was, that he was ready to die, if his death were to be the result of his obedience. So also Jerome Nadal in a like circumstance would only reply that his sole inclination was to have none.

Besides the wonderful empire which St. Ignatius exercised over his own passions, besides his knowledge of the character, inclinations and talents of others, a knowledge which sometimes seemed superhuman; he possessed qualities which were inestimable in the government of his children; an extreme tenderness and a sincere esteem for each one of them; and these sentiments were neither superficial nor affected, but sprung from a true and loyal heart. And it was often observed, that each one thought himself in possession of the first place in the affections of Ignatius, so well did he know how to combine a warm and disinterested affection for each, with his attachment to the whole. As for his esteem for them, he never spoke of his children but as of men either already perfect, or who were advancing rapidly in the path of perfection, and in this he spoke his true opinion. He preserved it the more easily, that he never felt suspicious of them, and turned a deaf ear to all those who spoke to their prejudice.

The false prudence of the world leads us, on the contrary, to be always distrustful, and always to listen to those who speak ill of others. If this method is favorable to worldly views, it would certainly be extremely prejudicial in a religious Order, especially if adopted by those who ought to govern it paternally. It would open a door for the entrance of every bad passion, and would evidently lead to the danger of producing more calumnies than true accusations.

It would, moreover, be impossible, suspicion being once awakened, to avoid the effect arising from accusations, even when false and calumnious ; all sentiments of esteem and affection towards the accused would, at least for a time, be suspended. Hence it would result, that an apparent continuance of the same sentiments as were before truly felt, would be mere hypocrisy, and would not even deceive those towards whom it was practised ; for men are generally clear-sighted in all that concerns themselves. Distrust and aversion on their part towards their Superiors, would be the inevitable and fatal consequence.

Father Luis Gonzalez, from whom I take all that I have written on this subject, concerning the conduct of St. Ignatius, adds that in believing an accusation against any one, he would not even rely upon the opinion of Father Polanco, his Secretary, a man of equal judgment and equity ; in proof of which, and of the wisdom which guided his conduct in this respect, he quotes a passage taken from the second book of *The Considerations*, sent by St. Bernard to Pope Eugene. It is as follows :

“ There is yet another fault which I must mention, and if you do not feel yourself guilty of it, you are in truth a singular instance amongst all those whom I have known, who have been raised to a high position. I mean credulity ; the ease with which you believe all that you hear. I have not yet found one great personage sufficiently on his guard against the craft of this thrice malicious foe. To it may be attributed so much unfounded anger, so many accusations against the innocent, so much wrong done to the absent.”*

* Ut item viciū, cujus si te immunem sentis, inter omnes, quos novi ex his qui cathedras ascenderunt, sedebis, me iudice, solitarius, quia vivaciter, singulariterque levasti te super te, juxta prophetam. Facilitas credulitatis hæc est : cujus callidissimæ vulpeculæ, magno-

Yet as it might have been prejudicial to the Order, if he who governed were never to listen to any accusation, or were to receive them all without distinction, St. Ignatius usually required that whoever thought it his duty to reveal the faults of others, should draw up his accusation in writing. He particularly insisted upon this in the case of those who by the warmth of their manner or expressions, showed that they were animated by passion or by too ardent zeal. "Words," said he, "fall more moderately from the pen than from the tongue. We see what we write, and not what we speak." He was still more cautious in forming his opinion concerning the absent, who, ignorant of the accusations against them, could not justify themselves.

On one occasion, wishing to satisfy himself as to the conduct of one of the Fathers, whose labors in Corsica had been very successful, and who had been represented to him by persons of secretly heretical sentiments, as a turbulent and dangerous man, he sent another Father there, a man of tried wisdom and prudence, under a feigned name, that he might judge what the general opinion was, and send him a report certified by the principal inhabitants of the Island.

When Ignatius found himself obliged to reveal the faults of his children, that their correction or punishment might be decided upon in Council, he was extremely cautious not to make more persons acquainted with them than what was absolutely necessary.

He reproached himself one day as with a fault which weighed upon his conscience, that he had once made known a slight fault of one of the Brothers to two of the Fathers, when, as he afterwards reflected, it would have sufficed to

rum neminem comperi satis cavisse versutias. Inde eis ipsis pro nihilo iræ multæ, inde innocentium frequens addictio, inde prejudicia in absentes.

inform one only. Well aware that any marked preference on his part would excite a feeling of envy, because every one excepting the individual preferred, would consider himself personally slighted, he carefully avoided every word or action, from which his private predilections could be inferred. Yet he secretly felt for Peter Faber, his first-born in the Lord; a deep and ardent affection; for in him he observed all that wisdom and those solid virtues so necessary in the Superior General of the Society. Yet when the moment came for him to make his choice, he would neither designate Faber nor any other, but, as we have already related, gave his vote with his usual prudence, to him who should reunite most suffrages, himself alone excepted. So when Pope Marcellus II. begged him to send two Fathers of the Society to reside with him, and to assist him with their advice in the reform of the Clergy, he would not select them himself, but left it to the decision of the majority.

But in order not to deprive the deliberations in Council of the powerful aid which they derived from his advice in similar matters, he generally enumerated the qualities which the functionary in question ought necessarily to possess; and thus tacitly pointed out the person whom they ought to choose; so that, without being absolutely designated by Ignatius, the choice was really his, and he did but avoid the discontent which might have been excited, were he to have selected from amongst his children all nearly equal in virtue, one whom he would thus declare more worthy than his brothers, and possessed of a higher place in his esteem. The truth is that the Saint felt that attachment and esteem for them all, which is so necessary in the government of all religious Orders, but which is indispensable in the Society of Jesus.

“The Society,” says St. Francis Xavier, in one of his

letters, "is founded upon the charity and concord which exclude both severity and servile fear. Thus a Superior who should make himself more feared than loved, who should evince the severity and authority of a master, rather than the gentleness and tenderness of a Father, would see few members enter the Society, and many leave it."

That we may perfectly understand how singular and admirable the government of St. Ignatius was in this particular, it would be sufficient to recall to our minds the writings of the first Fathers, which prove that towards his children, he was all charity and affection; that when he met one of them, his countenance beamed with so much kindliness, his words were so affectionate, that it seemed as though he wished to take him into his very heart. Nor was there ever a Father more tenderly beloved by his children, than Ignatius was by the whole Society. With the exception of one, whose name has not reached me, the hearts of all were entirely devoted to him; and their greatest affliction was to be separated from him. His demonstrations of tender affection for his children were not reserved for those who lived with him; like a tender Father, he cherished equally those who were absent and those who were present. Of his absent children he spoke with particular affection; felt deeply for all their sufferings, persecutions, and labors; constantly remembered them in his prayers, and often invoked the Lord with tears in their behalf. Frequently he consoled them by letters filled with salutary advice, and every proof of affectionate remembrance which could mitigate their troubles. He did so more especially in 1555, when several of his children were fiercely persecuted in France, and threatened by a powerful faction. His letters raised their courage so much, that they declared themselves ready to die rather than to relinquish those labors for the salvation of their brethren, which

drew this persecution upon them. He also consoled Father Alphonsus Salmeron, who had fallen sick at Padua, and to whom his letter proved such a source of consolation, that when his strength returned, he answered him in these terms: "The letter of your Reverence showed me your sympathy with my sufferings. I know, indeed, your fatherly tenderness, and I do not doubt that your prayers obtained from Heaven my restoration to health, which no medical art nor earthly remedy could ever have effected. May God, always merciful towards His creatures, grant me by His grace, new strength to correspond to that love and charity, with which your Reverence consoles and assists us all, like a true Father!"

CHAPTER VIII.

Care of Ignatius for all his children, but especially towards the sick—Different examples of his talent and skill in assisting his children in their spiritual necessities, and supporting them in their temptations.

WE must not suppose that Ignatius confined the testimonies of his affection merely to a kind reception, or to written or verbal consolations. Whenever, by his activity or energy, he could be useful to his children, he neglected no means of serving them ; but he permitted no one, whether sick or well, to busy himself with his own concerns, or to look out for what was necessary for his own support ; because his ever-watchful care was more than sufficient for all. No one ever undertook a journey without presenting himself before Ignatius. He examined minutely whether he had every thing necessary for a poor traveller. No one ever fell into any necessity or danger, whether present or absent, that Ignatius did not occupy himself for his relief, with all the anxiety and affection of a father. A Frenchman named John Guttan, a man of great learning and distinguished virtue, coming by sea from Gandia, where he was professor of philosophy, to Rome, where Ignatius called him, encountered a dreadful storm on the voyage ; and the vessel being cast on the Sicilian coast, was attacked by pirates, who seized and carried him to Africa as a slave.

The grief of Ignatius was extreme. Gladly would he have sold himself to ransom the captive. He wrote the

most pressing letters to the Viceroy of Sicily, his particular friend. He ordered all the Fathers of the Company, resident in that kingdom, to spare neither trouble nor expense in restoring the prisoner to liberty. In order to make sure of their employing all the activity necessary to attain this object, he charged the Rectors of Palermo and Messina, in virtue of obedience, to send him a weekly statement of the steps that were taken. It pleased the Lord to crown the pious resignation of Father Guttan, and to console the charity of our holy Founder ; for before the treaty for the redemption of the captive was concluded, God had delivered him from the chains of slavery, and the bonds of the flesh.

But the charity of Ignatius never shone more brightly than in his care for the sick. An account of their condition was brought him by his directions several times a day ; and no remedy of any importance was ordered by the physician, that Ignatius did not inquire from the attendants in the Infirmary, if it had been exactly administered. If it had been neglected through forgetfulness or carelessness, he punished them severely.

On one occasion, amongst others, the Father Minister and the keeper of the Infirmary, having forgotten to send for a physician for a sick Brother, he sent them both out in the middle of the night to find one, with orders not to return without him. But as the lateness of the hour made it impossible for them to obtain admission into any house, they were obliged to seek shelter in an hospital till day-break.

No expense was spared for the relief of the sick. Two Novices, Coadjutors, one Spanish, the other French, had hardly entered the house, before they both fell ill ; and on account of the number of Brothers who were sick at that time, there was great want of room, and an extreme scarcity of provisions, so that it was difficult to provide for their

wants. Some Fathers therefore proposed that they should be transported to the hospital until they recovered. "Oh, never!" said St. Ignatius, "shall men who have left the world to serve God, not find an asylum in our house? Let us provide for them, and God will find the means of providing for us."

On another occasion, the physician ordered some very substantial food for a sick Brother, which he considered necessary to his recovery; the steward, ordered to buy it, told Ignatius that he had but three small coins remaining, barely sufficient to provide for the establishment for that one day. "Well," replied he, "you must spend them on the sick man. We who are in health, will content ourselves with bread." At other times when there was no money, he would sell the pewter dishes, or some of the poor furniture of the house, to obtain relief for his suffering patients.

If he saw one saddened by suffering, he would frequently send for some of the novices who understood music, that they might sing spiritual songs for his recreation. Besides this thoughtful charity, which was as consolatory to the soul as to the body, he never failed to attend them himself, comforting them with gentle and spiritual conversation. If the patient grew worse, or if it had been found necessary to bleed him, he would rise several times in the night, and go quietly to visit him, to ascertain whether his bandage had not been moved, and to prevent the danger which might have resulted from such an accident. When his life was drawing to a close, and his failing health obliged him to renounce the generalship, with all its public duties, he still reserved for himself the duty of caring for the sick; and would often remark that he owed the utmost gratitude to God, who by trying him with prolonged infirmities, had taught him how

to pity others, and enabled him to judge by his own experience how he might best relieve them.

But if he required the most affectionate and attentive charity towards the sick, he also desired to find great patience on their part, and perfect resignation to the will of God. If he observed any who through extreme delicacy or self-love, were dissatisfied with their physician, or with the cares lavished upon them, he would endure their complaints with the utmost gentleness, and support their courage either by fatherly advice, or by indulging them in their weakness; but when they had recovered, he would reprimand them severely, and impose some punishment upon them, according to the gravity of their fault. But occasionally when he had to deal with one of those men, whose passions, yet too fiery, rendered them, even when in good health, a burden to their companions, he did not so readily extend that helping hand to him, which was so tenderly stretched out to all the others; but feeling the utility of physical pain in conquering that proud soul, he would say to the Lord those words of David in his behalf: "Break thou the arm of the sinner."

Having thus shown the paternal care of Ignatius towards his children in their corporal maladies, let us now observe his solicitude in attending to their spiritual necessities, and the means which his energetic charity suggested, whether in bringing about their amendment, or in sustaining them in the right path. But his personal attachment would never induce him to grant any request which he considered hurtful to their true interests, or as holding out a bad example to others.

Father Nicholas Bobadilla, one of his nine first companions, begged his permission one day to change a small chamber which he occupied, for a larger and less inconvenient room. Ignatius fearing that such a precedent might induce

some of the other Brothers to endeavor to avoid the evils of poverty, not only refused his request, but ordered him to make such an arrangement in his small chamber, as to enable him to receive two companions, whom he would send him the next day. Bobadilla obeyed with the utmost readiness.

To those, however, who had made less progress in virtue, he gave the reasons of his refusal, with so much wisdom and gentleness, that far from feeling inclined to be dissatisfied, they often left him more contented than if he had granted their requests. He never imitated those who by the dryness of their orders succeed indeed in convincing their inferiors of the reality of their authority, but do not show them that the exercise of their power is guided by prudence, utility, and moderation.

If the Saint remarked that certain studies were injurious to any one of the Brothers, either because they awakened his vanity, or gave birth to dangerous and chimerical opinions in his mind, he immediately prohibited him from continuing them, saying that it was not enough that he was fit for such studies ; the studies must also be fit for him.

A particular skill in discovering and reforming vicious inclinations, was very remarkable in our holy Founder.

If, for example, he observed that a Brother, through sloth or carelessness, neglected his person, and external appearance, he enjoined him to study the rules which he had laid down in this particular, and also desired him to give public instructions upon this subject, so that he might learn them himself by teaching them to others. If, on the contrary, it was necessary to reform bad habits acquired in the world, Ignatius assigned him as a companion a prudent and charitable man, who was desired to write down daily whatever defects he observed, and to present it to the erring Bro-

ther, so that seeing himself as in a mirror, he might be struck with his own deformity, and endeavor to correct it.

Besides, while St. Ignatius lived, it was a common habit amongst the Brothers, to confess their defects to each other; and every Friday they were accustomed to meet together to be warned of the various faults which they had committed, by four Fathers chosen to hold this office in the Roman College. Father Martin Olave, one of the most revered and esteemed of the Fathers, usually began; and every evening, by desire of Ignatius, a report was given him of the observations which they had made, especially concerning those points which were more particularly recommended to their watchfulness. He then presented this statement to those who were mentioned in it, that they might judge for themselves of their progress or relapses, and might in either case, arm themselves with fresh courage whether to increase in virtue or to return to it.

Nor was this all. Whenever a member left any important charge with which he had been intrusted, he was subjected to a public examination of the manner in which he had acquitted himself of his preceding functions, before any new office could be conferred on him. Father Jerome Nadal relates, that by this means he underwent the censure of forty assembled Fathers, and that Ignatius reproved him in severe terms for the extreme severity which he had shown towards his Brothers.

The paternal charity of Ignatius was especially manifest in his choice of the means which he employed to sustain those who through the suggestions of the Enemy, despairing of ever attaining the perfection necessary for a religious life, resolved to return to the world. He has been known to impose upon himself a rigorous fast of three whole days, during which he prayed and wept before God, in order to obtain for

one of his novices a deliverance from this temptation. With another he passed the greater part of the night, knocking as it were at the gates of his heart, setting forth with that invincible persuasion which accompanied all his words, the most powerful arguments; now terrifying and now consoling him; now making him cry out with fear, and then melt into tears of contrition. At length, after a conversation which lasted many hours, the obstinacy of the young man gave way, and throwing himself at the feet of Ignatius, he changed his importunate demands to leave the house, into humble entreaties for permission to remain, offering to undergo whatever penance Ignatius thought fit to impose on him, as a punishment for his instability. But the Saint raising him up and tenderly embracing him: "Let thy penance be," said he, "never more to repent of having served God. I myself shall make another for thee, if the Lord judges me worthy of so doing, whenever I am again attacked by the inward pains to which I am subject."

If his peculiar knowledge of the human heart which enabled him to discover the causes of the good or bad state of mind of those with whom he lived, gave him reason to suspect that the perverse resolution taken by one of his children to abandon the service of God, arose from his having committed some weighty fault, which the unfortunate man kept concealed in his own heart, he put his hand upon the root of the evil, and certain that the dangerous symptoms would cease, if the poison were ejected, sought to lead him to make a sincere confession. If he found resistance on his part, he would have recourse to a method which he had found efficacious more than once. He spoke of himself, and made a faithful recital of the most grievous faults which he had committed during the criminal life which he accused himself of having led in the world; not as a simple narrative, but

as one standing in the presence of Christ the Judge ; and with such earnest feelings of sincere grief, that his hearer was moved even to tears. If he then appeared disposed to make his confession, Ignatius would not allow any delay in the execution of his good resolutions ; and would have the confessor aroused in the middle of the night, that he might hear the penitent immediately ; and the effects proved that he had not erred in his judgment. From the feet of the confessor, the repenting sinner would arise to throw himself at those of Ignatius ; and with a heart totally changed and confirmed in his vocation, entreat his blessing and forgiveness. Several of these conversions really appeared to have been effected by some hidden virtue which resided in him, and gave him power over the hearts of men ; as others truly were the fruits of superhuman prudence, which suggested to him infallible means of insuring success, in cases where ordinary wisdom would have considered success impossible.

That very Peter Ribadeneira, whom several Fathers, as I have already mentioned, considered unworthy of being admitted into a society of grave and reflecting men, on account of his childish levities, and whom they wished to expel from the Company, had a violent temptation to rush to that very precipice from which St. Ignatius endeavored to preserve him. The method made use of by the spirit of darkness, was the most powerful that could have been employed. His heart was troubled to such a degree, that he conceived a violent hatred towards his Father Ignatius. Not only did he avoid all intimacy with him, but he could not even bear to look at him ; gentleness, playfulness, the proofs of affection and esteem which Ignatius lavished upon him, all were in vain. The good Father, however, bore all this as if he remarked nothing, and made no change in his manners or deportment towards him. At length the feelings of antipa-

thy towards Ignatius, which filled the heart of Ribadeneira, led him to form a resolute determination to throw off his authority and return to the world; and when those who wished for his dismissal heard of his intention, they believed it to be a clear manifestation of the will of God.

But Ignatius, whose heart was full of affection for Ribadeneira, and who knew him better than others did, felt deeply grieved. Having sent for him into his presence, he endeavored by every argument most likely to move the heart of one of such tender years, to dissuade him from his project. But all was useless; for it was the person of Ignatius that displeased him, and every action and word of his was repugnant to his feelings. The Saint losing all hopes of success through human influence, turned for help to God, and in long and earnest prayer entreated Him to grant him the gift of that soul. His prayers were heard; for having sent for Ribadeneira, hardly had he spoken two or three words, when the heart of the young man was moved, and bursting into tears, he exclaimed: "I will, Father, I will!" by which he meant, that he would follow the Spiritual Exercises, which Ignatius had advised, and which he had hitherto refused to do. "I felt within myself," says Ribadeneira, in a statement of this occurrence made under oath, "such an internal force, that it seemed to me entirely out of my power to resist it."

He had hardly begun the Exercises before he became desirous of making a general confession to St. Ignatius, and of placing his soul and life under his guidance. Ignatius, after having heard him, dismissed him with no other exhortation or advice than this: "Peter, I conjure thee not to be ungrateful towards Him who has bestowed upon thee so many graces, and such precious gifts!" "At these words," continues Ribadeneira, "the scales seemed to fall from my

eyes; my heart was changed, and so perfectly strengthened, that for fifty-two years, that is to say, ever since the time when this took place, to the present hour, the slightest temptation to abandon my vocation has never presented itself to my mind."

The words which Ignatius addressed to another novice similarly tempted to return into the world, were not less efficacious in strengthening him in his vocation. His name was Baldwin Angelo; he entered the Society in the year 1551, and had no sooner done so than he wished to leave it. The snare held out for him by the enemy of souls, was the tender affection which he felt for a nephew whom he had left in the world, and whose remembrance, ever present to his mind, seemed to reproach him with inhumanity in having abandoned one towards whom he ought to have felt as a father. Therefore he regarded his entrance into a religious life, as a species of impiety, which would condemn him before God and man, and made up his mind to return into the world. Ignatius delivered him from this temptation, first by prayer, afterwards by a few simple words. He sent for him unexpectedly one day, and making him sit down by his side, addressed him in a gentle and familiar tone, as if merely wishing to converse with him. "When I begun to give myself to God," said he, "and like you was new in His service, I had a great assault to sustain. You shall hear how the demon tempted me, and how the Lord taught me to repulse his suggestions. Amongst the pictures which adorned the office of Our Lady, which I daily recited, there was one which bore a striking resemblance to my sister-in-law; and whenever my eyes fell upon this picture, I felt a thousand recollections of the world awakened within my heart, together with a blind tenderness towards my family and relations. To get rid of these importunate thoughts, I proposed

to abandon this devotion, thinking it advisable to avoid all occasion of doing wrong. But I soon discovered that in consenting to lose the merit of a pious work, I yielded to the enemy; and as it seemed to me that on this occasion, the demon treated me like a child, I resolved to deliver myself from his importunities in a childish way. I merely covered up the picture with a sheet of paper, so as to hide it from myself; and with the cause which had given rise to it, the temptation vanished."

The Saint said no more. He rose after having affectionately embraced the young novice, and left him to himself. The effect which he produced surpassed his expectations. I shall relate it in the words of the novice, taken from his statement, made upon oath. "Suddenly my face was inundated with tears, and I experienced in my heart such peace of mind, such heavenly sweetness, that all the love which I had hitherto felt for my family seemed to turn towards God, and from that moment the recollection of my nephew has troubled me no more than if he had been to me an unknown stranger."

Upon another occasion, the paternal love of Ignatius inspired him with a master-stroke of prudence, the more remarkable that it did not appear in his outward conduct. It was in regard to a German novice who persisted in returning into the world. Ignatius finding that all the spiritual reasons which he adduced in favor of his remaining in religion were ineffectual, and that the greater desire he showed to retain him the more he increased his determination to go, acknowledged himself conquered, and left him perfectly free to stay or go as he pleased. He merely requested him as a proof of his gratitude for having been kept so many months in the house, to remain there four days longer; but entirely disengaged from all kind of discipline, rule, or obedience;

in short, as a stranger, not as a Religious. To the novice this request appeared a jest; and however great was his desire to leave the house, he easily consented to comply with these easy conditions, for so short a time.

Who would have thought that this very liberty which it might have been supposed was calculated to increase his impatience to return into the world, was precisely that which took away all his desire to do so? He passed the first and second day in the idleness which his new position permitted. When he entered his room in the evening, he felt a certain sadness and bitterness of heart, contrasting forcibly with that solid consolation which he had hitherto enjoyed when in retirement. His feelings of uneasiness began to enlighten him as to the error he was committing; he compared the two different states of life, that of the cloister, and that of the world. He saw that if in the first the foolish pleasures of the world were not enjoyed, yet that more solid and substantial happiness proceeded from the tranquillity of an innocent conscience, the possession of the grace of God, and the sure hope of dwelling for ever with Him in eternal blessedness; that the pleasure arising from satisfying the senses, the vile and animal part of our nature, is but momentary, and must at least finish with our lives; that it leaves behind it nothing but remorse, and the prospect of eternal condemnation.

As these thoughts crowded upon the mind of the novice, he became gradually wiser, and his eyes were opened to the truth. Before the four days had elapsed, he threw himself at the feet of St. Ignatius, confessed his folly with tears, and from that day became one of the most docile and submissive of his children.

In a case of the same kind, Ignatius employed all his skill in endeavoring to bring back to the Society a Flemish

priest named Andrew; he placed as it were a net for his feet, so that he might again, in order to gain his salvation, lose that liberty which he made use of to leave the service of God.

He therefore requested him on his return to Flanders, to go by way of Loretto, and to spend some hours in retirement in the Chapel of Our Lady; to meditate in that holy inclosure upon all that God had done for his soul, and then to reflect upon his own conduct. Whence had he come? Whither was he going, and what was his object? If the very stones of that holy place reproached him with ingratitude, showed him his danger, and inspired him with more salutary thoughts, then let him return to throw himself with confidence into the arms of his Father; and that journey should be considered merely as a pilgrimage, and he himself would be no less cherished than he had before been. Meanwhile, Ignatius supplicated the Holy Mother of our Saviour not to allow that poor, erring sheep whom he sent her, to be lost, although he had not the merit or skill sufficient to retain him; to restore him to her Divine Son, by restoring him to the Society, that he might find salvation where he had once sought for it, and where so many souls had already found it. He had given him only three *Julios* as a provision for his journey, partly on account of his poverty, but also from calculation; "for," said he, when explaining his conduct on this occasion, "I would not put fresh temptation in the way of one whose return is hoped for, or remind him, by taking great precautions, of the distance which separated Rome from Flanders." But on this occasion his charitable cares were unavailing, for the Flemish priest departed, and returned no more. Ignatius took even more trouble in endeavoring to conquer the obstinacy of another young man. He was a native of Sienna, who had been but four months

in the house, and had given proofs of great virtue, at least as long as he had met with no obstacles. To try his virtue, this novice was sent by Father Louis Gonsalez to beg through the streets of Rome. Here he was met by one of his relatives, who, seeing nothing but dishonor to the family in an action which, done for the service of God, could only honor him who performed it, approached him with an air of disdain, and asked him in a contemptuous tone if he was not ashamed of the abject life and vile profession which he exercised? Had he then forgotten whose son he was, to what family he belonged? Had any one of his house been seen begging on the streets? Had he no other way of serving God, than by dishonoring his family? He would act with more wisdom were he to take the advice of a man who loved him as one of his own blood; carry back that wallet and these rags; and returning to his friends, be provided with a living, which would enable him to bestow ample alms on the poor, instead of asking them like a miserable beggar. The unfortunate novice listened to this discourse, and returned to the house so sad, so changed from his former self, that what hitherto had seemed to him a Paradise, was now utterly displeasing to him; so that he nourished a hidden grief at having allowed himself to be reduced to a condition which rendered him detestable even in the eyes of his own family, how much more in those of others! And as his melancholy increased, he resolved to abandon a state of life in which nothing but sorrow henceforth awaited him.

Ignatius remarked that the young novice was preyed upon by a violent temptation, and guessed its nature. He judged from the deep sadness in which he was plunged that Jerome Nadal, at that time the Father Minister, would not succeed in restoring him to tranquillity by any ordinary methods; and that it would be necessary to employ other

means, adapted to his unfortunate condition. In the first place, he gave orders that he should never be left alone, and that some one should always engage him in conversation upon spiritual things, so that if the spirits of darkness attacked, the ministers of the Lord should be near to defend him. As the time principally chosen by the enemy of mankind for filling the melancholy mind with strange chimerae and leading it to form fatal resolutions is in the gloom and darkness of night, he gave him a companion in his chamber, who promised to rouse himself up whenever he knew that the novice was awake, and to converse with him on subjects likely to distract his mind from his own sad thoughts. Ignatius then made the young man engage to remain another fortnight in the house, freed from all observance of the rules, and entirely master of his own time. If all this had no effect in changing his determination, he should set forth, before all the Fathers assembled, the condition of his soul, his motives for returning into the world, and should listen to whatever remarks they thought proper to make upon this subject. Perhaps this public confession might suffice to open his eyes, or God, by the mouth of one of these Fathers, might address him in words conducive to his salvation.

The power of the Evil One could not resist all these efforts, and this time his victim escaped him. But some time after, this unfortunate man again lost the grace of his vocation, and with it was lost himself.

Ignatius followed another line of conduct in regard to Lorenzo Maggi, whom we mentioned in another chapter, when speaking of the Spiritual Exercises followed by his uncle, the Abate Martinenghi. He was a novice, young, pure and innocent, and whose great natural qualities and spiritual gifts, announced his future distinction in the Society. Tormented and nearly conquered by a temptation to leave

the Order, he opened his heart to Ignatius, who without opposing his design, spoke to him as follows: "I merely require of you," said he, "to promise me that when you first waken during the night, whatever may be the hour, you will place yourself in your bed in the posture of a dying man, supine and helplessly extended. Then imagine to yourself as vividly as you can, that you are on your death-bed, that you have but a quarter of an hour to live, and that at the end of that short space of time, you must present yourself before God, and receive your sentence. At the end of a few moments, ask yourself; What life should I now wish to have led? and whom obeyed? God, who calls me to His service, or the devil who persuades me to abandon Him? Listen to the answer of your soul, and then say to yourself, 'Am I not certain, of really arriving one day at this termination?'" Ignatius stopped; the rest was easy to be imagined.

The good young man promised to obey his advice, and kept his word. No doubt our holy Father watched and prayed for him that night; for the day had hardly dawned when Lorenzo appeared before him, so convinced and confirmed in his first vocation by means of that short but impressive discourse, that had he not been already a member of the Society, he would have entreated Ignatius to grant him admission.

I shall conclude these various examples of the diligent charity of Ignatius towards his children, by recording one more instance of the wise forethought by which he gained the heart of a novice, and by timely attention prevented him from being lost.

It was necessary to build a low wall on the high road, to shut up the entrance of the house on that side, and by orders of Ignatius, the novices were employed in the work. The fervor, modesty, and self-abasement with which they labored,

edified those who passed by, and many distinguished persons came expressly to see them, and stopped for a long while to look at them. Amongst the novices was one of noble rank, and whose family was very distinguished in Rome, so that he was more observed and admired than the others, though in his heart he believed that it was quite the contrary; so that a circumstance which might have given rise to thoughts of vainglory within his breast, produced in him such extreme mortification and embarrassment, that fearing to withdraw, and yet not daring to show himself, he kept as far off as possible, turning his back that the passengers might not recognize him. St. Ignatius sometimes came down to see the workmen rather than the work; and one day happening to cast his eyes upon this novice, immediately observed the shame expressed in his countenance, and discovered in his heart the pride which induced him to withdraw from the others. Immediately foreseeing the result to which this state of mind might lead, if he were not promptly assisted, he sent for Father Bernard Olivari, who had the charge of employing the novices in these labors. "Do you not see," said he, "that Brother who has retired to a distance alone, and who is under temptation? Are you waiting until he falls? Do you not fear to lose him for so small a cause?" The Father Minister excused himself upon the plea that he had received orders from Ignatius to employ the novices in this work. "What!" replied the Saint, "When I gave you that order, did I deprive you of the spirit of charity and discretion?"

At the end of a few moments, he withdrew, and passing near the novice, as if he had not before observed him, addressed him in a mild and gentle tone, profiting by the weakness of his body to cure that of his mind. "And you too," said he, "have you come to take your share in these labors? Return to the house; this work is not fit for you." And by

this simple means, he gained back a heart which was very nearly lost ; for as that Brother confessed in after days, he had already formed the project of returning to a worldly life.

Yet as I have already observed, Ignatius did not show this extreme indulgence for the weakness of his children to all indiscriminately ; but only to those, who were newly transplanted out of the world to a religious life ; and in whose hearts religion had not taken such deep root as in the hearts of those who had long walked in a spiritual path. The latter he treated severely whenever they failed in obedience, or persisted in maintaining their own opinion, when differing from that of their Superiors.

CHAPTER IX.

Zeal of Ignatius for religious discipline—His scrupulous justice in regard to his best friends—His antipathy for novelties—How Ignatius defended the honor of his Company—The means which he employed to form good Superiors.

WE must now pass on to give an account of the zeal shown by our venerable Founder for religious discipline, and the punishments with which he visited those who transgressed it; a task in which it is not easy to combine discretion with zeal, lest in correcting a defect, we injure those whom we only desire to reform. "In the same way (says St. Gregory Nazianzen), as we cannot give the same food to all who are well, nor prescribe the same remedies to all who are ill, so we must govern and cure the souls of different men by very dissimilar methods. Some may be led by a word, others are formed by example; some require the spur, others the curb, &c."

In speaking thus, St. Gregory appears to have described the conduct of Ignatius towards his children, and his extreme care in varying the methods by which he directed them, not only according to the modifications made necessary by time and place, but also according to the different conditions of the same person. We can judge of this, by what has already been said; what I am now about to add, will show the Saint under another point of view, but will produce the same conviction. When it was necessary to impose punishments, he wished them to be severe, and recommended severity to the Superiors; unless the faults were too slight

in themselves to render it necessary. He then imposed certain slight penances, rather to remind the culprit of his fault than to punish him for it. But when the faults were serious, and the punishment was intended to serve as an example, he ordered the guilty man into his presence, and more especially if he were still a tyro in virtue, endeavored in the first place to make him comprehend the extent of his fault, not by studied or exaggerated phrases, but frankly and clearly, weighing it in itself, and showing it in its true colors. The simplicity of his manner rarely failed to make a deep impression upon the heart of his hearer, and there is no instance recorded of any one ever leaving his presence dissatisfied, except with his own conduct. Besides, the character of St. Ignatius left no room for suspecting that the remembrance of a fault would ever remain in his heart; no one could fear a tacit reproach from him for a past error; a fear which is very prejudicial to a subordinate, as it makes him believe that he has fallen into disgrace with his Superior. On the contrary, the affection of Ignatius seemed to redouble towards those whom he had found it necessary to punish, and who had repented of their faults; for that severity in his words or manners, which was sometimes sufficient of itself to correct the offender, and the severe penances which he sometimes imposed, proceeded so little from a feeling of anger, that after having paid that debt due to justice and charity, there remained nothing in his mind but a feeling of tender charity towards his erring child. So that Father James Miron would frequently say that our Father Ignatius cured the wounds so as not even to leave the scars. Sometimes after having shown the guilty person all the gravity of his fault, he would impose no penance on him, but with a grave aspect, and in a dry and serious tone, would merely say "*Go*;" and his children, who were for the most part men

who tenderly loved him, felt so grieved by his coldness, that the severest punishment would have appeared to them slight in comparison. Sometimes also he would leave the decision to the conscience of the offender, and order him to pronounce his own sentence. This was a method as skilful as wise of obtaining from a susceptible man more than he would have ventured to impose upon him, or lessons of humility and mortification from men of rare virtue. I shall only mention two remarkable examples.

Father Jerome Otelli was preaching in Rome. He was a man of uncommon zeal, and who effected so many conversions, that St. Ignatius having thought fit to send him to Sicily, his loss was mourned in Rome as that of an Apostle. The day after his departure, when Ignatius, officiating at the altar, pronounced these words of the *Confiteor*; *Mea culpa, mea maxima culpa*: "Yes, Father Ignatius," cried an old woman who was present at Mass, "you may well call it a sin to have deprived Rome of a man so holy, so useful to the people as Father Jerome!" But it happened that one day when this Father was preaching in Rome, and was censuring with his usual freedom the vices to which the people had abandoned themselves, he went so far as to say, that if the love of God and the fear of his judgments were not sufficient curbs, it would be necessary for the Sovereign Pontiff to have recourse to chastisements, and to drive the guilty individuals out of the holy city.

After the sermon, Ignatius sent for Father Otelli, and asked him how many Sovereign Pontiffs there were in the world. "There are none excepting the Pontiff in Rome; replied the Father." Then, said Ignatius, "you take upon yourself to make mention from the pulpit not only of individuals, but of a personage so exalted as our Holy Father; nay, more, not satisfied with this, you point out the line of con-

duct which he ought to follow, as if you were wiser than he, or as if you had a right to direct him, even supposing you were so, and to direct him in such a place ! Leave me, and withdraw to meditate before God upon the punishment which you deserve. You will return this evening to bring me your answer."

The good Father retired deeply afflicted and covered with confusion ; and after a long meditation upon his fault, returned, and throwing himself at the feet of Ignatius, presented him with a paper upon which he had written down the punishment which he felt due to his fault. This was to go through the streets of Rome for several days, flagellating himself, to undertake a pilgrimage to Jerusalem barefoot, and to fast on bread and water for several years, besides submitting to whatever other penances his Superior thought fit to add. But Ignatius, more than satisfied with such proofs of repentance, merely imposed upon him by way of example, some private discipline to be inflicted in the interior of the House. The still severer sentence which Father Lainez pronounced against himself, for a slighter offence, is perhaps a yet more admirable example. He was then Father Provincial of Italy. As Ignatius assembled a great number of the most distinguished members of the Society in Rome, which the general interests of the Order required, a point ever uppermost in his mind, it seemed to Lainez a mistaken policy thus to impoverish several colleges in order to enrich one professed house ; and he wrote upon the subject to St. Ignatius, complaining, though with great respect, of this measure. His first letter having produced no effect, he wrote others. Then Ignatius, who so well comprehended the necessity of leaving in the Society examples of the relinquishment of individual opinion to the judgment of the Superior, reminded Lainez in a letter replete with wise instruction, that

in order to fill his part of Superior with propriety, he must never fail in his duty as inferior. He advised him therefore to investigate the cause of this attachment to his own personal judgment, that he might discover whether it arose solely from sincere zeal, or from concealed self-love. If Lainez found himself guilty, he left him to judge for himself what punishment he deserved.

This letter opened the eyes of Lainez, and he not only perceived his fault, but bitterly deplored it, and in his answer expressed his deep grief and humbly asked pardon, entreating Ignatius to deprive him of his office of Provincial, and never to raise him again to any important post; also to prohibit him from preaching, and from all literary studies. He proposed, also, that he should go to Rome, begging by the way, and that on his arrival he should be employed in the meanest and most laborious offices. If his strength proved insufficient for these, he offered to pass the remainder of his life in teaching grammar to young children, forgotten by all as one unworthy of thought or remembrance. And if these punishments were not sufficient, he was ready to submit to all the fasts and mortifications which Ignatius thought fit to impose.

St. Ignatius accepted none of these offers. He was satisfied with the acknowledgment of the fault committed. From these two facts we may understand with how much wisdom, and how entirely in proportion to the degree of virtue possessed by each individual, he chose the method best calculated to lead him, first to the acknowledgment of his errors, and afterwards to give such shining examples of humility, that they were sufficient to bring to confusion those who, more imperfect, were tempted to murmur at slighter punishments imposed for grave offences. He had also the art of adapting the punishment so well to the fault, that it not only

served as a correction, but made the culprit more sensible of the nature of his offence. Thus one of the Fathers having set himself up as a teacher in spiritual matters, in which he was as yet hardly a scholar, and having thus done great injury to those whom he had taken upon himself to direct; Ignatius ordered a pair of false wings to be fastened to his shoulders, and charged one of the Brothers to repeat to him frequently these words: "Do not try to fly, until your wings have grown."

No one could presume upon the personal affection of Ignatius, to commit the slightest transgression of the general rules, with any hopes of impunity. For Father Martin Olave, Peter Ribadeneira and Louis Gonzales, he felt the warmest esteem and affection. But it happened that one day, they having gone by permission to accompany two Fathers of the Society, who had been named Bishops of Ethiopia, beyond the gates of Rome, forgot the lateness of the hour, and walked on so far, that they were unable to return home before night. Ignatius imposed upon them a fast of three days, and severely reprimanding Father Gonzales, said to him: "I know not what prevents me from sending you so far away that we should never see your face again;" a terrible threat to one who loved him with filial affection, and which was fulfilled in part, for Ignatius ordered him to retire immediately into the College, which he was not permitted to leave for several days. Father James Eguia had also particular claims upon the affection of Ignatius. He was, besides, a man of eminent virtue. Father Faber always called him Father St. James, and Ignatius himself was wont to say, "When we are in Paradise, we shall see Father James so far above us, that we shall hardly be able to recognize him." Now this good Father, whose mouth was sealed as to all that Ignatius confided to him of the

state of his soul, although he could not speak his admiration, would sometimes give vent to it in exclamations concerning the sanctity of Ignatius, and speak of him with so much simple enthusiasm, like one transported as it were out of himself, that some one who heard him was scandalized at it. Ignatius was informed of this, and not only changed his Confessor, which was a cause of great sorrow to the good old man, but imposed upon him as a penance, to inflict the discipline upon himself for three evenings, during the time necessary to recite three psalms, and between each, to make a firm resolution of being, in future, more circumspect in his words, so as to give no one an occasion of scandal.

That we may still better understand how severely every transgression of discipline and rule was punished in the government of St. Ignatius, it may be useful to give a summary account of some circumstances which appear to me worthy of record, both as a warning and as a lesson.

He found one day two brother coadjutors standing idle, and discoursing upon frivolous matters. He called them, and showing them a great heap of useless stones, which were lying in the court-yard, ordered them to carry them up to the roof of the house; and every time that he observed them holding the same idle conversations, he employed them in carrying the same stones backwards and forwards, until they discovered that the object of this useless work was to punish their idleness, and to induce them to find some employment for themselves.

On another occasion, he dismissed two young Brothers, who were employed in the kitchen, and whom he found throwing water at each other's faces, like two school-boys; for, said he, if after several years residence in the house, they were capable of such frivolity, it might be presumed

that they were Religious only in their garb, and preserved a worldly spirit under a religious dress.

Ignatius corrected less severely a brother named Lorenzo Tristano, a man devoted to mortification and prayer, and who kept silence so exactly, and was so assiduous at his labors, that Ignatius observing him whilst he was employed in building up a wall, used to say that he put in more stones than he spoke words. Whilst repairing the lower part of the terrace wall, an apple, which some one had given him for his refreshment, fell from his pocket; and seeing that Ignatius, who was present, had remarked it, he felt ashamed, and affecting not to have perceived it, turned away, leaving the apple behind him. But Ignatius, with the staff upon which he usually leaned, without saying any thing, jestingly rolled the apple before him, and did so every time that the Brother, blushing and confused, turned his back upon it. When this little scene of embarrassment had lasted as long as he thought necessary, Ignatius turned away, without saying a word expressive of disapprobation.

He took different measures with a young man, a professor in Venice, of irreproachable morals and blameless life. On account of some imprudent expressions which he had let fall, calculated to wound the feelings of those of whom he spoke, Ignatius ordered him to make a pilgrimage, alone, on foot, and asking alms, for three months.

A Brother of the Infirmary, otherwise a man of irreproachable virtue, having indulged in some jesting expressions which, in the opinion of Ignatius, transgressed the bounds of perfect modesty, he would have instantly dismissed him, had not all the Fathers of the Company united together to render testimony to the extreme innocence of his habits, and the purity of his conduct. But Ignatius banished him for a certain period from Rome, and even from Italy, and

condemned him to make a journey of more than two hundred miles, begging and on foot. On other occasions, he required the expulsion of certain individuals, yet relented upon receiving unequivocal proofs of their repentance, and after severe trials, received them back into the Company. Antonio Moniz, a noble Portuguese, on his entrance into the Order, gave great hopes of rapid progress in a Spiritual life; and doubtless these hopes would have been justified, had he not been tempted by the demon, and inspired with weariness and distaste for a state of life which at first had rendered him so happy. As he gradually grew more weary, his conduct became relaxed upon all points; he begun to sigh after another kind of existence, for he no longer loved God in his present condition; and the love of the world was forbidden him. At length he came to the resolution of leaving the Society. Still, however, he was held back by the recollection of the offering which he had made of himself to the Lord, and felt all the sinfulness of resuming it.

After a long struggle, it appeared to him that he had discovered a means of conciliating his conscience and his desire for freedom. This was to lead a holy life, but without any restraint; for the thoughts of having preserved nothing but his own person, and of not being able to dispose even of it, appeared to him like a foretaste of death. The life which he chose was that of a pilgrim; and to avoid either persuasion or force, he fled secretly from the College of Coimbra, whither he had been sent by the Fathers of Valencia, who hoped that the guardianship and advice of Father Faber would restore tranquillity to his mind. He made his first pilgrimage to St. James in Galicia, where he went on foot and alone, though very soon he was accompanied by the repentance to which reflection gave birth in his soul. Still he continued his pilgrimages, and from St.

James, repaired to Our Lady of Montserrat. Here he could no longer resist his constant remorse of conscience, the sadness of his heart, and the insupportable sufferings of a journey in the middle of a very severe winter, almost without clothing, and without money for his subsistence. Aided by the holy Mother of our Savior, who doubtless regarded him with an eye of compassion, he resolved to discontinue his travels, to return to Rome, and throwing himself at the feet of St. Ignatius, to obtain re-admission, if possible, into an Order which he had never sufficiently appreciated until he had left it. He applied to himself the words of the prodigal son, whom he resembled both by his flight from the paternal roof, and in his miserable appearance: *Surgam et ibo ad patrem meum*. A dangerous malady by which he was attacked at Avignon, confirmed him in his good resolutions. Received in the hospital as a mendicant (for his poor clothing sufficiently proved his destitution), he remained there two months, and was reduced to the last extremity. At length, having recovered, he was able to drag himself to Rome, but did not dare to present himself before Ignatius. He had first endeavored to touch his heart by a letter filled with the most humble sentiments, and wet with his tears. He wrote it from the hospital of St. Antonio, where he had taken refuge. The Saint, much affected, sent for him, but not willing to re-admit him into his presence so promptly, established him in a neighboring house, until he had expiated by continued repentance, the scandalous fault which he had committed. The young man not satisfied with undergoing so gentle a punishment, traversed the streets of Rome, naked to the waist, inflicting the discipline on his bare shoulders, and thus publicly acquitting the debt which he had contracted towards God and his Brothers.

And assuredly this was no vain ceremony, for as Ignatius wrote to a noble Spanish duchess, a relative of the young man, the blood which flowed from his wounds, watered the streets through which he passed. Nor would this have satisfied him, had not Ignatius, warned that he was going to renew this penance, interfered to prevent it. Having sent for him, he embraced him with such touching affection, that the good young man who had thrown himself at his feet, shedding tears of repentance, soon wept with joy and gratitude. It seemed as if he rose to a new life, so exemplary and even so austere was his conduct from that period; so much so, that it appeared as if he foresaw his premature death. Nor was it very long before he was attacked by a slow fever, which gradually undermined his strength, and carried him off, after long sufferings, while still very young.

St. Ignatius sometimes punished severely in the Superiors, the faults which they had failed to foresee or repress in their inferiors. So having one day noticed in the streets of Rome, two Brothers who walked along in too free a manner, he gave a severe reprimand to the Father Minister, for having allowed two men to go out together, who could not give each other mutual examples of modest and circumspect conduct. And he acted in the same manner towards Father Sebastian Romei, Rector of the Roman College, who permitting stations to be performed at certain epochs in the Seven Churches, suffered the people to carry with them bread and wine for dinner. In vain he alleged the excuse of established customs; for the Saint made answer that this was a stronger reason for abolishing them, and that faults which have become a habit, are the most dangerous, and most necessary to be repressed.

Yet, notwithstanding the scrupulous attention with which

St. Ignatius rooted up the slightest faults, he took care never to make general laws in order to remedy any particular abuse. Instead of tearing up the vine, because men abuse the use of wine, he was satisfied with planting it near a fountain, whose cool waters might allay its heating properties. We may remember the novice, of whom I spoke, who being sent to collect alms on the streets of Rome, returned discouraged, and tempted to leave the Order. Ignatius did not, in consequence, forbid the novices to go begging for alms, according to the usages of those days, but he would rely on no one's judgment but his own as to the dispositions of those who were permitted to go upon this service. He would not allow the virtue of the many to suffer for what had been through his own fault dangerous to one. In making a general rule to deprive all of a blessing which has been abused by some, a Superior gives a great proof of weakness, while intending to show his strength. To give such an order costs no trouble, save that of writing or proclaiming it, whilst to remedy some particular evil wisely, it is frequently necessary to overcome obstacles, which it would be more convenient to avoid altogether. Hence arise that multitude of laws, which often become a remedy worse than the disease; for if it is easy to make laws according to the necessities of the moment, nothing is more difficult than to bring about wise reforms when these laws are trodden under foot. *Corruptissima respublica plurimæ leges*, says Tacitus. Ignatius would never permit the introduction of any novelty; he knew that it is difficult to stop in that downward path, and that the most trifling innovations open a door to the introduction of others very dangerous to a Society.

Having learnt that the Fathers Martin Olave, Ribadeneira, and others of the Roman College, had invented a game which consisted in forming themselves into a circle, and

throwing an orange from one to the other; he who let it fall, having to kneel down and recite an *Ave Maria*; he reprimanded and even punished them for it severely. Still less would he have permitted the introduction of any innovation in the studies; and he would frequently say, that were he to live five hundred years, he would for ever repeat, "No novelties, neither in theology, nor in philosophy, nor in logic, nor even in grammar." Whatever advantage they seemed at first sight to present, yet he was never induced to adopt them. ' They proposed to him to change the Friday's abstinence into a fast; it seemed but a slight change—yet he would not consent to it.

Father Andrew Galvanelli, the Rector of the College at Venice, held daily spiritual conferences for one hour in his house, and they had produced much fruit unto salvation. Yet Ignatius reduced their number to one in the week. He also punished Father Olave because he had introduced for the usual lesson at table, a book, good in itself, but out of use. Afterwards he permitted the reading of it to be continued, and the public welfare did not suffer; because he had shown that he would not allow any one to exceed his powers.

The zeal of Father Jerome Nadal cost him still dearer. On his return to Spain, whither he had been sent on a visit, he endeavored once or twice, but with more than becoming zeal, to engage Ignatius to lengthen the time of prayer prescribed to the students. The Saint reproached him severely and withdrew from his hands a great part of the administration of the Society. He knew that in order to ruin an Institute, it is only necessary to begin; some will ask for one change, and others will refuse to submit to another reform. Thus becomes dissolved all which can only be supported by the mutual dependence of its parts, though individuals may

not perceive it, because God has not given them the knowledge which he bestowed upon the Founders of these Orders. Thus purely human laws would gradually replace those established by men whom God himself had chosen. So much foresight had St. Ignatius upon this point, that he laid down positive rules for the most trifling matters, that his successors might have no opportunity of introducing innovations. From this motive he consented, during a period of extreme poverty, to purchase a small country-house for the Roman College, for the use of the sick and of the Students, in order that he might decide beforehand upon the manner of occupying it. And so it was often said in the time of Ignatius, that there was but one Superior in the Society; for so uniform was the government of many, that it seemed that of one alone.

The reputation and honor of the Society were not less dear to him than the order and discipline which reigned there through his exertions; for he never considered it as his own work, but as that of God, and hence arose his zeal in defending it against its adversaries. He never permitted preachers or even professors in the higher classes to discourse in public until he himself, in union with men of learning and judgment, had heard them in private. Those whom the Sovereign Pontiff destined to distant missions, amongst unknown people, or for affairs of great importance, received from him either orally or in writing the remarks and information necessary to the knowledge of these places, persons, or things. Thus he instructed the Patriarch John Nugnez Baretto, before his departure for his Church in Ethiopia; also Lainez and Jerome Nadal, sent by Julius III. as the counsellors of Cardinal Morone at the Diet of Augsburg; Pascuasius and Salmeron, chosen by Paul III. as his Apostolic Nuncios in Ireland; and also Lainez and Salmeron,

when about to assist at the Council of Trent, as theologians of the Pope.

As it would be tedious to relate here all the motives upon which he grounded his different instructions, I shall content myself with developing in their proper time and place, those which were most important. When he found it necessary to defend the Society, he carefully avoided all that could either raise up new enemies against her, or exasperate her actual assailants.

For this reason, when his Institute was severely censured by the Academy of the Sorbonne, he would not permit any answer to be returned either in the form of an argumentative apology, or still less in sharp and sarcastic words. As several of the Fathers were very much dissatisfied on this account, and he could not pacify them by repeating these words of Our Saviour: "My peace I give you; my peace I leave you;" he addressed them in a public discourse, wherein he proved by solid reasoning, that religious perfection can never permit us, even when we have suffered the most grievous insults, to give a place in our hearts to sentiments of indignation, still less to a spirit of vengeance; which is often concealed under a pretended necessity for self-defence; besides which, added he, mere human prudence would prevent us from exciting the enmity of so numerous and estimable a Community.

For this last reason he prevented Father Olave from entering into a discussion with certain Religious concerning some resolutions adopted in their general Chapter, because he had already, on a former occasion, reduced them to silence by his arguments. The Saint was far from admiring that learning which dazzles the hearer, nor did he think that the triumph of one could compensate for those feelings of ill-will

which it was likely to give rise to in the many; which too often happens, when shame is added to defeat.

He even once earnestly requested Father Olave to retrench one of his conclusions from a theological thesis about to be printed, to avoid even a distant occasion of dissension with those who supported a different opinion upon the same point. He also required from those who labored solely for the salvation of their brethren, that they should display their talents with prudent reserve, and so as to give no reasonable cause for displeasure to any one.

"In the Society," said he, "there are two classes of zealous operators; the first build up without destroying, unite great circumspection to fervent zeal, injure no one, and make themselves useful to all. These do not think that every thing which is possible must be done; but only that which is wise and reasonable. On foreseeing any danger or even an appearance of scandal likely to arise from disunion or rupture, especially with the Superiors, these good workmen know how to withdraw, and to replace by modesty and humility those good works rendered impossible through the faults of others. The second, on the contrary, destroy rather than build, because they consult their zealous feelings more than their wisdom, do not calculate the consequences of the evil which may result from the good which they intend to do, and in their desire to save one soul, run the risk of losing ten. If they meet with an obstacle, they must overcome it, were the whole world to be thrown into confusion in consequence, and they often alienate from the Order and from religion, men whose protection and good-will are of the utmost importance to enable them to work freely in the service of God.

This latter class was extremely displeasing to Ignatius, a constant friend of peace and humility. When one of his

children sinned in this particular, and could not be kept within the limits of moderation by salutary advice, he withdrew him from all public ministration; but if it happened that through any calumnious imputation, the Society ran the risk of losing not only its reputation, but the freedom of action required by the spirit of its Institute in bringing back to the fold those hearts that had strayed from the right path; then he firmly undertook its defence, and required a definitive judgment, not with any view to humble its adversaries, but to preserve to the Order that esteem so indispensable to those who labor for the conversion of souls. In the preceding book we have seen him follow that line of conduct with those who had associated themselves with a heretic; and he adopted the same plan towards a certain Matthew de San Cassiano, postmaster in Rome. St. Ignatius or one of the Fathers, had succeeded in reclaiming a woman with whom this man had a scandalous connection, and had induced her to abandon her disorderly courses, and lead the life of a penitent. The fury of San Cassiano knew no bounds, and he resolved to revenge himself by bringing the most odious and infamous accusations against Ignatius and his children, which he even extended to the convent of Saint Martha, at that time an asylum for penitent women.

These calumnious falsehoods at length begun to have some effect, and what had formerly appeared the result of Christian zeal was now attributed to base and criminal motives; so that many persons who had assisted in bringing these unfortunate women to St. Martha's, ceased to interest themselves in this good work. St. Ignatius saw that this cause was no longer his alone, but that of God, and he therefore brought it before a court of justice. There, the truth shone forth so clearly, and the accusations were proved to be so absurd, that the calumniator partly through remorse, or

fearing the just judgments of God, even more than those of men, offered to make a public acknowledgment of his falsehoods.

To defend the Society from a furious storm raised against it in Salamanca, and afterwards throughout Spain, Ignatius after long and vainly trying the effect of invincible patience, was at length forced to have recourse to justice.

This persecution which was the work of a monk, a theologian of great repute, and whose influence decided the opinion of all the members of his Order, was caused by the high reputation which the Society of Jesus was beginning to acquire in Spain for learning and piety; whereas this Religious and his brethren believed their Institute to be false, their doctrine deceitful, and their lives perverse; and these opinions they inculcated from their pulpits, which resounded with arguments tending to prove that the Society was an assemblage of Antichrists.

For some time Ignatius allowed himself to be as it were tossed about by the tempest, and suffered in calm silence; but he at length found that the storm increased by meeting with no obstacles, and he resolved to imitate St. Peter, who when he saw his bark sinking, awakened the Saviour. He had recourse to the Vicar of Jesus Christ upon earth, that he might appease the angry waves, and restore calm.

The Pontiff did so, by threatening those men who despised apostolic authority, and who boldly blamed an Institute which the church approved of, with its severest censures. And in order that this appeal to the Pope might be considered less as a lawful and necessary defence of the Order, than of the service and glory of God, Ignatius rendered an account of the whole facts to his venerable friend, Father John de Avila, in order that he who was so much revered throughout all Spain, might enlighten those who were in error on this

subject. His letter went on to prove, by the testimony and arguments of the holy Fathers and ancient theologians, that it is lawful and even necessary to defend our reputation, when its loss may occasion serious detriment to the public. This motive alone determined him to repel the attacks made against his children, but he never had recourse to extreme measures, until he had exhausted every method of gentleness and persuasion.

In the conduct of St. Ignatius towards his inferiors we may observe two very distinct principles; which, as one of our ancient Fathers observes, comprehended the whole government of the Society, whether generally or towards individuals, in just proportion to the respective importance of each. These are strength and mildness, *Fortiter et Suaviter*; "*Firmly*, that the manner of government be generally efficacious and immovable in rectitude, constantly and nobly tending to the end; *Gently*, that in particular cases and occasions, such moderation, longanimity and sufferance be employed as shall seem meet." We have already shown with how much strength and prudence he formed his inferiors to perfection; we must now describe the manner in which, and by similar methods, he attained this end in regard to the Superiors, and taught them at once the theory and practice of so difficult a ministry. Francis Xavier, who knew how much his master and friend excelled in this work, and who seemed to have foreseen his own approaching dissolution, solicited nothing more earnestly during the last year of his life, than to obtain for the College of Goa a Superior from the Roman college, formed under the eyes of Ignatius. "For the love and glory of God," thus he writes to the Saint, "I ask you a favor which I would pray you on my knees to grant, were I near you. It is that you would send into these parts as Rector for the College of Goa, one formed

and instructed by yourself." In another, written a few months afterwards from Goa, he says, "I conjure you by the love of Our Lord Jesus, to provide this college with a Rector chosen by yourself. Even should he have little learning or talent, the essential point for the Government of this place is, that you should select him and consider him worthy of the office. All the Fathers and Brothers reunited here, desire nothing more ardently than to have a Superior who has long lived and conversed with you."

The principal care of Ignatius in fact, and that to which he devoted his chief attention, was in his choice of the men whom he intended to form for the government of the Order. This difficult art was the object of his last studies and of his last counsels; thus the last instructions delivered by Pythagoras, as St. Augustine relates upon the testimony of Varro, were concerning the government of the Republic. "For he saw such billows there that he would not commit to them any but a hero who would almost divinely avoid the rocks, and if all failed would be himself a rock to the stormy waves." *

Ignatius, in studying the characters of those whom he intended to train up for the Government, sought in them those natural gifts of judgment, prudence, polite and grave manners, indispensable for acquiring an ascendancy over the minds of men. But these were not sufficient in his opinion, unless united to those solid virtues without which a Superior can have no influence. These virtues consisted in an absolute dominion over his passions, the fruit of interior mortifications; an exact observance of religious discipline, a generous fortitude in the service of God, an affectionate and charitable heart, and extreme readiness to obey.

* Lib. 2., de ord., C. ult.

When the holy Founder observed all these virtues reunited, he cast his eyes upon those who possessed them, in the intention of training them up to be Superiors. He then began to put them to the trial, and in order that they might not learn the art of governing at the expense of others, he himself, though without appearing to be so, became their master. He admitted them to the Council which he held daily, occupied them with one point alone of the affairs which were treated there, and that for only one hour at a time. He then intrusted them with the care of certain persons, more difficult to guide than the others, or who were tormented by interior temptations either as to their vocation, or upon some other subject. After that, he gave them the direction of delicate and important affairs, pointing out the means which he considered most likely to conduce to their successful result, but leaving the execution to their personal judgment; treating them not as simple delegates, but as men who were laboring on their own account; as thus the intellect is sharpened, and the application increased.

When the mission with which Ignatius had intrusted them was accomplished, he recalled them and inquired how they were satisfied with themselves; praised whatever he considered well conducted, or pointed out the means by which they might have succeeded better. He thus gradually instructed them, and at the same time animated them to act for themselves; like the eagle, which flies around her little ones, encouraging them to leave their nest, to intrust themselves to their tender wings, and follow her in her upward flight.

When at length he believed them to be sufficiently formed, experienced, and worthy of confidence, he employed them in the Government of the Society, and required them to act according to their own judgment. If they came to him in

any difficulty, requesting his advice or orders, he would merely answer; "Discharge the duties of your office." Ignatius was far from approving that officious activity with which the Provincials occasionally undertook to direct the Rectors placed under their orders; or that of the Rectors, who wished to be every thing and to fill all the different offices in their colleges; as if a superior post gave them the capacity necessary for all less important offices. There still exist some fragments of a letter which he wrote upon this subject to a Father Provincial in Portugal, who was too ready to assume the direction of those matters which would have been better left to the charge of those whose business it was to regulate them. All his words are precious, and may afford instruction to men of similar character. "It is not right," said he, "for the Generals or Provincials to assume the direction of all kinds of affairs; and even should they possess all the ability necessary for conducting them well, it is safer to intrust them to others, who will afterwards render them an account of what they have done, and be guided by the definitive resolution of their Superiors. If he who has undertaken an affair can even decide upon it without assistance, it is better to leave him at liberty to do so, whether in spiritual or temporal matters, especially in the latter. This is the plan which I myself have adopted, and I find myself more at ease and my mind more tranquil in consequence. If the duties of your office oblige you to take a general care of the interests of your Province, it will be well for you before giving any orders, to take the advice of the most intelligent persons; but it will also be advisable that you should not interfere with their execution. No doubt as prime mover, it is you who ought to communicate the impulse. But that is sufficient: and you will thus do more, do

it better, and in a manner more suitable to your station, than if you actually did it yourself.

"Should the inferior agents commit any error, it is much more expedient for you to reprove them, than for them to warn you that you have done wrong, which could not fail to happen frequently, were you to interfere in these petty details."

When those to whom Ignatius had confided any post in the government, injured the Order, either through their incapacity or want of virtue, he never hesitated to dismiss them from their office. He did so even in the case of two of his first companions, whose life and intentions were equally pure; but who did not succeed as spiritual directors. He recalled the one from Naples, the other from Portugal; and deprived them of their offices.

BOOK IV.

CHAPTER I.

Virtues of the Saints difficult to describe or to be made comprehensible—Humility of St. Ignatius, and his sentiments concerning that virtue—He wishes to abdicate his post—His care to conceal the celestial favors with which God loaded him—Revelation of the Blessed Magdalene de Pazzi—Fragments from the Notes of St. Ignatius—His death.

HE who endeavors to trace the portrait of a Saint, by describing the virtues which constitute the only beauty of the just, runs a great risk of falling into the error of those painters, whose only talent consists in producing an exact drawing of the features and proportions of the human face. Nor could this fail to be the case, were we to limit ourselves to a precise narrative of the external conduct and actions of the Saints, and imagine that by so doing we have made known all that was worthy of notice in their lives. This would be to reduce the fruitfulness and riches of the earth to the herbs and flowers which cover its surface, and to forget the minerals and precious stones which lie concealed within her bosom.

The Saints have a particular art in concealing the treasures with which their souls are enriched. It frequently happens, that the more abundantly they possess the graces of God, the less they are observable in them. Humility is their most precious treasure; and it is difficult, sometimes even impossible, to draw forth the admirable qualities with which they are enriched, from that mysterious asylum.

St. Ignatius, conversing one day with one of the most beloved of his children, upon the perfection of the Saints and the excellence of their merits, observed, that the feeblest portion of the graces which they have received from God is that which is made known to us through the writings of their biographers; and that he counted as so unimportant that part of their perfection which was demonstrated by their exterior works, that he would not exchange the mercies which the Divine goodness had vouchsafed towards his own soul, for all that we read of the actions of the Saints in the history of their lives. For the true sanctity of the heart infinitely surpasses all that can be judged of from the exterior conduct; as the rills and fountains which sparkle on the earth's surface, can give us but a faint idea of the treasures of water lying hid within her depths.

If I could make this thought understood in regard to St. Ignatius, I should be able to fulfil the task that I have imposed upon myself, to reveal in this fourth book his admirable virtues. But his humility was so extreme that he carefully hid within himself all that interior perfection which might have given us some idea of his holiness, of which we can only judge by those things which he, counting of no importance, did not endeavor to conceal, and whose sublimity now astonishes us, as the view of the distant mountains surprises one who travels upon the plains.

Ignatius often said that the first thought of one who wishes to rise very high, should be to descend very low in the first instance, for that the height of perfection is in proportion to the depth of its roots, and that the deeper its foundations are laid, the greater sublimity it will attain. He himself had practised all that he taught to others upon this subject. The whole edifice of his spiritual life was founded upon such complete self-abasement, that both demons

and men inspired by false and worldly wisdom, combined to reproach him; not only for thus abasing, as they said, the dignity of his family, but for outraging in his own person the image of God, by imposing humiliations and vile treatment upon himself unworthy of a human being.

But his conduct was caused by his knowledge of the human heart, and by the thoughts with which he was inspired from the first moments of his conversion. Following a beautiful gradation, he reflected within his own mind what he was in regard to other men, to the angels, and finally, to God Himself. Then, contemplating his nothingness and his sins, which, by removing him far from God, had removed him far from all good, he beheld the misery of his condition in all its nudity. "I am going to consider myself attentively, and such as I am in reality." (Thus he writes in his *Exercises*, where he traces his portrait, and describes all the feelings of his soul). "I shall assist myself by comparisons to despise myself more and more. First, I shall place before my eyes all the men now existing in the world, and shall see how small an atom I am in the midst of this immense multitude. Then I shall, in idea, collect all the men now alive, and shall compare their number with that of the angels and the blessed who people Heaven. And finally, I shall lead them all before God! What are all these creatures, so numerous in our eyes, when brought into His presence? And what then am I, poor, miserable being, imperceptible atom in this crowd? Then I shall add to my nothingness the interior corruption which devours me, the vices of my soul, the deformities of my body, and soon I shall see myself nothing but a repulsive sore, whence issues all loathsomeness and vileness."

It was by means of such thoughts as these that he endeavored to teach every individual to know himself. He

had also formed another rule which comprehends in a small compass the whole theory of humility. He taught it to one of the principal Fathers, who on his return to Rome from a long mission, wishing to reanimate his fervor by some pious exercises, and especially to make progress in humility, requested Ignatius to show him the shortest road for attaining that object. "There is one," said the Saint, "and it is this: Do every thing contrary to that which worldly men do. Detest what they covet, and covet what they detest." Ignatius taught this spiritual secret to all who wished to be admitted into the Society, reminding them that in order to practise it, they must imitate the Saviour. He developed his ideas in these divine words concerning virtue and humility, which have furnished and will always furnish his children with so much food for meditation whenever they desire to retrace in them the perfection of the Institute. "Those," said he, "who aspire to be admitted into the Society, must repulse and hate not only in part but entirely, all those things which the world loves and esteems, and must embrace with the whole force of their will, all that Christ Our Lord loved and embraced. They will thus wear His livery, and prove their respect and love towards Him. And as men of the world love and diligently seek for honors, reputation and esteem; so those who are guided by the spirit of Jesus Christ, must desire, on the contrary, if it can take place without offending the Divine Majesty, and without sin on the part of their neighbor, to suffer contumely, and false witness, to be treated as fools and madmen (without giving any motive for being so), and all this from the sole desire of imitating, as far as they can, our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and of walking in the path which he has traced out for us, as that which leads to life eternal. The candidates must, therefore, be examined as to whether

they experience these desires, which are so salutary, and so useful to their progress in spiritual perfection."

Our first obligation, therefore, is to take the thoughts, examples and motives of Ignatius, for the rule and measure of our conduct. It is true that the perfection which he teaches is of an exalted nature, and so extremely difficult to acquire, that Father Lainez, notwithstanding his extreme humility confesses, that having once heard Ignatius develope his holy philosophy concerning the knowledge and contempt of ourselves, he acknowledged himself conquered, and told him that he could not even in thought comprehend it, and could only humble himself for having so little humility.

Nor was this the highest goal which our holy Father marked for the perfection attainable in this heroic virtue; he placed it at a height to which it appears impossible to rise.

He divides humility into three grades; each more sublime and perfect than the preceding.

The first, he says, is necessary to salvation. It consists in suffering the most painful humiliations, and even the loss of life itself, rather than to transgress the law of God. The second is more perfect. In it, the soul so completely governs nature, that when riches or poverty, honor or ignominy, a long or a short life, may equally redound to the glory of God and to our own salvation, we shall nevertheless feel no more desire for the one than for the other; so that neither the offer of the most brilliant human felicity, nor the threat of the most cruel death, could induce us to commit a venial sin. When we have attained these two degrees of humility, there remains a third, which is the most perfect of all. It is that when all those things of which we have spoken in the preceding grade, can tend equally to the glory of God, we should yet, in order to conform ourselves to the example of

Jesus Christ, choose to be like Him, poor, despised, and insulted, rather than to possess riches, honors, and the esteem of wise men.

It was this sublime degree of humility which Ignatius proposed to attain to, the very first year that he renounced the world; and his actions were all in harmony with this lofty aim.

To pass for a man without education, without instruction, nay even as a madman; to confess his sins publicly; to go clad in the rudest garments, his hair disordered and his feet bare; to live in the hospitals with beggars, and to imitate their manners, feigning to belong to them by birth, as he did by choice; to go begging from door to door, receiving refusals with more joy than he did alms; to return thanks for insults, and benefits for ill treatment; to avoid those places where he was known as a nobleman or revered as a Saint; to return as a mendicant to his country and family, without other asylum than an hospital, or other food but the bread of charity; in short, as St. Gregory expressed it, to have retained nothing belonging to the world, but the world's contempt; to consider himself happy when he was treated as a hypocrite, a magician, an impostor; to allow himself to be dragged before the tribunals, without allowing any one to defend him; to rejoice when chained to the wall of his dungeon, and to express so loudly his glory and happiness in being permitted to suffer for Christ Jesus, that he might have been regarded rather as a madman than a criminal; such were the rocky paths by which Ignatius walked towards that sublime goal to which he had aspired from the first moment of his conversion.

His progress was proportioned to so admirable a commencement. Although he could no longer expose himself to these humiliations, when placed at the head of the new

Institute, of which God had made him not only the Father, but the model; yet he never failed to seek for such as were still permissible for him, and ardently to desire those which higher motives obliged him to avoid. In a journey which he made from Venice to Padua, he met on the road a villager who was herding cattle, and who, seeing him dressed in a very poor garment, and one which seemed in his eyes very ridiculous, burst into loud laughter, and addressed him with jeers and mockery. Ignatius stopped, and listened to the rude peasant with an unmoved and serene countenance. "Why," said he to Father Lainez, who was his travelling-companion, and endeavored to draw him away; "why deprive the boy of the little amusement which my presence affords him?"

On another occasion, Father Ribadeneira, who was then only about fifteen, whereas Ignatius was General of the Order, warned him, that when he spoke in public, certain peculiar expressions which he used, some in Spanish, others in bad Italian, were sometimes ridiculed by his audience, who, by not comprehending the whole of these discourses so full of spiritual fervor and unction, lost a great part of the fruits which they would otherwise have gathered from them. Ignatius, thankful for the admonition, replied with the sweetest humility; "Peter, you are right. Henceforth I charge you to watch over me; and I request you to note down all the faults of language which you observe in these discourses, so that I may endeavor to avoid them." The young man did so; but the errors were so numerous, that despairing of success, he abandoned the enterprise, and frankly declared it to St. Ignatius; who answered with admirable candor; "Peter, what can we reply to God?" meaning that the Lord had not given him the talent of speaking well in the Italian language; but added that he would employ the little which

he did know, in His service and for his neighbor's salvation. He had besides the consolation of seeing his efforts crowned with blessings; for it frequently happened that many notorious sinners, after having listened to him, went in such crowds to reconcile themselves to God, that the numerous confessors who were ready at all hours to receive the penitents, could not suffice to hear them all. These, however, are but small examples of the humility of St. Ignatius.

He gave a higher proof of it in his persevering refusal to accept the post of General, from the firm conviction that he was incapable of filling it. Nor would he yield even to the declaration of Father Lainez, that in refusing to become the Head of the Society of which he was already the Father, he pronounced its sentence of destruction. Nothing could decide him but the express order of his Confessor.

Seeing himself then obliged to bear this heavy burden, his first act was to treat himself as the lowest individual of the house, by serving in the kitchen, and working with as much obedience and humility, as if he had been really the cook, and the cook were the General. Then for forty days he taught the elements of the Christian Doctrine to children. Afterwards he considered himself in this elevated post, as the servant of all, and would accept no exterior mark of respect, no title expressive of honor or reverence; he would only be called like all the others in the house, simply by his name of Ignatius. When ten years had elapsed, and he felt assured of having trained up excellent pupils in the art of governing, he considered himself as no longer necessary, and more and more convinced by reflection, of his own worthlessness, wished to renounce the Generalship. He therefore assembled in Rome as many of the Fathers as possible, and made known his resolution to them in the humble letter which we are going to transcribe.

“To my very dear Brothers in Our Lord, members of the Society of Jesus. After having deliberated long and maturely, my resolution uninfluenced by any trouble, whether internal or external, I shall now, in the presence of God my Creator, who shall judge me for all eternity, make known to you what I feel, in order to the greater glory and praise of His Divine Majesty. Having reflected humbly and attentively upon the multitude of my sins, and upon my innumerable imperfections both of soul and body, I have decided that I am very far from possessing the qualities necessary for governing the Society, which I now do only in virtue of obedience to the orders of the Society itself. Therefore, in presence of the Lord, and after mature consideration, I now request you to elect another General, whose government may be less imperfect than mine; and for weighty reasons I request that this office shall be given to another, even should he, though acquitting himself better than me, discharge his duty but indifferently.

“Thus then, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, I surrender my Office into your hands; entreating the Lord, from the depth of my heart, as well as the Fathers now assembled, to accept my abdication, thus justified before His Divine Majesty. If amongst those whose right it is to judge and to pronounce, there should arise any diversity of opinion, I conjure them by that love and respect which we all owe to God, Our Master, to unite with me in humble supplication to Him, that he may be pleased to let us know His most holy will, so that all things may be accomplished for His glory, for the good of the Society, and for the spiritual welfare of all men.”

But the Fathers, who would have mourned with inconsolable grief had the death of Ignatius rendered it necessary for them to nominate his successor, were so far from re-

signing themselves to his abdication, that with the exception of one member alone, named Andrew of Oviedo, a man of extreme simplicity of character, all agreed in declaring unanimously, that they would never consent to permit the government to pass into other hands, during the lifetime of Ignatius. Oviedo would have acceded to the request of Ignatius, solely out of deference to him, for being asked by the Fathers, why he alone held a contrary opinion from all the others on this occasion, he replied that, considering his General as a Saint, he had thought it his duty to submit his own opinion to that of one so superior to himself. He therefore only erred in not discerning between the humble opinion which the Saints form of themselves, and that which they are in reality.

Ignatius was therefore obliged to submit to the judgment and will of his children; until, attacked by many grave infirmities, he made use of them as a shield for his humility, and thought that God had granted him what they had refused. He then charged Father Jerome Nadal with nearly all the duties of the Generalship, only reserving to himself the care of the sick. Nor would he ever have resumed the reins of government, had not his personal disinclination been vanquished by his zeal for the public good, which appeared to him endangered by falling into the hands of one who, with perfectly upright intentions, was possessed of too enterprising a mind, and appeared disposed to alter several of those constitutions which, as ordinances of God, he desired to bequeathe inviolate to his posterity.

We may easily believe that he whose humility suffered at finding himself placed at the head of a simple religious Order, was not likely to desire other dignities and prelacies. He gave proof of this when the Marquis of Aguilar, Ambassador from the Emperor Charles the Fifth, to the Holy See, and

one of the Cardinals, said to him somewhat jestingly one day, that he was suspected of concealing, under the mask of sanctity and zeal for the interests of the Apostolic See, an ardent desire to obtain the Cardinal's hat. At these words, with a countenance expressive of indignation, Ignatius arose, and uncovering himself, without other reply, made the sign of the cross, and bound himself aloud by oath, never to accept of any dignity unless forced to do so on pain of mortal sin.

When St. Ignatius instituted any important and durable work for the benefit of souls, he carefully brought it up to that point where nothing was required but the last touch to bring it to a conclusion; and then, in order that no glory might be given to him, and that the success of the work might never be attributed to him, he confided it to another. He renounced the merit, reserving to himself all the trouble, and frequently the most arduous and almost incredible labor; which a man of less courage or less zeal for God's glory, would never have undertaken, or at least would have promptly abandoned.

Nor do I think that all which I have hitherto mentioned of the humility of the Saint, and his profound contempt for himself, can equal that still more perfect humility which prevented him from ever feeling the slightest emotion of vain-glory during all those signal favors granted him by God, during the five-and-thirty years of his life, which followed his conversion. On the contrary, those frequent apparitions of Our Saviour, and of His Blessed Mother; those spiritual ecstasies, often lasting for several days; those marvellous visions, wherein were revealed to him all that a mortal could bear to behold of the Mystery of the Adorable Trinity; the inspiration which permitted him to penetrate the most lofty and mysterious secrets; that celestial delight which inun-

dated his soul, and caused his eyes to overflow with joyful tears; all these different graces were, for Ignatius, causes of shame and confusion, wherein he saw nothing but proofs of his extreme weakness, which required such extraordinary and powerful support; as the decay of a building, and the ruin which threatens it, may be inferred from the number of props which are placed to sustain it. Hence the thought which he so often, and with a blush upon his countenance, expressed: that there did not, perhaps, exist the man, in whom extremes were so re-united as in him; that is to say, so many sins conjoined, with so many graces received; so many punishments deserved, and so many mercies bestowed.

So strong was he in his humility, that even during those wonderful ecstasies, when his body was raised from the earth, and his soul transported to the bosom of the Eternal, he yet preserved the inmost conviction of his misery and unworthiness. Environed by a celestial halo, and no longer touching the earth, he was heard to exclaim: "Oh God! God infinitely good! How canst thou endure a sinner like me?" He never spoke of his own soul without contempt, and humbled himself in the presence of his companions, in whom he recognized all those marks of sanctity of which he saw no vestige in his own heart. He prayed God to dry up for him those abundant sources of celestial consolation which filled his soul. Living, he desired to be forgotten, or despised by all who knew him; and dead, to be thrown like carrion to the dogs.

Of the favors which God bestowed upon him, he could speak without vanity; for he compared himself to the trunk of a tree, worm-eaten, but incrusted with gold and precious gems; thanks alone to Him who thus honored the vile trunk, fit only for the flames. Nevertheless it was with extreme reserve, and only when some profit to his neighbor might

result from it, that he allowed any one to penetrate into those things likely to attract honor or reverence to himself. He conjured the Lord not to choose him as the medium of those supernatural favors which obtain among men a reputation of sanctity for the possessor.

That prophetic knowledge with which God was wont to enlighten him, was rarely heard to issue from his lips, and never unless by way of encouragement to his children, or when it was the will of God that he should announce, many years beforehand, the establishment of the Order whose destined Founder he was.

A singular tradition was held amongst the first Fathers, that St. Ignatius had an Archangel for his guardian. Father Lainez, presuming upon the affectionate friendship which existed between him and the Saint, asked him one day, in confidence, if this belief had any foundation, and relates that he received no answer from him, but that his whole countenance became suffused with blushes, as if, adds the Father, a young maiden, retired and alone, were to see a stranger suddenly appear before her, in the solitude of her chamber.

But he treated in a very different manner one of the Brothers who had expressed to a companion his firm conviction that Father Ignatius was a Saint. Ignatius rebuked him severely, telling him that he dishonored sanctity by attributing it to a sinner like himself. Such words, said he, were blasphemous, and as a punishment, he condemned the young man to take his food alone, in a miserable outhouse, for two whole weeks.

We still remember the conduct of St. Ignatius towards Father James Eguia, his confessor. That holy man, notwithstanding his old age and infirmities, gave himself up to austerities which would have tried the fervor and surpassed

the strength of any young beginner. He passed whole nights in prayer, and if nearly overcome by sleep, he would strike his limbs against the bench, until the torpor had passed away. One of the greatest consolations of the Fathers was to hear this holy man discourse upon spiritual things. His heart glowed within him, his countenance was lighted up with enthusiasm, and his audience, transported with the love of God which his discourses kindled within their souls, compared them to burning flames of fire. This venerable old man, thoroughly acquainted with the inmost soul of Ignatius, could not, in spite of the severe admonitions which he had received on the subject, refrain from letting fall some words of admiration, sufficiently giving to understand what he was forbidden to say openly. He was even overheard to express a hope, that he might survive the Saint, were it but for a few hours, so that, freed from the obedience which he owed him, he might reveal certain secret things which would fill all those who heard them with admiration. But it is narrated by Oliver Manares, that it was currently believed amongst the Fathers who lived in his time, that this desire, and the motive which induced it, shortened the life of the venerable Father, and that St. Ignatius, through great humility, obtained from the Lord, by fervent prayer, that his confessor should precede him by a few days, so that with him might expire the memory of all those holy details, which could only have been known after his death, and which would have increased his reputation for sanctity.

There only remains for me to make known, concerning the degree of humility at which Ignatius had arrived, one more circumstance, which seems to me to indicate the highest point of perfection to which this virtue can be carried. It is true that it is a virtue which does not strike the eye at

the first glance, nor are all eyes capable of discerning it; for when good qualities are not manifested by those external actions whose beauty is visible to all men, they are rarely judged as they deserve, excepting by those souls which have made great progress in perfection. The reader will be interested by the narrative which gave rise to these reflections.

Saint Magdalene de Pazzi, a Carmelite Nun, favored with frequent and authentic visions, being rapt in ecstasy on the 18th of December, 1594, beheld the Blessed Virgin placed between St. Ignatius and St. Angelo, a Carmelite and martyr. She led up these two Saints to the holy Magdalene, so that they might instruct her, the one in the virtue of humility, the other in that of poverty. St. Ignatius was the first who spoke, and Magdalene, as it always happened when in these raptures, repeated in a loud, though sometimes broken voice, the words which she heard, and which were as follows:—"I, Ignatius, am chosen by the Mother of thy Divine Spouse, to speak to thee upon humility. Listen then to my words. Humility, like the oil poured into a lamp, ought to fill the heart of those who enter upon a religious life; and as the oil occupies every part of the vase into which it is poured, so humility, which is the true knowledge of ourselves, ought to occupy all the powers of the human soul. And as the wick cannot burn unless impregnated with oil, so the soul cannot bear fruits of perfection and holiness, if we neglect for one moment to feed it with humility, which is the basis of all religious virtue. It is, besides, nothing else than the ever-present consciousness in the mind of its own nothingness, and the constant love of every thing which can tend to self-abasement. Thus, even whilst we enjoy the subjection in which we hold all the powers of our soul, far from attributing merit to our-

selves, we must submit, with unshaken firmness, to all the humiliating trials necessary to be undergone, before we arrive at that perfect peace and order, the attainment of which is our sole object in assuming the religious habit. If those who direct the novices find in them a certain repugnance to renounce either their will or their judgment, they must reprove them severely for this, as for a serious fault; and at the same time show them how they glorify God by their submission, and the great fruits unto salvation which they will gather from humility. Let humility become the object of their love, of their desire, of their aspiration. Let this virtue shine in all their words, in all their actions, and let every word which is not impressed with humility be as much avoided in religion, as words of blasphemy in the world.

“The Superiors should give such constant examples of humility, as to render all further proofs of their possessing that virtue unnecessary, when they reprimand or exhort their children. Let every Spouse of Christ hold herself in readiness to be transplanted either into the valleys or upon the mountains, every where ready to give forth precious fruits. Let them be in the edifice of spiritual perfection, like the stones employed in building the Temple of Solomon, where no sound of hammer was ever heard. And, should they resist whilst being fitted in to the places which they are destined to fill in the building, let them be silenced, partly by acts of love, and partly by severity. Or, if such humility is distasteful to them, place in their hands an image of their Crucified Spouse, and show them how they are to imitate Him. Let those who have the care of souls never cease to exercise them in humility, so long as the flesh and bones of their bodies hold together; for it is a ladder with many steps which we must always mount, and yet which

will never raise us higher, because we must always ascend and descend it.

“The soul which has no humility can never rise above itself, for a thousand low passions, a thousand vain desires chain it to earth. As the Incarnate Word constituted his apostles fishers of men, so he has charged his Spouses to win over souls to Him. I have now spoken to thee enough upon humility; I leave thee to one who will instruct thee upon the true spirit of poverty.”

Thus spake the Blessed Ignatius upon the great virtue of humility; and since the Mother of the Eternal Word thus chose him from amongst so many other humble Saints, who had formerly lived upon earth, and now enjoyed the presence of God in Heaven, to teach it to a holy servant of the Lord, this alone, according to the opinion of those capable of appreciating that virtue in all its perfection, is sufficient to prove to what a super-eminent degree of humility St. Ignatius had attained.

Perhaps the most proper manner of expressing it, would be to say that he concealed his humility through humility, to avoid the esteem which it might have inspired. He thus succeeded so completely in concealing the actions which might have attracted admiration, that both the concealment and the actions were unsuspected.

The children of Ignatius had long requested him to leave them, as so many other Saints had done, some details upon his own history, as a remembrance and consolation. He refused for some time, but at length fearing, lest his refusal should be attributed to humility, he consented to satisfy them.

Towards the end of his life, he dictated to Father Luis Gonsalez a simple and brief narrative of all that had happened to him since his conversion in 1543, leaving it to Fa-

ther Nadal to give an account of the remainder of his life. He would not give this in charge to his director, Father James Eguia, who was so intimately acquainted with his virtues, and with the divine favors vouchsafed to him; but hoped that by leaving a sketch of his life and of the goodness of God towards him, he would lead to the belief, that excepting what he had himself dictated to Nadal, there was nothing worthy of being recorded concerning him.

Regarding his intimate communications with God, his spiritual union with Him, and that superhuman knowledge, which he might have been unable to explain, even had he wished to do so, no word was ever revealed by him.

We owe to the goodness of God, not to Ignatius, that some fragments have been preserved of the notes which he daily wrote upon all that passed between his soul and God. All was burned excepting these few leaves, which contain the reflections of only four months; a short space of time from amidst so many years; and yet this limited space contains so much that is great and instructive, that from the portion which further on I shall transcribe, we may judge of the treasures of divine grace contained within his breast.

He submitted his Constitutions to the examination and censure of his first companions in Rome, well aware that they would not change an *iota* of that which, although written by him, was dictated by inspiration from on high. He wished by this means not only to prevent them from being considered as inspired by God, but also to avoid all idea of their being entirely his own work. Therefore, although he might have presented them as definitively decided, after they had received the sanction of the Sovereign Pontiffs, he reserved this act of Supreme Authority for the General Congregation to be held after his death. His very death bore

the impress of his marvellous humility, for he died like one without importance and almost alone.

When he felt his end approaching, and knew that but a few hours of life remained to him, he sent a message towards evening to the Sovereign Pontiff, requesting his last benediction before he died. But as the physicians declared that he would still live several days, he took advantage of their security to die as he had tried to live; alone with God. Without manifesting his conviction that his last hour was at hand, without naming an assistant as he had formerly done, to aid him in bearing the burden of office, without giving himself the consolation of blessing his children, of bequeathing to them his last wishes, of seeing them assembled to weep and pray around his dying bed, he expired alone. At the report that their Father was in his last agonies, the children of Ignatius hastened to his couch; but his spirit was at the moment of its departure, and he knew them not. So live, and so die the Saints of God!

CHAPTER II.

The perfection of obedience as manifested in St. Ignatius—His practice of evangelic poverty—His gratitude for benefits—New examples of the empire which he exercised over himself.

Obedience and poverty are the daughters of humility. The one strips us of what we are, the other of what we possess ; and consequently, both tend to reduce us to that nothingness which the truly humble man aspires to. Ignatius, as Head of the Society, had few opportunities of practising obedience ; but whenever one presented itself, it was easy to observe that in him practice would be no less perfect than theory. For instance, when he voluntarily submitted to serve in the kitchen, he was as obedient to the orders of the cook, as if he had been the youngest and most fervent novice. He obeyed his physicians with entire submission. On one occasion, following their advice, he broke his fast, which he had continued with more zeal than strength, during all Lent, until Wednesday in the Holy Week. He did not plead the few days which remained, to satisfy his devotion ; but simply obeyed, making to God the sacrifice of his will, more agreeable to Him than the mortification of the flesh, without obedience. He obeyed his physicians, even at the peril of his life. For it happened once that suffering from grievous inward pains, a young and inexperienced doctor being consulted, was of opinion that they proceeded from cold, whilst they were in fact caused by heat and inward inflammation.

He therefore prescribed hot drinks, and a careful closing up of all doors and windows, with a profusion of blankets, lest the air should penetrate to the sick man; and all this in the dog-days.

But although Ignatius felt that this method was most injurious, notwithstanding the burning thirst that devoured him, the constant perspiration and frequent fainting fits which resulted from this mode of treatment, he never uttered a word of complaint. Only feeling himself quite exhausted, he committed to one of the Fathers the administration of the house, and desiring no one to enter his room but the brother who had charge of the Infirmary, prepared himself quietly for death.

It was then understood how violent had been the effects produced upon him by the insupportable heat to which he had been condemned; and Alexander Petronio, a skilful physician, and one devoted to Ignatius, was sent for in all haste. Exclaiming against the ignorance of the young practitioner, he immediately ordered the clothes to be removed, the chamber aired, and a strengthening diet to be administered to the patient, who shortly after recovered, and was entirely freed from pain.

His perfect obedience to the Sovereign Pontiff, and entire submission to his judgment, can hardly be described. From the day in which he had placed himself in his hands, with a vow taken before God to go, in the service of the Church, to whatever part of the world the Vicar of Christ should send him, he never even felt a wish to be employed in one place rather than in another. His only will was to obey him in whose hands he had placed it. Having heard Father Lainez say that since all hopes of passing over to the Holy Land were ended, he felt a great desire to go to the Indies, to labor for the conversion of the infidels;

"And I," said Ignatius, "have no such desire, and if I felt it I should banish it from my mind." At which Lainez appearing surprised: "Does not our vow," added Ignatius, "engage us to be always in readiness, through obedience to our Holy Father, to go to whatever part of the world he sends us? Since that is the case, I am equally disposed to go to all places; to the East or to the West; and should I feel any preference for one more than for the other, I should combat it, and endeavor to reduce my mind to perfect indifference, and a disposition to obey with equal readiness whatever orders I may receive."

In his old age, when infirm and suffering, he was often heard to say, that at the first word of the Holy Father, he would take up his staff, and journey on foot to Spain; or would embark without provisions in any ship whatsoever, were it without sails or helm, masts or rigging; and that so far from feeling any repugnance in his obedience, he would feel, on the contrary, the utmost pleasure and satisfaction; which saying coming to the ears of one of those wise men who weigh worldly things and those which are of God in the same balance, he said to him in a tone of slight derision: "But, Father Ignatius, where then would be your prudence?" "Prudence," replied the Father, "is not the virtue of him who obeys, but of him who commands; and if there is prudence in obedience, we must cease to be prudent, rather than cease to obey."

The Saint sometimes called poverty the groundwork of religion. He styled it his mother, and loved it with tender affection; while he wished to see it carried in the Order to the highest degree compatible with his Institute, whose object is, the service of our neighbor. Now, in order to serve our neighbor, and to be useful to him, we must devote ourselves to long and arduous studies; and for our ministra-

tion, we must accept neither salary nor reward. Therefore our Founder, who knew from the experience of several years, that study and mendicity are incompatible, wisely regulated that the colleges where the schools are held, should be endowed ; that the novitiates, which may be considered as forming part of the colleges, and are as it were their nursery, should be so also ; but not so the professed houses ; for these are but as wayside inns, where stop the pilgrims who have no fixed abode, and who hold themselves ever in readiness to depart upon whatever mission they are sent, and to whatever part of the world in which their services are required. Besides, the revenues of the colleges being common property, may be perfectly allied to individual poverty ; for no Father becomes richer in a rich establishment, nor poorer in a poor one. Each receives what is necessary for living poorly, and for working ; but beyond that no one is permitted to possess any property of his own. He who goes from one college to another, can carry away nothing but his writings, the only thing which belongs to him individually. Whatever he requires for maintenance, clothing, or work, he will find in the college to which he is sent, and will use it as an object belonging to the office which he fills, but not to himself personally. Whatever augmentation may take place in the revenues of a college, the number of students alone varies, and increases proportionably ; but in no other particular is it observable, and no one upon his own account can dispose of one obolus more than he did before. Whatever has been considered necessary from the first, remains invariably and irrevocably fixed ; and thus the door is shut to all spirit of appropriation. For experience has proved how easily this spirit introduces itself into those Orders which suffer from want ; how the Superiors, unable to maintain the brethren, are obliged to

shut their eyes to what they procure for themselves, until each one has his property separate, and what begins through necessity, continues from a love of ease.

Our professed houses have no fixed revenue, not even for the service of the Churches. However necessitous they may be, they can receive nothing from the Colleges, not even as alms; otherwise certain that the charity of the Rectors would never allow them to suffer from want, they would cease to depend solely upon Divine Providence. By a particular decree of Father Lainez, then General of the Order, the Rectors of the Colleges were bound annually, about the time of Christmas, to affirm upon oath that they had furnished nothing to the professed houses. The formula of this oath ran thus: "With all due reverence, I take God, who is truth itself, to witness, that none of the worldly goods belonging to the college, have to my knowledge been appropriated to the use of the professed Religious or of their houses; which is prohibited by the Constitutions of the Society."

I attribute this measure to the General Lainez, only in regard to the epoch fixed for taking the oath; for it was already established in the time of Ignatius; and that taken by Father John Pelletier, Rector of the Roman College, and given by him in writing, in the year 1551, is still preserved. In conformity with this rule, Ignatius gave up to the Roman College, a valuable present of wax, which the Fathers of Palermo had offered to the house.

Thus, if a sick person required a flask of wine, it could only be accepted from the College, by exchanging for it some other article of equal value furnished by the house; and the first vow which was added to the four solemn vows taken by the professed members, was to maintain the same

degree of poverty in the Society, and to permit no alteration, unless in rendering its observance still more strict.

The love of Ignatius for poverty, was only comparable to the joy with which he reaped its fruits. From the very first day in which he embraced the cross of Christ, his privation of all things was complete. From that day he had no shelter but in the hospitals; he clad himself in the rudest garments; he lived upon alms, and these he shared with the poor; reserving to himself merely what was sufficient to support him for the day. He would never carry money with him; and if forced by some pious souls to receive it, would leave it upon the sea shore, or give it for the love of God to the first necessitous person he met.

When he became Father and General of the Society, he remained in the same destitution as the least amongst the Brethren. A Bible, a missal, and *The Imitation of Christ*, composed all his library. This chamber, like that which the *Shunammite* woman prepared for Elisha, contained only a bed, a table, a chair and a candlestick. His table, although he constantly received the Fathers who came from a distance to Rome, was so poorly served, as scarcely to afford sufficient for a bare subsistence.

Nicholas Bobadilla one day when suffering from indisposition, taking his share of some of the coarse food which was likely to be injurious to him, remarked smilingly: *Modicum venenum non nocet*: his portion being so small, that had it been poison, it could scarcely have hurt him. Ignatius severely reprimanded the minister and steward for having one day served up a bunch of grapes to him when the other Fathers had none.

His love of poverty was especially remarkable in the noble generosity with which he was always ready to give up the little which he possessed. However poor he was, he

never would enter into a lawsuit with any one for any worldly interests; and he used frequently to say, that this line of conduct was not only conformable to a true spirit of Christianity, but that two great benefits accrued from it; the one spiritual, because an act of charity is superior to all the treasures in the world; the other temporal, because Our Lord never shows his liberality more than towards those who have given up every thing for him.

Thus he never would permit the slightest disputes amongst the Fathers concerning the interests of the company; and it happened that two Rectors having disagreed upon some point regarding their respective colleges, he settled the difficulty by changing their posts, and sending each to govern the college of the other. He was for several years the Director of Margaret of Austria, daughter of the Emperor Charles V., and she frequently sent him large sums of money to be distributed amongst the poor. He knew well that her intention was that all or part of this money should be applied to relieve the wants of the Society, yet he never would employ one farthing for that purpose; but carefully divided it amongst different pious establishments, and kept an exact account of its distribution. Not only did he thus give in alms the money which he might have employed to relieve the wants of his brethren, but from the little money reserved for the support of the house, he would frequently assist the necessities of others.

So that a certain very rich Cardinal, having directed a poor nobleman to apply to Ignatius for aid, the latter bestowed upon him all the money that could be collected in the house, only regretting that he was not so well provided as the Cardinal no doubt imagined; since notwithstanding his own opulence, he had counted upon him for support. He took particular care to spare the feelings of the unfortu-

nate, as well as to succor their wants ; and often, in regard to noble families which had become impoverished, or honorable men whose labors did not suffice for the maintenance of a numerous offspring, he continued to procure some trifling occupation which he paid largely, so that the charity might appear to be merely a remuneration for labor.

To this love of poverty, which rendered Ignatius so generous towards the unfortunate, he added another quality, particularly characteristic of a noble soul, gratitude. He did not mete it out according to the benefit received ; but offered in return all that he had in his power to give. Thus even after his death, he testified his gratitude to John Paschal, who had received and maintained him in his house, by appearing to him, as I have already related in the first book of this history, and consoling him by the assurance of eternal salvation. Whilst still alive, he had deprived himself for his sake of a small crucifix, which he always carried in his bosom ; the sole companion of his pilgrimages, and only consolation in affliction. To a priest named Cavalla, who had brought alms to him during his malady at Manresa, he gave all that he possessed ; a book containing the Office of the Virgin. Trifling gifts it is true ; but no small tokens of gratitude in one who had nothing more to bestow. He never forgot a benefit. Cardinal Gaspar Contarini, who had by his powerful aid so much contributed to obtain the approbation of the Sovereign Pontiff for the Order, never ceased to be the object of his most tender gratitude. Nor had he less for the King of Portugal, who had welcomed the Society to his dominions with truly royal magnificence. He ordered all the priests of the Order daily to recommend in the Holy Sacrifice, the King, Queen, and Princes of that royal house, in token of gratitude for the great favors which

the Society had received from them. From numerous examples of the same nature, I shall select but a few more.

Jerome Arcé, one of the benefactors of our house in Rome, arrived from Spain grievously sick, at a season when the patients under the care of Ignatius were unusually numerous. And although the care of the sick occupied above all others the mind of Ignatius, yet he could not bear the thoughts of leaving his friend and benefactor destitute of all that was necessary in his sad situation; and immediately sent the Brother Infirmarian to take charge of him, with orders not to leave the bedside of the sick man, until he was entirely cured. Meanwhile he himself visited him daily, bringing as much consolation to his soul, as relief to his bodily sufferings.

On another occasion, being prevented from carrying assistance to a former benefactress, on account of the distance that separated them, he intrusted her to the charity of his children, earnestly recommending them, to testify in his name, and by every means in their power his gratitude for her kindness. Her name was Mencia de Benevente; and when Ignatius resided in Alcalá, she possessed a large fortune, from which she furnished him with such abundant alms, as enabled him not only to live, but to distribute assistance to the poor. Various reverses of fortune reduced her to the last extreme of misery, which no sooner came to the knowledge of Ignatius, than with the most touching importunity, he recommended her to the care of Father Francis of Villanova, Rector of the College of Alcalá. That college had been but a short time established, and was so devoid even of the necessaries of life, that the Brothers, who had neither blankets nor any kind of covering to protect them from the inclemency of the night, in the depth of winter, had no resource but to sleep as they could, each wrapped in his

poor and threadbare cloak. As for their daily fare, it was so meagre, that their life was in fact a perpetual fast. Nevertheless, each Father, beginning with the Rector, on receiving his slender daily portion of food for dinner, retrenched part of it, and laid it on a dish placed on the middle of the table for that purpose; and these poor offerings sent to their benefactress, enabled her to live somewhat less poorly than they did.

Another proof of the grateful heart of Ignatius and his generous love of poverty, may be found in his conduct to the Prior Andrew Lipomani, a Venetian nobleman, who, in order to found a College in Padua for the Society, deprived himself of his Priory, reserving merely what was necessary for his subsistence. But St. Ignatius returned to him by contract, the whole administration of the revenue, forbidding his Religious to demand the smallest portion of it at his hands; and enjoining them to receive as alms whatever he was pleased to bestow upon them for their subsistence. Moreover, he alienated a portion of the funds of the Priory, and made it into an annual rent of one hundred crowns for the nephew of his benefactor. But the Prior would not permit his nephew to receive this money, nor consent that his family should profit by what he had consecrated to God.

Let us now dwell for a little while upon those virtues which were most peculiar to Ignatius. Of these, none were more eminent than the marvellous empire which he exercised over all the emotions of his soul. He carried this to heroism, and those who lived with him on familiar terms, used frequently to say that in him every human passion was governed and guided solely by virtue and reason. The Fathers James Lainez and Andrew Frusis, both intimate friends of the Saint, were of opinion that to follow the impressions of grace had become for him a second nature, to

which he yielded, not through obedience to the empire which he had over his natural inclinations, but in compliance with his inclinations. Yet St. Ignatius was very far from possessing a phlegmatic nature or an apathetic character. The physicians often erred in thinking so, and in attributing to a naturally cold disposition, that immobility of the passions, acquired by long and continuous exercise in conquering the violent emotions of anger to which, through a naturally fiery temperament, he was subject.

Those who understood the human heart better were not deceived ; and two Spaniards of elevated mind and penetrating genius, Michael Torres and Christopher Madrid, saw in this absolute empire over naturally impetuous passions, so strong a proof of consummate perfection, that by this consideration alone they were led to become disciples of Ignatius, and members of the Society.

No event, however unforeseen, produced upon him any external impression, whether of grief or joy. The most perfect equanimity of soul was always observable in him ; in all places, and at all hours, he was the same. Nor was it of any importance in speaking with him upon business, or in asking him a favor, whether he was sick or well, persecuted or left in peace, whether he had received good news or bad news ; these accidental circumstances had no influence either upon him or upon his decisions. One of the Fathers, forgetful no doubt of this rare impassibility, seeing him return wearied one day, after having long and vainly waited for an audience from the Holy Father, refrained from speaking to him concerning some affair, as it was his duty to do. Having gone to confer with the Saint the following day, he excused himself for this delay, alleging the reason already mentioned, and in consequence, received so severe a reproof from Ignatius, that as he himself relates, he went from his presence covered

with confusion, and for more than a week did not venture to speak to or even to look at him.

The physiognomy of Ignatius was as imperturbable as his soul; and his children used to remark that his countenance was already that of a Saint, in its constant serenity. The Archbishop of Toledo, Don Gaspar de Quiroga, who passed some time with him in Rome, was never wearied of contemplating the clear and untroubled expression which pervaded his features. It is true that his countenance could express both wrath and severity, when he found it necessary to give more force to his reproofs. But even at those moments, he preserved such an expression of majestic dignity, that men of the highest merit and importance, unable to bear this silent rebuke, have been known to fall speechless and weeping at his feet.

To accidents and to bodily pain he appeared impassible; and neither by the contraction of his features, nor by the slightest movement, did he ever betray any inward suffering. Thus one day on account of a swelling in his throat, the Infirmarian placed a bandage round his neck, which also covered his ears, and wishing to keep it in its place, sewed it up, during which operation he accidentally pierced the ear entirely through with his needle. "See, Brother John Paul, you have sewed mine ear;" said Ignatius quietly, without giving the slightest sign either of pain or anger.

On another occasion, having gone to visit a building, which he was having erected at a country-house belonging to the college, near St. Balbina, when about to descend a temporary staircase, he slipped his foot, and was precipitated down the whole flight of steps, so that it appeared certain that he must have dashed his head against the wall in front. Father James Guzman who was with him, believed his death inevitable; but it pleased God to defend him, for

as if by a miracle, at the foot of the stairs, and before his head touched the wall, he stopped, and rose. Yet this danger seemed to cause him no emotion. He neither changed color, nor even looked back, as it would have been natural to do, to observe the height from whence he had fallen; but walked on as tranquilly as if nothing had happened.

Being one day in the house of some pious persons, with whom he was engaged in religious conversation, a messenger arrived, with a troubled countenance, and communicated some news to him in private. "It is well;" said the Saint, and dismissed him; then for more than an hour afterwards, he continued his conversation, without the slightest trouble being visible in his features or demeanor. When he was about to depart, they questioned him as to whether that messenger had brought no bad news. "Nothing," said he, "excepting that the officers of justice have come to seize our furniture in payment of a debt of some few crowns which we were obliged to contract. But if they take our beds, we can sleep upon the floor; which will suit poor people like us very well. I should wish them to leave certain manuscripts of mine; but if they refuse I shall not contest the point. They shall be welcome to them."

Things however did not go so far. Jerome Astalli, a Roman nobleman, and devoted friend of Ignatius, became responsible for the payment, and through God Himself the debt was acquitted; for He inspired Dr. Jerome Arzè, although unaware of the positive destitution of the Fathers, to send to the house a sum of two hundred crowns as alms, by which they were enabled to satisfy their creditors.

Our blessed Founder suffered much greater difficulties, and for a longer period, from a man who was strangely prejudiced against him and his Order, owing to some cause

that no one, perhaps not the individual himself, could understand. As soon as he saw them established in a house contiguous to his, and found that he had no means of driving them from it, he began by taking possession of their courtyard, and incorporating it with his own; he then filled it with the noisiest animals he could collect, and kept up such a constant uproar beneath their windows, that the chambers on that side of the house became almost uninhabitable. And as the refectory could have no light excepting from the court, he refused to permit the Fathers to have windows opened on that side; so that during the eight years which this persecution lasted, they were obliged to light their hall with lamps at mid-day. It appears that the man was actuated in his conduct not only by his own bad disposition, but by his desire that these unceasing annoyances might force Ignatius to buy his house at an exorbitant price. Meanwhile he spread about through Rome bitter complaints against the Fathers, saying that they did not leave him a moment in peace, and were trying to force him to leave his house. Finally he became so truly insupportable, that the Fathers were obliged to yield to his cupidity; and partly by borrowing, partly by alms, were enabled to offer him the price which he demanded. He took his departure at length, but like one who had instead of selling his house, abandoned it in time of war to be pillaged by the soldiery. He carried away the doors, the windows, the iron bars, and even all the hewn stones that he could detach from the building.

Now during the nine years which this persecution lasted, Ignatius not only would permit no lawsuit upon the subject, but was never heard to utter one word of complaint, or resentment, nor apparently to feel a shadow of displeasure; and he took possession of the four walls of the house, pre-

cisely as if they had been yielded to him through courtesy, and in the best possible condition.

In 1555, when the affairs of Naples began to excite agitation and tumult in Rome, the pope, Paul IV., deceived by false information, ordered the governor of Rome, the procurator fiscal and all his men, to visit our house, and make strict search for a deposit of arms said to be concealed there.

Our venerable Father received this visit with a serene and unaltered countenance, and ordered his Secretary to conduct this numerous troop to investigate every part of the building. The researches being concluded without so much as the point of a lance being found, Ignatius, with the same serenity as if he had received a visit of politeness, and a mark of respect, accompanied the governor and his attendants as far as the door.

But can we wonder that he was but little troubled by this search of his house, when we reflect that had the Society itself been annihilated, blotted from the face of the world, and not a remembrance of it left, his spirit would not have been troubled, and he would have required but a short retreat and communion with God, to remain as calm and undisturbed as before? During a severe illness, he was enjoined by his physicians to refrain from dwelling upon any subject which could cause him trouble or melancholy. Revolving in his own mind what serious accidents or sudden bereavements could cause him any temporary sadness, he could think of nothing capable of affecting him, excepting the destruction of the Company. "And yet," said he when relating this circumstance, "were that to happen through no fault of mine; were I to see the Society dissolved like a few grains of salt in water, one quarter of an hour passed in communion with God would restore my soul to perfect tran-

quillity." Yet we know how many long years of toil and suffering, this, the most eminent of his works, had cost him; and how clearly he foresaw the services which it would render the Church, and the glory which through it would accrue to God. But although as St. Augustine remarks, the throne of God is in Heaven, *cælum mihi sedes est*, yet the Heavens might melt away, and his throne would not be shaken. And so it is with the Saints of God. However great, however glorious may be the object of which they are deprived, they remain calm and undisturbed, because God is their support, and their sole desire the accomplishment of His will.

We may form some idea of the sincerity of Ignatius in the feelings which he expressed on this subject, by his demeanor when the election of Paul IV. to the Pontificate, was announced to him. For a moment, as by a passing shadow, his face was clouded; and he seemed as it were to withdraw within himself, like one who studies the future. Then without making any remark, he entered the chapel, and kneeling for a few moments in prayer, returned to his children, with a serene and cheerful countenance. "The Pontiff will be friendly to us," said he; "nevertheless he will put our patience to many trials." And thus in fact it happened; for so long as Ignatius lived, Paul IV. treated him at one time with kindness—at another with severity, according to the different impressions which he received.

But after the death of Ignatius, when Father Lainez was named Vicar-general, and went to announce his election to Paul IV., that Pontiff received him with every demonstration of sincere affection, led him into his private cabinet, and conversed with him long and familiarly. When Lainez related this to the Fathers on his return, many of them thought that their holy Founder had already contributed by

his prayers to realize the first part of his prediction; for such a reception seemed a happy omen, on which they might found hopes for the future. It is true that but a short time elapsed before the face of affairs was changed, and the second part of the prediction of Ignatius accomplished.

When Lainez on account of certain affairs, returned to see the Pontiff, he could not obtain an audience. After several vain attempts to obtain admission, he was received by one of the Cardinals, who accosted him with a stern aspect, and addressed him in cold and severe terms. To the request of Lainez that the Society might have an advocate to speak for it upon certain affairs, he replied shortly, "Yes; we shall examine;" and with these words dismissed him. This trouble was terminated by a new examination of our Constitutions, in the intention of retrenching or adding whatever was thought necessary; but God would not permit any change to be made in the work of St. Ignatius.

Shortly after, Father Lainez was definitively elected General of the Society. Paul IV., who already esteemed Lainez so highly, that he had been desirous of raising him to the rank of Cardinal, received him with paternal kindness on this occasion, and expressed himself in terms of especial affection towards the Society, the blessed Society, as he termed it. He then exhorted them generously to bear the Cross, since they were called by God to suffer insults, persecution and death, for the glory of the Lord Jesus Christ, and in the service of His Church. Afterwards, in his last sickness, when his last hour was drawing near, Paul again spoke of the Society in terms of still higher praise, promising it his protection, should it please God to prolong his life.

CHAPTER III.

Exterior deportment of St. Ignatius—The importance which he attached to outward demeanor—Rules laid down on this point—Circumspection of the Saint in his words, writings, and the management of his affairs—His conduct was an image of the *Following of Jesus Christ*—His influence on those who surrounded him—Difficulty of appreciating the interior virtues of the Saints.

THAT tranquillity and moderation which governed all the interior affections of Ignatius, influenced his outward deportment, and might be traced in his demeanor and countenance. One day in Padua, in the presence of Father Lainez, one possessed of an evil spirit, an unfortunate being who had never seen nor heard of Ignatius, spoke of him, and remarked the singular charm of his expression: "He is," said he, "a Spaniard, somewhat short of stature, and lame, but his eyes are bright and charming." And he was right; for in the expression of Ignatius, vivacity and sweetness were so singularly blended, that he would often cheer a gloomy and disconsolate man, merely by looking at him. It seemed as if such a one brightened up under the gaze of Ignatius. Nevertheless his eyes were generally cast down, and were expressive only of the most angelic modesty, that precious gift bestowed upon him by the Queen of Virgins, when for the first time she appeared to him at Loyola, and so entirely freed him from all concupiscence, that to him might be applied the words of the blessed Ennodius, when speaking of another holy man: "He never perceived that he was

clothed in flesh, except when he meditated upon death, which was to destroy it."

Of this virtue he has left us a beautiful sketch, of which he might have taken the model from himself, and which he entitles *Modesty*; laying down twelve rules, containing instructions for a religious deportment, so important for those who in their relations with their fellow-men endeavor to draw them over to God. A modest deportment indicates at the first glance, a pure and calm soul, and in attracting hearts to God, possesses a virtue similar to that which, in another sense, an ancient writer calls a letter of recommendation written upon an amiable and open physiognomy.

These twelve rules cost Ignatius many tears, shed in the presence of God; and were the object of long and frequent prayers which he offered up as he himself tells us, on observing the carelessness with which a Father minister directed their observance, and the slight importance which he appeared to attach to them. But it seemed as if the Lord Himself wished to prove His approbation of this virtue, by saving the lives of many of the Fathers, by an act of special Providence, at the moment when these rules were published for the first time.

Ignatius had charged Father Lainez to promulgate these regulations, and to make an exhortation on the subject; and gave orders that all the Fathers, including (contrary to custom) his first ten companions who were then in the house, should be present. Now whilst Father Lainez, discoursing upon a text from St. James, exhorted them never to despise the slightest observance which might contribute to their spiritual advancement, suddenly a violent noise as of a falling building was heard, and the whole house was shaken.

The discourse concluded, they went out to discover the cause of so strange a circumstance, and found that the roof of the

building under which daily, at the same hour, immediately after dinner, they were in the habit of assembling for spiritual conversation, had fallen in. Seeing this, they raised their hands and eyes in thanks to God, who had preserved their lives; and it seemed to them as if a divine manifestation had thus been vouchsafed of the importance in the sight of God of these rules, whose publication had been the indirect cause of their preservation.

These rules, and the means employed by St. Ignatius for insuring their observance, were so efficacious, that wherever the Fathers appeared, they were known to be members of the Society of Jesus, from the modesty of their deportment. He who saw one, writes a contemporary author, saw all. As might be expected, the enemies of the Order attributed this modest demeanor to a refinement of hypocrisy, which being related to Ignatius, he replied: "Would to God that this hypocrisy might daily increase amongst us! As for me," added he, pointing out the Fathers Salmeron and Bobadilla, "I know but two hypocrites in the Society;" meaning to infer that they were even more virtuous than they appeared to be, and were hypocrites only because they concealed their good qualities.

The admirable order which reigned in the soul of St. Ignatius, imparted to all his words a remarkable character of circumspection; for between the heart and the tongue of man, the same connection exists as between the hands and the inner wheels of a watch. Where the latter are out of order, the former go wrong also. Thus our holy Founder was never known to use a word of contempt when addressing reproaches to an inferior. Reason, and not anger under the mask of zeal, spoke by his mouth. His only object was that the criminal should amend his conduct, and that the public order should be maintained.

His general principle was to express himself in few words. Truth in all its simplicity was sufficient for him, and he did not even deduce all the consequences from it which he might have done, far less add reflections and comments of his own. Thus his discourses were full of facts, and produced an astonishing effect upon his hearers. According to him, truth required nothing but its own virtual force, in order to triumph; "too much clothing," he would say, "only weakens it, and unfits it for wrestling with error."

Ignatius was scrupulously exact in fulfilling his promises, and therefore always calculated beforehand his power of keeping his word. He confessed that on one occasion, the first time in which it had happened to him for years, he encountered extraordinary obstacles in accomplishing a promise which he had made.

He evinced the same discretion in speaking of the actions of others, even when they were public. He was not prodigal of praise, but he never censured. And with regard to men in authority, of whom every one thinks it lawful to give his opinion, he not only refrained from condemning their mode of government, when the public attacked them, but would not even express his views as to the measures which it might be useful for them to adopt, less they might be accused of incapacity in not having thought of these measures, or of a want of equity, if knowing, they did not adopt them.

One of the four Pontiffs who filled the Holy See during his sojourn in Rome, became obnoxious to public opinion, on account of his excessive severity. No one spared him. Ignatius on the contrary made it his study to discover every thing that could be said in his favor, and when complaints were made to him of the conduct of the Pope, he answered by praising him; and although this Pontiff was unfavorably disposed towards the Society, Ignatius would not suffer any of

his children to complain of him, and recommended one of the Fathers who was about leaving Rome for Flanders, never to mention his conduct towards the Society, unless he could do so in terms of praise. The Father replying that he could find no excuse for some of his behavior towards us : " Well then," said Ignatius, " be silent concerning him ; and speak of Pope Marcellus, who both as Cardinal, and during his short Pontificate, gave proofs of affection to the Society which it never can forget."

Men of all ranks and conditions, might take a lesson from the wise discretion always observable in the conversation of Ignatius. It was not his habit to pass lightly, or without some motive, from one topic to another, or to treat a subject superficially ; and when this was done by those with whom he was discoursing, he contented himself with showing his disapprobation by silence. His care and attention in the conduct of affairs, is hardly credible. Not one word issued from his lips without being maturely weighed ; not one letter from the hands of his Secretary, which he had not read and re-read, examined and corrected. Father Martin Olave, having prepared a document concerning the Society for the Doctors of the Sorbonne, Ignatius carefully scrutinized each expression, and passed three hours in the most minute examination of every phrase.

Such then was the empire which Ignatius maintained over himself and over his affections, which were held in complete subjection by the voice of reason. Thus Father Louis Gonsalez would often remark, that to see Ignatius, to listen and to observe him, was to receive a lesson in action from the book entitled *The following of Christ*. He who has any knowledge of spiritual things, and who knows that work, knows also what lofty instructions upon spiritual perfection it contains, but more especially upon that foundation of all

virtue, called by the masters of spiritual life self-denial, and the crucifixion of the inner man. Now this book fell into the hands of Ignatius when he was yet a novice in spiritual perfection, and was devoting himself to penitential exercises at Manresa. Hardly had he read the first lines, when he resolved never to part from it more. It was, said he, the pearl of books. Every day he read one chapter slowly over, by way of meditation, extracting all the pith which it contained for his own use, as the earth absorbs every little drop of rain which slowly filters through it, and descends into its bowels. He generally opened it once or twice a day at random; and read on from that page; and it always happened that he found something appropriate to the state of his soul at that moment; to console him if he was sad, to encourage him if he felt alarmed, to support him if he were tempted. Thus he had ever with him a consoler, counsellor and support, and he considered this book as the most precious gift which he could offer to those whom he loved. In going to Monte Casino, to give instructions in the *Spiritual Exercises* to an Envoy from Charles the Fifth, he carried with him as many copies of it as there were monks in that holy monastery, and left one to each of the brethren; a present equally worthy of him who gave, and of those who received it. The life of St. Ignatius was a living copy of this book; its precepts put in action, and a powerful means of leading those who beheld him, to reproduce a similar copy in themselves. His mere presence had so remarkable an effect upon his children in leading them forward in a spiritual life, that the greatest favor that could be granted them, was permission to reside in Rome, and with him. Hence the deep regret of Father Lainez, when he was obliged to remove from that city; nothing, said he, could cause him greater sorrow, than to separate from Ignatius. Hence the letters of those who

were far away in distant lands ; full of tender recollections of the happy days when they had lived with their Father, and of their desire to be once more under the paternal roof.

"It is in that school," wrote Father Canisius to his friends in Rome, "that we are taught to acquire a rich poverty, a free slavery, a glorious humility, and a noble love for Christ crucified. And I, when I look back, and revolve in my mind that beautiful and admirable philosophy in which our Father instructed us, and recall to my remembrance all that I enjoyed in Rome, all that I have lost in leaving it, my conscience condemns me, and reproaches me with my carelessness and idleness, since having so short a time to avail myself of such powerful aid, I was not more solicitous to profit by it."

Thus the Religious house in Rome, on account of being the residence of St. Ignatius, was considered, as Father Polanco expresses it, the heart of the Society, because there it had taken rise ; its head, because it contained the prime mover of all its works ; and its bowels, because from thence it drew all its substance, strength, and increase in spiritual vigor.

The usual subject of the exhortations of St. Ignatius, was upon the necessity of becoming *inner men* ; of breaking our own will at the foot of Christ's cross ; of conquering every passion and affection, so as to force them to obey at the slightest signal. In his most intimate conversations, of which God was always the beginning and the end, he constantly repeated these words : *Vince te ipsum* : a lesson so impressed upon the mind of St. Francis Xavier, that these words were constantly on his lips, and he repeated nothing more frequently to our brethren in India than *Vince te ipsum*, which, in three words, comprehends and imparts

more solid instruction in holiness than many books with long and learned commentaries.

Ignatius knew all the value of prayer, and devoted many hours of each day to this holy exercise; yet he did not measure the sanctity of his children by the length of time which they passed in prayer, but rather by their generous empire over themselves, and by the perfect subjection in which they held their senses and will. He would even say, that of a hundred persons, whose sole idea of perfection consists in passing many hours in prayer, more than ninety would be found wilful, difficult to lead, unwilling to submit to the rules, satisfied with themselves, and believing themselves fitted to direct others. His constant fear was, that the Society might not have understood his views concerning the path which leads to spiritual perfection, and that they might entirely substitute prayer for mortification. Father Nadal frequently importuned him to extend the time of prayer beyond an hour; but Ignatius replied, that long meditations were necessary for acquiring dominion over the passions, whether by prayer or by reflection; but that he who had attained that end, would find himself in closer communion with God, in one quarter of an hour spent in devotion, than a man of unmortified passions during long hours of prayer; "for," said he, "the greatest obstacle to the union of the soul with God, is our attachment to ourselves, which weighs down the soul, and prevents it from rising freely to its God."

Of two brother coadjutors, one was of a calm temperament, which nothing could trouble; his tranquillity proceeded rather from a grace of nature, than from any effort of virtue on his part in controlling his feelings. The other, on the contrary, was vehement and impetuous, and his feelings of impatience would sometimes find vent in hasty words;

yet he often conquered himself, subdued the violence of his disposition, and kept back the words that trembled upon his lips. Ignatius, who observed them both, "Take courage, Brother," said he. "Continue to vanquish yourself, and you will acquire double the merit of those whose gentle nature has no need to be subdued." Another Brother, who felt that he was of an irritable and choleric disposition, used to avoid his companions; and Ignatius, finding him one day solitary and apart from the others at the hour of recreation, inquired into the cause, which, when he had heard, "You are wrong," said he; "these kind of enemies are not to be conquered by flight, but by combat. Solitude will not destroy your impatience, it will only conceal it. You will sacrifice more to God, you will gain more for yourself, by acts of mortification, be they great or small, with which the impetuosity of your temper will furnish you constant opportunities in your intercourse with your brethren, than if you were to bury yourself in a cavern, and to pass a whole year in complete silence."

Hitherto we have chiefly considered the private virtues of the Saint; let us now observe him under another point of view; in his public capacity. And here it is necessary to remark one circumstance, which is not unimportant. Had Ignatius circumscribed the perfection of his virtues within the limits of his own interests; had he, careless of others, applied himself solely to his own sanctification, the world would have accorded him infinitely more admiration and reverence; for the generality of men, having no exact ideas upon spiritual things, know not how to appreciate them according to their true value. That which is most striking in appearance, those virtues whose practice appears most difficult, are most highly esteemed by the multitude. As self-love, and the desire of satisfying the senses, are natural to

every individual, nothing is more apt to excite admiration, or to be regarded as the perfection of heroic sanctity, than the mortification of the body, and the austere rigor of long and extraordinary penances. If, during the thirty-five years which Ignatius lived after his conversion, he had continued all those penitential exercises which he had begun at Manresa; and as the fervor of his charity and his spiritual zeal increased, had even added to their severity, what wonders would now be related of him! Covered with sackcloth, girded with an iron chain, whose points entered the flesh, dwelling in a cave, or living amongst the poor in a hospital; there serving the sick, fasting continually, passing sometimes three and even eight days without taking food; subsisting entirely upon bread given in alms, and water mingled with ashes and earth; watching the greater part of the night, passing hours of it in meditation, and taking a brief repose upon the bare earth; using severe discipline several times a day; travelling to whatever distance, barefoot; seeking for insult, and desiring to be reviled; feigning insanity, to obtain the treatment of a madman; in short, making of life a continual death;—all this, which was in fact but the first steps towards that perfection in which he afterwards made such rapid progress, would no doubt, had he continued it for many years, have excited unbounded admiration, and he himself have been regarded as one who had attained the summit of perfection. But to turn from this to the conversion of souls, and with that view to devote himself to hard and laborious study for several years; to renounce these external austerities, more admirable than useful to others; to adopt engaging and affable manners towards all, to accommodate himself to ordinary life both in food and clothing; to collect around him men of talent and skill; and, instead of seeking contempt and insult, instead of rejoicing in false

accusations, to defend his reputation; in fine, to found a Society whose principal object is the reformation of the human heart; and of all the mortifications with which he afflicted his body, to retain only those which were conducive to the service of his neighbor; such as increasing labor for others;—these things constitute the most difficult and sublime degree of sanctity, in which care for the salvation of others, and for our own perfection, are perfectly united; wherein we follow as closely as possible the divine example of our Lord Himself. But truly spiritual men alone are capable of understanding this, and of according to such works the esteem which they merit. And yet, is it not by our works that we shall be judged? Is it not by them that our love of God, and that charity which is the soul of sanctity shall be measured? Our Lord Himself has laid down this rule, when He said to the first Head of His Church, “Peter, lovest thou me?” he did not add, as St. Chrysostom observes, “Become poor, fast without ceasing, raise up the dead, cast out devils;” but, “If thou lovest me, *feed my sheep.*”

“The rank of Ignatius was illustrious,” said Gregory XV., when consulting with the Cardinals concerning the bull of his canonization; “but far more sublime were his endeavors for the salvation of the faithful; his struggles against the attacks of the enemy; his efforts to reconquer the heritage of Israel. Of him might verily be said, as of the valiant Joshua in the Scriptures, who was ‘*great according to his name; very great for saving the elect of God, to overthrow the enemies that rose up against them, that he might get the inheritance of Israel.*’” * Thus Ignatius, himself burning with the fire of divine charity, communicated the flame to the heart of God’s elect; enlisted a sacred

* Eccles. 46.

militia for the extermination of the enemies which in those days arose against the people of God ; and furnished them with those arms, with which, through the assistance of God, they have combatted, and still continue to combat, for the service and glory of His Church.

Numerous were the conversions effected by Ignatius during his lifetime. Still more, perhaps, through the strength of his spirit after his death. For it is his genius, his spirit, which still directs and governs the Society of Jesus. "We cannot doubt," said Cardinal Bandini, speaking of him on the same occasion, "that all the good works of the Society, all the fruits which have been gathered from its labors, all that it will produce in future times, are due solely to the first seeds sown by its Founder. Great and worthy of our admiration were the works of Ignatius during his lifetime, but greater still, and yet more admirable, are those which he continues to effect. The light of Christianity diffused over the whole world by the Society; all those idolaters and heretics drawn from error by the exertions of its members; all those schools which the Order supports for the increase of knowledge, to Ignatius alone the obligation is due." "And as (according to the remark of another venerable prelate) the Israelites were enabled to judge of the fertility of the promised land, by seeing one bunch of grapes brought from thence, so the zeal of St. Ignatius is a convincing argument in favor of an Order instituted by him, and animated by his spirit." The zeal of Ignatius had neither measure nor limits, and aspired to nothing less than to reduce the whole world under the yoke of religion, and to lead it to the love and service of God. Hence his remarkable answer to the Ambassador of John, King of Portugal, who asked six of the companions of St. Ignatius, for the conversion of the Indies : "And if we give six to the Indies,

what shall we do for the rest of the world?" Hence those words of fire, with which he inflamed the hearts of his children, when dismissing them upon their distant missions. "*Ite*," said he, "*omnia incendite et inflammate*."

The speech of a monk having been reported to him, that he would willingly see all the members of the Society burned from Seville to Perpignan; "and as for me," replied Ignatius to the informant, "tell our friend that I also desire to see him, his friends and acquaintances, nay all the men who cover the face of the earth devoured and burned, but by the flames of divine love." And finally, hence emanated the order which he despatched to the four quarters of the globe, to send fervent workmen to the furthest and most unknown regions of India* to labor for the conversion of the Infidels. Great cause of grief to the heretics was this zeal; so that one of them wishing to express how injurious were the members of the Society to their sects, said that Paul III. had permitted Ignatius, that god of storms, to send his emissaries over the whole face of the earth; *Arte sua usuros passim, stragemque datuos*.

To St. Ignatius was truly due the glorious title of Apostle, bestowed upon him by the Rota. Thus the venerable Bede styled St. Gregory, the Apostle of England, because the conversion of that country is due to St. Augustine and his monks, who were sent thither by that Pontiff. *

* *Etiam ad Indos ipsis quoque Indis ignotos.*

CHAPTER IV.

Utility of the works founded by St. Ignatius—Report of the different missions—
Letter of the Saint to the College of Coimbra.

BEFORE proceeding further, let us pause for a moment, and cast a retrospective glance over the two first books of this history, and let us consider all that it cost Ignatius to form an Order in whose spirit his own was to be perpetuated, after his death, as during his lifetime. Let us reflect upon all that he had to suffer; the accusations, the incarceration, the persecutions raised against him, both by the cunning and strength of the powers of darkness; the obstacles that were placed in the way of his designs, before his great work was effected; the methods that were employed to prevent its progress, when the results of his undertaking began to manifest themselves; the studies even which he undertook, in the sole view of being useful to others; and at which he labored for so many years, notwithstanding the three obstinate enemies, as he would frequently say, against whom he had to contend; namely, extreme poverty, continual illness, and importunate devotion. All these through the ardor of his zeal he surmounted, and Cardinal del Monte truly said of him, in a statement which he addressed to Gregory XV., "Neither labors, nor maladies, nor watchings, nor bodily infirmities, nor mental afflictions, had power to shake his soul. Nor was there any method of assisting his neighbor, however arduous, however dangerous, which he did not

embrace, and incorporate into the ministrations of his Institute. He regarded himself as equally in the service of all men; age, condition, country, intellectual cultivation, gross ignorance; all these adventitious circumstances affected him not in the discharge of his one great duty; which was to be useful and serviceable to all. For this reason, amongst the first subjects of his solicitude, were those distant and varied missions, whether to idolaters or heretics, which he sent forth to the furthest extremities of the world; regardless of danger or of death. The lives of these devoted missionaries were consumed in distant and dangerous voyages, in the study both night and day of the most barbarous and most difficult languages, under burning skies, in the midst of fierce and inhuman savages; exposed to frightful tortures, frequently terminating in the most cruel death. Some perished in the fields, some at sea; others were martyred in remote forests, or on the summit of lonely mountains, far removed from all that spiritual aid which would have been afforded them in cities, and which their desolate situation seemed to render more especially necessary; others again met death in the hospitals, prisons, or galleys. Add to this the controversies in which they were constantly engaged with heretical preachers, by writing and by word of mouth; the administration of the Sacraments amongst the Catholics; the instruction of children in the faith; public preaching in the Churches or in the Squares; the conversion of sinners by means of the Spiritual Exercises; conversations upon spiritual subjects; which familiar method of instruction was so useful, that Father Louis Strada was wont to call our colleges, the public novitiates of the city. Nor was this all. To assist the dying, to console the condemned criminal; to support the fainting soul and body of the plague-stricken wretch, inhaling the burning breath of the pestilence;

who can count the number of the sons of St. Ignatius, who have offered up and continue freely to offer up their lives in that heroic service ! Finally, to write and publish works useful and important to the progress of intelligence and literature ; to educate the youth in schools and seminaries, leading them on from the first elements to the most sublime depths of science, infusing no less piety into their souls, than wisdom into their minds ; such are the duties, such are the labors of the children of Loyola."

Thus a prince no less celebrated for wisdom than for valor, used to remark, that he considered a College of the Society more necessary for the defence of a city, than a fortress ; and Urban VIII. in his brief to the King of Portugal, renders it this testimony : " In their colleges, which are esteemed schools of wisdom, those two-edged swords are forged, by which they so happily rout the diabolical legions ; " and elsewhere he says ; " who nourish youth with the milk of piety, and rout and banish heresy with the arms of light."

Stephen and Sigismond, kings of Poland, and the two Emperors, Ferdinand I., and Ferdinand II., declared that they had found no method more efficacious for strengthening the Catholic Faith in their dominions, overrun by the modern heresies, than that of educating the youth in the schools of the Fathers of the Society.

The same may be said of Portugal and the Indies ; and hence arose all the efforts of the sectarians to expel the Society from cities and kingdoms ; since " with them," said Henry IV., " not only the Muses depart, but faith and piety, the nurses of youth."

At Wilna, for example, the Zwinglians had founded at great expense, a celebrated academy, for the propagation of their errors. They succeeded but too well, for all the flower of the Lithuanian youth congregated thither. But the

the Society opened a college in the same city; Protestant pupils flocked to the house of the Fathers, and left the academy deserted.

But who could enumerate the advantages which the Church and Society have derived from the zeal of St. Ignatius! Let the families, the colleges, the clergy of those cities which have been deprived of its assistance, answer! They, even more than those who have enjoyed its advantages, are able to appreciate them. It is sufficient to know that the wisest men have thought and written, that if the Society had been established solely for the instruction of youth, it had done sufficient to merit universal esteem and respect.

In proportion as St. Ignatius ardently embraced every opportunity of laboring for the salvation of his fellow-men, he required from his children an equal devotion to the same cause as well as an exact account transmitted to him of the progress of their labors. If they founded new colleges, he desired to be informed every week of the number of the students who went thither. All the Superiors in Italy and Sicily had orders, in virtue of obedience, to write to him every week; those of Spain, Portugal, France and Germany, every month; and those who resided in the Indies, every year, in order to keep him exactly informed of all that had been effected for the salvation of souls. Besides these particular reports, they were bound to send him a statement of the general condition of their affairs, every four months. And they who knew the ardor of his zeal, were so stimulated in their efforts by this means, so solicitous to succeed in their object, that Father Andrew Frusis, in his statement of the labors performed by eleven Fathers who had been sent to Venice, commenced his letter in these terms:

“Without enumerating all the advantages which I find in obeying the orders of your Paternity, by addressing this

letter to you, there is one which I more especially feel; and it is that the Last Judgment is forcibly brought before my mind. For if, in simply rendering an account to you, without any danger to ourselves, of all our actions, we nevertheless are covered with confusion in reflecting how insufficiently we have fulfilled our obligations; if we feel thus when we are not bound to reveal our personal faults, but merely to make known all that it has pleased the Lord to effect through our ministry; we can easily comprehend what shall be our grievous humiliation in that day, when we shall behold revealed not only our good works omitted, our heavenly gifts ill employed, but all our secret faults and most hidden thoughts which now we are not bound to mention."

Yet neither this Father nor his companions were idle, for we see by their statements that, besides having four schools devoted to instruction in the Greek and Latin languages, they preached every holiday, heard innumerable confessions, of which many were general; frequently of noblemen who came for that purpose from Brescia, Vicenza, Padua, and all the surrounding cities; assisted the poor, sharing with them all the alms which they received for their own maintenance; visited the prisons; procured a refuge for unfortunate women, who repenting of their sins, abandoned their disorderly course of life; instructed Mahometan catechumens; restored apostates to the Church; converted Lutheran ministers; and accomplished all these works during the spring of 1552.

Great was the joy of St. Ignatius on receiving such letters as these. Pleasure beamed upon his countenance. Tears burst from his eyes; and frequently he would pause while reading them, and raising his eyes to Heaven, bless the Lord, who had done so much with such feeble instruments. And he would feel the same emotion who with a

spark of love for God in his heart, or of zeal in his soul, should now peruse these volumes of letters addressed to our holy Founder from every part of the known world, which we still preserve with care, and which, according to the different countries from whence they are dated, are filled with accounts of the conversion of idolaters, or of sectarians, or of sinners brought back to the fold, or of other good works effected by truly apostolical zeal and labor. Nor should I pass over in silence what occurred on one occasion, at the reception of one of these letters, written from Sicily, by Father James Lostio. From that country, Ignatius usually received accounts of a vast number of holy works performed by his children. But a week having elapsed, without any fruit having been vouchsafed to their labors, the good Father merely wrote, that this time he had nothing to write. Ignatius pressed his lips to that letter with respect; for the simple humility of the writer made it as precious to him, as if it had announced the most wonderful conversions.

He had a particular affection for those Superiors who caused him most trouble by their importunate entreaties for the assistance of zealous laborers; and he would frequently say, the Angel of Naples or of Palermo, or of Sienna, in speaking of the Rectors of these different colleges. When skilful and intelligent men were required elsewhere, he never retained them in Rome, to assist him in the labor of governing, but sent them wherever their services were most needful. At the same time, he would not permit them to be established in any colleges where their talents could not be sufficiently employed; and when judging that their services were more necessary elsewhere, he recalled them, and the Rectors of the colleges complained of the loss, he would reply: "What would you do if they were dead?" Yet it was so evident that in his manner of disposing of his

children, Ignatius was influenced by no human respect ; that he had but one object in view, the service and the glory of God ; that no one found himself justified in complaining ; and men of the most consummate prudence, and men of authority gave up their own opinions, and submitted entirely to whatever he prescribed. Thus amongst others, Cardinal Santa Croce, writing to him from Trent, that he was employing Father James Lainez in collecting the mass of errors which were to be condemned in the Council, a work for which he considered him fitter than any other man ; yet added : “ But if it is your opinion that he should leave this work unfinished, he will do so at the first word which you write to that effect.”

It was this immutable resolution of Ignatius, always to dispose of his children in the manner which he considered most conducive to the glory of God, which induced him to take that important determination of recalling the Blessed Francis Xavier from the Indies to Rome ; and had the letter bearing this order found that glorious Apostle still alive, it would soon have been acknowledged by the effects produced by his return, that his services were even more necessary in Europe than in the East, both for the public good of the Church, and for the private advantage of the Society. For St. Ignatius weighing in the balance the interests of India and those of Europe, and knowing that numerous and fervent preachers of the Gospel would never be wanting to the distant regions of the East, conceived it necessary to have even more regard to that portion of the vineyard, where was placed the very heart as it were of the Church, from whence every impression, whether good or bad, is communicated to its most remote members.

Therefore when Xavier sent his brother Anthony Fernandez from the Indies to Rome, to make known to St. Ig-

natus the extreme necessities of the people of those countries, and their great want of evangelic laborers ; Ignatius could not resolve after long and mature deliberation, to deprive Europe of such useful auxiliaries, who, however numerous, were yet not sufficient for the work. And when Peter Ribadeneira interceded warmly for Xavier, and entreated him to grant his request, Ignatius replied with a countenance expressive of deep regret: "Be assured, Peter, that we have no less want of zealous laborers to maintain the Faith amongst Christians, than they have in India, to plant the standard of the Cross amongst idolaters."

Whilst Ignatius thus required from his children works worthy of their vocation and of his zeal, he was not less careful in fitting them for that vocation, by inciting them to the practice of those virtues necessary for rendering them, by the grace of God, instruments worthy of being employed for His glory. And as he could not be present in all places to fill the office of their guide and director, he in some measure supplied this deficiency by the letters which he addressed them, breathing a spirit of such ardent charity that they could not fail to kindle the same spirit in the hearts of those who received them. Of one of these addressed to the College of Coimbra, Father Martin Santa Croce, writing to a friend in Rome, speaks in these terms : "We have received a letter from Father Ignatius, equally expected and desired. It would be impossible to describe the consolation which it has brought to us all, and the incitement which every individual has found in it, to labor assiduously, and to make progress both in his literary studies and in his own spiritual perfection. It is not enough for us to have read it once. We have petitioned to have it re-read in public every week ; and besides this, many of us have copied it, that we may have it always before our eyes ;

and we have reason to do so, since it removes all the obstacles which hindered our progress in the path of virtue, and wonderfully encourages and consoles us." In the same way, we find Father Luis Mendoza writing to the holy Father, upon the receipt of a similar letter, that he had received more pleasure from it, than if his Holiness had sent him a Cardinal's hat from Rome.

The letter of which Father Santa Croce speaks, and which Ignatius addressed to the College of Coimbra, is as follows: "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and His eternal love be with you all, and keep you for ever, Amen. I receive constant accounts of you from Simon and Santa Croce, and God our Lord, the author of all good, knows what consolation, what joy I feel, in observing how by the strength imparted to you by His Divine Majesty, you daily increase in learning and in virtue, the report of which, reaching us here, greatly encourages and edifies our brethren. And if every one is bound to rejoice at all that contributes to the glory of God, and to the welfare of those who have been redeemed by the precious blood of His only begotten Son, how much more must I rejoice, who have you all in my heart, and who feel for each one of you so tender an affection. For ever blessed and praised be God Our Creator and Jesus Our Redeemer, from whose infinite liberality alone, we have received every good and every grace. I conjure Him to pour upon you every day more abundantly the gifts of His mercy, that so all the good which He has begun to operate within your souls, may daily be increased and promoted. And He will do so; for of this I am assured by the infinite goodness with which He communicates His precious gifts, and by that eternal love, ever more ready to grant us the grace of holiness, than we are to desire it. Otherwise His co-eternal Son would never ex-

hort us to undertake that which we could never accomplish, unless aided by His all-powerful arm, when He says to us, *Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is perfect.* Be then assured that nothing will be wanting to us on His part, so long as He finds on ours that humility which will make us worthy of His gifts, and desirous of possessing them; together with promptness in co-operating diligently with the assistance of His grace. And for this reason do I still urge you forward, even whilst I see that you are walking in the ways of God.

“For truly I may say to you, that if you give forth fruit equal to the hopes entertained of you in this country, and in many others; if the end corresponds with such noble beginnings, and your works equal your obligations, no success, whether in literature or in spiritual perfection, will be sufficient, which is not eminent and extraordinary. Consider well your vocation, and you will be convinced that those things which in other men might not be reckoned inconsiderable, would be very little in you. For God has not only called you out of darkness into His admirable light, as He has done to all other believers, but in order that you might preserve more securely your purity of heart, and keep more strong and unshaken your love and devotion to His divine service, He has mercifully withdrawn you from the stormy sea of the world, has sheltered you from those storms which are raised by the desire of riches, of honors, and of pleasures, as well as by the fear of losing them, when we have them in our possession. And, moreover, in order that your mind might be totally disengaged from all these low and earthly matters, in order that your affections might not be divided and scattered about, but might all be concentrated upon the attainment of the one and only object for which you were created; which is the honor and glory of God, and

the salvation of your neighbor ; although, indeed, this is the duty of every Christian, yet the Divine Majesty has chosen you more especially for this end, has placed you in this Institute, in which you will be guided not only by those general directions for the fulfilment of your duty which are common to all men, but will have the particular assistance of the Exercises which are practised there ; and where you are taught to offer up by the application of all your powers, a continual sacrifice of yourselves for the glory of God, and the welfare of your neighbor ; not only by means of good wishes, prayer, and example, but by those external and active methods which Divine Providence has placed within our reach, and by which man is enabled to assist his fellow-man.

“ Hence you may infer how noble and how lofty is the state of life which you have embraced ; for neither amongst men nor angels can there be a higher occupation than that of glorifying God in himself, and in His creatures, by bringing them into His service. Consider, then, what your vocation is, and return thanks to God for so inestimable a gift. Entreat Him to grant you the courage and strength necessary for accomplishing so lofty a destiny. For the love of Jesus Christ, and following the example of St. Paul, fix your eyes upon the space which you have yet to traverse in the path of virtue ; and look upon negligence, idleness, and tepidity, as the greatest enemies of your soul, which hold you back, and enfeeble your desire of increasing in learning and piety. Imitate, not the weak and the cowardly, but the man of a fervent and courageous heart. Blush at allowing yourselves to be surpassed by the children of the world, more ardent in the pursuit of passing earthly advantages, than you are in gaining the treasures of Eternity. Be confounded with shame when you behold them rushing towards death with

greater ardor than you to life eternal. Think how miserable you must be, if you show less fidelity in the service of the King of Heaven, than a courtier in that of an earthly prince; or of a soldier for the mere fumes of glory, or in hopes of obtaining his share of the miserable spoils of victory, should combat against the enemy with greater courage than you display in conquering the demon, the world, and yourselves, with the certain prospect of gaining eternal glory and an immortal crown.

“I conjure you, then, by the love which you bear to Our Lord Jesus Christ, be neither languid nor remiss, for ‘*arcum frangit intensio animum remissio* ;’ ‘tension destroys the bow, relaxation the mind ;’ whilst the divine writings teach us that ‘the soul of them that work shall be made fat.’* Redouble your holy fervor, both in the study of spiritual perfection, and in that of the sciences ; and rest assured that in both, one generous effort is worth a thousand resolutions ; and all that an indolent man slowly acquires in many years, the fervent spirit shall obtain in a very short space of time, and with comparative ease. All the difference which we remark in literary progress, between the studious and the indolent man, is not less observable in the acquirement of virtue, and in conquering the weakness of human nature. The fervent man, laboring from the outset to subjugate himself, and to destroy his self-love, uproots along with it all his disorderly passions ; and along with them delivers himself from all the troubles and remorse which follow in their train. In their place, he sows the seeds of all those virtuous habits, which easily take root in his soul, bringing forth joy and gladness, and preparing him for the enjoyment of those holy delights with which

* Prov. 13.

God consoles His elect, giving *to the conquerors a hidden manna*.

“Lukewarmness, on the contrary, leads to sorrow and discontent; because it neglects to destroy the germs whence proceed this bitter discontent and sorrow, the fruit of self-love, the most powerful obstacle to divine consolations. Go, then, with joyous fervor to your pious exercises; you will experience the salutary effect of your holy ardor in the perfection of your souls, and you will also enjoy the consolations of this present life. If afterwards you will consider the reward of eternal life which is promised you, and which we ought ever to keep in view, you will easily acknowledge with St. Paul, *that the sufferings of this time are not worthy to be compared with the glory to come, that shall be revealed in us*;* since, *that which is at present momentary and light of our tribulations, worketh for us above measure exceedingly an eternal weight of glory*.†

“And if this is promised to every Christian who honors and serves God as he ought, see from this argument how brilliant is the crown which awaits you, if you, fulfil the object of your Institute, which not only leads you in the path of your own salvation, but obliges you to guide your brethren to the knowledge and love of God, so that you may be of the number of those concerning whom it is said in the Scriptures, *they that instruct many to justice, shall shine like the stars to all eternity*.‡

“This must be applicable to those who labor with the greatest ardor to fit themselves first for carrying the armor of salvation, and then for making use of it; for it is not sufficient for us to embrace a holy state of life, if our works do not correspond with it. Otherwise it is to us that Jeremiah speaks, when he says, *Cursed be he that doth the*

* Rom. 8. † 2. Cor. 4. ‡ Dan. 12.

*work of the Lord deceitfully.** Above all things I desire that you may excite yourselves to the pure love of Christ Jesus, to a desire for His glory, and for the welfare of the souls which He has so dearly ransomed; and what ought to animate you more to this than the special title which you bear of soldiers of His militia, in our Society? I say special, because there are many other titles, and powerful motives to induce you to labor in His service.

“His pay consists in all those natural gifts which He has bestowed upon you, and which make you what you are; in those spiritual gifts of grace with which He has so liberally provided and enriched you, however rebellious you may have been towards him; in that incomparable and eternal felicity which He has faithfully promised you; which He holds in readiness for you; in the treasures of His own felicity wherewith He will enrich you; so that participating in His divine perfections, you will be through His infinite charity, what He is through His own essence and nature. Finally he bestows on you the whole universe, with all that it comprehends of corporal or spiritual beings; since he has obliged not only all the creatures under Heaven to serve you, but even the celestial intelligences, the angelic hierarchy, noble and sublime as they are; for as St. Paul says, *Are they not all ministering spirits, sent to minister for them, who shall receive the inheritance of salvation?* And as if all this were little or nothing, He has given us Himself, making Himself our Brother according to the flesh, our ransom upon the Cross, our food in the Divine Eucharist, our guide and support through the dangers of our pilgrimage. Ah! how cowardly and how base must that soldier be, who is not satisfied with these rewards, who is not encouraged by them to labor in the service and for the honor

* Jerem. 48.

of so generous and noble a Sovereign; who is not excited to undertakings worthy of His love, who as it were forgot Himself in the excess of the love He bore us; who renounced His own most perfect felicity, that we might participate in it; who bore our sins and infirmities, that we might be relieved from their burthen; who delivered himself up that we might be redeemed; submitted to infamy that we might be glorified; to poverty, that we might be enriched; to a cruel and dishonorable death, that we might enjoy a life of happiness through all eternity!

“Ungrateful beyond all expression, and harder than a rock must be that heart, which in return for all these benefits, does not feel its obligation to sacrifice every thing for the service and glory of its Redeemer. But if you indeed feel this obligation, if your heart is truly inflamed with love and gratitude to Him, let it be known by your works. Seek for those places where His Divine Majesty is honored, where His infinite grandeur is revered; where His goodness and long-suffering are known; where His most holy will is obeyed; or rather behold with extreme grief, in how many countries His sacred name is unknown, or despised, or blasphemed; the holy doctrine of the Eternal Word rejected; His example forgotten; in how many regions His blood has been as it were shed in vain, so few are the souls who have profited by it. Behold your brethren, images of the most Holy Trinity, created to enjoy His glory, temples of the Holy Spirit, members of Jesus Christ, ransomed by so much opprobrium, pain and blood; behold, and see in what a deep abyss of misery they are plunged, in what gross darkness of ignorance, in what fierce tempests of vain desires, of vain fears, and of dangerous passions; combated by so many enemies visible and invisible; always exposed to lose, not a mere temporal life or a heap of perishable riches, but

life eternal, happiness immortal; and to fall into the intolerable misery of never-ending torture. Then judge what your obligations are; to restore so far as lies in your power the honor of Jesus Christ Our Redeemer; to aid and serve those souls which are in danger of destruction; to become worthy instruments of the divine grace, and never to lose sight of the sublime object of your vocation.

“ All that I have hitherto said, to awaken those who sleep, to urge on those who linger by the way, must not drive you to the opposite extreme of indiscreet fervor. God requires *your reasonable service*, as St. Paul says; and before him in Leviticus we read; *In all thy oblations thou shalt offer salt*. It is our positive duty to attend to this, for the Enemy has no surer artifice for extinguishing true charity in the hearts of the servants of God, than by leading them to reject all rational rules of conduct in spiritual things, and to walk inconsiderately and with too great freedom.

“ By not proceeding with moderation, good is converted into evil, and virtue into vice; whilst unforeseen disorders arise, totally contrary to the intention of those who follow this mistaken path. In the first place, they cannot labor long in the service of God; they are like horses which at the end of each day's journey, having been driven beyond their strength, fail before the journey is ended. Instead of serving others, these persons soon require service themselves. In the second place, that which is too hastily acquired, is apt to be of short duration; for as the Scripture says, *Substance got in haste shall be diminished*; and *he that is hasty with his feet, shall stumble*; moreover, he falls most heavily, who falls from the greatest height.

“ Observe also, that instead of crucifying the old man, we crucify the new; enervating ourselves, rendering ourselves impotent in the exercise of virtue; according to the

words of St. Bernard, who says that by these immoderate excesses, 'we deprive the body of its strength, the soul of its feelings, our neighbor of a good example, and God of the honor which is His due.' 'We destroy,' he adds, 'the temple of the living God, and we are injurious to our neighbor, because the fall of one alarms others, cools their spiritual energy, and is often the cause of great scandal. Thus the same Saint calls such persons disturbers of unity, and enemies of peace. They are besides guilty of pride, in preferring their own judgment to that of others; or at least they usurp what does not belong to them, by becoming the arbiters of their own conduct, which they ought to submit to the orders of their Superior.'

"Another inconvenience results from this mode of action, which is, that they are so encumbered with arms, that they cannot make use of any; but are like David embarrassed with the armor of Saul, or like an impetuous courser, whose rider makes use of the spur, and forgets the curb.

"It is therefore necessary to be guided by discretion, in order that the exercises of virtue may be directed between the two opposite extremes: For as St. Bernard justly observes: 'We must not always trust a good will, we must check and rule it, especially in a beginner. He who wishes to do good to others, must not begin by doing evil to himself; and if he finds the exact point of discretion difficult to discern, he has one sure path, that of obedience, through which he will always be advised and directed aright.' If after all I have said, there are still some who obstinately insist upon being their own guides, let them remember these words of Scripture; *For obedience is better than sacrifices*: and again: *Because it is like the sin of witchcraft to rebel; and like the crime of idolatry to refuse to obey.* Let obe-

dience then be your guide, and lead you in the middle path between coldness and immoderate fervor.

“ If during the course of your studies you feel a strong desire for mortification, employ it in subduing your will, and in subjecting your own judgment to obedience, instead of weakening and enervating your body. Nevertheless, I would not have you believe that I condemn certain exterior mortifications, upon which I have been consulted. On the contrary, I approve of them, for I know that the Saints themselves practised these holy follies, to the great profit of their souls ; and that they are of no small assistance in conquering ourselves, or in obtaining an increase of grace, especially when at the threshold of a spiritual life. Yet I repeat, that during the course of studies, when self-love has already been vanquished by the aid of divine grace, I consider it preferable to be guided in this by the moderation prescribed by obedience, the virtue which I most especially recommend to you, because it includes all the others.

“ Remember the divine precept of Our Lord, *These things I command you, that you love one another.* Not only ought you to love each other amongst yourselves, but this same love and charity must be extended to all men, kindling within your hearts an ardent desire for their salvation, and leading you to reflect what their souls cost Our Lord Jesus Christ.

“ And do not believe yourselves useless to your neighbor, during those years consecrated to study ; for whilst your own souls are gradually increasing in virtue, you may, according to the precepts of charity, co-operate in many ways to the glory of God and the spiritual welfare of your neighbor, both by your labor and by the intention which directs it, which is truly to be useful to others, whenever the proper time arrives. For no one can say that soldiers who are

busied in collecting their arms and preparing ammunition for the day of battle, are not working in the service of their prince ; and even should death surprise you, before you have yet outwardly and directly contributed to the welfare of your fellow-men, your reward will be no less certain, since you have been occupied in making preparations for serving God.

“ Every day it is well for you to offer up this preparation to God, that he may bring forth the fruits of your labor in due season ; and if it pleases His Divine Majesty to accept it, you will not have done less for the salvation of souls, than if you had been occupied in preaching, or in the administration of the Sacraments.

“ The second manner of serving your neighbor is to labor for your own progress in virtue and sanctity ; for the holier you yourselves are, the greater will be your influence in rendering others so. God works in spiritual things as in the order of nature ; where philosophy and experience show that in the formation of animals, besides the concurrence of universal causes, an immediate agent of the same species is necessary, which communicates its form to the new being. Thus the Divine Wisdom employs an agent, as the instrument or cause of transmitting to the souls of others, humility, prudence, charity, and all other virtues ; and that agent must himself be humble, prudent, charitable, and virtuous.

“ A third method of rendering yourselves useful to others, is by the example of your good conduct, and this, by the grace of God, edifies, as I have already told you, not only this kingdom, but all those where its fame is spread. And I trust in the Author of all good, that He will keep you in this path of virtue, and will so multiply His divine graces within you, that you may ultimately attain perfection.

Finally, you may also serve your neighbor by the holy ardor of your desires, which will supply whatever you are prevented from accomplishing, owing to the arduous nature of your studies. And do not believe that this method is unfruitful. But upon this point, as upon all others, men fully capable of instructing you, are never wanting. And indeed I might have abstained from writing to you, had I not rather wished to accede to your request of having a letter from me, than endeavored to supply any spiritual wants on your part. I have no more to add, unless it be to pray God Our Creator and Our Redeemer, that as He has been pleased to call you to Himself, and to give you the will and the power of employing yourselves in His service, so He may deign to preserve these His gifts in your hearts, that you may increase and persevere in His service, for His glory and for the good of His Church. Entirely yours in the Lord.

“IGNATIUS.

“*Rome, May 7th, 1547.*”

CHAPTER V.

Establishments founded by St. Ignatius for the good of souls, especially in Rome—
House of Jewish catechumens—Foundation of a house of refuge for penitent women—Establishment of a German college—Courage and constancy of St. Ignatius in all his undertakings—Other good works.

IN what I have already written, sufficient proof has been given of the zeal which burned within the heart of Ignatius for the salvation of his fellow-men; but the most public and most positive proof of that zeal will exist so long as the Order which he instituted, shall endure. Yet, had he done nothing through the ministration of others, his own personal works alone would have sufficed to merit all those praises which we bestow upon his charity, and apostolic zeal. We may recollect that hardly had the first spark of divine love been kindled within his heart, before he wished to transmit the flame to the hearts of others, by preaching the Faith to the Infidels of the Holy Land. We remember his labors in Manresa, Barcelona, Alcalà, Salamanca and Paris, for reforming the habits of the people; for leading back heretics to the true faith, monks and ecclesiastics to the observance of strict discipline, students to the frequent receiving of the sacraments, and men of the world to a religious life. We have seen him establishing confraternities, putting a stop to gambling-houses, to the use of oaths in conversation, and converting women of disorderly conduct. We have seen him inventing strange methods of leading sinners from the path

of vice ; at one time plunging into frozen water to intercept their passage, in another joining in games which he knew nothing of ; or relating with bitter tears the faults of his worldly life, that by his grief his hearers might learn to weep for their hitherto unrepented crimes.

And we have also witnessed the unworthy treatment which he met with and the extreme dangers to which his zeal exposed him ; from mariners who would have abandoned him upon a desert shore ; from wicked men who struck and wounded him, leaving him for dead ; from friends of the converts of whom some attempted to murder him, and others to drive him from the city ; from professors of the Academy, who prepared ignominious punishments for him ; from zealous though mistaken men, who accused him as a heretic, threw him into prison as a sorcerer, or condemned him to silence as an ignorant teacher. Yet this continual flood of persecution, never extinguished one spark of charity within his heart.

When he had at length fixed his residence in Rome, he undertook new and important works, of which the results were most successful. At first he employed himself in the conversion of the Jews, of whom he baptized forty in one year ; and so well instructed were these converts in the law of Jesus Christ, and in the practice of holiness, that after being good disciples, they became excellent masters, and were employed by Ignatius in leading their companions to the knowledge of the true Faith. He assembled them in his house, and there provided for them, by means of those alms which God bestowed on him through the piety of the faithful. But when their numbers increased so greatly, that the house could no longer contain them, Ignatius undertook to procure another which should exclusively belong to his Jewish converts ; and notwithstanding the numerous ob-

stacles which opposed his design, it pleased the Lord to reward the labor of His servant; so that he was at length enabled to surmount all these difficulties, and to obtain sufficient aid for putting his project in execution.

He afterwards solicited from the Sovereign Pontiff, Paul III., that the new Jewish converts should not, as was formerly the case, when they abandoned their religion lose their property, which by breaking through the powerful ties of interest that bound them to their sect, had prevented many of their number from listening to the call of grace, and asking to be baptized. He obtained, moreover, that those children who became Christians against the will of their Jewish fathers, should nevertheless inherit whatever portion would have been theirs, had they continued in the Jewish persuasion; and that those goods, suspected of having been obtained by usury, and of which the Church may dispose for pious purposes, should be theirs.

This work, both by the good effects which it then produced, as well as by its duration (for it is still supported, and so richly endowed as to be one of the most important in Rome), was as odious to the Enemy of man as it was agreeable in the eyes of God. Seeing, therefore, that the consistency and zeal of Ignatius could not be conquered, the demon resolved to avenge himself upon the work, after its success appeared certain; and thus it was that Ignatius rarely undertook any thing for the service and glory of God, without incurring some great personal risk, or some attack upon his honor, still more cruel. His whole life was filled with trials of this nature.

The care of the catechumens had been intrusted to a priest, who had obtained this office through a refinement of hypocrisy. His appearance was that of a holy and devout man, but his heart was corrupt, and filled with vice; and

especially with envy and ambition, which first moved him to hate Ignatius with an intense hatred. Seeing that the Saint differed with him in his views concerning the direction of those souls whom he had converted to Christianity, the holy reputation of Ignatius became intolerable to him, and he could find no other method of raising himself above him, than by endeavoring to spread the belief that Ignatius was a man sunk in the very depths of iniquity. He began by industriously disseminating the report, that Ignatius and his companions were nothing but disguised heretics, who revealed the secrets of the confessionals. Other and more odious calumnies were spread abroad by this degraded priest; and he went the length of saying, that were justice done, Ignatius and his companions should be led to the stake, and burned alive.

But neither St. Ignatius nor his friends found it necessary to say one word in their defence; since it pleased the Lord to take justice into His own hands; for while this unworthy priest was loading innocent men with the guilt of false and odious crimes, his own were suddenly discovered. Delivered over to the hands of justice, accused, convicted, and himself publicly avowing his crimes, he was condemned by judicial sentence, to be suspended for ever from his ecclesiastical office, and to pass the remainder of his life within the walls of a prison.

Besides taking charge of these catechumens, Ignatius undertook to procure an asylum for foundlings, and to provide for their subsistence. These children had hitherto formed a perpetual nursery for the production of thieves and abandoned women; besides the disorders which must necessarily arise amongst those who have no roof to shelter, and no work to occupy them. He succeeded in procuring two houses for these poor children, known as the orphan asylums,

one for boys and the other for girls ; where they might be securely cared for and well brought up, according to their capacity, to some useful trade, and thus enabled to obtain their livelihood, and become useful members of society.

He took even greater care for preserving the virtue of young girls who, poor and honest, are exposed to so many temptations, and frequently driven by misery to vice and degradation. For them he founded the monastery of St. Catharine, and traced out the rule of life which is observed there to this day. These women never leave their convent, excepting to be married, when they have not taken the veil.

In carrying these designs into execution, Ignatius availed himself of the assistance of many pious persons, who were excited by the example of his charity as well as by his habitual conversation, to a great desire for promoting the public good. Amongst these we may especially mention James de Crescenzi, a noble Roman of distinguished family, Lorenzo de Castello, and Francis Vannucci, chief Almoner of Paul III. With them St. Ignatius conferred upon his projects, discussed the steps necessary to be taken, the alms that might be hoped for ; deliberated as to which of the Cardinals they should choose for the protector of the work, and of how many members the association to whose support and exertions it would be confided, it should be composed. All these preliminaries being decided, Ignatius energetically took the work in hand. In two cases which we are about to relate, mere human wisdom could never have sufficed to surmount the obstacles which arose on all sides to oppose both the commencement and the continuation of the enterprises in question : one was the foundation of the house called St. Martha's ; the other that of a college of Germans, both well calculated to promote the service and glory of God.

One of the constant cares of St. Ignatius was to induce

women of abandoned character to desist from their evil courses, and to lead them by penitence to the feet of Christ. In this pious object he spared no trouble, and notwithstanding his increasing infirmities, and the affairs with which he was overwhelmed as General of the Order, he would go himself to seek for them, withdraw them from their haunts of infamy, and lead them through the streets of Rome, to a place of safety. Some one having represented to him that he gave himself useless trouble, and that these women, although they might apparently reform, would fall back upon their former life; "But if," replied he, "by means not only of the trouble which I have taken, but of that which I shall take to the end of my life, I shall have been the means of leading one of these women to repentance, I shall consider my time as having been well spent, and myself as more than rewarded. Many of the noble matrons of the city assisted him in this work, and received these unfortunate women into their houses. Amongst these ladies, no one was more zealous than Doña Leonora Osoria, the wife of John de Vega, then ambassador from Charles V. to the Holy See. But at length, through the blessing of God upon their labors, the number of penitents increased so rapidly, that there was no longer sufficient room to lodge them. The convent of St. Magdalene did not receive married women, nor admit any but those who wished to take the veil; and as all had not this vocation, it was necessary to search for an asylum large enough to receive them. Ignatius addressed himself to those persons who appeared most likely to aid him in this difficulty, but the affair seemed to present too many obstacles; the expense was too great, and though his friends did not absolutely refuse, yet no one would step forward to assist in the undertaking. Ignatius then understood that God wished the burden to

fall entirely upon him, and he began the work with a small sum, which it pleased Heaven to send him unexpectedly. One day, as some workmen were digging in the square in front of our church, where they were engaged in making certain necessary alterations in the building, they found some statues, relics of the ancient ruins of Rome. These being sold by Ignatius, brought him a sum of one hundred ducats. With this he bought part of the ground for the convent; and the piety of some other persons being thus awakened, they agreed to assist him as far as their means permitted. As for him, he forgot his own necessities and those of his children, and generously added all that he possessed.

This holy asylum was opened on the 16th of February, 1542, and its administration confided to an association of pious persons called the Confraternity of our Lady of Grace (*Santa Maria della Grazia*). The keys of the establishment were delivered to the charge of three noble and venerable patrons. According to the rule of the house, no married woman could leave its precincts, except to return to her husband; and no unmarried person, unless to become a nun, or for some sure and permanent state. Their special protector was Cardinal Carpi, who was also that of the Society; and their confessor was Father James Eguia, that holy man, of whom we have already spoken. Through the assistance of this venerable director, who never left the establishment, and of St. Ignatius himself, so great became the spiritual fervor of the penitents, that many preachers in the city, zealous for the honor of God and the conversion of sinners, spoke even from the pulpit of the admirable effects produced by this work; and thus contributed in no small degree to its increase. In a few years the number of women who had been received into the house, and still remained

there, amounted to three hundred. At length many virtuous and honorable girls desired to join them, and so great a number presented themselves for admission; that in 1546 they alone were sufficient to form a new convent, which still exists, and where the rules are preserved in all their first strictness.

But the spirit of darkness could not behold without fury, so many souls escaping from his snares, owing to the success with which this pious work was crowned; and in order to arrest its progress, he made use of various corrupt and shameless men, from whose power these unfortunate women had, through the zeal of St. Ignatius, been delivered. After having vainly employed every method imaginable for seducing them from their asylum, they had recourse to insults; and every evening assembled before the house, addressing the inmates in gross and indecent language, and throwing stones at the windows, accompanied by frightful cries and shouting. These outrages they continued for several months; until finding that they could not succeed in terrifying the poor women, or in forcing St. Ignatius to withdraw his protection from them, they took another plan of revenging themselves, and spread abroad the most odious calumnies against him and the whole Society. All Rome resounded with these abominable accusations, which cannot be repeated without an outrage on propriety; and although the public did not give them credence, yet these innocent men were insulted by hearing them repeated wherever they appeared. The calumniators carried their boldness so far as to address memorials to the Holy Father, in which, cloaking their base motives under a pretext of zeal for the authority of the Pontiff, they accused Ignatius of usurping his power, of erecting monasteries, of giving them rules, and of threatening to banish all married women of bad conduct,

if they did not take refuge in his house. They endeavored, besides, to throw the most odious coloring over the motives of Ignatius. On this occasion, however, they found themselves baffled; for the Sovereign Pontiff was thoroughly aware of the nature of the establishment, and of the holy motives which actuated its founder.

But at the request of Ignatius, the whole matter was carried before a court of justice. The malignity of the calumnies was judicially proved, and the accusers were condemned to disavow them publicly.

The second work of which I spoke was the foundation of the Germanic College. I shall here merely make mention of the successful manner in which Ignatius carried through this work, but shall afterwards give a more detailed account of it.

The first idea of such an institution occurred to Cardinal Morone, who having resided for many years in Germany as Nuncio, had seen the necessitous condition of that country, abandoned to the heresy of Luther, chiefly through the ignorance and immorality of the clergy. It seemed to him, that were a seminary to be established in Rome, where the select youth of Germany might be instructed both in profane learning and religion, it would be a work of great utility to that country; since these young men, on their return to Germany, would become the restorers and supporters of the faith and of the authority of the Holy See, now almost entirely disregarded. He therefore requested the advice and assistance of St. Ignatius, who not only gave his entire approval to the plan, but cheerfully offered his own services and those of the fathers of the Society towards its accomplishment. Cardinal Morone and his colleague, Cardinal Santa Croce, submitted the proposal to Julius III., and received, together with his full consent, abundant assistance

for undertaking this holy work. The bulls were expedited; and Ignatius charged with the care of assembling the young Germans, and also several of the Flemish youth, and of prescribing the statutes and rule of life which they were to adopt.

In a short time twenty-four chosen young men were collected, to whom the Saint gave the house near ours, in order to facilitate their studies; and on the day of the Feast of the Apostles Sts. Simon and Jude, in the year 1552, the sermon being preached by Father Peter Ribadeneira in explanation and praise of the work, in the church of St. Eustace, and in the presence of many cardinals, the Germanic College was instituted.

We may easily believe how displeasing such an institution must have been to the German sectarians; and a Lutheran, named Martin Chemnitz, publicly declared that this alone rendered the Society a scourge for Germany, and the ruin of the evangelic reform. But this great work was soon upon the verge of its overthrow; for Julius III. having been called to a happier state, after the very short pontificate of Marcellus II., was succeeded by Paul IV., who would no longer continue the support which his predecessor had bestowed upon the college. Besides this, his wars with the kingdom of Naples, the scarcity of provisions which followed, together with the extreme dearness of living, obliged many of the cardinals who had contributed largely to its maintenance, to withdraw their assistance.

Yet St. Ignatius did not lose courage; and well aware that were the German College to fall, it would in all probability never rise again, he distributed several of the students through our colleges in different places; retained others with himself in Rome, and maintained them at his own expense. The times being very bad, he was obliged, in

order to provide for them, to borrow money at exorbitant interest; always encouraging the Father purveyor of the house, by assuring him with prophetic earnestness, that they would soon be freed from all their debts by the assistance of God; and that this poor and reduced college would become very numerous, and its means of subsistence very abundant. The magnificent liberality of Gregory XIII. accomplished this prediction; he generously endowed this as well as many other colleges. Ignatius had so firm a faith in the divine assistance, that when advised by the Cardinal of Augsbourg, to renounce that enterprise, on account of the calamitous times, he replied: "Let those who will renounce it give it up to me. I alone will support it, were it necessary to sell myself in order to do so."

Here I would remark one particular merit in St. Ignatius, which caused him to succeed in every work which he considered it his duty to undertake for the service of God; I mean that invincible constancy in surmounting all the obstacles which he met in his path, and which far from weakening his hopes or his courage, seemed to strengthen them. Three motives rendered his determinations inflexible. First, before taking a resolution, he reflected calmly, and, still more, dispassionately. Then, after having prayed long and fervently, he made a new and thorough examination of the affair, submitting it to the light of the Divine Spirit. Finally he submitted it to the consideration and even to the judgment of his council.

In the preceding book we have seen an example of this firmness, when the Cardinal's hat was offered to Father Francis Borgia. Had the whole world knelt before him, he would never have given his free consent to the admission of this dignity into the Company. And yet, had the Holy Father commanded it to be so, he would, as he himself re-

marked, have preserved the same tranquillity of mind as if they had acted in concert in the matter. Cardinal Carpi was so well aware of the invincible firmness of Ignatius, that he would say to those who endeavored to make him alter his resolution, "He has driven in the nail; nothing can extract it."

It was the advice of Julius III., even to powerful princes, not to oppose Ignatius in those things which the service of God required of him. On one occasion he passed fourteen consecutive hours with imperturbable patience, in the antechamber of a Cardinal, waiting for an audience. On another, being about to set off on a journey to Alvito, in the kingdom of Naples, the rain falling in torrents, without intermission; Father Polanco, who accompanied him, fearing lest Ignatius, whose health was very feeble, might suffer from the inclemency of the weather, earnestly entreated him to delay his departure till the following day, when the journey would probably be less laborious. "For thirty years," said Ignatius, "no incident has ever caused me to delay in what I have believed to be my duty for the service of God;" and so, without paying any attention to the wind or the rain, he set forth. Nor were these the only proofs of zeal manifested by Ignatius for the salvation of souls. No more efficacious means were ever employed by him for the welfare of men, than those unceasing and fervent prayers, which, with tears of emotion, he offered up to the Divine Majesty, for the Sovereign Pontiff; for the Church Universal; for the conversion of idolaters and heretics; and for all the princes of Christendom, whose wise government and good example might so greatly contribute to the glory of God. If any pressing necessity, whether for the public welfare, or for the salvation of a sinner, more particularly excited his zeal, he would pass the greater part of the night in prayer, and enjoin

his children to unite their supplications to his. He did the same at the election of a new Pontiff, at the accession of a temporal prince to the throne, during the persecutions which arose against the Church; or to obtain the conversion of certain public sinners.

Another fruit of his zeal was the renewal of the laws against duelling by the king of Portugal, at his request, and also the re-establishment of religious discipline in various monasteries of Catalonia, Sicily, and Italy, which had been intrusted to his care. He also assisted in establishing a court of inquiry, composed of six Cardinals, whose object was to prevent the new heresies from penetrating into Italy. He brought about a reconciliation between the Pope and the king of Portugal; he concerted with John de Vega to persuade the Emperor Charles V. to fit out a fleet against the Turks; he solicited from Paul III. the re-establishment of an ancient law of Innocent III., which had fallen into disuse, by which all physicians were forbidden, under heavy penalties, to continue their visits to the sick, unless they endeavored to heal their souls as well as their bodies, by the sacrament of penance. In order that the public should never be deprived of the assistance of the Fathers of the Society when it was needful, Ignatius ordered the porter, whenever any one came to request spiritual aid for a sick man, to warn them by the sound of the bell, on hearing which all the priests, the Superior included, were enjoined to hasten to the gate in their cloaks, ready to repair wherever their services were required. As the head of a community of men, devoted to the service of God, ought to encourage them even more by his example than by his advice or orders, Ignatius was always the first to fulfil these charitable duties; and so forgot his own bodily infirmities, that it was a common saying amongst the Fathers, that Ignatius always appeared to

enjoy the best health when he had most to do. And in order that his functions as General of the Order might not interfere with the duties which he owed to his neighbor, he disposed his time so as to devote the whole day to those charitable employments, and frequently watched six or seven hours of the night in providing for the necessities of his flock.

St. Ignatius had a particular gift in the art with which he attracted the souls of men to God, in familiar conversation; insomuch that hardly any one ever left him, after having conversed with him for some time, without feeling an extraordinary change in his heart. He considered this as one of the best methods which could be employed by the Society, provided it was used with due circumspection; otherwise, said he, such conversations might be very dangerous, and the men of the world might injure the Religious, instead of being converted by him to the truth. He would frequently point out the manner in which this exercise should be conducted. One who lived with him on terms of intimate friendship writes as follows: "The heart of our Father Ignatius glows with the most tender charity towards those whom he wishes to lead back to God. However depraved they may be, he finds something to love in them. He loves the faith which still may linger within them, or at least the virtues which they formerly possessed; and above all, he loves in them the holy image of God who created them, and the blood of Jesus Christ shed to redeem them from the slavery of the flesh, and the tyranny of the devil. He studies their natural dispositions; endeavors to discover whether they are of a slow or ardent temperament, of a sad or joyous nature; how they have lived formerly, how they now live;—and all this in order to ascertain how he may be most serviceable to them." Ignatius did not enter into

spiritual conversations with worldly men, immediately upon making their acquaintance ; which would have been presenting to the patient a bitter draught unsweetened ; he led them on gradually, beginning by conversing upon those matters which more especially interested them. To the soldier he discoursed of war ; of traffic to the merchant ; of politics to statesmen. Then he raised the discourse to higher themes, and told them of other merchandise, of other combats, of another species of government ; that is, of gaining heaven, of conquering our passions, and of governing our own souls with wisdom.

The external appearance and manners of St. Ignatius were singularly favorable to his views ; and Father Gonzales affirms, that he had never met with any man whose manners were at once more noble and more agreeable, than his ; and at the same time more suitable to a Religious and a Saint. Father Polanco could not observe without admiration how equally beloved Ignatius was by men of the most opposite characters ; and even by those of different nations, whose sovereigns were at war with his monarch, and who might therefore have regarded him with unfriendly eyes.

Whilst the Emperor and the King of France were engaged in mutual warfare, Ignatius gave precisely the same reception to the ambassadors and prelates of both nations ; nor was this the effect of worldly prudence, for that quality does not extend so far ; his only object was to render himself spiritually useful to them, and to make them agreeable to God.

Towards sinners his compassion and tenderness were unlimited ; like a mother who reserves the choicest treasures of her affection for her ailing child, and serves and caresses him a thousand times more than when he was in health. This charitable disposition was so well known, that a brother

of the Blessed Francis Borgia, writing to Ignatius to request his friendship, "I know," said he, "that I have no merits which can render me worthy of it. My only titles to your friendship are that I am the brother of Father Francis, and a great sinner. I know not which of these two motives gives me the greatest hopes of inducing you to love me."

Father Lainez had so pure and delicate a conscience, that the very shadow of a fault was hateful to him. But all were not like him; and sometimes, on observing the slightest and most excusable transgressions, his zeal took the alarm, and he complained of it to St. Ignatius. But the Saint reproved him seriously for this excess of severity, telling him that the hatred which we conceive for the faults of others is apt to engender in the soul a certain bitterness and dislike towards those who have fallen into them; and that certain dispositions may lead us rather to abhor the sinner, than to find pleasure in leading him back to virtue by charity and gentleness.

In his private relations with individuals, when Ignatius had succeeded in leading the conversation upon spiritual matters he abandoned himself entirely to the ardor of his charity, and the fervor of his heart glowed upon his countenance. While he spoke, it seemed as if the flame which burned within his heart communicated itself to that of his hearer; and it is certain that many, after leaving him, hastened to seek a confessor, through whose ministration they might reconcile themselves to God. The same thing took place when he spoke in public, whether in the Square of the Altieri, or near the old Exchange, the places where he usually delivered his discourses. At first he was insulted by the children, who derided him, and pelted him with mud; but as he went on, and his audience began to feel the spirit which animated his words, their tears began to flow, and

many signal conversions followed his sermons. This was the origin of those discourses which our Fathers delivered in the squares and public places of Rome, and their example is followed by our brethren to this day. The first whom we hear of as being employed in this way, were Benedict Palmia and Peter Ribadeneira, before they were ordained to the priesthood. They had the habit of preaching once a week ; and it pleased God to impart so much strength and influence to their discourses, that, according to the memoirs of those times, even the men most unfriendly to religion and to our Institute, did not venture to find fault with them. Not only the people, but the nobles and prelates of Rome flocked to listen to their preaching. It was even proposed that a pulpit should be erected there, since the audience was more numerous than in any church in Rome.

The fruits of these discourses corresponded to the zeal and labors of the preachers ; for notable conversions took place in consequence ; as we may still see in our own days, on similar occasions, especially amongst idle men, who seldom listen to spiritual discourses adapted to their intelligence.

When worldly men, deaf or callous to the voice of conscience, wearied Ignatius by frequent visits, or idle discourses ; he, without waiting until a favorable opportunity occurred for introducing some useful reflections, would suddenly enter upon the most solemn subjects. He would speak to them of death, of the last judgment, of the hatefulness of sin, and of eternal punishment ; by which he necessarily attained a useful end, either for these men or for himself ; for if they listened to him with attention, they became better men ; if they were wearied by his discourse, they, at least, no longer returned to importune him, and waste his time.

Sometimes he received visits from persons desirous of obtaining his protection for their advancement at court ; but

to them he replied, that he could not introduce them at any court but that of the King of Kings. If they knew one more brilliant and magnificent, he would entreat them to procure admittance there for himself; if not, he would be too happy to show them the road to true glory and true grandeur.

CHAPTER VI.

Useless efforts of the heretics to penetrate into the Society, and infect it with their new doctrines—Success of St. Ignatius in an opposite sense—His zeal for the conversion of England—His unlimited trust in Providence, whose protection is manifested to him in various circumstances.

MEANWHILE all these works of St. Ignatius, as well as those of the evangelic laborers distributed by him through so many kingdoms, had rendered his name celebrated throughout Europe, and the new sectarians especially, trembled when they saw his standard erected against them. Although many endeavored to throw discredit upon Ignatius and his companions, by various artifices, and amongst others, by representing them as men sold to the Roman Pontiff, which accounted for their zeal in defending the Catholic Faith; others, again, thought it a wiser plan to attract such able men, if possible, to their own party. With this view, they attempted to infect the Society with their new doctrines. If they could succeed in doing so, under the eyes of the Holy Father, in Rome itself, the Fathers would spread these errors all over the world; such was their calculation.

The execution of this plan was at first intrusted to an adept named Michael, a native of Calabria, and of very insinuating manners. On his arrival in Rome from Germany, he asked, and after the usual trials, obtained admission into the Society. His exterior was that of a Saint; modest, calm, composed, and the more assiduous in frequenting the

Sacraments, the less he believed in them, hoping by this means to establish his credit for piety.

As novice, the care of the refectory was given him; and as his companion, Father Oliver Manares. In a very short time he discovered that this Father was a man of profound learning, who had but lately left the colleges of Paris; and his hopes of ensnaring a man of this distinction, emboldened him to attack him. He seized the opportunity offered him by certain pictures representing holy subjects, which hung on the walls of the refectory; and as if some doubts alarmed his conscience, asked Father Manares why these pictures had been placed there; then went a little further, and began to express some fear lest a little idolatry might perhaps be mingled with the respect which was shown them.

The Father made him a fitting and wise answer. "And yet," continued the hypocrite, "I have known some very learned theologians in Germany, who had scruples about these things, and did not consider such demonstrations as quite innocent. They supported their opinion by a text of St. John, which really seems as if it might be applied to this: 'Beware of idols.'" The conversation went no further.

Another day he asked his companion the interpretation of this passage of St. Peter: "*Salutant nos fratres qui sunt in Babylone.*" "*The brethren who are in Babylon salute you.*" Manares replied that the apostle spoke of Rome, to whom that name might then be justly applied, on account of the idolatries and false religions of which it was the receptacle; as if, according to the observation of the Pope St. Leo, Rome seemed to think that she proved herself to be a religious city, by rejecting no falsehood, however absurd.

"But," replied the false novice, with a smile, "the German theologians also apply this to Rome; but for another

and they think a juster reason. They say that the apostle called it so, because he foresaw that the Pope, that is Antichrist, was to establish his chair there, of which David speaks in his first psalm, when he calls it *the chair of pestilence*." At these words Manares began to understand that the pretended novice was a wolf in sheep's clothing. But in order to ascertain the truth of his suspicions, he frequently directed the conversation upon similar subjects; and Michael, believing that he had entrapped the good Father, daily grew more confident, and under pretence of feeling doubtful upon various religious points, continued to give him lessons in heresy. Manares counted twenty-five different errors; as after every conversation he carefully noted down all that his companion advanced. It yet remained for him to make it known to the proper person; but as all this had hitherto passed between him and the novice alone, he requested him to write down three propositions which were yet to be discussed, and that the affair might not pass in useless disputes, proposed that they should choose a judge, on whose opinion they could rely. Michael, more confident of his success than prudent, consented to this; and in presence of Father Everard Mercurian, one as well versed in the holy Scriptures as learned in theology, wrote down and delivered to Manares the three propositions, the subject of their conference.

The Father, provided with this document which he was to examine, carried it with the other notes to Ignatius, and related to him all that had passed. Ignatius gave information of the matter to Cardinal Caraffa, then grand inquisitor, and afterwards Sovereign Pontiff; after which he deprived the impostor of his religious habit, and dismissed him from the house.

Notwithstanding the ill-fortune attendant upon this first

enterprise, the Sectarians made another attempt, which was not less unsuccessful. They endeavored to introduce into the house those dumb instructors which run no risk ; and sent from Venice, as a tribute of alms from some unknown person, two large cases of books. The first volumes which were found on opening the case, were by orthodox writers ; but further on were the works of Luther, Melancthon, and others. As they were merely pamphlets, they were put aside in the library, until they should be bound. God, doubtless, inspired this same Father Manares with the idea of examining them, to ascertain the names of their authors. He soon discovered that the greater part of these works were infected with the new errors, of which he gave information to Ignatius. It was not necessary at that time as now, to submit such works to the court of the Inquisition ; and, therefore, Ignatius contented himself with having them thrown into the fire. But he himself was more successful amongst the heretics, for in several cities he brought back many Lutherans to the true Faith.

A young man having come to Rome, who was not only an obstinate defender but a zealous propagator of heresy, endeavored secretly to spread abroad the doctrines of his sect. But his practices, however carefully concealed, were discovered, and he himself was brought before the court of the Inquisition. His youth induced the tribunal to pardon his temerity. Instead of punishing, they endeavored to enlighten him. But no threats and no persuasions had any effect upon his mind, or could induce him to acknowledge his errors ; and although he had no more learning than might have been expected at his age, he was not wanting in capacity. As a last resource, they sent him to Ignatius, who received him into his house, and treated him with his usual kindness and charity. Sometimes he spoke to him of

God ; at others, he implored God for him. To these prayers he added spiritual conversations, in which several of the Fathers aided him, in pointing out to the young sectarian the truth of the Faith which he combated. At length his heart was touched, his eyes were opened, and he publicly abjured the errors of his sect. He was afterwards asked how, after showing himself so inflexible, he had become pliable in the hands of Ignatius ; to which he replied, that besides the grace of God which had enlightened him, he had been wonderfully impressed by witnessing the holy life led by Ignatius and his companions ; and that it seemed to him impossible, were there any true religion out of the Roman Catholic Church, that God should have hidden it from men whose lives were so innocent and pure.

This victory gained over a young sectarian, reminds us of another similar conquest made by Ignatius, the object of which was a young Jew, named Isaac. Earnestly desirous of entering into the Catholic Church, he had taken refuge in our house, where at that time the catechumens were instructed. But when the time approached in which he was to be solemnly baptized, the young man felt himself suddenly assailed by the most violent temptations to return to Judaism, so that neither the force of argument, nor the persuasions of affection had any effect in inducing him to remain. Ignatius was informed of it, and grieving to behold the loss of so precious a conquest, knelt down in prayer to God, and offered up the most fervent entreaties for the conversion of the young Hebrew. He then sent for him, and merely said these simple words, " Isaac, stay with us." But God gave them so much force, that the heart of the Jew was suddenly changed ; his first resolution returned, and shortly after was confirmed for ever by the grace of baptism.

The conversion of the unfortunate apostate, the cele-

brated Ochinos,* would have been another source of joy to Ignatius, as well as to the Church, had that unhappy man feared his eternal ruin, as much as Ignatius desired his eternal salvation. We have yet extant a letter from the Saint, addressed to Father Claudius le Jay, who was then engaged in truly apostolic labors, at Dilingen. In this letter Ignatius earnestly recommends him to spare no pains, no effort, to lead back this erring soul to the truth; he engages him to see Ochino; to endeavor, by showing him every mark of charitable interest, to gain his friendship, and should he succeed in acquiring any influence over his mind, to employ it in leading him back to the bosom of that Church which he had abandoned with so much scandal; in short, to obtain from him a letter, or at least a few words of repentance and

* This Bernard Ochino was one of the celebrated men of that day. Born in Sienna, in 1487, he joined, when very young, the monks of St. Francis; then left them, to engage in the study of medicine. Soon after, he returned to the Order which he had abandoned, and distinguished himself by his zeal, piety, and talents. The reform of the Capuchins had just been brought about. Ochino embraced this rule, and became General of the Order. His austerities, long beard, coarse habit, and especially his popular eloquence, made him the idol of Italy. Princes disputed the privilege of receiving him, and paid him the greatest honors. The people flocked in crowds to meet him wherever he went. The clearness of his pronunciation, the grace and charm of his flowing and brilliant elocution, enchanted his hearers. All this glory affected the head of the poor monk; he became giddy with flattery; and as the Pope would not give him the Cardinal's hat, he abandoned the habit of the Capuchin. Afterwards, to the great astonishment of the Italians, he hurried to Geneva, and there married a girl whom he had seduced at Lucca. Ochino was partly a Lutheran, and partly a Calvinist. He maintained the expediency of polygamy; and after a very stormy life, died in Moravia, aged 77. There is an interesting chapter upon this heretic, in Audin's *Life of Luther*.—*(Note by the French translator.)*

of just reparation ; in return for which, Ignatius promised him, in the name of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, the compassion and mercy of a father ; and desires Le Jay, should Ochino have any fears upon this head, to reassure him by offering him the assistance of all the Society ; to tell him that Ignatius, Lainez, and Salmeron were in Rome, and to promise him that he would find them all in his regard, as men who had but one soul with himself. But all his efforts were useless ; except, indeed, in the sight of God, who often appreciates and rewards our desires as much as our works.

One of the most ardent prayers of St. Ignatius was for the return of England to the Catholic Faith, and he never neglected any opportunity of procuring spiritual assistance for that kingdom which had been the glory and ornament of the Church during so many centuries ; and which has produced more holy Catholic monarchs than any other country in the world.

When Cardinal Pole received orders from the Sovereign Pontiff to repair to that kingdom, the government of which had now fallen by succession into the hands of Mary, daughter of Henry VIII., and Catharine of Arragon, in order to reconcile it with the Church of Rome ; Ignatius wrote to animate his zeal in accomplishing this work so glorious to God, so honorable for himself. In all the houses belonging to the Society, whether in the East or in the West, continual supplications had long been offered up to God, by orders of Ignatius, for the conversion of England. Now more than ever, he renewed his injunctions to that effect. When the Cardinal had arrived in London, Ignatius again wrote to offer him as many places in the Germanic college, then entirely under his charge, as he wished for young English students, if the prelate was of opinion that it would be advisable to send them there. Not satisfied

with taking these steps, he also wrote to Father Araoz, the provincial in Spain, and to the Blessed Francis Borgia, desiring them to use all their credit to obtain permission for as many Jesuits as possible to pass over into England with King Philip II., to employ themselves in the instruction of youth and the salvation of souls. Father Bernard Oliver also received an order in Flanders to repair forthwith to London, with one of his companions, for the same object. The Father was already in Antwerp, and about to set sail, when Philip left England, never to return.

But if Ignatius did not live to see the accomplishment of his desires, he may now in Heaven rejoice over the success of his fervent prayers; not only when he sees the flower of the English youth, confided to the cares of our brethren in Rome, Valladolid, Seville, and St. Omer's; but many of his own children happily reunited with him for ever, after having poured forth their blood in England for the service of God and the Church; and one whole *province* composed of three hundred members, all natives of that unbelieving nation.

And as the hearts of princes are in the hands of God, and the salvation of nations can only be obtained through His grace, Ignatius requires continual sacrifice and prayer to be offered up to the throne of grace by all the Society, not only for the conversion of infidels and idolaters, but for the return of all the Northern nations to the Catholic Faith. "And we desire," continued Ignatius, "that this order shall be strictly observed, so long as the same necessities continue; and from this act of charity we exempt none of the provinces of the Society, in whatsoever region of the world they may exist." This letter is dated from Rome, the 25th of July, 1553.

Besides the other admirable virtues of St. Ignatius, we

ought particularly to take notice of his unbounded confidence in God; a confidence which was rewarded by the most visible and paternal protection. Whoever will follow attentively all the circumstances of the life of Ignatius, from the very moment of his conversion, cannot fail to observe that it was composed of a succession of unforeseen and dangerous occurrences; and sometimes of simultaneous misfortunes; extreme indigence, grievous infirmities, desertion of friends, snares of enemies, calumnious accusations, imprisonment, lawsuits, threats of shameful punishment, continual persecution; in short a daily death, always presenting itself under a different shape. Yet Ignatius was as calm in the midst of dangers, as happy in the midst of misfortunes, as if his life had been spent amidst all the delights of a terrestrial paradise. It was not only because he suffered for God, in whom is the plenitude of consolation, but because he suffered with God; that is to say, he felt so completely in the hands of God, and so sure of His paternal protection, that it never even occurred to him to think of his own danger, so entirely was he absorbed in the desire of seeing His holy will accomplished, who could so easily deliver him from danger, and who did so with so much mercy and tenderness.

It was not only in time of trouble that Ignatius reposed entirely upon God; but also in the execution of those great and difficult enterprises which His service demanded. Those who were guided merely by the wavering light of human prudence, regarded his conduct as the result of temerity, whereas it was regulated by his unlimited trust in God. The Saint frequently remarked that He who desired to do great things for God, must beware of being too wise; of consulting merely his own head and hands, that is to say, his own limited intelligence and feeble powers. Had the Apostles

weighed all the difficulties of their enterprise, would they, a mere handful of men, ignorant, and in appearance contemptible, have ever conceived the idea or had the courage to make the attempt of converting the whole world to Jesus Christ, and of making kings and wise men bow their heads before the Cross of the Redeemer? But the more convinced they were of their entire nothingness, the bolder they became; for they leant upon Him alone who, according to St. Augustine, "had chosen them of humble birth, unhonored and illiterate, so that all that they were, and all that they did, however great and important, should to Him alone be attributed."

It was this spiritual philosophy, learned from St. Ignatius by St. Francis Xavier, and carried by him to the Indies, which imparted such prodigious courage to that holy missionary. Thus he wrote from those distant regions: "I never cease to remember those words, which our venerable Father Ignatius has so often repeated to me: that we ought to endeavor to conquer and drive away all fear which could prevent us from placing our whole trust and our whole hope in God alone."

One of the most singular proofs ever given by St. Ignatius of his immovable confidence in God, was the foundation of the Roman college, with no other capital but a host of debts; and his reception of a vast number of students whose expenses were necessarily considerable, at a time when he foresaw no prospect of assistance, and consequently no means of support for them. "And we must act thus;" said Ignatius to a Father who could not conciliate his ideas of prudence with this conduct: "we must steer against the winds and the tide, and the more desperate our circumstances are, the greater must be our hope in God."

The astonishing success of St. Ignatius has sufficiently proved that in his expectations he was not disappointed; for precisely as his necessities increased, proportionable assistance was received by him. Father Nicholas Bobadilla asking him one day in a kind of stupor, how he intended to maintain so numerous a household, the Saint gave him a detailed account of the assistance which he received from pious persons; but the Father represented to him that all this would not cover the half of the expenses: "And are we not to depend upon God for any thing?" said the Saint. "Are we only to trust in Him so far as the piety of these charitable souls permit us to do so? For my part, I feel assured of finding in the hands of God whatever is wanting to me from the hands of men; and if from them I received no help, God would give me all that was necessary."

As he begun to build the college with the treasures of Divine Goodness alone, so he continued to increase and aggrandize it from the same source. The establishment contained twenty-eight Fathers. Ignatius sent one day for Father Oliver Manares, the Rector, and desired him to prepare chambers, furniture, and provisions, for other Fathers whom he expected shortly, and who would increase the number to one hundred. For the execution of this order, all the money remaining in the hands of Father Polanco, charged with superintending the building of the college, was five ducats which remained upon his hands, not as the surplus of his expenses, but because they were of light weight.

Yet not the less did Ignatius undertake the work, in the holy name of Him for whose glory it was destined. The assistance which he received was indeed wonderful, and in a short time the building was finished, and all that was indispensably necessary for receiving the new guests, was completed.

Ignatius went to visit the establishment, and was satisfied

with every thing excepting only with a barn, transformed into chambers and provided with beds and tables, but which had no roof excepting the tiles. "It is true," said he to the Rector, "that God wishes us to live poorly, yet not so miserably as this. Is there not money enough in the treasury of the Lord to roof this barn, so that our brothers may not sleep under the tiles, and almost in the open air?" And with this he gave orders that the work should be commenced immediately.

It truly seemed as if all his expenses were reimbursed by God Himself; for He provided for them, by sending abundant alms from unforeseen sources; as if to show that He was answerable for all the debts which Ignatius contracted in His service.

But whilst these hundred persons of whom I have spoken, were maintained in the college, a dearth arose in Rome, the result of war, and provisions and money became so scarce, that even the most opulent had no more alms to bestow, nor enough to maintain themselves in their own rank; and the cardinals themselves dismissed a great part of their dependants and servants. It seemed then to many that it would now be mere presumption in Ignatius were he to attempt to support any longer so numerous a household, who, being deprived of charitable assistance, lost their sole means of support.

Those who were charged with providing for the expenses of the college, spoke to Ignatius on the subject; but found him so far from thinking of diminishing the number of the students, that he was preparing to make a purchase for the college, amounting to nearly fifty thousand crowns. As for the maintenance of the students, he intrusted it to God, and his confidence was never shaken, even for a moment. And in truth it met its reward, for he never failed to receive all

the money and assistance necessary ; so that for him and his the scarcity did not seem to exist.

Father Luis Gonzales observed to him one day that their existence was truly a miracle. "The miracle," said the Saint, "would consist in its not being so, for it would truly be a miracle were God to leave without aid, those who confide in Him alone. Have you lived to this day without observing that our resources have always increased in proportion to our necessities ? Let us then devote ourselves to the service of God, and leave to Him the care of providing for our wants. For my part, were it necessary, I should as readily receive a thousand pupils more as the last hundred ; it is as easy for the Lord to procure subsistence for a thousand as for a hundred."

In more than one circumstance this protection vouchsafed by God to his poor servants, was made so manifest and visible, that He might truly be considered, if the expression may be permitted, as their Purveyor, who provided for their daily wants. It happened more than once, that when the signal for sitting down to table had been given, there was not a mouthful of food in the house ; and at that very moment a supply of provisions had arrived, sufficient for the wants of all the community. And on one occasion, when there was neither bread, nor wine, nor wood in the house, God provided them with all these things at once ; for a cart of wood was sent them in charity, and when the porter returned to shut the gate, after it had passed through, he found several sacks of corn and measures of wine left in the court ; but by whom they were sent was never known.

These simple details show us the constant and paternal protection of Divine Providence granted to the complete and childlike confidence of Ignatius. Certain ordinary assistance upon which he had reason to rely, having again failed him,

he continued as usual, contrary to all the laws of human prudence, to receive new students. But Brother John Croce, the steward of the establishment, in returning home one evening, about that time, from St. John Lateran's, met near the Coliseum, a man whom he had never seen before, and who, without speaking a single word, placed in his hands a hundred gold crowns, and before the Brother could recover from his amazement, the stranger had disappeared. The same circumstance occurred on another occasion. The steward had gone out one morning before dawn to buy his provisions for the day, when a man came up to him, and presented him with a heavy purse, filled with money. As it was still too dusk to distinguish any object clearly, the good Brother was frightened, and fearing in his simplicity, that the money might be the gift of some evil spirit, who had given him a purse full of false coin, in order to ruin him, he entered the nearest church, and prayed God to preserve him from such a deception; but he soon found that he had only to thank Providence for the gift, and that it really was a purse full of gold, with which many of the debts contracted for the college were paid.

By a similar miracle, it pleased Our Lord to give courage to Father Polanco, who had the charge of providing for our household in Rome. One day, whilst searching for some stray papers in a large trunk full of old and useless writings, which always stood open, he found a pile of gold crowns, so new and brilliant that they appeared to have just left the mint. It could never be discovered by whom they had been placed there, but they were found in an opportune moment, when the wants of the brethren were urgent. The same Father used to say, that when about to undertake any affair requiring money to carry it through, he felt no uneasiness on the subject, provided he acted by orders of Father Igna-

tius, since he felt more confidence in his word than if he had possessed a treasure.

Although Polanco was endowed with great courage and strength of mind, yet Ignatius often reproached him with timidity, and want of confidence in God; "for," said he, "we cannot expect too much from Him to whom it costs no more to do than to will."

CHAPTER VII.

The particular methods practised by Ignatius for living in God, and for purifying his conscience—The book of fourteen lives—Ardent love with which the heart of the Saint was kindled for God—The gift of tears—Passion for music and flowers—Extracts from a journal to which Ignatius confided his most secret thoughts.

Thus the whole life of St. Ignatius was composed of a long series of benefits bestowed upon him by God, repaid by the most absolute devotion on his part towards his Almighty Benefactor. As Cardinal del Monte said, when relating in the presence of Gregory XV., in a secret consistory, the virtues and miracles of Ignatius; he followed the example of the Saints and Martyrs, and always forgot his own troubles, to devote himself entirely to the glory of God. But if it is a certain proof of our love to God when we forget ourselves entirely, it is an act of still more perfect love, to remember ourselves only with reference to God; that is to say, to examine ourselves with constant and critical minuteness, so that there may be nothing in our hearts displeasing to God; on which point we may say that Ignatius carried his watchfulness and attention to the furthest extreme.

Not one hour of the day passed, in which he did not reflect upon all that he had said and done during that short space of time; renovating his heart without ceasing, thus appearing more pure and perfect before his Maker, and always forming a resolution to pass the next hour better

than the preceding one. Wherever an ardent love of God exists, there also we find a bright light by which to discern all that pleases or offends him; and along with this knowledge, extreme care to efface even the smallest blemish or defect; for in the eyes of men who are truly holy, there is no defect which appears trifling, so long as it is displeasing to God; and as they love God more than themselves, they would willingly precipitate themselves into the flames, in the hopes of coming out cleansed and purified from sin. It is therefore not to be wondered at, that to this end they subject themselves to frequent examinations and severe penances. Nor does it suffice for them that those works which are inspired by divine charity are not mingled with the slightest imperfection capable of impairing the spirit in which they are performed. Those souls which are truly holy, and filled with the love of God, judge their own actions by the Divine light; that is to say, they always consider what they ought to be, in order to be worthy of God. And as no one can be perfect enough, holy enough to attain this noble object, they invariably find themselves inferior to their desires, and continue without ceasing to examine and purify their hearts, and to renew their resolutions of amendment. Thus their life is one constant exercise of humility and charity, tending to lead them to the highest possible degree of perfection. Thus Ignatius could never understand how those who aspired to great spiritual perfection, yet neglected the frequent and scrupulous examination of their conscience. Hence arose the astonishment which he expressed to a Father, of whom he had inquired how often that day he had meditated and examined his heart. The Father having replied that he had made his examination of conscience seven times: "Only seven times!" replied Ignatius; "yet you had much spare time in the evening."

Besides these frequent meditations, and two longer examinations of conscience, which Ignatius made at noon, and at night, before retiring to rest, he practised another, formerly taught by the holy Fathers, and which had been dictated to him by the same Spirit which formerly inspired them. This was a particular examination, which refers to one single fault; the object of which is to uproot that defect from the heart, without leaving the slightest fibre. And this is truly one of the most useful methods which can be employed in a spiritual life, for attaining great purity of heart in a very short time; especially when we practise it according to the rules which the Saint has written down, for rendering it useful and profitable. I shall mention some of these rules, for the instruction of those who may read this narrative, not so much in order to know the spiritual industry, if we may so call it, of a Saint, as with the desire of imitating him.

As it always happens that a force which is divided against several enemies, is weakened in proportion to the number of adversaries which it is called upon to combat, and rarely obtains a complete victory, notwithstanding the constant combats in which it is engaged; it is no doubt wiser, besides keeping up a constant watchfulness over all our faults and bad inclinations, to attack them one by one; and to begin with that which is most displeasing in the eyes of God, either because most condemnable in itself, or most injurious to others.

At the moment of awaking, one of our first thoughts ought to be, how this fault is to be combatted during the day; and in order that we may triumph over it, we must implore strength and assistance from the Lord. It is well, also, to have a little book, upon each leaf of which we draw fourteen lines, that is, two for each day in the week. We

shall trace these lines so that the first may be longer than the second, the second than the third, and so on, always diminishing towards the end. On these lines we should note down twice a day, before dinner and in the evening, the relapses which we have fallen into, by yielding to the fault which it is our object to correct. And the lines are gradually shortened, because these relapses ought gradually to diminish in number. Nor should we consider it a useless care, thus to mark down twice a day the faults which we have committed, since by comparing one day with another, we are enabled to calculate the progress which we have made in virtue. We are thus led to calculate, also, with almost mathematical precision, the causes of our falling into sin, and to redouble our precautions for the future. There is another advantage in this method, which is, that we thus establish a certain balance between our expiation and the fault committed; by condemning ourselves to some penance for each transgression.

It was by means of these repeated examinations that Ignatius succeeded, soon after his conversion, in surmounting amongst other faults, a violent inclination to laughter, which was natural to him; and by the same method, he conquered all his other bad habits. His method, united to his ardent desire of pleasing God, conducted him to that sublime degree of purity, which enabled him to act as one who feels himself always in the presence of God; his eyes for ever turned towards that source of all purity, all justice, all perfection. To love God was his only desire; to love Him better the only reward he hoped for; to love Him always, his only idea of a happy existence. To obtain this blessing, he composed, shortly after his conversion, that short prayer, which if offered up with the whole heart, would alone suffice to lead us to perfection.

“ Take and receive, O Lord, my entire liberty, my memory, my understanding, and my whole will. Whatever I have, and all that I possess—Thou hast bestowed upon me—To thee I return all, and I surrender all. Dispose of it entirely according to thy will. Grant me only thy grace and thy love. This is enough for me. Amen.”

Thus the Auditors of the Rota, in the documents relative to his canonization, said that “ All the thoughts of Ignatius, all his words, all his actions, had reference to God, as to their only end, and were solely directed with a view to His honor and glory. His own motto, and the words which were always on his lips, were, *Ad Majorem Dei gloriam*, ‘To God’s greater glory.’ This was his rule, this he sought in all things, and by this he wished his children to regulate all their actions. Hence arose that spiritual joy with which the heart of this blessed Father overflowed, and which was always visible, in his unchangeable serenity of countenance, the index of a peaceful soul. The greater were his trials and tribulations, the more serene and happy he appeared. Hence also arose the complete empire which Ignatius exercised over all his passions, over all the emotions of his soul, and which was a cause of wonder to all who saw him. This peace of mind, which no accidental circumstance could affect, was the result of that charity which glowed within his heart.” These words are in perfect accordance with the opinion given of him in writing by Father Jerome Mironi, an intimate friend and confidant of Ignatius. “ Our Father Ignatius,” said he, “ received from nature great talents, and a strong and noble soul ; which aided by Divine Grace, led him on to perfection. He undertook nothing in the service of God, that was not great, and all his actions breathed the most fervent zeal. If we consider the Society, of which he was the Father, and the different ministrations to which he con-

secrated it, we shall every where find the impress of the most ardent charity. For the sole object of this Institute was the honor and glory of Our Lord, as we may judge by examining our Constitutions, in which we shall scarcely find one chapter, wherein this end is not inculcated."

Nor did he require less from his children in this respect, than from himself, though measured by the capability of each individual. Thus he one day inquired of a brother coadjutor, somewhat remiss in his labors, for what reason he had entered the Society, and whom he intended to serve. The Brother replied that he had come there to serve God. "What!" replied the Saint; "to serve God! and you serve him so carelessly! Henceforward, I shall not suffer this; for had your intention only been to serve men, your indolence might have been excused or forgiven; but in the service of that Divine Majesty, towards whom we can never with our most strenuous efforts, discharge the thousandth part of the duty which we owe, how great must be your guilt, in not even fulfilling the duty which you might perform, were you to discharge it with good will!"

The further I proceed in this narrative, the more difficulty I find in explaining the degree of love to God, and the ardor of that love, which consumed the heart of Ignatius. For if, as St. Bernard says, the language of the heart to him who does not love, is a barbarous and unintelligible idiom, how greatly must I fear that the words which I employ in writing upon such a theme as this, must be without sense or meaning, or totally foreign to the subject? Those even who glow with Divine love, and who secretly rejoice over it in the depths of their hearts, are unable to express what they feel, because human language has no words for celestial and supernatural emotions. St. Ignatius, endeavoring to explain in a journal, wherein he consigned the different

affections of his soul, the nature of his communications with Heaven, said that he heard within his heart, as it were, the sound of music without voices, a delightful harmony, without any distinct or sensible tones, but to which no earthly melody could be compared. How then should I find words to express what my mind cannot conceive ; what St. Ignatius himself could not describe, but by images either absolutely false, or wholly incorrect ? And yet how gladly would I comprehend the meaning of those words, addressed to one of his dearest friends, when in a moment of unrestrained confidence, he exclaimed : “ If I had nothing to support my existence but the strength which nature gives me, assuredly I should soon die ! ” Had he then reached that last term of the perfect union of charity, by which being transformed in God, he lived upon the divine substance, rather than by his own nature ? Sometimes we observe certain small plants which have ingrafted themselves upon a tree, grow there, and seem to become identified with the tree itself ; and although preserving their first nature, live and bear fruits, by virtue of the juices which they absorb from this plant of a different species. And thus it is with those pure and holy souls.

Perhaps this is what the Apostle means, when he says : *Yet not I, but Christ Jesus who liveth within me.* The divine love was so necessary to Ignatius, that he lived through that love, rather than by his own life ; and as he said himself, he might easily be deprived of his existence, but the reunited powers of heaven, earth, and hell, could not separate him from Our Lord Jesus Christ. Reduced and worn out as he was, the strength of nature could not have supported him, and the prolongation of his life seemed miraculous ; the physicians themselves had attested this fact. So much more did he love God than himself, that had it been possible for

him, without any fault of his own, to be condemned to the punishment of hell, it would, as he said, have tortured him even more than the anguish of these everlasting burnings, to hear for ever the blasphemies and maledictions with which the wretched dwellers in those regions, insult the most holy name of God. Yet this love which, on the one hand, sustained his life, also undermined the springs of his existence, so as sometimes to throw him into swoons which resembled death. His most dangerous maladies usually followed those paroxysms, the effects of that fervor which was kindled in his heart like a devouring fire.

Thus in 1550, after having celebrated two Masses on Christmas-Day, Ignatius was so entirely exhausted, that he seemed at the point of death. He was also frequently obliged to allow a day to intervene between his celebration of the holy mysteries, less in order to rest, than to keep himself from failing entirely. More than once it was necessary to carry him back to his chamber, as he had not sufficient strength to walk up the few steps which separated it from the chapel. Nor was this astonishing to those who had observed him at the altar, where I can only compare him to those clouds charged with Heaven's lightnings, and yet dissolving in torrents of rain. His countenance glowed, whilst tears burst from his eyes, and his heart beat with so much violence, that it seemed as if it must break. It is thus that he himself speaks of it, in some of his writings, where according to the custom of many Saints, he wrote down for his own remembrance and profit, those things which passed in secret between his soul and God.

Father Nicholas Lanoi, being present one day at a Mass celebrated by Ignatius ; raising his eyes towards him at the moment of the *Memento*, perceived his head environed by a halo of fire, and rose in terror to extinguish the flames ;

when observing that the Saint was ravished in spirit, and that joyful tears flowed from his eyes, he comprehended that he was the witness of a miracle. But if he could have looked into the heart of the Saint, he would surely have seen it wholly inflamed with Divine love.

Ignatius usually employed one hour in the celebration of the Holy Sacrifice, unless the Spirit of God detained him longer. He himself had laid down as a general rule, that the celebrant should not exceed half an hour in the performance of this holy duty; but in regard to himself, without any desire on his part to accord himself a peculiar privilege, he was forced to infringe this regulation, so often was he interrupted by the uncontrollable emotion of his feelings, deprived while reading of the power of speech, and even his intellectual faculties momentarily suspended.

Ignatius divided the night into three portions. The first he devoted to the cares of his government, as General of the Order; the second to repose, but to a slight repose, which scarcely exempted his mind from some pious occupation; in order to which, he held his chaplet in his hand when preparing to sleep. The third part of the night he dedicated to prayer. His usual manner of beginning to pray was, first to stand for a short time, representing to his mind God present; he then knelt down with all humility, and adored Him. If his strength permitted, he continued on his knees during all his prayers; if not, he took his seat on a low bench, still preserving an attitude of humble reverence and veneration.

Hardly had he begun to meditate upon God, when tears began to flow from his eyes, and an air of serenity was diffused over his countenance, which gave him the appearance of a soul in bliss. Every morning after Mass, he retired to his chamber, and for two whole hours remained in this

state, feeding his soul with what St. Augustine calls "the food of truth, the food of the immortal light of wisdom."

At these times, no one was permitted to enter his apartment or to disturb him, unless affairs of great moment, and requiring a prompt decision, made it necessary; then Father Louis Gonzales, who next to him had charge of the affairs of the house, entered and informed him of the affair in question; a circumstance which happened more than once; so that he has been enabled to leave us the following account in writing:

"On those occasions when it was indispensably necessary for me to interrupt him,—and this occurred frequently, I found him with so resplendent a countenance, that although when I entered, my mind was filled with the affair which I had come to inform him of, I forgot every thing, and remained like one entranced, so great was my astonishment. For his countenance did not merely bear the stamp of devotion, like that of many pious persons when they pray; its appearance was entirely celestial and supernatural."

Father Lainez, who, on account of that intimate communion with God which was vouchsafed to Ignatius, was wont to compare him with the holy lawgiver, Moses, might also have continued this comparison from the outward splendor with which his countenance shone, as by a reflection of the divine light.

But the wonderful effects of his union with God were not only manifested during his prayers, or whilst he offered up the Holy Sacrifice. His heart was united to God in all places, at all times, and during whatsoever occupation. In the wall of his room he caused a small window to be opened, which looked into the church, fronting the tabernacle, and there, like Daniel of old in his chamber, he could, without being seen, fix his eyes at all times upon the treasure of his

soul. It seemed as if but a thin veil separated him from God ; and that he had it in his power to raise it at his will ; so that he enjoyed the rare privilege of never losing sight of the Divine Presence.

A simple prayer said aloud ; the blessing of the table ; the words of the *Angelus* ; the names of God or of Jesus pronounced in his presence, sufficed in a moment to inflame his heart, and to produce a bright glow upon his countenance. When he spoke of God, it was necessary for him to descend from his elevated sphere, to make himself comprehensible, even when in conversation with men so holy as our first Fathers were. Sometimes even he avoided turning the discourse upon spiritual things, finding it impossible to conceal the fervor of his feelings, which seemed to glow upon his face in characters of fire.

Usually after finishing his explanation of the Christian doctrine to the children, he concluded by an exhortation to all present, and terminated with these words : " We must love God with all our heart, with all our soul, and with all our strength ; " and as he said these words, his tone of voice was so fervent, that those who listened seemed to catch inspiration from it ; insomuch that it has frequently happened, that after one of these exhortations, many great sinners have felt their hearts suddenly softened, and have gone to throw themselves at the feet of the priest, confessing their sins with so many tears and so much compunction, that the Confessor has interrupted them with words of consolation. When Ignatius himself felt his heart too full of emotion, he would frequently leave his companions, go out upon a turret of the house, and raising his tearful eyes to Heaven, exclaim with passionate rapture, " Oh ! how vile is this earth when compared to Heaven ! " At other times, while in the street, or engaged in conversation, he would raise his eyes to

Heaven, like one in inward meditation ; so that it seemed as if his soul for one moment took its flight to God, and then returned to earth, bringing back God within him, with a redoubled effusion of love.

Music seemed to have the effect of transporting him above all earthly suffering ; and when tortured with agonizing inward pains, he was frequently relieved by listening to religious canticles, sung by the brethren ; but his humility and self-denial were so great that he rarely consented to have recourse to this singular remedy.

One of his greatest enjoyments was to look at the meadows and fields enamelled with flowers ; they afforded him matter for the most sublime reflections ; he extracted from them as it were the honey of spiritual sweetness. He admired the workmanship, the graceful forms, the variegated coloring, the sweet perfumes of these beautiful creations of the Divine power. He beheld God Himself in His works, and from them drew a lesson of the intelligence, wisdom, power, and glory of the heavenly Artificer. These thoughts frequently led Ignatius to walk in a little garden attached to the house, where he sometimes remained so rapt in ecstasy, that the Fathers would watch him from their windows, " considering themselves fortunate," says an eye-witness, " to have the opportunity of beholding so sublime a spectacle." This habit of regarding all the works of creation as so many mirrors wherein were reflected the beauty, providence, and riches of the infinite power and wisdom of God, was the cause of those abundant tears which were a source of consolation to Ignatius, but which threatened to deprive him of sight. He experienced the same effects from reading the divine office ; certain verses of which had for him a peculiar sense, and so much attraction, as to fix his attention for a considerable space of time ; so that where others passed

lightly over them, like ships which, sailing on the bosom of the ocean, take no note of the treasures contained within its depths; he on the contrary dived as it were into the meaning of each verse, and like one fishing for pearls, always returned with new treasures; with some new knowledge of God and of heavenly things.

The Pontiff Paul III., having been warned of the danger incurred by Ignatius of losing his sight, substituted for his recitation of the divine office, a certain number of short prayers.

As a last proof of the ardent love of God which burned within the heart of St. Ignatius, and of those spiritual delights which he enjoyed, I shall now transcribe some part of the fragments which have come down to us, of those writings wherein he had the habit of daily noting down all his spiritual feelings and dispositions. But of the thirty-five years which followed his conversion, and during which he never failed daily to commit these thoughts to paper, nothing remains to us but a manuscript, comprehending the space of four months. The rest was burned by his own hands, and the fragments which remain accidentally escaped the same fate. And these scattered leaves bear all the marks of the haste with which Ignatius wrote them, and are so succinct, as to resemble ciphers; besides being so obscure, so broken and interrupted, that in many places we might write on the margin, as in certain passages of the Prophets, *Tenebrosa aqua in nubibus acris*. Yet they possess great interest, since they permit us to penetrate into the sanctuary of his heart, when he was alone with God. The original is written in his native Castilian, from which I literally translate.

“The tears which I have shed to-day appear to me very dissimilar from those of the preceding days. They flowed softly, slowly, without noise or commotion, and so internally,

that I know not how to explain them. A voice, at once internal and external, excited me to Divine love, with so much inward harmony produced by that divine converse, that I have no words wherewith to express it.

“The following day, also an abundance of tears, both during and after Mass; and along with this so much happiness produced by that inward voice, that it seemed to me like words or music from Heaven. Devotion and tenderness increased within me as I observed the supernatural intelligence vouchsafed to me.

“The next day, a profusion of tears, and an inward voice, truly wonderful. Whilst praying to the Holy Virgin that she would help me with the Father and with her Divine Son; and also invoking the Son to intercede for me in union with his Mother, with the Father; I felt myself as it were transported into the presence of God the Father. My hair stood on end, my body trembled, and a burning heat ran through my veins; then followed a torrent of tears, a feeling of intense devotion, and a supernatural comprehension of the Most Holy Trinity. This intelligence and visions of this nature were so frequent and so soothing, that I have no words by which to express them. . . .

“The same plenitude of knowledge, of celestial visions, of spiritual consolations, of constant tears. The names alone of God, and of our Lord, penetrated my heart with inexpressible reverence and humility. After prayer, new and unusual internal emotion; tears and sobbings; my heart filled with love for Our Lord Jesus Christ; and an ardent desire to die with Him, rather than to live with any other. In approaching the altar, the name of Jesus coming to my mind, I felt myself impelled to follow Him, and I understood how our strongest reason for vowing ourselves to extreme poverty, is that Jesus Christ is the Head of our

Society. I remembered that, when the Father consigned me into the hands of His Son, I felt an ardent desire to engrave the name of Jesus upon my heart, and to be in all things conformable to Him ; and a flood of tears accompanied this thought.

“ When I conversed with the Divine Majesty, I felt such intense love for Him, that it seemed as if I corresponded to His love; never did I receive so excellent and wonderful a visit ; or such sweet and visible love. Afterwards, in the chapel, more tears, and increased devotion. When at the altar, and in my vestments, a greater superabundance of tears and sobs, and a burning love for the Most Holy Trinity. In saying Mass, the same impressions, and so much devotion and such abundant tears, that from the violent pain which I felt from weeping, it seemed to me that if my tears did not cease, I should lose my sight. At these words, *Placent tibi Sancta Trinitas*, I experienced an increase of love and emotion. All these spiritual graces had for their object the Most Holy Trinity, which drew me towards its love.

“ The Mass ended, whilst praying before the altar, renewed tears caused by this love for the Holy Trinity ; and such was the ineffable delight that I experienced, that I knew not how to leave that place. During the remainder of the day, it was impossible for me, whether in the house or in the city, to distract my thoughts from this impetuous love, and joyous remembrance.

“ As I was about to say Mass in honor of the Holy Spirit, I addressed myself tenderly to that Divine Master ; then it appeared to me that I beheld Him in the midst of a bright light, under the form of a brilliant flame of fire, in a manner quite unusual. During the preparation of the altar, and after I had put on the vestments, and whilst celebrating Mass, I felt great inward emotion, and occasionally lost the

power of speech. Afterwards I saw and felt that Our Lady was propitious to me, with the Eternal Father. During the prayers which I addressed, whether to the Father or the Son, and at the moment of the consecration, I saw that she was as the gate and source of grace; and that she showed me, in the act of consecration, that the flesh of her Son was also her flesh; and I conceived these things in my spirit with a clearness which I cannot describe in writing.

“In my usual prayers, from the beginning to the end, great intelligence given me and much devotion.

“In the Church while celebrating, and afterwards when out of the house, I saw the celestial country; and in the midst its Sovereign Lord, with a distinct perception of the Three Persons, the Second and Third emanating from the Father.

“When I entered the Chapel to pray, I felt, or to speak more correctly, I saw, by a supernatural virtue vouchsafed to me, the Most Holy Trinity, and Jesus Christ, who was represented to me as my Mediator with them, or the means by which this intellectual vision was communicated to me. This made me shed a torrent of tears, and experience a superabundance of love.

“Saying Mass with much devotion, I had for a moment this same vision of the Holy Trinity, and my love towards the Divine Majesty was thereby greatly increased.

“At the *Te igitur*, I felt and saw, not obscurely, but with a very clear perception, the Being Itself or Divine Essence, under the aspect of a Sun. From this Essence the Father appeared to issue, and when I said these words: *Te igitur, clementissime Pater*, there was represented to me rather the Divine Essence, than the Father. And in this representation,—and in seeing the Divine Being or Essence of the Most Holy Trinity, without distinction of

the other Persons, I was seized with a feeling of profound devotion for this Divine Essence thus figured. Besides this,—emotion, tears, and feelings of ardent love.

“After having celebrated Mass, I was praying at the altar, when the same Divine Essence appeared to me anew under a spherical form, and I saw in some manner the three Persons as I had seen the First; that is to say that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit seemed derived from the Divine Essence, yet without leaving the limits of that spherical vision; and with this I experienced new and burning aspirations, and tears.

“ I was in the chapel, and filled with devotion towards the Holy Trinity; I did not, as on the preceding days, behold the Three Persons distinct; but I saw as in a brilliant light, an Essence, which ravished my soul with love. At the beginning of the Mass, the ardor of my devotion prevented me from pronouncing *In nomine Patris*; &c., and during all the Holy Sacrifice, I felt the same, with abundance of tears and love, all directed to the Most Holy Trinity. On other occasions I experienced the same feelings towards Our Lord. I seemed to be under His orders and guidance, which, far from diminishing, only served to increase my union with the Divine Majesty. . . .

“I was preparing to celebrate the Holy Sacrifice, when suddenly the thought came to me that to do so worthily, I ought to be an angel, and my eyes overflowed with sweet tears. . . . On another occasion, I beheld the same vision, first the Essence, then the Person of the Father, going thus from the whole to the Persons; sometimes this perception came to me in some other way, and less clearly. . . . During Mass, many interruptions and revelations of the Holy Trinity, which thus enlightened my intel-

ligence. It seemed to me that the longest studies could never have imparted so much to me.

"I went afterwards to Mass, where still more abundant tears fell from my eyes, and deprived me of speech; then spiritual communications so frequent, that it seemed to me as if I had nothing more to comprehend concerning the Holy Trinity. During this Mass, I knew, I felt and I saw, *Domini scit*, that in speaking of the Father, and in seeing that He was one of the Persons of the Holy Trinity, I loved Him the more ardently, that the other Persons were contained in Him. I experienced a similar affection in praying to the Son and to the Holy Ghost, adoring each of the Divine Persons, consecrating myself to each, and rejoicing that I belonged to all three; which was for me so great a happiness, that I never ceased to say to myself: *Who art thou? What dost thou deserve? And whence is this to thee?*

"Again the same tender devotion and tears at Mass the loss of speech. It seemed to me that, in praying to the Father, the Saviour Jesus presented my prayers to Him. I saw and felt this in a manner impossible to describe. Whether I remained in the house, or went out, Jesus still was before my eyes, and then my tears recommenced and my internal emotion returned. During all this time, to see and hear my Lord, kindled such a love for Him within my heart, that it seemed to me as if nothing in the world could ever more separate me from Him."

CHAPTER VIII.

St. Ignatius desires death that he may be reunited to God—Gradual decay of his strength—His task upon earth accomplished—His last moments, related by an eye-witness—General mourning caused by the death of the Founder of the Society of Jesus—Extraordinary testimonies of veneration which he received during his life, and after his death.

SUCH were the spiritual consolations with which the soul of Ignatius was inundated. Thus he enjoyed in anticipation some of the ineffable bliss of Paradise, which especially consists in the knowledge and love of God. Through these joys his life was sustained, which otherwise would long since have been worn out and exhausted. To grant him that bliss, the Lord had not waited until the last years of his life, when charity was perfected within him. From the moment in which he abandoned the world to devote himself to the service of God, during his short residence at Manresa, while engaged in the exercises of the most austere penance, he received numerous visits from our Divine Saviour, who deigned to console and encourage him. Ignatius himself informed Father Louis Gonzaga, that these celestial favors had been vouchsafed him nearly forty times. Those of the Mother of God were not less frequent. We may therefore easily conjecture, that many other favors of which we have no information were granted him during the thirty-five years which he spent in the service of God, with a daily increase of fervor and perfection.

Although the hopes which he felt that his earthly life

and labors might be useful in the service and for the glory of God, whom he loved more than all things in the world, and far better than himself, prevented him from actually praying God to remove him from the world; yet the affections of his heart glowing with charity, which led him towards God, were a silent but efficient prayer for obtaining the dissolution of that feeble tie which still retained him imprisoned in the body. Thus at the mere thought of death his soul was filled with gladness, and his eyes with joyful tears, so that he was forced to change the current of his ideas, lest he should be unable to support the tide of joyous emotion which rushed to his heart.

When he heard one of his children planning some work for the following year; "Alas!" he would exclaim; "where do you find courage to endure the thought of living so long! Since the uncertainty of life makes it allowable for you to hope that you may go much sooner to enjoy God, how can you support a thought which is perhaps an illusion, and the certainty of which ought to cause you such bitter sorrow?" But all had not those wings of fire which raised his heart to God, rendering his sojourn here below a source of grief and bitterness, although his soul was more frequently in Heaven with God, than on earth with himself.

Thus on account of these very ecstasies, and extraordinary visions, on account of this hovering as it were between two worlds, the real and physical life of the Saint, was a state of continual suffering. He was consumed by the desire of being united to his God, and of possessing Him without intermediate image. This feeling, painful and yet pleasing, could only be supported by perfect submission to the will of his Divine Master. Nothing more now remained for him to do upon earth. His task was accomplished; he had, he said, anxiously desired three things, and had at

length obtained them. His children therefore understood that his life was drawing to a close.

The first desire of Ignatius had been to see the Society established in perpetuity by Apostolic authority ; the second, that the book of Spiritual Exercises should be invested with the approbation of the Holy See ; and the third, that the Constitutions should be finished and adopted throughout the Order. The fulfilment of these three wishes was a source of intense happiness to him. And it was observed by Pope Marcellus II., who was thoroughly versed both in sacred and profane history, when speaking of St. Ignatius and his Order, an assembly of grave and learned men : " From the time of the Apostles down to our days, I have known of no one who has lived to see the numerous and beneficial results of his own works, as Ignatius has done."

Hardly sixteen years had elapsed since the foundation of his Order, when it was sufficiently numerous to be spread over the whole world, to preach Christ and His doctrine in the most barbarous tongues, and to conquer for the Church vast kingdoms peopled by idolaters.

Ignatius lived to see the Company established in the twelve provinces of Italy, Sicily, Upper and Lower Germany, France, Arragon, Castille, Andalusia, Portugal, the Indies, Ethiopia and Brazil ; besides many others ready to be constituted. He saw it by a happy omen, already entered upon the possession of a heavenly kingdom, in the person of Hozes, the first of the members who died ; and in that of the martyr Father Anthony Criminali, the first whose blood was shed by the idolaters in India ; the first of that long generation whose holy labors were to be crowned by so glorious a death.

He saw it abundantly provided with men as eminent for their talents as for their virtues and holiness ; some considered as apostles in Portugal and Flanders ; others listened

to with admiration in the Council of Trent; others called to the highest dignities, and showing themselves doubly worthy, first, by meriting, and afterwards by refusing them; without counting the Fathers employed by the Sovereign Pontiff as apostolic nuncios, in the service of the Church.

Notwithstanding all this success, Ignatius was so far from considering the Society as having arrived at its zenith, that being attacked by a grievous illness under the pontificate of Julius II., and his children having entreated him with tears to pray to God that his life might still be prolonged some years, in order that he might watch over the consolidation of his Order; he replied in these words: "Our first Fathers (I trust in God) are good; the second will be better; and to them will succeed others better still; because they will unite to external works, internal discipline, which will then be perfected, and reduced in all its parts to rules exactly observed."

Finally, Ignatius lived to behold the fruits of his Spiritual Exercises, spread all over Europe; and, by the zeal of his children, even over the most remote parts of the globe. He saw in the town of Alcalá alone, in less than two months, thirty young men gained over to God by one of our preachers; all of whom took vows in a Monastery, and devoted their lives to His service. In Parma, more than a hundred men followed at the same time the Spiritual Exercises, under the guidance of Father Faber, who had opened a kind of spiritual school in that city. At Faenza, the most implacable enmities subsisted between the people and the nobles. In a short time they were reconciled, and peace re-established by the exertions of Father Brouet. Various cities were delivered from the scourge of heresy, disseminated by the followers of Luther; the clergy were reformed, both as to ecclesiastical discipline and in their private conduct; con-

vents brought back to the observance of their primitive discipline, which had long been discontinued; churches were every where restored to their first splendor; the Sacraments were frequented; literature flourished; the Word of God was preached and practised. All this Ignatius lived to see.

Besides this, seminaries and colleges were founded, for the permanent and solid advantage of all conditions and all ages; confraternities established, while houses of refuge and penitence were opened for virtue in danger of falling, and for repentant vice. Finally, let us consider what St. Francis Xavier effected in his eastern Apostleship; the holiness of his life, the immense extent and usefulness of his labors; and let us remember those of the other Fathers, of Cosmo Torres, of Francis Borgia, of Anthony Criminali, of Lainez, of Faber, and of a long series of holy men, too numerous to mention; and we shall easily believe that the dearest hopes of Ignatius being now fulfilled, and his heart burning with love to God, there remained nothing more in this world to occupy his attention, and that his only aspiration was to leave it, and enter upon the joys of Paradise.

The time had at length arrived when it pleased God to accomplish his desires; and in such a manner that the prayers of his children should not be offered up for the delay of this happy moment; as occurred some years before, when seeing him in great danger, they surrounded his bed, weeping, and entreating the Almighty that He would not deprive them of their beloved Father, and the Society of its only earthly support against the numerous attacks which threatened it with destruction.

Although, during the last years of his life, the exhaustion of his bodily strength had in a great measure unfitted Ignatius for the management of public affairs, and he had, therefore, greatly extended the authority confided in Spain

to Father Francis Borgia, nevertheless the Fathers were all persuaded that God protected the Society on his account; and that he supported it by his prayers, which availed much at the throne of Grace. They also appreciated to its fullest extent, the advantage of having ever before their eyes the example of his life, and of receiving advice and consolation from him.

At the beginning of July, in the year 1556, the habitual indisposition of St. Ignatius increased, his health became more feeble, and he understood that the term of his exile was approaching. Impressed with this conviction, he wrote to Doña Leonora Mascaregna, to bid her farewell. This letter, said he, was the last which he should ever write. He would pray for her in Heaven, as he had daily done upon earth, and would continue to do, so long as it pleased God to prolong his mortal life.

Rome was at this time filled with troops, and great tumult reigned in the city, in consequence of the war in which it was then engaged with Naples. Ignatius, who was much grieved by this, took the opportunity of retiring to a tranquil spot, where he hoped to find repose, and where he might prepare for his last hour. He selected for his retreat a house belonging to the college, situated in the vineyard which he had purchased for them, within the inclosure of the city walls, between Santa Balbina and the Baths of Antoninus. But the Fathers, fearing lest the air of that uninhabited quarter of the city might be more injurious than salutary for him, expressed their uneasiness on the subject; Ignatius, who, in all that was personal, had no will of his own, consulted Petronius, his physician and friend, who having visited and examined the habitation, was of opinion that the air was by no means insalubrious.

Ignatius therefore withdrew thither, after having confided

the government of the Society to the Fathers Polanco and Madrid. But he did not long enjoy his retirement; since, added to his usual languor, a complete failing of nature became manifest, so that it was necessary for his friends to transport him back to Rome. Still it was at first believed that this was merely an accidental increase of his usual debility; and the physicians were of opinion that he required rest rather than remedies.

However, a slight degree of fever having ensued, some trifling remedies were resorted to. Yet amongst all the patients who were in the house at that time, and whose condition seemed to offer some cause for uneasiness, Ignatius was the only one concerning whom none was felt. But he who well knew how near was the accomplishment of all his desires, and the fulfilment of the divine promises, silently prepared for his departure, between himself and God; that he might leave the world as it were secretly, which he had always desired, and now, contrary to all human probability, obtained. He received then the Holy Communion, and two days afterwards sent for his secretary, Father Polanco. His last instructions, together with the details of his unexpected death, were communicated by that Father in the letter which he immediately wrote, addressed to all the Superiors of the Society.

"Pax Christi. This is to inform your Reverence, and all our Brethren under your jurisdiction, that it has pleased the Lord Our God to recall to Himself our blessed Father Ignatius, on Friday the last day of July, on the vigil of the Feast of Saint Peter *ad Vincula*; thus breaking the chains which bound him to his mortal body, and placing him in the liberty of His elect. Thus have been at length granted the desires of this blessed servant of the Lord, who, although he supported his pilgrimage and its labors with patience and

fortitude, yet for many long years has aspired with vehement desire to enter into the heavenly country, there to praise and glorify his Lord and his God.

“That we have preserved him until this day, we thank Divine Providence, who left him amongst us, that his example, his prudence, his authority, and his prayers might contribute to strengthen the Society which he founded. Now that the Order is deeply rooted, and gives forth fruits all over the world, our Blessed Father has been exalted to Heaven, in order that being placed nearer the source of all grace, it may be showered down upon us in greater abundance.

“It is impossible that both in our house and in your colleges we should not deeply feel the loss of such a Father, of whose dear presence we are deprived; nevertheless, our sorrows have no bitterness, and our tears are calm. His death even redoubles our hopes, and increases our spiritual joy. We feel that for him it was time that his long labors should at length be terminated in perfect repose, that his infirmities should lead him to true health; and his constant suffering and tears be converted into immortal bliss and felicity. As for us, we do not feel that we have lost him; but that we possess him in that place where his ardent charity gives us a still more lively hope, that through his intercession we may obtain from the Divine Mercy the increase of the Society, both in merits and in number, for the general good of the Church.

“Your Reverences will no doubt wish to learn the details concerning the last moments of our Father, now in glory. I shall then relate to you that we had in our house many sick and infirm persons, some of whom were seriously ill, and amongst these were the Fathers Lainez and Don John de Mendoza; whilst the indisposition of our Father

Ignatius appeared but a slight attack. It is true that for four or five days he had some fever, but so slight, that his pulse scarcely indicated it; and although he appeared very weak, this was habitual to him, and he seemed to pay it no attention. On Thursday, a little after eight in the evening, he sent for me, and having dismissed the Infirmarian, told me that it seemed to him that the moment had arrived for informing the Sovereign Pontiff that he was dying, and that there was no hope of his life being prolonged; and that he therefore humbly requested his blessing both for himself and Father Lainez, whose life was also in danger. He also added, that as he had prayed for His Holiness all the days of his earthly life, he would continue his prayers in Heaven, if it pleased the Divine Goodness to receive him there.

"I replied that the physicians, far from seeing any cause for immediate alarm in his symptoms, found that he had but little fever, and felt no uneasiness concerning him; and that I trusted in the mercy of God that He would still preserve our Father many years for His service. He replied, 'I feel so feeble, that there remains for me nothing more but to breathe my last sigh.' Yet I, always full of hope, told him that I would deliver his message to the Pope; nevertheless, having to despatch the letters for Spain that evening, I asked him if I might not delay it until the following morning. 'Do as you will,' said he, 'I leave it entirely to you, whether it be to-day or to-morrow.'

"In order to know the exact opinion of the physicians, and to be able to inform His Holiness whether or not the state of our Father was considered dangerous, I interrogated Alexander Petronius, the most distinguished amongst them, and considered very skilful in his profession. I repeated to him what our Father had said, that he felt himself dying; and I requested his opinion. But he delayed giving it until

the next day, seeing no reason for having any faith in this sad prognostic. After this, I felt, humanly speaking, secure in waiting till Friday morning.

“That same evening, Father Madrid and I saw him again; were present at his supper, and conferred with him concerning certain affairs of the College; on which he talked with so much ease, that I went to bed, without feeling any suspicion that there was danger to be apprehended from his illness. In the morning, at daybreak, we returned to see him, and found him in the last agonies. I then ran in haste to St. Peter’s; and the Pope expressing his deep grief at the news I brought him, granted to the dying man his blessing, and all the graces which it was in his power to bestow.

“Two hours afterwards, in the presence of Father Madrid, Frusis and others, Ignatius peacefully expired.

“Let us here admire the humility of this holy Patriarch, who, having the absolute certainty of his approaching end, as he had announced the evening before, neither called his children together, to receive his last blessing, nor to designate his successor, nor, in short, to make any of those external demonstrations, which many servants of God have considered useful.

“As he had the most humble opinion of himself, and wished the Society to place their confidence in God alone, he passed away like one who was of no personal importance. Perhaps he had asked this favor from God, whose glory alone he sought; in the same way as during his life, he concealed the gifts which God bestowed upon him, except in so far as the edification of his neighbor rendered their manifestation expedient.

“Divine Wisdom, which sometimes works through the instrumentality of its servants, obvious and sensible miracles, to make an impression upon those minds which cannot be

affected by other means ; frequently offers instead of these, examples of great and solid virtue, for the edification of those whose eyes are opened to the light of Faith.

“ Such seems to have been the conduct of Divine Providence in regard to the Head of our Society ; and such is the method which Our Lord seems also to employ towards its members ; judging by the spiritual fruits which He obtains with such feeble instruments ; so that all may see that *the finger of God is there ; ‘ digitus Dei est hic.’* ”

“ But to return to our Father. It was necessary to have recourse to autopsy, in order to embalm the body ; and this examination afforded us fresh cause for edification and astonishment. The intestines were found to be completely dried up ; the result, according to the opinion of the physicians, of his long abstinences. Here we found a new proof of his fortitude and greatness of soul, when we reflected that this bodily exhaustion never prevented him from engaging in the most severe and continual labor, and that the habitual expression of his countenance was not only calm but joyous. His liver, already hard and dried up, also contained several stones, another effect of his constant fasting.

“ All this verified what the good old Dom James Eguia had frequently said ; that for a long time past, the life of our Father was a miracle. In truth, it cannot be comprehended how he could have lived, considering the condition of his liver, were it not that God, being pleased to preserve him for the interest of the Order, supplied the want of his corporal organs.

“ We kept his holy body above ground until Saturday after vespers ; and although he was not laid out in public, but in the chamber where he expired, the concourse of pious persons was very great. Some kissed his feet, others his hands ; some touched him with their chaplets ; and it was

with difficulty that we kept off the crowd who wished to have some fragments of his clothing, or of any thing belonging to him. Several painters also asked permission to take his portrait, which many had solicited in vain whilst he lived, &c."

We may here advise the reader that when our holy Founder sent for the last pontifical benediction, he did not expressly name Father Lainez, as Polanco asserts in this letter, but asked it for himself and for another Father, whom he did not name; and the Father to whom he alluded, was Martin Olave, then in perfect health, but who died a few days after. As Father Lainez was, on the contrary, so dangerously ill at that time, that he soon after received extreme unction, Polanco did not doubt that he was the Father to whom Ignatius referred. Having discovered his error, he corrected it in the third volume of the histories which he has left us; but I think it proper to make this statement here, both for the sake of truth, and for the satisfaction of those who might confront the letter of Polanco with the prediction which the Saint had so often made, that Father James Lainez should be his successor in the Generalship.

The death of Ignatius happened on the anniversary of one of the most fortunate days of his life; that in which the Pontiff Paul III., by a particular bull and by his apostolic authority, gave his approbation to the Spiritual Exercises; one of the most glorious and useful works of our venerable Founder.

Ignatius was of middling stature, his air majestic, and his countenance noble, his usual expression grave and thoughtful; yet when he wished to console the afflicted, or addressed his children in terms of affection, the goodness of his heart was depicted upon his countenance, and the mere presence of Ignatius was often more consolatory, than the

greatest demonstrations of interest expressed by others. Father Eleutherus Pontano, who was long and intimately acquainted with him, writes that his aspect seemed to infuse a feeling of modesty and dignity in all those who surrounded him ; that no one with a guilty conscience could have ventured to appear in his presence, or to look in his face ; and that in his countenance was a sort of splendor, which in a man aged, infirm and mortified as he was, appeared wholly supernatural. He had an olive complexion, his eyes were brilliant and penetrating, his forehead high and wide. He was bald ; and in his walk could be slightly perceived the effects of the wound which he received at the siege of Pamplona. He was naturally of an extremely ardent temperament, but had so completely conquered it, that by the physicians he was considered as very cold and phlegmatic. The truth is that he had no temperament peculiar to himself, since in him nature was so subdued by grace and reason, as to be entirely under his control.

The only one of his portraits which exactly resembles him is that which Monsignor Alexander Crivelli, a Milanese, caused to be taken of him by stealth, by a painter who secretly watched him whilst he was in conversation with the Prelate. The others, which were taken after his death, are naturally devoid of spirit, and fail especially to represent the noble expression and brilliancy of eye which so particularly distinguished his countenance. Yet we have a portrait in Rome, executed by a skilful painter, named James Conte, who also painted it after the death of Ignatius, but corrected it by his recollections. Having been long under the spiritual guidance of the Saint, Conte had every opportunity of observing him ; and this, as being the last picture taken of St. Ignatius, and the work of a distinguished master, is generally considered the most valuable.

The remark made by Father Polanco concerning our Fathers in Rome, might have been applied to all the members of the Society. Although they all regarded Ignatius as the support of the Order, and that consequently, his death might have been expected to render them inconsolable; yet the news was received with feelings of devotion rather than of sorrow. Their tears had no bitterness; in their sadness they were not disheartened, like children who have lost their father, their defender, their most precious treasure. On the contrary the two sentiments which universally prevailed amongst the Brethren, were a feeling of sweet satisfaction that the labors and fatigues of so holy a man had at length received their reward in the bosom of the Eternal, and the confidence that in that glorious sojourn, he could still better understand the necessities of his children, and more fully provide for their wants.

Manifest proofs were soon afforded that these two opinions were well founded. That Ignatius was in glory, they were soon assured of; for at the very moment in which he expired in Rome, he appeared in Bologna to a noble lady, named Margaret Gigli, a pious matron, devoted to the interests of the Society, and whose life was consecrated to charity and prayer. Being asleep, early on the morning of the 31st of July, she was awakened by a sudden and violent whirlwind, which shook her chamber. On opening her eyes, she beheld the apartment illuminated with a brilliant light, in the midst of which stood Ignatius, who, surrounded by a halo of rays, his face resplendent with beauty and joy, addressed her in these words: "Margaret, I am about leaving the world, as thou seest. I recommend my children to thee;" and so saying he disappeared.

Margaret, filled with astonishment and joy arose quickly, and went to relate what she had seen and heard, to Father

Francis Palmia, her Confessor. Although she had never seen Ignatius, she described his appearance as correctly as those could have done who had spent their lives with him. But as no news had yet been received from Rome concerning his danger or even his illness, the Fathers to whom the Confessor related this vision, suspended their belief in its truth. But a few days after, when the news of his death arrived in Bologna, and they found that the moment of his death coincided precisely with that of his apparition, they believed that the Saint had already entered upon the glory of the Blessed.

That he thenceforth watched over his flock with a degree of solicitude proportionate to their necessities and to the affection which he bore them, was manifest from the blessings which were vouchsafed to them. Without speaking of the unexpected protection granted to the Society by so many Cardinals and powerful princes, we may observe, that seven months before the death of Ignatius, Father Ribadeneira, who then resided in Flanders by his order, had vainly entreated King Philip II. to admit the Society into his dominions. The opposition to his request seemed insurmountable; all his importunities were unheeded, and he had at length abandoned all hopes of success, when he was suddenly sent for to Court, and all that he had so long solicited in vain, was granted him. Knowing the firm will of that Prince, and the power of our adversaries, he considered his success as a miracle. The news of the death of Ignatius arrived from Rome, and Ribadeneira recognized the hand which had assisted him; for the moment in which the Saint passed into glory, this unhopd for favor had been bestowed upon his Society.

The profound veneration in which St. Ignatius was held by his contemporaries, his reputation for virtue and holiness

was so general, that merely to enumerate those proofs of esteem bestowed upon him by the most illustrious and distinguished men of that age, would wholly exceed the limits of this narrative. Some few we may mention, selected from amongst the different classes of society. And to begin by his children; it is surely a circumstance worthy of remark, that so considerable a body of men—men also of the greatest talents and penetration, having him always before their eyes, in the intimate relations of daily life, felt their admiration for him increase in proportion as they became more thoroughly acquainted with him. Far from having to cast a veil over those imperfections which are sometimes developed by intimacy, their reverence and veneration daily increased, as they witnessed his virtues and the sanctity of his life.

“When I entered the Society in Rome, during the lifetime of St. Ignatius,” (says Father Philip Aupolino in his deposition made upon oath,) “his reputation for holiness was such, not only amongst us, but throughout the city, that when he went out, the people thronged to see him in the streets through which he passed. As for us who enjoyed his presence habitually, we considered him as a Saint, and even wore round our necks as precious relics, the parings of his nails, which we begged from the Brother who sometimes served him.

“Many eminent men, attracted by his reputation for sanctity, desired admission into his presence; and it is a remarkable fact, that we could hardly mention one individual who on leaving him was not animated by a desire of being converted or of leading a new life. As for persons in affliction who came to visit him, they invariably left him consoled as it seemed by his very presence.”

St. Francis Xavier, who being in the Indies could obtain

no other relics of St. Ignatius but the signatures affixed to his letters, cut them off and wore them round his neck, together with a small bone of St. Thomas the Apostle ; and by virtue of these relics, which he applied by the hands of children, effected innumerable miracles, to which his own virtues may no doubt have contributed.

The veneration of Francis for our holy Father was such, that to lead to more perfect obedience one of the Fathers who had accompanied him from Rome to the Indies, he could find no stronger adjuration than to conjure by the love and respect which he owed to Ignatius. He wrote to the Saint on his knees, and bathed the letters with his tears. He addressed him as the father of his soul, and almost went the length of complaining of his long separation from him ; offering to return to Europe, and signing himself: *The least of your children and certainly the furthest exiled, Francis.*

Any proofs of affection given him by Ignatius in his letters, filled his heart with joy and his eyes with tears. In the greatest dangers to which he was exposed, whether by land or by sea, Xavier offered up to God the merits of his Father Ignatius, to obtain His assistance and protection. He never spoke of him but as one who had attained the highest degree of holiness. This was related by Father Bernard, a native of Cangoxima in the Empire of Japan, one of the first converts baptized by Xavier in that kingdom and whom he sent thence to Rome. According to Bernard, Francis often recounted to him the noble deeds of Ignatius, speaking of him with the utmost esteem and reverence ; and yet he had not known Ignatius during the most admirable part of his life, that is to say, during the sixteen years which passed in Rome, during which his union with God and his own interior perfection had been carried to so high a degree.

Finally, towards the end of his life, Xavier wrote a long and affectionate letter to Ignatius, the original of which we still possess in Rome; wherein he addresses him thus: *To my Father in Christ, St. Ignatius.*

I shall here insert also the testimony of Father Charles Spinola, who afterwards followed in the footsteps of Francis Xavier to the furthest extremity of the East, and in the year 1622 was burned alive before a slow fire, in Japan, after having endured in the famous dungeon of Suzzuta that long and painful martyrdom described by me in another work, which lasted three years, and the torture of which could not have been supported by unassisted nature.

Spinola acknowledged that he owed the greater part of the heavenly consolations which he received, to his father Ignatius; whose sufferings in the cave of Manresa were recalled to his mind in his solitary dungeon, encouraging him to endure his imprisonment with the patience and fervor which had animated the Saint. He wore upon his breast a small piece of the coarse robe in which the holy penitent was clad, less perhaps as a relic, than as a consolation and unceasing admonition to suffer with joy for the glory of the Lord.

And when the hour arrived in which he was to pass from his chains to the glory of the Saints, this same Father, as a last proof of his attachment to Father Francis Pachero, then Father Provincial, who afterwards suffered the same lingering death which Spinola was about to endure, sent him this fragment, by which said he numerous miracles had been worked in Japan.

Thus the new converts in that country felt the utmost love and respect for our holy Founder, whose life, written in Japanese, was never out of their hands. It was a common remark amongst them, that by the spirit which animated his

children, and by their works, they could easily judge of the virtues and holiness of their Father.

In this last example, I have somewhat anticipated the regular course of events; let us resume the thread of our narrative, and we shall find the same veneration and the same confidence in the two Fathers Claudius le Jay and Nicholas Bobadilla, both companions of the Saint. The first, being on his journey from Venice to Rome, was suddenly attacked with agonizing inward pains; and being far from all human aid, he at length laid himself down upon the highway, without any hopes of being able to rise again. Then raising his heart to God, he conjured Him by the merits of St. Ignatius, who was still alive, to give him relief, if it were his will that he should recover; and the prayer had hardly passed his lips, before he was restored to health.

Bobadilla, recently arrived in Rome from Tivoli, was attacked by a burning fever. In his distress he remembered that in the very chamber which he occupied, Ignatius, but a short time previous, had passed to a better life. Thoroughly convinced that so holy a man already enjoyed the glory of the Blessed, he recommended himself to his prayers with tender fervor; and at the same moment felt that the fever had left him; carried away, he says, as suddenly as the blankets upon his bed might have been lifted from off his body; and he adds that his testimony might well count for two, because he was not credulous enough to believe in miracles which were not perfectly authenticated.

Father Francis Borgia was also one of those who looked upon Ignatius as a Saint, and who preserved all that had belonged to him, as valuable relics. On his return to Spain, he sought for some solitary and hallowed spot whither he might withdraw from the tumult of the world; and found nothing more adapted to his wishes than the town of Oñate,

because it was only three miles distant from the Castle of Loyola. There it seemed to him as if every thing breathed a spirit of sanctity, as if the very earth were hallowed by Ignatius, and contained a constant exhortation to imitate him. Before taking up his abode at Oñate, he went to visit the castle, and the chamber where the Saint was born, being pointed out to him, he prostrated himself on the ground, and kissed with respect and tenderness the floor and the walls of the dwelling, hallowed as being the birth-place of such a man.

The same pilgrimage was made some years after, while the Saint still lived, by Father Jerome Nadal; and he writes, that he could not repress his indignation upon seeing that the lords of Loyola appreciated so little the birth-place of Ignatius, that they had transformed into a kitchen, that apartment which ought more properly to have been consecrated for a chapel. Father Nadal esteemed Ignatius so highly, that whatever sublime idea of perfection he formed in his mind, always appeared to him inferior to that which he observed in the words and actions of his friend. Thus he esteemed himself very fortunate one day in having obtained what he considered a precious relic, but which he was soon deprived of. Ignatius during several days, having supported with invincible patience an agonizing attack of tooth-ache, Father Nadal, through compassion for his sufferings, brought him a surgeon, to extract the tooth from which the pain proceeded. As it had deep and sound roots it was not extracted without great difficulty on the part of the surgeon, and torture on that of the patient, who remained during the operation unmoved, and apparently indifferent as a statue. Father Nadal privately took possession of the tooth; but Ignatius perceiving this, begged him to return it, and threw

it away so far that the good Father in spite of all his researches could never find it again.

No less elevated an idea of his sanctity was entertained by Father James Lainez; so that in comparing Father Faber to Ignatius in regard to spiritual perfection, he spoke of him as a child compared to a perfect man. Yet this same Faber was invoked as a Saint by Francis Xavier. Nor was this superiority of Ignatius to Faber, the opinion of Lainez only; for we find Louis Gonzales writing thus open upon the same subject: "I knew Father Faber in Madrid, and had many communications with him upon spiritual subjects. He was a man for whom I conceived the most profound admiration, for it seemed to me impossible that I should ever meet another so filled with the Spirit of God, as he was. Afterwards I heard many persons speak of the great superiority of Ignatius to all his companions, and the united testimony of others, as well as his being chosen General of the Society, led me to believe this assertion. But when I knew him in Rome and conversed with him, Faber vanished from my mind, and, in comparison with Ignatius, appeared to me no more than a little child."

Afterwards, considering the singular graces which God had poured in such abundance upon St. Ignatius, from the very beginning of his conversion, and which had led him through such winding and difficult paths to found a new Order, whose labors throughout all the universe now yield fruits worthy of the spirit which animated its Founder; he was lost in admiration, and exclaimed with an air of respect and awe; "God has taken pleasure in the soul of his servant Ignatius." *Complacuit sibi Dominis in anima servi sui Ignatii.*

At the moment of the death of St. Ignatius, Gonzales was himself dangerously ill, and, according to the opinion

of the physicians, at the last extremity. He feared that in order to spare him pain, his companions concealed the death of Ignatius from him, and to every one who entered his chamber, he put the question whether our holy Father was still alive. Being at last informed that his soul had departed, he raised his eyes and hands to Heaven, invoked Ignatius as a Saint, and entreated the Lord, if it were not contrary to his holy will, to permit him to rejoin his Father, and in consideration of the merits of that holy soul, which He had that day taken unto Himself, to have compassion on his soul also, and to grant it a happy passage to eternal life.

Many of the other Fathers, on hearing the news of his death, could not resolve to pray for his soul, as one in need of their suffrages, but humbly recommended themselves to his prayers. Amongst these was Father Fulvius Androzio, a holy and pious Religious, who, wishing to offer up a Mass for the repose of the soul of Ignatius, could not when at the altar persuade himself to do so; but changing his purpose, celebrated the Holy Sacrifice in honor of the Sacred name of Jesus; and repeating several times the invocation, *Pater Ignati, ora pro nobis*, immediately felt within himself the effects of the intercession which he implored.

Finally we may relate the testimony given by one of the best beloved of his children, as well as most intimate with the Saint, that of Father Peter Ribadeneira, who first wrote and published the history of the life of Ignatius. Having been called to give upon oath his testimony as to the holiness of one whom he had ever considered as his spiritual master and guide, he adduced ten principal reasons, upon which he founded the correctness of the deposition which he made in his favor, which I shall transcribe in this place, precisely as they stand in the original document.

Father Ribadeneira being questioned in Madrid, on the

31st of July, 1595, before Monsignor Gaetan, patriarch and Nuncio, of the Pope in Spain, as to the opinion and conception in which he held the life and sanctity of Father Ignatius; and upon what foundation he had formed his judgment; replied, as a priest, and under oath, that he did and always had considered Ignatius as a very great Saint, and that he supported his opinion by the following reasons.

“ 1st. Because having lived with him familiarly for sixteen years—eight of these in terms of great intimacy—I do not remember to have seen him commit a single action, or to have heard a single word escape his lips, which could be construed, I do not say into a mortal sin, but into the slightest venial fault. No doubt I cannot believe that Father Ignatius never did commit a venial sin; since it is written that “there is no just man that sinneth not;” and that “a just man shall fall seven times;” but his words and actions bore such an impress of wisdom, that in seeing and hearing him, the slightest shadow of sin was not perceptible; since no harsh nor repining nor idle words ever passed his lips; and even when he reproved his children, he seemed neither more disturbed nor more indignant than he thought it incumbent upon him to appear, nor did such emotions with him ever precede reflection; they were only the results of it.

“ 2d. Because I have observed proofs of heroic virtue and of extraordinary holiness in Father Ignatius; especially in his constant prayer, his tender devotion, in the gift of abundant tears which he had received, in the ardor of his zeal for the glory of God and for the salvation of souls; in the depth of his humility and in his contempt for himself and for the world; in his patience and joy in the midst of labor and persecution; in the strength and constancy with which he supported them; in his extraordinary and superhuman prudence in every thing relating to spiritual things;

finally in his perfect equanimity, which was never disturbed either by prosperity or adversity, neither interiorly or exteriorly ; or if any shade of difference was observable upon his countenance, it was an expression of increased satisfaction when any unforeseen tribulation had occurred to him.

“3d. From the choice which God had made of him, as Father and Founder of a religious Order, such as the Society is, and the graces with which he loaded him, whereby he was enabled to establish, to govern and to extend it over the whole world, gathering thence even during his lifetime so rich and abundant a harvest. We cannot doubt that the Lord, destining Ignatius to be the instrument of so great a work, granted him that diversity of talents necessary for conducting it to a successful termination ; according to the usual law of His Providence, always to proportion the gifts of His Divine grace, to the importance of the duties which He imposes. We are still more astonished, when we reflect upon the circumstances which concurred in producing this marvellous work, such as the change of life in our Father Ignatius, who passed from worldly delights and vanities, to such perfect self-denial and rigid penitence. Then we must remark how his instructions were received immediately from God (since he had no knowledge of literature), who as it were dictated the Spiritual Exercises ; by means of which he gained over all his first companions, and the most part of those who succeeded them, without mentioning so many others, who being led back to God by their influence, entered into other Orders, or who, though remaining in the world, led a new life. Besides this his first companions, who were all Frenchmen or Spaniards, joined him at a period when their countries were engaged in cruel and bloody war, and yet lived together with more than fraternal affection and concord. Let us also observe how this divine inspiration

led him to found an Order, in all essential points similar to others, yet in some differing from all, and adapted to the necessities of these latter days; as for example in the fourth vow made by the professed Brethren, of entire obedience to the Sovereign Pontiff, in opposition to the heretics who attack his authority; and in the special object proposed by the Society; the propagation of the Christian religion throughout the whole world. Finally, the constitutions of this Order bear so strongly the impress of a Divine inspiration, that they cannot be read without astonishment and admiration. An incontestable proof of their merit is the respect with which the five general congregations, held since the death of Ignatius, have received and approved them.

“4th. From the numerous and sublime revelations, and the heavenly favors which Father Ignatius received from God; which have been written in his history, and many of which have been related by himself in some writings in the form of a journal, which were found after his death.

“5th. From the marvellous fruits which his Institute has produced throughout the whole universe, whether by a reformation of morals amongst Catholics, or by the conversion of idolaters and heretics; spiritual miracles, as superior to those performed upon the body, as the divine graces communicated thereby to the soul, are superior to mere bodily health and strength.

“6th. On account of the miracles performed by God through the intercession of this holy man, during his lifetime and after his death, confirmed by the most authentic proofs and careful examinations.

“7th. From the hatred of the evil spirits, manifested by the constant persecutions which they raised against him personally. For it has been remarked, that when the first companions of Ignatius were united together, at a distance

from him, enjoying peace and tranquillity; no sooner had he arrived, than some storm was raised against him, the work of the demon by whom he was hated. Father Lainez has related that he had seen in Padua, a poor soldier, a demoniac, who had never seen St. Ignatius, yet who described his appearance with the most perfect exactness, saying that he had not a greater enemy in the world.

“ And this confirms the words of another demoniac in Rome, a poor young man named Matthew, whom Ignatius afterwards delivered from the power of the Evil One. Some one having said to this evil spirit that Ignatius would soon return and would drive him from this body, he cried aloud, begging that no one would even name Ignatius, because he was his most terrible enemy. Soon after the death of the Saint, the same words were repeated at Trapani in Sicily, by another demoniac; and were heard by the Viceroy Don John de Vega and some other persons, one of whom was Father Jerome Domenechi, a very holy man, Father Provincial of the Company in that Island. Such a testimony may be received as a proof of the holiness of Father Ignatius; for although we ought not to believe in the words of demons when they speak of their own accord, nevertheless we may give credit to them when they are forced to obey the command imposed upon them in the name of God, especially to manifest the glory of His Saints; when the words of the evil spirits accord with what is known of the merits of these holy souls, and with other still more convincing arguments.

“ 8th. Because of the great persecutions which Ignatius underwent during his whole life, whether at those periods when he laid the foundations of the Society in Alcalà, Salamanca, Paris, Venice or Rome, or after it was already established; persecutions which were not confined to himself,

but which pursued his children to the furthest extremities of the earth; and which he overcame by his patience, courage, and generosity; proofs of the special grace with which God assisted him, and enabled him to obtain a glorious victory over all his enemies.

“9th. From the opinion of the great and numerous servants of the Lord who have acknowledged the sanctity of Ignatius. It is certain that many of the Fathers of the Society, each of whom, considered by himself, might be regarded as a great Saint; such as Fathers Lainez, Francis Xavier and others, were yet, compared with Ignatius, as pigmies beside a giant; and they themselves, fully aware of and acknowledging his superiority, held him in the highest veneration.

“10th. On account of those things which God has effected through the intercession of Ignatius and by his ministry, in my own person.” And here Ribadeneira relates many things which have already been partly mentioned in this narrative.

I shall only add what this same Father Ribadeneira says, in this solemn declaration, concerning the credence which may be given to every thing in the Life of St. Ignatius written and published by him: “There is nothing,” he says, “related in that Life which is not correct;” or at least he does not remember having related one single fact which he did not believe to be such, having spoken solely of what he had seen or heard, or learnt either from St. Ignatius himself, or from other grave and well informed personages; or of what he had found in original and authentic manuscripts. The truth of his narrative was also confirmed by the examination which Father Francis Borgia caused to be made before it was given to be printed, he having submitted it to several members of the Company, some of whom had lived

on terms of strict intimacy with the Saint. Besides which, some of the most aged of the Fathers, and most intimate friends of the Saint, were still alive when this life was printed, and none of them could ever discover a single error in it. A last and decisive proof of its veracity was the order given by Father Everard Mercurian, when chosen General, to Father James Ximenes, who had been Procurator and Secretary of the Society in Rome, to interrogate all the Fathers in that city, one after the other, to know if they approved of the history, or if there was any error to correct in it. Not one of the Fathers expressed the slightest doubt as to the veracity of the history, or found any error in it, of which Father Ximenes, Secretary of the Society, signed the attestation under his own hand.

From the testimony of our brethren, let us pass on to that of eminent men, not of our Order. Amongst these, we may properly give the highest place to St. Philip Neri, founder of the Congregation of the Oratory, the intimate friend of Ignatius, and who received the honors of canonization at the same time that he did. He was often heard to say, that in his eyes the countenance of Ignatius seemed resplendent with celestial light, the reflection of the interior beauty of his soul. He added that no painting could ever produce an exact likeness of him, because no human art could represent the heavenly beauty of his expression. This was an argument employed as a proof of his holiness by Cardinal Tarugi, Archbishop of Sienna, whose testimony as a man of the highest integrity and wisdom, and one of the most distinguished members of the Sacred College, is a document of great importance.* Tarugi had the good

* Franciscus Maria Tarugius S. R. Ecclesiæ tit. S. Bartholomæi in insula, presbyter cardinalis, ex apostolica dispensatione archiepiscopus Senensis, Omnibus et singulis has nostras litteras lecturis,

fortune to be present, when Ignatius passed from this world to a better life.

But were we to enumerate all the individual evidence in favor of the sanctity and virtue of our holy Father, including that of Fathers Luis of Granada, and John of Avila, we

salutem in Domino. Beatus vir, Ignatius Loyola, Societatis Jesus fundator, firmiora quidem suæ gloriæ testimonia habere non potest, quam quæ per ejus instituti sectatores, vera hujus sæculi lumina, omni virtutem ac disciplinarum genere præditos, Deus ipse evidentur exhibet. Quomodo enim ii strenue dimicantes tam præclara in fide catholica propaganda, in hæreticis convertendis et in Christianis moribus ubique terrarum reformandis, cum summâ omnium admiratione præstarent, nisi, Deo duce, idem B. Ignatius cælesti chlamyde indutus, militibus suis præfulgeret, æterni regni vexilla preferret, animum, vires, armorumque præsidia sappeditaret? Nos profecto, quibus, præcipuo Dei munere, illum in hoc ergastulo carnis adhuc degentem novisse, ejusque animam ab ipso solutam, hinc migrantem in æterna tabernacula, ut certo credimus, illico recipiendam, cum illiusmet cubiculo tunc adessemus, precibus votisque comitari datum fuit, adeo semper ejus nomen, eminentemque sanctitatem venerati sumus tantaque de ipso à bonis omnibus predicari audivimus, ut nihil eorum, quæ in eximio Dei servo, ad veræ perfectionis normam imitando requirantur, irreprehensibilis ejus vitæ rationem, desiderandum reliquisse, censeamus. Singularum autem virtutem, quos Spiritus Sancti gratia in animâ, in qua inhabitat, excitare solet, quis in eo argumenta scrutabitur, quamvis innumera quoque extare non ignoremus, dum illarum species in ejus vultu apparuisse approbantur. Affirmavit emin nobis sacerdos quidam congregationis nostræ, Antonius Gallonius nomine, beati patris nostri Philippi Nerii intimus, omniumque ejus arcanorum conscius, de ejus fidei integritate dubitari non potest, eundem Philippum beati Ignatii faciem, dum adhuc viveret, micantium radiorum fulgore se intueri sæpius testatum esse. Hæc nos de beato Ignatio sentientes, ea publicis his litteris, nostra, nostrique secretarii manu subscriptis, et sigilli nostri robore munitis in eorum perpetuam fidem, asserere testarique volumus. Dat. Romæ pridie Kalend. Septembris M.D.C. Ego, Franciscus Maria, cardinalis et archiepiscopus Senensis, affirmo.

should greatly exceed the proposed limits of our narrative. We shall then rather transcribe a letter, written to the Society, by a whole religious Order, eminent for zeal and virtue, that of the Barnabites, who, on receiving the news of the death of St. Ignatius, addressed his children in these terms :

“ On learning that the venerable Father Ignatius, of blessed memory, had passed to a better life, we felt deeply afflicted, both on account of all the holy Society of Jesus deprived of such a father and such a guide, as for ourselves, who also saw in him a dear Father. Our affliction is very natural, especially at a period when men of true holiness are very rare. Yet we ought also to feel consoled, when we reflect that he has passed to a happier state ; and that for the just man, who lives in the Lord, death is a gain, since it reunites him for ever to his Saviour. Thus he, like the Blessed Peter, delivered from his chains, has been loosed from his earthly bonds, and his freed spirit has taken its flight to Heaven.

“ Our only fear is, that he may have been taken from the world as a chastisement for our sins ; as we read in the Scriptures, that when the Jewish people were threatened with great misfortunes, King Josias was saved from them by death. But may the will of God be done ! May His holy Name be blessed for ever ! Yet, Ignatius is not lost to us ; he lives in the memory of us all ; and wherever the name of Jesus is known, there we shall find embalmed the sweet and precious remembrance of that holy man, to whom the Christian republic is so greatly beholden ; since through his guidance, and the labors of his children, the doctrine, the faith, the holy religion of Christ has been carried even to the Antipodes, where with thousands of converted souls, a new Church has been planted, emulative of the Apostolic

Church, and which has also its new Apostles and its new martyrs.

“Some of his children have preceded him; and he their Father, after immense labors endured for the glory of the Lord, has followed them, worn out no less than they by fatigue, and by the *care of all the churches*; a martyr in truth, though without undergoing the tortures of martyrdom.

“Upon him rested not only your houses, but so many others, and for so many years; for he was as their common father and protector. And who has not received from that good father, comfort in affliction, wise counsels in time of trouble, support under oppression, assistance in necessity? He was feet to the lame, eyes to the blind, the refuge of the poor, the consolation of the afflicted. May the Lord reward him for all his good works! Let others cast bright flowers upon his tomb! We, as a token of our love and reverence, shall offer up our prayers and the Sacrifice of the Divine Host for his holy soul, although we trust and believe that it is already in possession of the glory of the Blessed.”

After these testimonials to the sanctity of our Father, we find those of Sovereign Pontiffs, kings, emperors, and generals. Paul III., he who constituted the Society a religious Order, regarded Ignatius as a man filled with the Spirit of God, and destined by him to repair the injuries done to His Church. Paul IV. respected him so highly, that he would never permit the slightest change to be made in his Institute; nor would he permit him to kneel before him, or to speak to him uncovered. Marcellus II. loved and revered him in the highest degree, and gave him every public testimony of the esteem in which he held him. Hardly was he seated on the Chair of St. Peter, when he requested his advice concerning a reformation which he wished to introduce in the

external worship of the Church; and he was not satisfied with his advice only; he desired the assistance of his labors, and those of his children. "Do you collect the workmen," he would say to Ignatius; "we shall know how to employ them."

John III., King of Portugal, went further still; and would willingly have seen Ignatius raised to the Pontificate, holding in his hands the keys of the kingdom of Heaven, which his zeal would have opened to so many nations. As for the Cardinals, some paid him frequent visits, with the sole object of beholding a Saint; others went to receive his spiritual advice, or to consult him upon important affairs; for his wisdom and prudence were as eminent as his sanctity; so that Cardinal Cuenca, on learning the news of his death, wrote that the Church had lost one of her best heads. The Emperor Ferdinand I. never treated of any affairs in Rome, before having consulted Ignatius; and Don Diego Mendoza frequently remarked, that when he had followed the advice of Ignatius concerning the affairs of the king his master, they had invariably succeeded, and as surely failed when he had neglected it.

Here let us pause, and instead of accumulating further evidence in favor of St. Ignatius, let us rather invoke his spirit, and listen to his own words. His *Maxims* will give us a more thorough insight into his character than the approbation of others, however wise, eminent, and noble. The scattered fragments of his Journal have already displayed wonderful interior phenomena to our view, raising the veil of a deep mystery, full of marvellous manifestations. Let us now penetrate into the moral world, and listen to his voice, speaking to us for the last time, in words worthy of eternal remembrance, as being the manifestation of his inmost thoughts, the aphorisms of superhuman wisdom.

CHAPTER IX.

Maxims of Ignatius concerning religion and government—Circumstances which followed his death—Baronius and Bellarmine—Miracles and canonization of the Saint.

HE who forgets himself and his own interests, for the service of the Lord, may rest assured that God will provide for him better than he could have done for himself. When we wish to succeed in great undertakings for the glory of our Divine Master, we must beware equally of worldly darkness and worldly light; that is to say, we must beware of vain fear, cowardice, and the pretended provisions of human prudence. At the same time, we should not act with rashness, counting upon miraculous assistance; but regulate our trust in God upon one infallible principle; that His power and His will are not subjected to ordinary laws; so that in an undertaking begun for His service, we need not limit ourselves merely to what may succeed through human strength or natural means. But also, before forming a resolution, we must abandon ourselves wholly to God, as if the success could only come from Him; and yet, by the choice of means, and by constant exertion, we must labor in the enterprise, as if every thing depended upon ourselves.

“ In our relations with our fellow-men, we ought to speak little, and listen much; and those few words should be spoken as if the whole world were to hear them, although we speak to one alone.

"He is most useful who gives himself up to one kind of employment; especially if he devotes himself entirely to it, as he ought to do, instead of making it subservient to his convenience.

"If we are much afraid of the world, we shall never do great things for God; for all that we do for God, raises great persecutions against us."

Ignatius had experienced the truth of this; for whilst he lived alone, in austerity and penance, all believed him to be a Saint; but as soon as he endeavored to render himself useful to his neighbor, he was treated as a magician, a heretic, a false and wicked man, worthy of imprisonment and death. Yet he never drew back, because perfect love casteth out fear. Thus he founded the Society upon that basis, and taught his children never to be cast down by persecutions; for that these would never cease until they had failed in their duty.

"The Society," says he, in the tenth part of his Constitutions, "was not established by human means, and so by human means it will neither be increased nor supported, still less will it be overthrown."

Ignatius had so little fear that the Society could be ruined by opposition or adversity, that on the contrary he drew the happiest omens for its success, precisely from the efforts directed against it; and the sequel justified his predictions. But to continue.

"Few persons comprehend what God would effect in their souls, if they gave themselves up entirely into His hands; and allowed His Grace to act within them. The rough and shapeless trunk of a tree, if it were capable of thought, could never believe that it might be formed into a statue, a miracle of sculpture; nor would it place itself under the hands of the sculptor, who by the knowledge of

his art, judges what he can form it into. Thus many persons, who hardly live as Christians, are far from imagining that they might become great Saints, if they allowed themselves to be moulded by the grace of God, and did not resist His beneficent influence.

"He who has recourse to God, in order to know His will, whether as to the choice of a state of life, or for any other matter in which his soul is interested, must first lay aside his own will entirely, and even divest himself of all particular inclination ; then generously place himself in the hands of his Divine Majesty, with a fixed resolution to perform His will, whatever it may be. He will not expect a celestial envoy to bear him orders from God, but will bring before his eyes some of the eternal truths of the Gospel, and by the assistance of the knowledge which they will give him, weigh all that is for and against what he proposes to do ; then after having deduced thence the different consequences, he will take a resolution, always directed towards the supreme end for which we were all created by God. And if doubts or perplexities still disturb his mind, let him have recourse to the consideration of death and the final judgment, and he will learn to act now as he should wish to have done, when at the moment of entering the portals of eternity.

"As for those who would wish an angel from Heaven to descend with the assurance that it would be good for their souls, were they to consecrate themselves to God in a religious life, they should rather desire the assurance of an angel that they will be able to live in the world, and secure their salvation ; so great are the dangers there, and so disproportioned the assistance which can be procured ; whereas in the cloister it is so easy to find not only security but holiness, that it seems almost miraculous that any one should

fall into mortal sin in a religious life, or that having fallen, he should not be able to rise again.

“He who possesses God, although he has nothing, cannot want for any thing; because God is the supreme and universal good, and with God we possess all other good.” Conformably to this, Ignatius says, when writing to Peter Contarini: “Until now, through the Divine goodness, we live happily, and every day proves to us more thoroughly the truth of that saying: ‘*having nothing, yet possessing all things.*’ I speak of that *omnia* which Christ our Lord promises to those who seek first the kingdom of Heaven. And if to those who seek first the kingdom of Heaven, He will add all other things, how could any thing be wanting to those who seek nothing but the kingdom of Heaven? to those who desire nothing but the dew of Heaven, without wishing for the fat of the earth; to those whose hearts are not divided between things earthly and heavenly, but whose eyes are fixed upon Heaven alone?”

“Those who are not called to that first and most sublime degree of perfection, which consists in desiring only the possession of God, must at least aspire to the second, which consists in possessing earthly things, without being possessed by them. If we do not abandon them for God, at least let them be entirely subordinate to God; and however numerous they may be, let them be always placed below that which the Gospel calls, *the one thing needful*.

“Although amongst virtues and their different acts, there are some of a more elevated nature, or a more excellent degree of merit than others, yet it is not always the most perfect which is the best for each individual, but that which, under certain circumstances, suits him best. Thus for example, if during prayer, God were to grant us feelings of grief for our sins, we ought not to turn from them, in

order to fix our contemplation upon the infinite perfections of God, or upon any other object however sublime in itself; because although intrinsically superior in one sense, it will nevertheless be less useful to us than that for which God has granted us a particular grace.

“If God sends you much suffering, it is a certain sign that he designs to make you a great Saint. If therefore you desire to become a Saint, you must also desire to suffer much. The love of God never kindles a brighter fire within the heart, than when it is fed with the wood of the Cross; of which our Lord made use, to offer up a sacrifice of Infinite Charity. All the honey which we can extract from the pleasures of the world, is not as sweet as the gall and vinegar presented to Jesus; that is to say as the bitterness of suffering, accepted through love for Him and in union with Him.

“We ought never, in the hopes of effecting a greater good in future, whether in the service of God or for the salvation of souls, to neglect that which is present, and in our power at the time, however middling it may appear to us; for if solid and durable, it is preferable to that which, although intrinsically superior, is distant and uncertain; and we are frequently exposed to lose the one, without gaining the other.”

Such was the teaching of Ignatius, and his conduct was in conformity with it; for when an offer was made him to found Colleges of the Society in different parts of Spain; finding that the small number of the members would make it difficult to establish new houses without injuring those which already existed, by withdrawing several of the Fathers from them to transfer them elsewhere, he deferred the execution of these plans to a more convenient season. He would not diminish the number of the Fathers in our houses,

because he considered the maintenance of religious discipline as more important than the institution of new colleges ; and was aware that this discipline was rarely preserved where the members are few ; and that when it is destroyed, the Order itself is in danger.

“Natural talents,” said Ignatius, “are only efficacious for our neighbor’s welfare, when they are directed by the interior spirit, and derive their strength from it, since God then blesses them, and directs them by His hand, as when Elisæus put his hands over the hands of King Joas, so that when the arrows were fired from his bow, each performed its appointed work.”

Thus in the tenth part of his Constitutions, wishing to lay down the methods which he considered most efficacious for maintaining in the Society the true spirit of its Institute, he expresses himself thus : “For preserving and increasing the spirit appropriate to the Society, and consequently for attaining the object which it proposes to itself, namely, that of guiding the souls of men towards their only and supernatural end ; those means which adapt the instruments to the Divine Hand, and prepare them for a union with God, are more efficacious than those which arrange them for the use of men. Such are, goodness and virtue, and principally charity, and a pure intention of serving God, perfect communion with Him in devotional exercises, as well as sincere zeal for the welfare of souls, and for the glory of God who created and redeemed them.”

For this reason Ignatius preferred simple and truly virtuous men, to those of great talents and middling virtue ; yet the latter he kept in the Society for their utility in certain works. But he delivered the Society from those who had nothing in their favor but noble birth united to talents ; as was seen in the case of many men, who stood very high

in the esteem of the world ; or at least he prevented them from having communication with their neighbors until they had learned that the essential points by which they might hope to benefit others, were wanting in them ; namely, virtue and an interior spirit ; even although they appeared to have the advantage over their companions in talents and natural gifts.

“ And thus,” as Father Lainez remarked, “ the art of preaching was not in the case of Ignatius, conformable to any rule of eloquence ; yet his words possessed more power than the most studied efforts of oratory ; because every talent has precisely the value which God gives it, and He imparts that value to it, only inasmuch as it is united to Him in the performance of good works ; like an instrument in the hands of an artificer.”

“ There are in spiritual life,” says Ignatius, “ two dangerous moments ; that of abundance, and that of scarcity ; I mean that of consolation, and that of dryness. The first may render us proud, if we deceive ourselves by imagining that it is the fruit of our own merits, instead of being the alms of the Lord, often dealt forth more abundantly to those poorest in virtue and most in need of support. The second may lead us to sadness, regret, diffidence ; as if God, because He veils His face from us, had abandoned us entirely, and because He does not send us the refreshing dews of Paradise, had cursed us with sterility, like the mountains of Gilboa.

“ In these two different states of the soul it is necessary, in order not to leave the path of duty, that the one should assist the other. Thus in abandonment, let us recall to our minds the consolations which we formerly enjoyed ; and it is not that we deserved them then, if we are not worthy of them now ; but that it had pleased the Lord to look upon

us with pity, and grant us that favor; like the master who throws some delicate morsel from his table to the faithful animal which watches his movements, and seems to claim his attention.

“When, on the contrary, we are filled with consolation, let us remember what we are in times of dryness, and what we shall be when the fountains of holy joy are dried up; those which, as Job says, “If he withhold the waters, all things shall be dried up.” Let us also take special care, in those days when we feel disconsolate, arid and afflicted, to take no resolution contrary to that which we had formed when our spirit was happy and serene; in the same way, when our heart overflows with celestial joys, we should beware of making rash promises or forming precipitate engagements, or binding ourselves by vows difficult to observe, and especially immutable and perpetual. We must, on the contrary, delay until the ardor by which we are, as it were, carried out of ourselves, shall have subsided, so that we may act through mature reflection, and not through impetuous feeling.”

It was precisely this reason, namely, that when we are agitated by some vehement emotion, we are very different from what we are in our natural state, which prevented Ignatius from ever giving credence to the promises of those whom, from their frequent lapses in duty, he was at length obliged to dismiss from the Society, notwithstanding all their tears and protestations. He knew that the violent emotions which gave birth to these vows and promises, were like a torrent which has overflowed its banks, rushes down with rapidity, and soon returns to its first condition. If he resolved to receive again some of those whom he had expelled, he never did so until they had been subjected to long and severe trials; to months of penance, to pilgrimages,

to long service in the hospitals under the inspection of the Fathers ; until morally assured by their conduct that their change of life was likely to prove stable and enduring.

Francis Cortero, while still a novice, and very young, had a very gay disposition, and was much given to laughter. Ignatius, meeting him one day, as he walked along with a smiling countenance : " Francis," said he, " I hear that you are always laughing." The novice cast down his eyes, humbly awaiting a severe reprimand from his Superior. " And I, my son," continued the Saint, " say to you : Laugh and rejoice in the Lord ; for a good Religious has no cause for sadness, but on the contrary, many reasons to be joyful. I repeat, then, be always gay ; and you will always be so, if you are at the same time humble and obedient. I particularly recommend to you these two points ; because it appears to me that you possess talents of no ordinary nature, which in time may render you fit for offices of the highest trust ; and were it to happen that they were not confided to you, and you failed in humility, you might experience regret and discontent. I observe also that the air here and this life in Rome do not suit you ; but although it is probable that you wish to be sent into Flanders, it is my intention to order you to Sicily. Therefore you see, that were your heart to be set upon any particular places or employments, obedience would often cause you to be disappointed ; and hence might arise sadness and melancholy. Therefore be always humble and obedient, and you will always be as cheerful and happy as you now are."

These words are rather a universal rule, applicable to all, than an advice adapted to one alone ; for it would, in truth, be as strange to find sadness in a Religious, who seeks nothing but God, as it would be surprising to see one happy and cheerful, who desired anything besides God.

We learn from Father James Mirone, the means employed by Ignatius for extirpating from the hearts of his children, any obstinate and rebellious vice. "Our Father Ignatius," says this Religious, "was accustomed to say that meditation and a certain preparation of the soul, do in some measure tie the hands of our corrupt nature; so that we can afterwards succeed in uprooting our vicious inclinations, without finding too much resistance. Besides this, we ought for the same purpose to examine our hearts with careful diligence, and call ourselves to account for all that we have done, said, and thought. Still better shall we succeed if we have a companion animated by the same spirit, with whom we make an agreement to warn each other mutually of our respective faults." When Ignatius undertook to correct some one of a long-neglected vice, he employed so many and such various methods, that he rarely failed in his purpose. One of the principal methods which he prescribed, was a frequent self-examination concerning the particular vice which was to be extirpated, and this at fixed and appointed hours; and in order to avoid all negligence or forgetfulness, a faithful friend had the charge of ascertaining, before dinner, and before retiring to rest, whether these examinations had been faithfully accomplished. Ignatius also required of the Brother whose spiritual cure he had undertaken, to observe and admonish all who fell into the same fault; (which was a tacit admonition to himself to avoid that which he reproved in others;) and each relapse into the same sin, was followed by a proportionate act of penitence.

"Let him," said the Saint, "whose nature is rebellious and impetuous, not be discouraged, as if he were thereby rendered incapable of becoming virtuous. Let him take courage, and endeavor to conquer himself; and let him re-

member that one of these victories over himself is worth more than many acts of virtue performed by others, of a more insensible and imperturbable nature. This gradual advance in the path of virtue towards God, is like the walking of St. Peter upon the water ; for although at the beginning he yielded to fear, and felt himself about to sink, yet he reached Christ first, and more gloriously than those who rejoined Him in the bark.

“ Besides this, we often observe those who are born with a hard and difficult disposition, yet who succeed in conquering it by dint of courage, capable of performing great enterprises in the service of God ; because this very hardness and obstinacy of their nature, when brought to bear upon spiritual things, is neither satisfied with a small amount of good, nor is it easily weakened or discouraged.”

When Ignatius discovered in a violent man, a true desire to conquer himself, even although he occasionally gave way to criminal fits of rage, he expected to obtain more from him in the end than from one whose character was perhaps less defective, but who possessed less courage. It happened once that he found it necessary to reprove two of the Fathers for a certain fault, which both had committed, and which merited expulsion. The one answered him with hasty and impatient words ; the other turned away to conceal that anger which was depicted on his countenance, though he said nothing. The Saint, who thoroughly understood the character of both, kept the first, and dismissed the other.

When charity and courtesy are not sincere, they are nothing but vanity and deception. We must therefore beware of ever promising so much, that our actions cannot come up to the level of our words. Thus, when Father Lainez was sent from Florence to Genoa, by St. Ignatius, conformably to the request of the Venetian Republic, in

order to found a College of the Society, Ignatius gave him special instructions to promise much less aid in the way of spiritual ministrations than he and his brethren intended to perform.

“Penance and mortification cannot be measured out in an equal degree to all ; nor even can a general rule be laid down for each individual as to his practice of them at all times. Our body does not belong to ourselves, but to God ; and to Him we have to render an account, not only if by too much care and indulgence we have made it the cause of our falling into sin ; but also, if by indiscreet treatment we have rendered it incapable of performing works of greater utility to ourselves, and more conducive to the glory of God. If the flesh revolts against the spirit, it must be subdued by extraordinary austerities, until it grows humble and submissive ; but when the spirit is at peace with the body, and we ourselves disposed to serve God with so loyal a heart, that we should prefer a thousand deaths to the misfortune of offending Him once, then we ought to use corporal mortifications with discretion, lest the flesh, too much weakened, should clog the works of the spirit ; whereas being once as it were deadened, it follows the spirit, and aids it in its labors.”

It was by wise counsels such as these, that Ignatius had curbed the fervor of the Blessed Francis Borgia, who, whilst he was still in the world, inclined towards excessive rigor. It is true that with regard to bodily mortifications, it is difficult to seize the just medium between too much and too little ; for self-love, like a skilful magician, fascinates our eyes, and makes the slightest penances appear hurtful to our health, nay, even dangerous to our existence. For this reason we are recommended by St. Ignatius not to listen too easily to the complaints of our senses, and instead of renouncing all penances, to vary them, though without

diminishing their severity, until with God's help we discover clearly the extent of our strength.

"Reason," says he elsewhere, "distinguishes man from animals, and ought not only to act as a curb upon our passions, so that they may not break forth in actions or in words unbecoming a man ; but it ought also to regulate our mind by reflection. That we may not err in our own personal concerns, we ought to consider them as if they were entirely unconnected with us, and as if we were called upon to pass judgment upon them, not according to interest or feeling, but according to truth and reason. Having decided for or against the case, whatsoever it may be, according to the rules of human prudence, the decision which we come to must not be definitive, until we have made a new examination, and discussion of the question in the presence of God, and by the aid of prayer ; for it often happens that the narrow limits of human reason prevent us from discerning those things which we can only discover by humbly having recourse to God ; since it is only by the Divine light that we can distinguish the eternal laws which ought to guide us.

"When the devil would subdue a soul to his dominion, he watches it until he discovers its unguarded or weak side ; there he plants his batteries, and lays siege to the place. His plan is usually to direct the attack towards the predominant passion ; availing himself of the peculiar disposition or state of the soul for carrying it to any extreme. Thus if the conscience is too easy, he renders it still more so ; and that which is too scrupulous, he involves in still greater perplexities ; so that the man of easy conscience may fall from slight faults into grievous sins, and he who is already too scrupulous, may be led to uneasiness, alarm, and finally to despair.

"His nocturnal attacks are usually the most perfidious,

especially at the moment of awakening, when our reason, still half slumbering, is taken as it were by surprise, before it has recognized the enemy. Besides, our solitude emboldens the demon, for his most dangerous snares are laid in secret; since, to discover his artifices is to confound him, and when known, he is half conquered. We must also observe that sometimes he weakens our dread of falling, to render our fall still more certain; at other times, on the contrary, he shows us terrific and gigantic phantoms, so that terror may take possession of our soul, and persuade us of the impossibility of resistance. Then his attacks and his boldness increase, as a woman when struggling with a man, gains courage when she perceives that he is weak and cowardly.

“Another artifice of the enemy, which he employs when he has not succeeded in seducing a soul from the path of perfection, which would have led it to God, and in persuading it to return to the world, is to represent to it the perfection and beauty of some other state of life, not less holy perhaps than that in which it now is, but contrary to or different from it; until believing in this fancied superiority, and desirous of greater perfection, it abandons that which it had already acquired, and the state which was so suitable to it. Thus to the solitary, he will present as truly apostolic, a life passed in the service of his neighbor; and to those already devoted to that service, he will clothe a life of solitude in celestial colors. The tempter proceeds in the same way with regard to good works. To induce us to abandon some present good, he fills our mind with a vehement desire to undertake one still greater, which we shall never carry into execution; for whenever we attempt to do so, he will show us the insurmountable difficulties which he had hitherto concealed.

“ Finally, let us remember, that God not only reserves an eternal crown for those who triumph over the efforts of the demon, but that even in this world, he renders us more invulnerable precisely on that point where we have most vigorously resisted ; and replaces all the affliction and bitterness which our resistance had cost us, by the sweetest consolation and most ineffable happiness.

“ The devil generally works more externally than internally ; he frequently imparts a certain outward air of sanctity, which tends to increase pride, and to deceive the beholders. God on the contrary works rather inwardly than outwardly, establishes solid virtues within the soul, and infuses a true spirit of sanctity into the heart ; though sometimes leaving this usual path, it pleases Him to communicate to His most faithful or most favored servants, the external impress of the heavenly graces which He has bestowed upon them.”

St. Ignatius made these remarks one day after having listened to one of his friends, a pious monk of St. Dominic, who related how in Bologna, in a Convent of nuns of the same Order there was one who frequently fell into ecstasies ; and who could not be restored to herself, even by bodily pain ; who while in that condition, felt nothing, neither a burn nor a wound ; but yet at the order of her Superior, instantly recovered. Frequently the stigmata were observed on her feet and hands ; her side was wounded, and her head bathed in blood, as if transfixed by a crown of thorns. Of all this narrative, Ignatius admired nothing but the promptitude with which she obeyed the voice of him who had a right to her obedience. It was after the departure of the Dominican that he made this last observation to Father Ribadeneira, and the sequel proved his wisdom ; for it was soon after discovered that all these miraculous appearances of extraordinary sanctity, were nothing but artifices of the demon, and

illusions of the unfortunate woman herself. Nor would Ignatius ever permit his children to consider ecstasies, raptures and other external signs as certain proofs of holiness; for which reason he reproved Father Martin Santa-Croce, then a novice both in religion and in the Society, because he believed the famous Magdalene de la Cruz to be a Saint; who indeed passed in Spain for one who had received extraordinary testimonies of her holiness from God; whereas she was in reality a miserable impostor, who deceived the public by her artifices, until being discovered, she was justly punished by the Inquisition.

The usual maxim of St. Ignatius was, that we must form the *inner man*, and hold in higher esteem the power of mortifying our own will, than that of raising a dead man to life. He set so high a value upon hidden virtues, and feared so much those which being outwardly seen, might serve to engender pride, that often he interrupted his children in a course of extraordinary austerities, which might have been remarked, to show them that obedience is better than sacrifice. He acted upon this principle with a Spanish Brother Coadjutor, who was very fervent in regard to all corporal mortification. He had requested permission from Ignatius, to fast during the whole forty days of Lent upon bread and water, without omitting any of the labors of his office. The Saint, always ready to second in all his children the interior spirit by which they were guided, granted him permission to do so. But as the Brother showed less strength in conquering his passions, than in subduing his flesh, and also because Ignatius feared that when Lent was finished, he might look back upon this severe fast with feelings of self-esteem, and might consider himself superior to his brethren; he ordered him on Good-Friday to eat fish and other food at the common table. Thus without depriving the Religious of the

merit of the fast which he was disposed to continue, he added the still greater merit of obedience, and of giving up his own will to that of his Superior. When he observed any of the brethren very much occupied, and grieved by the disorders which they saw in public affairs, and filled with a zealous and reforming spirit concerning these things, he would advise them to direct towards themselves and their own affairs, all the solicitude which they uselessly spent upon those of others. And he gave them as a rule, to consider what were the things of which God would one day demand of them an account, and to prepare themselves for rendering that account, since our eternal sentence will depend, not upon the works of others, but on our own.

He who labors for the good of his neighbor will always find humility more efficacious than authority, and will succeed better by yielding than by resisting. When the Society first opened public schools in Rome, certain professors, seeing the number of their scholars daily diminish, and consequently their own pecuniary advantages, went in a state of violent exasperation to our Brothers, not to complain, but to insult them in terms unworthy of sensible or reasonable men. They met with no reply but a modest silence, which greatly confused them; and as it was possible that the same scenes might be renewed in other cities, Ignatius wrote to his children, wherever they were established, enjoining them to give no other answer to such attacks but silent humility. If they were taxed with ignorance, as the Fathers in Rome had been, he forbade them to come to any discussion upon that point, but merely to answer, "It is true that we know little, but that little we willingly teach for the love of God, to those who are ignorant of it." "All important works," added he, "should be founded upon humility, because with that basis, they are certain to succeed." In con-

formity with this precept, when Fathers Lainez and Salmeron went to the Council of Trent, he recommended them to teach the children the elements of Christian doctrine, and to serve the sick in the hospitals. Speaking of certain men more zealous than prudent, who, to effect one good caused a thousand evils; now disputing with bishops, now troubling the peace of their neighbors, whence arose instead of edification much trouble and scandal, Ignatius observed: "These men build with one hand and destroy with the other. To place one stone, they pull down a hundred."

Thus he blamed as inconsiderate, the zeal of Father Adrian, who in order to obtain young students for the Society, raised the whole town of Louvain against it. As the Saint always laid down as a maxim, that it was better to increase one single degree in virtue, than to aim at acquiring many virtues at the risk of our salvation; so he also taught that in regard to others, a little good done calmly and in an edifying manner was preferable to great deeds causing trouble and offence.

For this reason, whenever the Bishops appeared averse or ill disposed to the Society, he withdrew from the Fathers a part of the privileges which the Sovereign Pontiffs had granted them, preferring to do a little good in peace and security, than to perform great works at the risk of producing tumult and trouble.

To employ Religious in matters which concerned the service of God, to the detriment of the regular observances of their Order, is to cut down the tree in order to gather the fruits. Therefore Ignatius would never grant the request of the Duke of Ferrara, a great friend and benefactor of the Society, that he would give him one of the Fathers as a preceptor to the Prince, his son, which would have obliged him to leave our colleges, and to live at Court. He also pro-

hibited the Superiors from attaching themselves to the service of Bishops, when the distance from their own colleges might render their absence injurious to interior discipline. One of the principal reasons which prevented him from permitting the Society to take charge of the Inquisition in Portugal, was the danger which in process of time might have resulted to some of the members, had they accepted offices whose privileges exempted them from obedience to their own Order.

We have already mentioned that great knowledge of the human mind which distinguished Ignatius, and how he could accommodate himself to all natures, and make himself *omnibus omnia* ; and of this the following anecdote may serve as a proof.

He observed one day upon the street, an ill-dressed and miserable looking man, who groaned piteously as he walked along, and whose pale and haggard countenance announced the inward despair which preyed upon him. "Go," said he to his companion, "follow that man, and appear disposed to agree to all that he seems inclined to do. In a little while I shall come up, and also play my part." The companion of Ignatius followed the man out of the city, until they arrived at a solitary place, where it was the intention of the poor wretch to commit suicide. The Father approaching him, asked him who he was, why he was so miserable, and what were his intentions in coming to this deserted spot. "To put an end to my existence," answered the man, "to terminate in one moment, misfortunes which multiply daily, which I have neither the patience to endure, nor the hopes of remedying."

The Father not only listened to his complaints, but entered into all his troubles, and endeavored to attract his attention by speaking of his own affections. Whilst they were

talking, Ignatius came up, as if accidentally ; and asked them the cause of the sombre melancholy depicted on the countenances of both. The Father then related to him the misfortunes of the stranger, and how he had no other remedy but death. Then the Saint, in gentle and affectionate words, began to reason as if with them both, and to reanimate their confidence in God, to show the crime and the folly of him who deprives himself of life to escape from its miseries, as if with this short existence all were to finish ; whereas on the contrary, death is but the beginning of life eternal, and of those intolerable torments of hell which have no end. As he spoke, the unfortunate man was touched with a ray of divine grace, and turning to his companion, declared that this man spoke truth, and that God had sent him there for his salvation. And so, repenting of his folly, he returned to the city, resolving thenceforward to bear the burden of life and all its sorrows, with patience and resignation.

From intimate and familiar conversations with women, even with those who live a spiritual life, it is rare that there does not result either a flame which burns, or a smoke which blackens. One of the Fathers having confessed a sick woman, while his companion remained so far out of the way, that he could not see him ; although the Confessor was known to be a holy and virtuous old man, yet Ignatius ordered him as a public penance, to give himself the discipline during the recitation of the seven penitential psalms, and in the case of almost any other of the brethren, the punishment would have been more severe.

Even in the Indies, where their numbers were so few, Ignatius required the Fathers always to have a companion. We may observe also that in the old men Ignatius approved of a certain carefulness and modest neatness in external appearance, as an argument of a calm and well regulated mind.

In young men, on the contrary, he was pleased to observe, a certain negligence in dress, proving that they were indifferent as to their personal appearance, yet he would not suffer them to be dirty or disorderly; only showing his displeasure at any thing approaching to vanity or effeminacy. Having heard that one of the novices was accustomed to wash his hands with soap very carefully and frequently, more so than was customary amongst the others, he made a point of particularly observing his habits and inclinations, in order to discover whether he simply followed a natural love of cleanliness, or had any tendency to vanity or any desire to be distinguished.

To leave God for God, that is to say, to leave God in order to labor for the conversion of sinners, is a loss which procures a solid gain. If we have had the happiness to gain one soul to God, He knows well how to reward us when we are alone with Him in prayer, by communications more intimate than if, thinking only of ourselves, we had, in order to avoid a momentary dissipation of our thoughts, remained in solitude and retreat. This is what Ignatius called, moving in a circle of mutual influence; because prayer, kindling the love of God in our hearts, leads us forth to works of charity; which makes others know and love Him; and by leading those who neglected God, to know Him, and to love Him, we ourselves become more dear to Him, and more fitted to receive greater favors from Him in prayer. Besides, as Ignatius was wont to observe, we may communicate with our neighbor, without withdrawing our mind from God; and then we contract a practical habit of living in the presence of God, which makes us love him and find him in every person, every place and every action.

He who holds commune with his neighbors in order to gain them over to God, must understand and feel that he

lives in the midst of corruption. This must not cause him to withdraw from them, whatever may be his horror at their wickedness, for he must be prepared to handle not gold but mire, yet he cannot take too many precautions in order not to contract the leprosy which he seeks to cure, of which Ignatius had so much horror, that he sometimes said: "I could not have the courage to pass a night under the same roof with one of the Society whom I knew to be in a state of mortal sin."

To avoid condemning the actions of our neighbors, we must have recourse to their intentions, which are sometimes innocent, although their actions appear guilty; and if the action is so manifestly bad that there is no possibility of excusing it, we must search for extenuation of a violent temptation, and think that our weakness would probably have succumbed under the same, or perhaps under a less one. Ignatius practised these counsels so exactly, and so constantly endeavored to find a good intention in things which appeared inexcusable, that in the house, *the interpretations of Ignatius*, had passed into a proverb.

In a well regulated community, no wicked man can remain long undiscovered; whether it be that the constraint to which he is subjected becomes unbearable, or that God will not permit him long to contaminate it by his presence. There was in Rome a Brother with regard to whom report was far from favorable. Father Manares informed Ignatius of this, and asked him whether it were not well to prohibit him from approaching the Holy Communion, that he might not receive it sacrilegiously. "No," said the Saint, "we must not go so far. Let us leave it in the hands of the Lord, who will perhaps by this very means, lead us to discover the truth." And so in fact it happened; for the Divine Sacrament, like the bread which Christ gave to Judas, made the

hypocrite known ; and he was immediately expelled from the Society.

A change of place does not bring about a change of heart ; and he whose inclinations are vicious, carries them with him wherever he goes. Ignatius never permitted those who were unobservant of discipline in one college, to be sent to another, in hopes of reforming them ; for since the rules ought to be enforced with equal vigor in all the houses of the Order, these young men would have found the same motives for infringing them, and the same causes of discontent in all.

“He who is only useful to himself,” said Ignatius, “cannot be a fitting subject for the Society, the chief object of whose Institute is to be useful to others, rather than to ourselves.” Thus when he resolved to dismiss some useless novice, and his companions represented to him, that at least by remaining amongst them he might save his own soul, Ignatius replied that there was no want of other religious societies, of which that was the special object.

Yet we must not fail to remark, that truly holy men, of however low an order in point of talent, were always regarded by Ignatius as amongst the most useful members of the Society. “For,” said he, “they preach silently by their good example, and those who observe the holiness of their lives, are perhaps more forcibly incited to a love of virtue, than they would have been by the most eloquent discourses.” Father Faber frequently observed (and whatever he taught he practised), “that the children of Ignatius should leave the impress of sanctity wheresoever they passed, as their sign and token ; in visits, in familiar conversations, in grave discussions, in travelling, nay even in the inns where they causally rested. For this,” added he, “neither great learning, nor great talents are necessary ; but within,

the Spirit of God, and without, modesty and discreet conversation."

It was a maxim of Ignatius, that the Superiors should not intermeddle too much in the affairs which are intrusted to the charge of those who occupy important offices under them ; thus using them merely as instruments for executing their orders ; first, because God grants to each individual the grace necessary for fulfilling the duties of his position or employment ; secondly, if the Superior conducts the affairs himself, he who is charged with them cannot feel the same interest or employ the same zeal in acquitting himself of the duties of his office ; thirdly, a man who has the immediate direction of any affair, learns much more from experience, than a Superior can at all calculate or foresee by his own reflections ; fourthly, many things must constantly occur, concerning which no one can come to a prudent resolution, independently of certain circumstances, which cannot be known or appreciated excepting by those who have the habitual direction of these affairs ; and finally, because it is better that the Superior should reprove his subordinates, should they err in some particular, than be corrected by them, were he to err through want of knowledge of the affairs which he endeavors to direct.

It frequently happens that the most holy men, but who, according to worldly ideas, are totally devoid of prudence, succeed in the most important affairs better than others apparently wiser, but less holy ; because the first take counsel from God, and rest all their hopes upon Him, and because God in return inspires them with wholesome thoughts, and blesses all their undertakings. Nevertheless, holiness alone is generally insufficient for one who has to govern others ; in which case much prudence and judgment is also required ; and without which the administration of the Superiors would

insensibly pass into the hands of men whose services would be necessary to supply the absence of wisdom which even holiness cannot replace.

Ignatius never exposed the virtue of his novices, especially of the younger ones, to dangerous trials; at that age when the mind is equally apt to receive good or bad impressions, like the tender buds which burst forth in spring, bright and beautiful, but which a breath may dry up and wither away. But Ignatius strictly required from these novices that severe discipline and mortification which the Constitutions prescribe; because he who desires to be admitted into the Society, must at least possess the degree of virtue considered necessary for admittance; he only avoided exposing them to temptations dangerous to their virtue. Thus if some had endured with great firmness and overcome the opposition of their family to their entrance into a religious life, he did not leave them in their neighborhood, but sent them to some distance from their place of residence. In the same way, when through the suggestions of Satan or of men, any of the members were tempted to leave the Society, he treated them with the most tender charity and compassion; but punished those who had inconsiderately been the cause of their temptation. He therefore severely reproved one of the Fathers, who, in a spiritual conversation with a young novice, had drawn great examples of holiness from men belonging to another Order, as if, said Ignatius, there were not a sufficient number of men belonging to the Society, whose virtuous and holy lives might be proposed as models, without exposing a young novice to the dangers of instability, by leading his affections towards persons and things not belonging to his own Institute. But enough has been said to prove the spiritual wisdom of our holy and blessed Founder.

Let us now proceed to relate the circumstances which followed his death.

As soon as Ignatius had passed from this land of exile to a better life, the report circulated throughout Rome; and crowds of people collected from all quarters of the city to visit the remains of the Saint. One of the cardinals found great difficulty, with the assistance of his servants, in making his way through the dense mass, to the bedside of our departed Father, to kiss his hands, and touch them with his chaplet. In the church where his body was publicly exposed, Fabricius de Massini, a Roman nobleman, was unable as he assures us, notwithstanding all his efforts, young and vigorous as he was, to pierce the crowd in order to approach his venerated remains; and when pieces of every thing belonging to the Saint had been distributed, it was necessary to issue severe orders to prevent the people from tearing off fragments of his clothes, or even from cutting off pieces of his flesh as relics.

The body was kept above ground two whole days, and on the evening of the 1st of August, it was placed in a wooden coffin, and interred in the church of the Society, then called Santa Maria della Strada, in the principal chapel, on the left-hand side of the altar.

A Roman lady, named Benardina, the wife of Andrew de Nerucci, with her daughter, a young girl of fourteen, who was frightfully disfigured by scrofula, and given over as incurable by four physicians by whom she had been attended for several years, was present at the sermon preached by Father Benedict Palmia upon the life and virtues of St. Ignatius. As she listened a feeling of great confidence arose in her heart, and an intense desire to obtain his intercession for the recovery of her daughter. She endeavored, but in vain, to approach the coffin, in order that the young girl

might touch the precious remains before they were lowered into the tomb. Yet unwilling to renounce all hope, she entreated one of the Fathers to make the sign of the Cross upon her daughter with some relic of the Saint.

Father Cornelius Vischafen did so, with a piece of cloth which had been worn by St. Ignatius; and immediately, in the presence of all that vast multitude, the girl was entirely healed, and both mother and daughter left the church praising God, the one for her miraculous recovery, and the other for the happiness which he had bestowed upon her.

The body of the Saint remained in this chapel till the year 1568, until it was necessary to remove it, in order to make room for the foundation of the new Church of Jesus. This removal was made by orders of the blessed Francis Borgia, then General of the Order, on the 31st of July, and the sacred deposit was placed in another part of the old church.

There lived at that time, in Rome, a great servant of God, Father Julius Mancinelli, who had been frequently favored with supernatural manifestations. He was unaware of the intended removal of these precious remains; and on the preceding evening, heard the sound of such heavenly music, mingled with so celestial a harmony of voices singing the praises of God, that he felt as if transported into Paradise. All night he heard this wonderful music, which lasted till the following day, when the relics of St. Ignatius were transferred to their new resting-place; and then the Father understood that this solemn rejoicing had taken place in Heaven, in honor of his blessed Father.

The new edifice, called the Church of Jesus, a work due to the truly royal munificence of Cardinal Alexander Farnese, being finished, Father Claudius Aquaviva, then General, in presence of the deputies of all the provinces, and

of all the Fathers of the House in Rome, caused the body of St. Ignatius to be transferred thither on the 19th of November, 1587. It was placed in the principal chapel, on the right side of the altar ; and on the stone which covered it, these simple words were inscribed : "*Ignatio, Societatis Jesu Fundatori ; To Ignatius, Founder of the Society of Jesus.*"

This second removal was, like the first, distinguished by a miracle. These holy relics were still in the sanctuary, when a number of the Fathers having assembled together to see and revere them, they appeared surrounded by stars about the size of a golden sequin, which shone and sparkled with resplendent radiance.

It seemed, then, that the Lord Himself authorized the children of Ignatius to honor their Father with other demonstrations besides those of private and ardent affection. But not only to his children were all public marks of veneration for his remains prohibited, but to pious souls of every denomination. Seven lamps which some unknown hand had hung around his tomb, doubtless as *ex voto*, were withdrawn. But at length, the piety of two illustrious Cardinals of the sacred college, conquered the firmness of the General Aquaviva ; this happened in the year 1599. The anniversary of the death of Ignatius was near at hand, when Cardinal Belarmin, in order to reanimate both in his own heart and in the hearts of the Fathers of the Roman college, a feeling of tender devotion towards their common Father, offered to deliver a discourse upon that occasion, at the tomb of the Saint.

Cardinal Baronius, on learning the intention of his colleague, resolved to be present, to honor the memory of one who both in life and death had been considered as a Saint by his spiritual Father, St. Philip Neri.

The discourse was equal to the subject, and worthy of the orator. He proved that the different virtues and merits of Ignatius reunited all the characteristics of perfect holiness, and as one well versed and deeply learned in sacred rites, deduced as a consequence that no requisite was wanting for his canonization.

All his audience were affected by this discourse, and their hearts burned within them, but no one was more moved than Cardinal Baronius. No sooner was the sermon finished than rising up he went to the tomb of Ignatius, and prostrating himself on the ground, repeatedly kissed the earth which covered his precious remains; then, after lifting his heart to God in long and fervent prayer, he arose, and turning to the orator, said that he had come to listen and not to speak; but that the words which he had heard had affected him, like the waters of a river which put in movement the wheels of a mill, in themselves heavy and motionless; and so saying, he also commenced a glowing eulogium upon the virtues and merits of Ignatius. He afterwards inquired of the Fathers why they had no representation of Ignatius upon his tomb, and gently intimated to them that an absence of respect or affection might almost be inferred from an omission which was in fact only the result of an excess of modesty. He then desired the portrait of the Saint to be brought, hung it himself over the tomb, and placed on either side the offerings which several pious souls had already brought as tokens of gratitude for favors obtained through his prayers. Then Cardinal Baronius and with him Cardinal Bellarmine knelt down again, together with all the Fathers, who shed tears of joy.

Their example led the way for the devotion of the people, which increased daily. God Himself deigned to testify His approbation, by the daily miracles which He

wrought, not only in Rome but throughout all Christendom, by the intercession of St. Ignatius. Pope Paul V., moved by these repeated manifestations, permitted the canonical proofs of the virtues and miracles of this holy servant of God to be collected, in the year 1605.

This work was terminated in 1609, and the principal princes of Europe, together with the inhabitants of the kingdoms of Arragon, Castille, Valencia, &c., united their supplications to the Sovereign Pontiff for the canonization of Ignatius. The bull to that effect was granted by the Pope, with the permission to celebrate an Office in his honor. Monsignore Nicholas Zambecari, the consistorial advocate, who pleaded the cause of this canonization before Gregory XV., enumerates the various virtues and miracles which induced so many monarchs to claim for Ignatius the honors due to a Saint; and thus terminates his petition: ". . . . Now these miracles and many others (since more than two hundred are recognized in the acts), together with the depositions of upwards of sixteen hundred witnesses, canonically examined concerning the life and virtues of Ignatius; and finally, the universal admiration caused by a life entirely devoted to the spiritual welfare of mankind, have induced not only Rome and the people who have enjoyed habitually the benefit of his presence, to supplicate the Holy Apostolic See to declare him worthy of the honors which the Church renders to the Saints; but have also been the cause of uniting in this supplication, the Kings of Spain, Philip II., and Philip III., Sigismund King of Poland, the Empress Mary, and many other princes and bishops who addressed earnest entreaties to Clement VIII., upon this subject. All renewed these supplications with even greater earnestness to Paul V., and to these the most Christian King, Henry IV., added his solicitations. When your

Holiness was, to the great joy of all the Christian world, called to fill the Apostolic chair, it is well known how ardently King Louis XIII. entreated your Holiness to inscribe in the number of the Saints, one whom he had chosen to protect his kingdom from heresy; and no favor which that monarch can ever receive from the liberality of your Holiness could be as precious to him as the honors which he solicits for Ignatius. Your Holiness, favorably disposed to receive those numerous solicitations, has committed the examination of the cause to the members of this august Assembly, reunited for that purpose. Meanwhile, new letters and more earnest solicitations have arrived from Maximilian Duke of Bavaria, and also from the Emperor Ferdinand, who will consider it, he says, a glory and protection to all Germany, should he who was chosen by God to found an Order which has been the safeguard of the Faith in that country, be reckoned amongst the Saints."

The Pontiff Gregory XV. (whose memory will ever be revered by the Society), moved on the one hand by the great merits of our holy Founder, and on the other, by these earnest solicitations; on the 12th of March, in the year 1622, on the day of St. Gregory the Great, solemnly canonized Ignatius, to the universal joy of the Christian Church.

Urban VIII., who succeeded Gregory in the Pontificate, in registering the memory of Ignatius in the Roman martyrology, chose from amongst the different formulæ presented to him, the following, equally worthy of the Pontiff and of the Saint: "On the 31st of July is celebrated in Rome, the feast of St. Ignatius, Confessor, Founder of the Society of Jesus; illustrious for his holiness, his miracles, and his zeal in propagating the Catholic religion throughout the whole world."

BOOK FIFTH.

CHAPTER I.

Account of the different miracles performed by St. Ignatius during his life, and after his death.

I HAVE thought it well to record at the end of this work, some of the miracles by which it pleased God to manifest the favor in which he held the intercession of Ignatius. We shall thus also see another proof of the scrupulous care of the Church in making these investigations, when it is in question to call upon the faithful to venerate publicly one of their companions in this land of sorrow and exile ; and as that great servant of God, Fray Luis de Granada, justly observed upon reading the life of the Saint :

“ What greater miracle can there be than that of a soldier without learning, persecuted by all the world, yet chosen by God as an instrument for founding a Society which has borne so many fruits, and which in so short a time, has spread itself through all the nations of the earth ! ” This was also the idea of Cardinal Ubaldini, when in presence of Gregory XV., he spoke of those singular merits in St. Ignatius, which authorized his canonization : “ We surely have as many miracles of the blessed Ignatius Loyola, as many proofs of his sanctity as we have throughout the world illustrious acts of devotedness of the Society of Jesus to his Holy See, and the Catholic religion.”

The account of those which I am about to narrate, have been taken from the Papal Bull, and are found in the statement of the Auditors of the Rota, in the judicial acts of the canonization, or else in the official reports and public acts drawn up in several places.

In relating them I have observed no chronological order either as to places or subjects, my object being rather, by means of variety, to spare the reader the weariness of perusing a series of monotonous details.

On the first Monday of Pentecost, in the year 1618, Mary Nateri left the village of Loano where she resided, with the intention of going to Arasio, a village in the Genoese territory, about twelve miles distant, in order to perform a pilgrimage to the Church of Our Lady of Mount Carmel. On her way she was overtaken by a storm, and the deluge of rain which fell without ceasing for one whole day and night, obliged her to delay her return until the morning of Wednesday, and then to keep along by the sea-shore, the other more inland road having become impracticable. She was in company with her mother, whom she preceded about twenty paces. Suddenly, Mary entered the dry bed of the torrent Antognano, without perceiving that the water was rushing furiously down upon her, and notwithstanding the cries of her mother, who perceiving the danger, called aloud to her to come back; but the noise of the waves breaking upon the beach made it impossible that her voice should be heard.

In a moment the girl found herself struggling with the impetuous waters, and on turning to rejoin her mother, lost her footing, and was borne away into the sea.

The unfortunate mother seeing her child about to perish before her eyes, with loud cries invoked the aid of Our Lady of Mount Carmel, whom the poor girl herself also called upon, every time that she rose to the surface of the

water. This young girl had a tender devotion to the Blessed Virgin, and a fervent desire to have her devotion accepted ; so that the preceding day, she had said in confession, though rather from the vehemence of her affection than from any feeling of presumption, that she did not think that the Holy Virgin loved and protected her as much as her love and devotion to that blessed Mother deserved. She soon found how much she was mistaken.

Hardly had she invoked the Blessed Virgin when she obtained her assistance, and found herself lying upon the water, her arms stretched out, her face turned towards the sky, and her feet joined as if they had been bound together. In this position, floating upon the sea, her mouth ejected without difficulty, all the water which she had swallowed. Still fervently invoking the protection of the Mother of God, the girl felt herself carried further out to sea, while the words which she had spoken the evening before, returning to her memory, filled her with remorse, and she thought that she was now punished for her ingratitude.

Besides the aid of the Queen of Heaven, she implored that of all the Saints whom she could recall to her mind. In St. Ignatius especially she felt great confidence, both because two of her brothers were members of the Society, and also because she remembered that a few days before she had dreamed that having fallen into the sea, the Saint had appeared with Our Lady of Mount Carmel, had saved her from drowning and brought her to land. Although at the time she had considered this as nothing but a dream, yet her heart had conceived in consequence a strong feeling of confidence and affection for the Saint. Therefore now in the midst of her danger, she called out: " Oh Blessed Ignatius, save me ! You know that two of my brothers are your children." At the moment when she pronounced these

words, she had already been carried out more than a mile from the shore. Suddenly, every thing disappeared from her eyes and her mind; the sea, the earth, the imminent danger of her position: and she fell into an ecstasy caused by the wonderful vision which she then beheld. She saw herself surrounded by a cloud of marvellous whiteness, which appeared to reach to Heaven, and was filled with a soft light, such as we perceive in the East, when the sun is about to rise. But although these beams of light had a more brilliant radiance, the eyes which looked upon them were not dazzled. This cloud formed as it were an amphitheatre, filled with angels resplendent in beauty, and more brilliant than the Sun, so that her eyes could not bear that radiance. Two of these bright spirits seemed to approach her, one holding in his hand a fawn-colored robe, the other a white one. She recognized the first as the habit of the Carmelites, which she had worn for several years in fulfilment of a vow.

Meanwhile she felt her sight grow stronger, and was able to look higher, where the light was still more brilliant; and as her eyes penetrated further, she beheld at a distance, so great that she could hardly distinguish her, a woman radiant in beauty, from whose heart streamed as it were floods of light, so bright and resplendent as almost to conceal her countenance. Then the young girl invoked St. Ignatius, hoping that he would fortify her sight, and thus enable her to behold more clearly that beautiful form, which as yet she could scarcely distinguish. Hardly had she invoked his name, when she saw him advance with extended arms, above all the angels, his countenance glowing and joyful; and as he looked at her without speaking, he approached so near, that she could distinguish his features.

At the same time, Mary beheld the Holy Virgin, who,

stretching out her arms, seemed to point towards Ignatius ; and to indicate that to him she was to address herself. But the girl raising her voice, and as if troubled by remorse of conscience, exclaimed : “ Oh Blessed Ignatius, pardon me ! for I now remember having doubted of your sanctity, and having blamed my brother Anthony for entering an Order, whose Founder was not canonized.” Then she heard the Holy Virgin say : “ Thou seest that he is indeed a Saint ; and that he hath come to aid thee, because thou hast called upon him. To him thou shalt owe thy safety.”

The girl understood this word safety as referring to her soul, not to deliverance from her present danger, which she had quite forgotten. Therefore, in hopes of being saved for ever by the assistance of St. Ignatius, she called on him with redoubled fervor ; whilst he, though without addressing a word to her, regarded her with so kindly an aspect, that her heart was filled with happiness and consolation. She enjoyed this vision for upwards of four hours, and yet, when she returned to herself, it seemed to her that it had lasted but a moment.

Meanwhile the mother, in her despair at seeing her daughter struggling in the midst of the waves, and in momentary expectation of beholding her perish, ran wildly along the shore crying for help. At length she met a worthy man, belonging to a neighboring village, a strong and bold swimmer, and he, recommending himself to the Holy Virgin, plunged into the water, and swam in the direction of the girl, breasting the angry waves, and the heavy sea. With much difficulty, and at the risk of his life, he succeeded in reaching her, and in seizing her by the arm. As he did so, the vision vanished from her eyes, and she trembled with cold and terror, as though she had but just fallen into the

water ; and as at the first moment, her deliverer and herself were plunged beneath the waves, it seemed to her that she was dragged down from Heaven by demons ; but his hold relaxed, and she returned to the surface, in the same position as before.

Then loudly she implored God, the Holy Virgin, and St. Ignatius, to deliver her from the hands of the Evil One ; and the swimmer observing that she remained on a level with the water, in a position wholly supernatural, endeavored to bring her to land, by pushing her gently before him, as he might have done to a plank of wood ; and in a wonderfully short time they reached the shore. From the moment when Mary was carried away by the torrent, and while her mother ran in all directions imploring assistance ; crowds of people had collected on the shore, some from curiosity, others in hopes of assisting her. One of the spectators, Peter Torre of Albenga, had observed that the young girl was surrounded by a bright light, which seemed formed of brilliant stars, or shining pearls, and believed that God would save her, especially as according to the common course of nature, she must have perished from the first ; and he it was who sent for the famous swimmer Thomas Moreno, whom the mother met, and who brought the girl back to land.

As soon as Mary reached the shore, she threw herself on her knees, and begged all the spectators to do the same, and to thank along with her, Our Lady and St. Ignatius, to whose intercession with God she owed her life. Some one ventured to ask her what that bright light could have been which was observed shining above her, and if she had not seen a vision, but she made no answer, and as soon as she had procured dry clothing, they accompanied her to the Church of the Fathers St Francis de Paula. When she

saw her mother, who had gone thither to implore the assistance of God, her first words were to remind her of the dream which she had related to her six days before, and which had come to pass so completely, since she had been delivered from a watery grave by the protection of Our Lady of Mount Carmel, and St. Ignatius. The miracle of which she had been the object being thus clear and manifest, the Carmelite Fathers of Loano made judicial investigations concerning it. The girl related how the Holy Virgin and St. Ignatius had assisted her, but kept silence concerning the vision, partly through scruples, and partly from not daring to say that she had seen the Mother of God, fearing lest it might be a source of vainglory to herself.

She confessed it indeed to some of the Religious, but under the promise of profound secrecy on their part. One night shortly after this, when offering up her gratitude to God in prayer, and thanking her two protectors, the Holy Virgin appeared to her, in the same form as she had seen her in the cloud, but her countenance expressed dissatisfaction and severity. The poor girl, seized with terror, melted into tears, unable to comprehend by what new fault she had incurred the displeasure of her benefactress.

Vainly however she conjured her to enlighten her mind; the Holy Virgin disappeared, and for more than three hours, Mary entreated the Lord Jesus to show her wherein she had erred. Wearied with weeping and sorrow, she leaned her head upon her hands to take a little repose; when suddenly a feeling of ineffable sweetness arose in her heart, and she heard a voice which thrice said these words: "My child, relate with truth all that my mother hath done for thee, and all that thou hast seen."

Then Mary, comprehending the cause of the displeasure of the Holy Mother of God, and also being now assured that

it was indeed that Blessed Mother whom she had beheld, resolved to give her authentic testimonial of every thing which had taken place ; it is her narrative which I have now transcribed, merely adding that which the mother, the swimmer, and all the other witnesses affirmed upon oath.

A monk who was preaching at Arbois, a village situated near Dole, in the Dutchy of Burgundy, was invited to dine one day at the house of Doctor Gillabos, a man of great virtue and learning. Hearing the holiness of Ignatius highly extolled, and the miracles wrought through his intercession reverently spoken of, this Religious turned them into ridicule, spoke with contempt of St. Ignatius, and said that the Founder of the Jesuits might perhaps be able to cure the tooth-ache, but he believed that to be the extent of his skill. These words, spoken by one who professed a religious life, shocked and grieved the guests. The conversation languished, and a mournful silence seemed to pervade the circle, for the family were all devoted to St. Ignatius.

This took place on the Monday before mid-Lent, and it seemed that the Lord had more regard to the good of the people, than to the wickedness of the monk, for he permitted him to finish the course of his preachings. But on Easter Monday, he was again invited to the Doctor's house ; and then it was found that the time had arrived when God was to punish him for the scandal he had given.

He held in his hand a glass of wine which he was about to carry to his lips, when suddenly he cried out in a voice of terror, that his teeth were closing, and that he could not open his mouth. And in truth his jaws closed tight together, so that he was unable to pronounce another word ; he could but roar aloud with anguish and despair. Violent convulsions followed, in which he was with difficulty held by

five or six men. All the physicians in the town were called, but the blow came from God, and man could not cure it. The unfortunate man survived three days in cruel torture, giving by his punishment a great and terrible lesson to the people, of the respect which is due to the Saints of God. Finally, he expired in a miserable condition, unable to pronounce one word of repentance.

Four noble ladies of Modena—Louisa Fontana; her sisters by the maternal side, Frances and Anna Brancolini; and Livia, the daughter of their nephew, Albert Fontana—were discovered to be *energumeni*, or possessed with devils. Louisa was married to Paul Guidoni; Anna had remained single; and the others had taken the veil in a convent of Ursulines. The envy and wrath of the Evil One were aroused at beholding so much virtue and such admirable examples of holiness in so many members of the same family, and he doubtless hoped to induce them to perform some unworthy action; but God did not permit their virtue to suffer through the temptations of the evil spirit which possessed them, and cruelly tormented their bodies; so that patience was added to their other merits.

The first effects which they felt from this dreadful infliction were strange maladies, which obliged them to hold frequent and expensive consultations with the most skilful physicians, but all in vain; for after one malady, these unfortunate women were suddenly attacked by another, absolutely contrary in its nature to the preceding one, of which no trace remained, in the same way as no symptoms announced that which followed it. One day they appeared in perfect health, the next were at the point of death; then they were suddenly restored like persons raised from the dead, and a moment after were prostrated by some new and strange attack.

If holy water or other consecrated object were applied to the part afflicted, the malady would yield, but merely to re-appear under another form, or to change its place. Added to these bodily sufferings, cruel temptations disturbed their pure souls, and afflicted them even more than their physical ailments.

But as the Lord Himself was their shield, they continued pure and unblemished, though forced by the evil spirit to utter frightful imprecations. Prayer, which had been their greatest consolation, had become a trouble and weariness to them; still more painful to them was it to assist at Mass. Hardly had it begun, before they fell into a fainting-fit or swoon, which obliged the persons present to carry them out of the church. Their most dreadful torment was so violent a temptation to self-destruction, that sometimes, to avoid each other's watchfulness, they would retire into the most remote apartments, and there dash their heads violently against the wall, or otherwise maltreat themselves, till the noise of the blows and their own cries brought people to their assistance.

On one occasion, the married sister, seized with a sudden fit of fury, rushed to the highest window in the house, with the intention of dashing herself from it to the ground; but it pleased God that her husband, foreseeing her design, followed, and arrived in time to save her. The demon who had tempted her to commit this crime, then threw her on the ground with so much violence, that she remained there senseless.

For evils of this nature it was found necessary to adopt the usual remedies employed by the Church. Father Benedict Merla, of the Order of St. Dominic, and Father Jerome Fontana, of the Society, were called in; the first, as chief of the exorcists, and the second, because he was a

relative of the unfortunate woman. But notwithstanding all their endeavors to discover whether or not they were really possessed, they could find no positive sign by which to ascertain it. However, one day when these two priests were exorcising the patients, Father Jerome Bondinari, their confessor, one of the Fathers of the Society, entered the apartment where they were, without being observed, and hung a picture of St. Ignatius upon the wall. Then the afflicted persons gave those signs of agitation and horror which announced the presence of the evil spirits. They asked Father Jerome why he had brought the image of one whom they detested, and broke forth in furious invectives against the Saint. Afterwards they encouraged each other, not to permit themselves to be vanquished, they who were so numerous, by one man; lame, bald, and almost blind: (thus they mockingly designated St. Ignatius;) nor to be cowardly enough to give up their virtues.

One, however, more terrified by seeing the image of the Saint, than re-assured by the words of his companions, fled, leaving his victim senseless. When she recovered, she declared that she had seen St. Ignatius beside her, encouraging and promising her a complete deliverance. The evil spirits now discovered, feared not to give unequivocal signs of their presence; such as by speaking different languages, especially Latin, Arabic, and a species of slang, all equally unknown to the poor women through whom they spoke; by making known events which were passing at a distance; by recognizing relics of which they knew nothing, and by other signs equally certain.

The possession being verified, every method was employed for delivering the possessed. They were taken to Our Lady of Reggio's to St. Agatha of Sorbera's, to the tomb of St. Germimien, three famous pilgrimages, especially

for persons in their condition ; but all was unavailing. Then remembering how the name alone of St. Ignatius had agitated them, and how the infernal spirits had fled at the sight of his image, they placed their hopes in his intercession, and engaged themselves by a vow to celebrate his festival, and to fast the preceding evening, if he obtained their cure.

Their hopes increased when a relic of the Saint, which had been sent from Rome, was brought into their house. It caused so much tumult and confusion amongst them, that they exclaimed furiously, cursing those who had sent it, that he who was to drive them away, had arrived. That same day, the boldest and fiercest of these evil ones, who had declared that he feared not Ignatius, and would not succumb to him ; cried out trembling, " Alas ! it is not so ; for from that bone (pointing to the relic,) issues a flame which burns and consumes me ! I can no longer endure it ; Ignatius expels me ! " These last words he repeated thrice, adding, that many more miracles would be wrought in that name, and that the devils themselves would be forced to contribute in the presence of the Holy Father, to his canonization ; and so saying, he fled.

Another, with furious imprecations against Ignatius, swore that nothing would drive him away, and mocked at the cowardice of his companions. But all at once, feeling himself constrained to fly, he threw himself on his knees before a thorn of the holy crown which was preserved in that house, and exclaimed, " If I leave this woman, it is not Ignatius who casts me out ; it is this thorn, whose power surpasses mine." Still as he spoke, he did not leave his victim ; but suddenly, frightfully crying out and prostrating himself before an image of the saint : " I am forced to confess it,"

said he, "against my will ; I am cast out by the merits of Ignatius ;" and he fled from the woman's body.

The same thing happened to the other evil spirits, who attributing their defeat to one power or another, finished by confessing that they were driven away by St. Ignatius.

Each day saw these afflicted persons delivered from some of the demons. During an interval of rest from their torments, some one gave them the life of St. Ignatius to read, which delivered them from the power of the bad spirits, more than any exorcism had hitherto done ; and one of the women by whose mouth they spoke, exclaimed that she would rather flee away than listen to the reading of that accursed book ; and as she spoke, they fled. Others as they left them, cried out : " Oh God ! you have deprived us of glory, to give it to that lame man."

At length after such terrible suffering, the four women were restored to health, to peace, and to piety. As a reward for their prolonged tortures and their fidelity amidst such cruel temptations, God granted them singular graces, particularly to Louisa, who received the gift of prayer and union with God to such a degree, that she was unable to detach her thoughts from God, or to speak of any thing but of Him.

After her deliverance, she led the most austere life, and would have carried her austerities to excess, had her director not put limits to her fervor. She survived these events five years, and died on the eve of the Feast of St. Ignatius, who, if we may believe the words of an evil spirit who revealed it during an exorcism, introduced her as his daughter into Paradise. It is certain that she appeared in a vision to her daughter Daria ; clothed in white garments, and brilliant as the sun ; exhorting her to persevere in the path of perfection which she had chosen, and encouraging her by wonderful

communications concerning the perfect bliss enjoyed by the saints.

Nearly two years had elapsed after these events had taken place, when Livia, the youngest of the four sufferers, was again possessed. The first indications of possession which she gave, were violent cries and exclamations that Ignatius would not leave her in peace, and persecuted her again as he had formerly done; then the fury of the demons increasing, she tore out handfuls of her hair, speaking in her despair in different languages. All this passed in the house, as Ignatius, said they, assisted her to partake of the sacraments in peace, and to listen in church to the word of God.

During times of the most violent crisis, she received some relief from a little child, her cousin, who, when she was in an access of fury, would come up to her, make the sign of the cross upon her forehead, and command her in the name of St. Ignatius, to calm herself; and as the evil spirit obeyed, the child, leading her by the hand, conducted her wherever she would. Then another of these evil ones mocked and said that thus an elephant was led by an ant; but the proud spirit, forced to obey, replied that he did not obey the child but her guardian angel, and in him St. Ignatius who sent him. When the exorcisms forced them to fly, they cried aloud that they were driven away by the great archangel, the guardian of Ignatius. But the young girl herself frequently beheld the Saint, with a grave and majestic air, who held in his hand a scourge, before which the devils fled in confusion. She was at length entirely freed from her frightful sufferings.

A child ten years of age, named Jerome, son of Onophrius Estrachi, of Gandia, received a severe cut upon the eyebrow near the temple, so deep that a finger might have been

placed in the wound. His face became terribly swollen, and a high fever ensued. During a whole month, notwithstanding the utmost care and skill, the surgeon could not succeed in curing the wound, which at length degenerated into a fistula; from whence so abundant and fetid a humor issued, that it was apprehended that the evil was more deeply seated than had been supposed, and that the violence of the blow having injured some internal portion of the head, trepanning would be necessary, in order to extract the injured bone, and open an issue for the humor.

The operation being considered dangerous, an eminent surgeon was called in to give his advice. He came with his colleague to visit the child, and when he who had hitherto attended the patient carefully took off the bandages which covered the wound, they found it completely healed, and no mark but a slight scar, to prove that it had formerly existed. The one surgeon remained motionless with astonishment, whilst the other believed that he had been trifled with; but the mother of the child, then advancing, told them that a more skilful hand than theirs had effected the cure; that when the painful operation was resolved upon, she had begged for the assistance of St. Ignatius, and had made a vow that if her son was cured, she would visit the altar dedicated to him, for nine successive days. This vow she performed, with feelings of the most tender gratitude.

A young Scotchman, named James Tyrrel, gifted with uncommon talents, entered the society, in order to devote himself to the service of God. After having passed the trials of his noviciate, he went on to the classes in the Roman college, and had hardly tasted the pleasures of study, before he lost all relish for the exercises of devotion. The time which he ought to have employed in spiritual meditation, in the examination of his conscience, in pious reading,

he devoted to study ; and in acquiring learning lost his piety. He did not perceive this gradual enervation, until the moment came when his strength was put to the test.

If a middling degree of virtue may suffice for maintaining in the grace of God, one who lives far from the world and from temptation, it is not so when the temptation arrives. A time of war is very different from a time of peace, where there is neither danger nor combat ; and so this young man discovered.

Whilst he was gradually losing his spiritual strength, the evil one had not attacked him ; but reserved the violent temptation wherewith he hoped to enthrall him, until he saw that he had arrived at that point of weakness, which makes a vigorous resistance impossible. The poor youth felt the imminence of the danger which threatened him ; and as his intentions were upright, he had recourse to the Lord, and imploring the divine assistance, supported the struggle as he best might.

St. Ignatius, who had then been dead ten years, had compassion on him, and one day when the young man was in the utmost danger of yielding to the temptation which assailed him, appeared before him, and with a kindly and paternal aspect, reproached him for having sought rather to perfect himself in literature than in virtue, reminded him with what design God had withdrawn him from the world, and placed him in the society ; then disappeared, saying ; “ Less learning, and more piety.”

Ignatius had not only come to reprove Tyrrel, but to assist him. He therefore left him delivered from temptation, and so reanimated in devotional feeling, that he became one of the greatest servants of God, and merited the post of *Assistant* of Germany ; in which office he died in 1597. Three days before his death he related all that I have now

written, to Father Anthony Menageo, to whom he made his confession, when preparing for his last moments.

It was thus that Ignatius appeared to his children, to reprove and reform them. Whilst he was yet alive, he consoled another of the brethren, by appearing to him at Cologne.

This was Father Leonard Kessel; a true evangelic workman, and a man whose life was singularly perfect. Having conceived an ardent desire to see the holy founder whose wonderful works and sanctity he heard constantly extolled; he wrote to Ignatius entreating his permission to go to Rome. But it was a long journey, the Father was old, his health feeble, and his presence very necessary at Cologne, where he rendered great services by his zealous devotion to the spiritual welfare of his brethren. Ignatius however would have willingly granted him the consolation which he desired. He consulted the Lord, and consequently sent an answer to Kessel, that it was not necessary for him to undertake so long a journey in order to visit his Father; that God would find other means of satisfying him, and that probably he would see him at Cologne. Kessel was amazed on receiving this reply, and could not imagine how Ignatius would be able to fulfil his promise.

One day, when his thoughts were not turned towards Ignatius, he suddenly beheld the Saint appear before him. His countenance was serene, his aspect kind and affectionate; and he stopped before Leonard for some time, as if to give him time to observe him. When he disappeared from before the eyes of the Father, he left his heart filled with indescribable joy and consolation.

Father Alvaro de Molina, a Dominican, who had acquired a great reputation for virtue and learning, after having been Secretary of two Provincials, Prior of two

monasteries, and general teacher and definator of the Order, had established himself in Lima, the capital of Peru. For eight years he had been a hopeless paralytic; unable to move his limbs, or to articulate a single word. Like a living corpse, he was daily transported from his bed to a chair, where he sat motionless all the day, a mournful spectacle to all who beheld him. Vain were all the efforts of medicine, either to cure or relieve him. All hope had long since abandoned him, and his only consolation consisted in patience and submission to the will of God, and in the study of pious books; some charitable hand turning the pages for him as he read.

He had been thus afflicted, as I have said, for eight years, when Father James Ojeda, a Religious of the same Order, and professor of theology in the convent, being much attached to St. Ignatius and his Order, recommended the sufferer to read the life of the Saint; and gave him that abridged history of St. Ignatius, written by Father Ribadeneira, which is to be found in the second volume of his *Lives of the Saints*. The poor patient perused it with great interest, and had hardly commenced it before he experienced an interior consolation which increased as he read. He also felt an extraordinary confidence in the intercession of St. Ignatius; and when he arrived at the account given by the narrator of the miracles wrought by Ignatius, he raised his whole heart to God, and said, not in words, which he could not utter, but in mental prayer: "Oh Lord, I believe in the truth of those miracles which thou has permitted thy servant Ignatius to perform, and of which I have read in this book. I conjure thee, then, oh Lord, that thou wilt, through regard to his merits, restore me to health; and if it please thee to grant me this favor, I make a vow to fast on the vigil of his feast, so long as I live, to recite morning

and evening his autiphon and prayer, and to be always devoted to him and to his Order."

It was on All-Saint's Day that Alvaro offered up this prayer, and he continued it during the whole Octave of the Festival. On the last day, towards evening, he suddenly heard, as it were, an inward voice, which said to him, "Rise up, and walk;" and at the same time he experienced an irresistible impulse to leave his chair. He rose, and found that he was completely restored to the use of his limbs, that his tongue was loosed, and that his whole body had recovered its former vigor. Hastily he ran towards the hall, where the Religious were assisting at a course of theological lectures. When he entered, their astonishment was so great, that they gazed at him, believing that their eyes must have deceived them; but when the old man related to them how this miracle had been wrought upon him by the intercession of St. Ignatius, their surprise was changed into joy, and with grateful devotion, they offered up thanks to God and to His servant, and joined their voices in the solemn anthem, *Te Deum Laudamus*. Immediately after, they sent information to the Fathers of the Society of all that had occurred, accompanying it with an authentic attestation of the facts.

The very day on which this miracle took place, a novice of the Society, named Christopher Mesa, being at the point of death, had received the last sacraments. Hearing of the miracle which had been wrought through the intercession of this holy Father upon the Dominican monk, and that all the Fathers had gone to return thanks to God for so signal a favor, he begged to be carried to the church, to join in the universal joy, and to sing with his brothers the *Te Deum Laudamus*. He did so, and was restored to health from that moment.

Hardly had the Society been received by the Blessed

Virgin into her house at Loretto, before Satan and his angels exerted all their powers to drive them thence, rendering their residence insupportable by means of frightful apparitions and sounds. Sometimes the house was shaken even to its foundations ; at others, a noise was heard as if a crowd of persons were rushing through it. By night the brethren had no repose ; the doors and windows were burst open violently ; the sheets and blankets were carried off from the beds ; and those who had already lain down to rest, saw large and frightful animals running over them, which caused them to cry out with horror ; whilst those who were able to endure such trials without fear, were subjected to other and worse torments.

Thus a young Englishman, while seated at table, received so violent a blow on the side, that he fell down senseless. Father Oliver Manares, rector of the establishment, whither he had been sent by St. Ignatius, was there at this time with thirteen other members of the Company. Full of charity towards his neighbor, he felt more for the sufferings of others than for his own. He therefore watched by night, that his brothers might sleep, and passed whole hours walking before the doors of their chambers, that they might take courage from knowing that he was near.

One night, when thus keeping watch, ready to hasten wherever he heard any noise or cry of terror, he suddenly felt the house shake, and heard a crash as if part of the roof and walls had fallen in. He immediately hurried towards that part of the building from whence the noise appeared to proceed, and as he went, the uproar and tumult seemed to approach him, and he shuddered inwardly. Still he advanced boldly, making the sign of the cross ; and in a little while a dog of enormous size brushed past, though without touching him ; its color black, its fierce and burning eye

fixed upon him with a look of fury. It barked loudly thrice, but with a muffled sound, as if its head were enveloped in a bag. When the dog had passed by, the tumult ceased.

But after so many wakeful and troubled nights, the good Father fell sick, and, unwilling to deprive his brethren of his spiritual assistance, desired them, in case of any further demonstrations of wrath on the part of the evil spirits, to command them in the name of God to leave them and to attack their Rector. He did not fear this addition to his sufferings, and so it came to pass that the demons displayed all their rage against him, yet without ceasing to torment the other Religious also.

One night amongst others, when about to take a little rest, which he had not enjoyed for several days past, he heard a knock at his door. Supposing that it was one of the brethren, who, in his terror, had come to him for help, he desired him to walk in. The knocking continued louder, and the Rector raising his voice, thinking that he had not been heard, repeated aloud: "Come in;" but finding that no one answered, except by repeated knocks at the door, he suspected, or rather he recognized him who pretended that he did not dare to enter after having received permission so often. Then the Father made the sign of the cross, exclaiming: "Now, I know thee: enter; and in the name of God, do whatever He permits thee to do." Hardly had he pronounced these words, before he beheld the doors and windows of his apartment fly open with a tremendous crash; the walls of the chamber trembled—it seemed as if traversed by a whirlwind; and a moment after, all was still.

Had the evil One confined his attacks to the body only, they might have been endured with patience; but he went further, and in a little time, endangered the souls of many, not only by troubling them while engaged in prayer, by

these fearful and vague sounds, but also by apparitions calculated to deceive them.

The first against whom he directed this species of attack, was a young Flemish novice, a brother coadjutor, to whom he appeared in a Moorish dress, of a green color, with the features of an Ethiopian. In this guise, the evil spirit accosted the young man, affecting great compassion for his sufferings; asking him how it was possible that he could have the folly to lead such a life, which certainly must shortly finish by destroying his health. He would act much more wisely, said he, were he to return into the world, and give himself up to pleasure, while he was yet young enough to enjoy it. He would have time enough, added the tempter, to weep and do penance afterwards.

But in this case, the evil spirit was himself deceived as to the character of the young man whom he endeavored to seduce; one who would have been more ready to fly from the world were he again in it, than to return thither after having abandoned it. To rid himself of his enemy, he made the sign of the cross, calling him by his name. Then the devil, forced to flee, but furious at this contempt, turned towards the novice, and exclaimed, with a hideous grin: "Since my words please thee not, see if my breath be more agreeable to thee;" and as he so spoke, he breathed forth so pestiferous an air as nearly to suffocate the poor young man. For two whole days, the chamber was entirely uninhabitable on account of the intolerably foetid odor which had been left by the breath of the demon.

He had more success in deceiving one of the novices, who was a German.

Disguised as an apostle, he appeared to this young man with the features of St. Paul, and finding him occupied in classical studies, looked at him with a severe expression of

countenance, and demanded whether such studies as these were fitting for a Religious, and why he did not rather study his epistles than those of Cicero, a heathen and a lost soul. "Leave these books," added he, "no matter what orders your superiors give you. When St. Paul commands, all must obey."

The novice, considering the visit of so great and holy a personage as a special favor, without daring to answer, and without informing any one of what had taken place, took the Epistles of St. Paul, and began to make such commentaries upon them as his feeble intelligence permitted, for his intellect was weak, and his learning almost entirely limited to knowing how to read.

Soon after, the pretended apostle appeared to him again, praised him for having studied his Epistles, and told him that since he had followed his first advice with so much docility, he would give him another counsel, which was to throw aside his habit and return to the world, where he could lead a much more austere life than in the Order. More was not wanting to turn the feeble head of the young novice. The following morning, when all the students were assembled at prayers, he divested himself of his habit and left the house, without giving notice of his intention to any one. Some time after, reflecting on what had passed, he begged to be received once more into the house as a brother coadjutor; but even in that position it was found impossible to retain him in the Society, on account of his incurable obstinacy, and he was finally expelled.

Such was the condition of the new College of Loretto. Neither exorcisms, prayers, nor the holy sacrifices offered up for its deliverance from the machinations of the powers of darkness, proved effectual. It pleased God to give to His servant St. Ignatius the honor of the victory. The Rector

wrote to inform him of all that was taking place, and conjured him to implore the Divine assistance for His unfortunate children, who could find no remedy for their sufferings. The Saint, touched with compassion, instead of merely recommending them to endure their miseries with patience and submission, had recourse to prayer. And the prayers of St. Ignatius were granted. In answer to the letter of the Rector, he addressed one of condolence to the whole College; and when the Rector saw that Ignatius promised to entreat the Divine aid in their behalf, he felt no doubt that they would obtain relief. Calling all the household together, he read the letter aloud with joyful confidence; and as if it had contained an order which obliged the evil spirits to withdraw, all cause of trouble and terror ceased from that moment, and the house was restored to perfect tranquillity.

We cannot be surprised that the powers of darkness should have waged this war against the children of Ignatius, when we learn how he himself had been maltreated by them. One night they endeavored to suffocate him. A strong hand seized him by the throat, so as almost to stifle his respiration; he with difficulty uttered the name of Jesus, and the pressure was removed; but the suffering which it had caused, lasted for many days. Another night he was cruelly beaten, and the Brother who slept in the adjoining chamber, running to his assistance, on hearing the noise of the blows and the groans of the Saint, found him seated on his bed, panting for breath and exhausted. He returned to his cell and was again aroused by the same sounds, but when he entered the chamber of Ignatius for the second time, the Saint forbade him to return, no matter what tortures he heard him enduring; all which goes to prove what we have already said, that the powers of darkness considered St. Ignatius as their greatest enemy upon earth.

A young Barcelonese named Jerome Falconi, was called by God in the year 1606, to serve Him in the Society; but his father, Michael Baptist, out of regard to the temporal interests of his family, to which he considered the young man very important, endeavored to dissuade him from his intention, and at length succeeded. But Jerome having been sent by his father upon some business to Lerida, fell dangerously ill there. His disease was inflammation of the throat, so violent, that the physicians, finding his tongue black and swollen, declared that of fifty patients in that condition, it was improbable that two could recover.

The news was quickly carried to the unhappy father, who acknowledging the hand which dealt the blow, and the fault which he had committed in preventing his son from consecrating himself to God, bitterly repented of his error. He implored St. Ignatius to obtain for him the pardon of God, adding many promises of amendment, should his prayer be granted, and his son, whom with many tears he recommended to his protection, he restored to him. He then immediately travelled post to Lerida, where, upon his arrival, he found his son apparently convalescent. The fever and inflammation had disappeared; and upon inquiry, he found that this had taken place precisely at the hour when he had invoked the assistance of Ignatius. But the physicians who knew nothing of this, judged according to the rules of their art, that so sudden a cure could not be lasting, and that the patient would have a relapse. And in truth, the favor obtained by the prayers of the Father, had been merely a suspension of suffering, but by no means a complete cure.

On the twelfth day, a terrible paroxysm of fever occurred, which increased till the seventeenth day, when the patient appeared to have arrived at the last extremity. His chest swollen and oppressed, he could no longer draw his breath;

the physicians prognosticated an approaching crisis, and considered his death as certain. The unfortunate father, remembering how the Saint had already granted his prayer in Barcelona, had recourse to him again, with entire confidence in his intercession, and entreated the Fathers of the Society to bring him an autograph of the Saint, which one of them possessed ; but it was sought for in vain ; was mislaid, and could not be discovered.

Meanwhile, according to the prediction of the physicians, the last crisis arrived, the pulse stopped ; a cold perspiration broke out over the body, and the patient fell into the last agonies. His father gave him his blessing, took a last look of his dying son, and then in despair, rushed from the apartment. As he went out, he was met by one of the Fathers of the Society, bringing the signature of the Saint, which he had that moment found. The afflicted man felt his hopes suddenly revive, and taking the paper, re-entered the chamber of his son, exhorted him to put all his trust in God, and to entreat Him to grant him his life as a favor to St. Ignatius ; and with these words he put the paper to the lips of the patient, that he might kiss the signature. At the same moment, the dying man revived, and arose like one resuscitated from the grave. Every fatal symptom vanished ; his health was restored ; and the father and son left the city soon after this severe lesson, convinced that all temporal good must give way to the service of God.

To the honor of the Catholic Faith, and to the discredit of the heretical sect of Calvin, the following miracle took place in the year 1627, at Ostrog, a town in Poland, in the presence of an assembled multitude. A lady of noble birth, but educated in heretical principles, was discovered to be possessed by the devil, giving all the usual signs which denote this infliction. Without having learned any language

but her native tongue, she replied to all the questions addressed to her, in Latin, German, and a variety of other languages. She discovered hidden things, related all that was passing at a distance, and was possessed of extraordinary and supernatural strength. The persons of her own sect held council as to what means should be employed for delivering her from the evil spirit, but as none dared to risk such an undertaking, they resolved to place her in the hands of the Fathers of the Society, who have a college in that city, and begged the Rector to take her under his charge. Before giving his consent, the Father inquired whether the possession had been ascertained beyond a doubt. The Calvinists all replied in the affirmative; and as he who expressed most anxiety to obtain the assistance of our Fathers was a peculiarly obstinate sectarian, who had often declared that he would rather be changed into a dog or a hog than into a Catholic; the Rector turning to him said; "You who consider the ceremonies of the Catholic Church as so much superstition, and their observances as foolishness, why have you recourse to them now? Is it from faith, or necessity? First call in your own ministers, who speak so loudly of the purity of their doctrines, and let them try their power. Send also for the schismatic priests, and let them use their efforts; then you can have recourse to us; for it will be well to compare, and to decide not only which have most power over the demons, but also which have none."

The ministers replied, that they did not attribute to themselves the power of casting out devils, and that if the Father succeeded in doing so, it would entirely alter their opinion concerning the Catholic faith.

It was then proposed that a visit should be paid to the afflicted person, to verify the fact of her possession; and it required but a short time to bring them all to the same con-

clusion. According to the Catholic rite, the Rector sprinkled her with holy water, and then, without her perceiving it, secretly placed upon her shoulder a relic of St. Ignatius. Immediately she began to writhe and struggle violently, trembling, and crying that a bone of St. Ignatius wounded her. The Rector, whose object was not only to cure the poor demoniac, but to convert the heretics who surrounded him, ordered the institutions of Calvin to be brought, or any other book containing the dogmas of his sect, and given to the woman. They brought one gladly, expecting it to produce some similar effect. But the patient received it with transports of joy, kissed and embraced it with every demonstration of respect and affection. Then the Rector taking the book from her, secretly placed within the pages a picture of St. Ignatius, and returned it to her. Upon this the woman, or rather the devil within her, cried out furiously, and threw herself backwards upon the ground, to avoid touching the book. She was asked what it was that she feared. "The image of St. Ignatius," said she "which you have put in that book." The Calvinists, abashed and confounded at these words, knew not what to say, and one exclaimed angrily: "You Papists have dealings with the devil, and make him do every thing you wish."

The zeal of one of the Fathers was roused by these insulting words: and turning to the speaker he answered: "Since all you have seen has failed to convince you, and you give it this interpretation, will you agree to what I am about to propose? I shall pray to God, that if yours is the true religion He may permit this evil spirit to take possession of me, and to torment me as he will; whereas, if the Catholic religion is the only true faith, that the devil may enter all of you, and torment you at his will, for one hour only."

No one accepted this challenge ; nor was a word spoken in reply ; but at length they entreated the Rector, if he could deliver this woman from her misery, to do so ; he promised to employ every means in his power, and withdrew.

He then imposed upon himself a strict fast of three days, caused masses to be offered up, alms distributed, and different acts of mortification to be practised amongst the brethren. Meanwhile the demoniac was occasionally visited by the Fathers, and every time that she saw them, fell into paroxysms of fury, whilst she received those of her own sect with every demonstration of joy. The spirits, sometimes of their own accord, sometimes constrained by exorcisms, cried out : That the Jesuits of Ostrog were their most detested enemies ; and that they endeavored to inspire others with the same hatred for these Fathers, to prevent their good works from having any effect ; that they had already endeavored to burn down the college, and that the fire had even reached the cells of the Fathers ; but that they had not been able to prevent them from discovering it in time to have it extinguished.

They had also, added they, endeavored to enter the chambers of the Religious, to do them all the evil in their power, but had been driven back by the Virgin Mary and by Ignatius. In proof of which they gave a detailed account to one of the Fathers, of all that was in his chamber, and mentioned the places which the different objects occupied, adding that if a certain taper, which he was to use at the approaching feast of Candlemas had not stood so near a crucifix, they would have broken it in pieces.

Whilst they were celebrating in our chapel the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass, offering it up to God for the deliverance of the poor demoniac, the devil suddenly cried out by

her voice, trembling with fury: "Now they elevate the sacred Host!"

The day chosen for the solemn exorcism was that of the Purification, and the place, the Church of the Jesuits. The Calvinists had requested it to be performed privately within the house, but it was due to the Catholic faith to bring forward this new testimony of its power over the evil spirits. When the poor demoniac entered the church, strongly bound, and led by several men up to the altar of Our Lady and of St. Ignatius, she began to howl like some wild animal, casting terror and consternation amongst the people who had flocked together to witness the spectacle.

Before commencing the exorcisms, the Rector delivered a short exhortation to all present, to repent of their sins with contrite hearts; and all the multitude were moved to tears, and many sobbed aloud. The evil spirit adjured to declare how he had entered the body of that woman, after much resistance, was forced to answer that he had done so through the conjurations of an aged sorceress. Again forced to reply, and to declare in whose name, after that of the Most High God, he could be driven out; he gave a loud cry, and writhing in anguish, gnashed his teeth, and exclaimed in a furious tone: "In the names of Mary and Ignatius." The exorcisms lasted more than two hours longer, all invoking the aid of the Mother of God and of His holy servant. The Rector fearing that the presence of some great sinner in the assembly prevented them from obtaining the favor for which they prayed, made another exhortation, begging each individual present to implore the divine pardon for his sins, and to invoke the aid of the Blessed Virgin and of St. Ignatius for this unfortunate woman. All the people, moved by one impulse, offered up these prayers

aloud. Then, the poor demoniac, dragging herself with a great effort from the hands of the persons who held her, was dashed upon the earth by the evil spirit, and there lay as if dead, but completely delivered from her infliction. At the end of a short time, she returned to her senses, was raised up by those who surrounded her, and led before the Holy Sacrament; there, weeping with joy, all the spectators joining their tears to hers, she solemnly abjured Calvinism, and embraced the Catholic Faith.

In a village near Monaco, there lived a child of thirteen, a miserable object; the nerves of his legs shrunk up, his flesh dried to the bone, his feet turned inwards, so that he was merely able to crawl along upon his hands and knees, dragging his limbs after him. In this pitiable state, he was led to Monaco, where, sometimes crawling about, sometimes drawn in a little cart, he passed six months begging alms. A stranger passing by one day, had compassion on the poor deformed child, and spoke to him of the miracles which had been recently wrought by St. Ignatius; comforting him with the hope that if he had recourse to the Saint, he might be cured. The boy willingly agreed to the proposition that he should ask the assistance of St. Ignatius; and made a vow to the Lord that he would visit our church at Monaco every day for three weeks, and say the Rosary in honor of the Saint. In fulfilment of his promise, he had himself drawn to the door of the church, and then on his hands and knees made his way up to the altar of St. Ignatius, renewed his vow, made his confession, received Holy Communion, and said the Rosary.

Immediately after, he felt his limbs strengthened, the nerves distended, and wishing to try whether he could stand up, he begged a woman, who was kneeling beside him, to assist him to rise; but her help was not needed, for he was

completely cured. He stood erect and strong; then walking with a firm step, raised his voice, blessing the great God for his mercies, and thanking the Saint who had assisted him; whilst all the people, who beheld this miracle, united with him in thanksgiving and praise.

In 1574, Father Paul Achille was Rector of the college of Palermo. He was a man of rare talent, and one who led a holy and virtuous life. He and the other Fathers of the college devoted themselves with untiring zeal to the service of their neighbor, and God blessed their works by the conversion of a vast number of sinners. The wrath of the evil spirits was consequently aroused against them, and they resolved to be revenged upon these holy Religious. They therefore induced four miserable women, who led a disorderly life, to have themselves secretly conveyed into the interior of the college, in hopes of ruining the souls of some of the inmates, and introducing corruption and disorder into their peaceful dwelling. Having entered the court of the college, these four women ascended the staircase; but on reaching the corridors, into which the chambers opened, some hidden force prevented the infernal troop from advancing a step further. In vain they made every effort to approach the apartments; in vain the demons encouraged them to go forward. Like Balaam's ass speaking to his unworthy master, the devils themselves were forced to cry aloud to these miserable furies, that were there thousands of evil spirits reunited, it would be impossible for them to conquer the power which held them back; and so saying, they retreated.

But one of these women, more beautiful, more shameless, and more corrupt than her companions, furious at finding in this college obstacles which she had not met with elsewhere, resolved that she would make another trial. She

therefore affected a desire to confess her sins first to one, then to another of the Fathers, hoping to seduce them into a criminal attachment, and thus to obtain an entry into the house. But this attempt was as unsuccessful as the first. Still these wretched women would not abandon their design, and once more they contrived to penetrate into the interior of the house. But hardly had they entered, when St. Ignatius appeared before them, resplendent in light and glory, and although he did not pronounce a word, yet the evil ones and their agents, unable to endure the sight even for a moment, fled from the college in terror and confusion. One of these women was converted, and it was from her own mouth that the preceding details were transcribed; and to prove the truth of her narrative, she described minutely all the different objects in the court and on the staircase, beyond which she had never been able to advance a step.

A young man, a native of Seville, entered the college as brother coadjutor. But it often happens that we are more solicitous to obtain some good which we have not, than careful in preserving it when acquired.* The fervor of the young brother gradually decreased, and degenerated into lukewarmness, so that it was judged proper to prolong the usual two years of probation in the novitiate, before admitting him to pronounce his vows. This determination had the effect of confirming the Superiors in their opinion of his levity, for when he heard of the delay that was to take place, he abandoned the Society and returned to the world, thus turning a salutary remedy into poison.

When he had taken this step, whether through embarrassment at the idea of presenting himself again to his family, or from the desire of acquiring a fortune, he resolved to set off for the West Indies. He had already made his arrangements with the captain of a vessel about to set sail

and was preparing to go on board, when he was stabbed in the back by a man who was a stranger to him, and whom he had never offended. It appears that the blow was an error on the part of the assassin, who, being deceived by some resemblance in the dress and gait, believed that he had struck his mortal enemy. A confessor and a surgeon were sent for in all haste; but the wound was so severe, that he had more need of the assistance of the first, than of the remedies of the latter.

He confessed and received the viaticum. Afterwards the surgeon having examined the wound, seeing that the case was absolutely hopeless, in order, as he afterwards said, that he might not seem to have done nothing for the patient, applied some simple dressing, and left him in the hands of the priest, that he might prepare for death. Meanwhile the unfortunate man, who comprehended but too well whose was the hand that dealt this blow, acknowledged his error and wept over his inconstancy; the only proof of repentance which his approaching death left in his power. Yet he declared, that if by a miracle; it were to please the Lord to restore him to life, he would consecrate himself in the Order which he had quitted, and would devote himself to His service until his death.

He invoked St. Ignatius with fervor. He called him his father, whom he had known too little and too late, and promised him if he were restored to life, to return to his house, not as his child, for of that he was unworthy, but as a slave and hireling. So he passed the night which all believed to be his last, weeping and praying. The Saint heard him, and moved to pity, obtained for him not only life for which he prayed, but an immediate cure. The next day the wound was found completely healed, with no trace of its having existed, but a slight scar. Cured, both soul and

body, the young man according to his promise requested to be again received into the Society, and after long and repeated trials was admitted for the second time.

The ship *St. Thomas* set sail for the Philippine Islands in the year 1601, having on board a numerous company of soldiers and passengers, besides several Religious of the Society, who were sent to Manilla. After a passage of sixty-two days, they came in sight of land, which the Captain judged to be Cape Spirito-Santo. But the weather set in dark and cloudy, and a thick fog concealed the land from their view. The ship was driven by impetuous currents and they found themselves inclosed amidst dangerous rocks, off an unknown shore. Driven against these precipitous shoals, the ship was every moment in danger of breaking to pieces. Night came on; they cast anchor, and recommended themselves to God. At day-break, the wind arose, and blew violently. Destruction seemed inevitable. They fired several pieces of cannon to recall a launch which they had sent out to reconnoitre the land, and in which now consisted their only hope of safety.

The preceding evening some disputes had arisen concerning the sanctity of Ignatius, who had not yet been canonized by the Apostolic See; and some persons had spoken of him with a certain degree of irreverence. Don Anthony Maldonato de Ribera, captain of the vessel, had a particular veneration for St. Ignatius, and the thought came into his heart that he would have recourse to him in this emergency, both to obtain his protection, and to prove his favor with God. And in order to make it manifest that their deliverance, should God grant it, was due to St. Ignatius, he prayed that through the intercession of the Saint the wind might change at ten o'clock precisely, so that he might be enabled to save

his vessel, by disengaging her from the surrounding rocks, and to steer her safely into the nearest harbor.

Then one of the Fathers fastened a picture of St. Ignatius to the helm. It was six in the morning when the captain invoked his aid. Exactly at ten o'clock the wind veered round three points, which according to the pilot was exactly what was wanted to enable them to steer the vessel safely through the narrow channel between the rocks. In a short time they were out of danger, and making for the port, where they arrived in safety, full of joy and gratitude.

I pass over in silence a vast number of miraculous cures effected by the intercession of our holy Founder, and pause at one performed upon a woman named Bernarda Bendid, aged thirty-two, the wife of Philip Gomez, both natives of Munebrega, a village in Spain.

For eight years, a complication of painful diseases had reduced this woman to such a state of languor and weakness, that her life seemed a perpetual miracle. Wasted away by a disease of the lungs, constantly raising blood and offensive matter, suffering from ulcers in the arm and breast; to all this was added agonizing pains in the stomach; so that for six years whatever food she attempted to take was immediately rejected; whilst her weakness was such that she frequently lay senseless in long and dangerous swoons.

She had a young son, who, having witnessed several of the miraculous cures performed through the intercession of St. Ignatius, came one day full of hope to relate them to his mother, imploring her with tears to allow herself to be carried to the chapel of the Saint; "for," said he, "when he has cured so many, will he not take compassion on one whose sufferings exceed those of all whom he has yet relieved?" But to the poor invalid the proposition of carrying her to the church, seemed one impossible to be enter-

tained; exhausted and worn out as she was, she felt that if carried out, it must only be for her burial.

But meanwhile, Father Valerius Piquer, who had also witnessed the various miraculous cures of which the young man had spoken, arrived at the house of the poor woman, comforted her, and recommended her to invoke the protection of the Saint. At the same time he placed upon her arm a relic of St. Ignatius; and her husband promised that if she were restored to health, he would cause nine masses to be offered at his altar. The patient raised her heart to the Saint with all the fervor of which she was capable, and, at the same moment fainted away, while an abundant perspiration broke out over her body. When she recovered her senses, she exclaimed that she was cured, and freed from all suffering. Instantly she arose from her bed, full of health and strength. That same day she went on foot to the chapel, and humbly returned thanks for the cure which God had granted her through the prayers of St. Ignatius.

A short time after, a little girl of twelve years old died of a violent hemorrhage, in a village named Pardos. Her mother in an agony of grief, weeping bitterly, implored St. Ignatius to prove once more the efficacy of his intercession, and to obtain from God the restoration of her daughter; "for," said she, "He can grant that the dead may be raised to life, as easily, as that the blind may see, and the lame walk." The child had been dead for four hours, when suddenly the mother heard a voice which called her. "Mother!" said the child, "I am alive. St. Ignatius has brought me back to life." And as she spoke, she arose, not only alive, but strong and perfectly cured, so that a few days afterwards she returned to her former occupation of herding the flocks in the country.

Nor was she the only one for whom St. Ignatius obtained

a restoration to life. A child of two or three months old, the son of a physician in Munebrega, was choked whilst being fed with soup. His father, seeing that the infant was dead, went out to make preparations for his burial; but the mother had recourse to the intercession of St. Ignatius; and carrying the body into the chapel dedicated to the Saint, anointed it with some of the oil from the lamp which was burning there. Immediately the infant opened its eyes, cried, and recovered.

But the miracles wrought through the intercession of St. Ignatius at Munebrega are too numerous to be related. Suffice it to say that more than one hundred persons cured through his means are enumerated; amongst whom we find one who had been paralytic for twelve years, one who stammered so as to be unable to pronounce a word, or to be understood; four blind men, one of whom he also cured of a cancer in the lip; several lame men, and one especially whose foot the surgeons were about to amputate, on account of mortification. And yet all the accounts which have come to us from that country, attest that God, by the prayers of his servant, wrought yet more wonderful miracles for the healing of souls; for great and obstinate sinners, hardened in wickedness, by merely entering the chapel where his likeness hangs, have frequently felt themselves moved to contrition and affected even to shedding tears, so that they have not left the church until they had purified their souls, and become reconciled to God.

A young German nobleman, named Michael Ludwig, had been sent by his father to the court of Lorraine, in order to learn the French language; but unfortunately he also acquired many vicious habits, and amongst others conceived a violent passion for gambling, to which he gave himself up without restraint. One day when he had lost his

last ducat, and was walking along alone and desperate, the thought suddenly occurred to his mind, that if the devil could procure him money in genuine coin, he would make a contract with him. Hardly had he fixed his thoughts upon this criminal idea, when he saw a young man standing by his side, of a handsome countenance, and dressed like himself, as a young nobleman of the court. But although the stranger had beautiful features and prepossessing manners, Michael shuddered with horror, for something in the depths of his soul told him that under this form was concealed an evil spirit. The stranger observing him, laid his hand upon the shoulder of Ludwig, and with a smile; "Boy!" said he, "what is it thou fearest? Am I so deformed and frightful as to terrify thee? Come! is it money that thou requirest?" This familiar tone reassured the young man—"What money," said he "dost thou offer? A deceitful appearance which can be of no use to me." "Not so:" replied the demon; "real money, money in abundance, as much as thou canst wish for. See here, added he, (and as he spoke, he poured gold into his hands,) "look at it, examine it, spend it, and if it is in fact as I tell thee, pure unadulterated gold, return, and we shall make our bargain."

The wretched Ludwig thus provided for, returned to his companions who were still at the gambling table, and commenced a new game; in a few instants he had not only regained all that he had lost, but all the money belonging to the gamblers had passed into his hands. Charmed with his good fortune, he returned to the place of rendezvous, where the stranger awaited him.—"Well," said the demon, "have I deceived thee? was the money real?" "Pure gold!" cried the other, "would I had as much more!" "Thou shalt have as much as thou canst desire. But what wilt thou give me in return?" Michael declared that he had

absolutely nothing to give. "Hast thou no blood in thy veins?" said the other. "Canst thou not give me four drops?" And making him stretch out his left hand, he made a slight incision in it, which caused him no pain, then taking a few drops of blood from the wound, placed pen and paper before him, saying; "write;" and made him trace about ten letters, which I myself have seen in the official report of this fact, and which are almost all Greek; but they formed no word, and seemed to have no signification nor sense. The evil spirit then made him write some other letters, similar but more numerous, upon another paper; then taking the first writing; "This paper is for thee," said he. And he hid it in the opening which he had made in his hand, and cured the wound so completely, as to leave only the scar. Then he added: "In virtue of this, I agree to do all that thou commandest me, and to give thee all that thou askest from me, for the space of seven years; at the end of which time thou shalt belong to me, as thou hast promised by this second writing. Art thou content?" The unfortunate man sighed, but consented: and the devil vanished.

The next morning the tempter returned to see his victim, and exhorted him to leave off certain prayers which he had hitherto been in the habit of saying; he also persuaded him to give him some religious works belonging to him: "in order," said he, "that we may meet oftener and in greater liberty." From that time the evil spirit was constantly at the orders of the young man, by day and by night, under whatever form Ludwig chose, or for whatever purpose he wished to employ him. He made known to his victim many curious things, but all wicked and hurtful; he taught him new sins, hitherto unknown to him. Thus Ludwig passed the greater part of the seven years during which the compact was to last, always residing at the same court; he was

about twenty years of age when his father recalled him, hoping to find him a noble and accomplished gentleman, with manners and habits suited to his rank. But alas! he had on the contrary led the most disorderly and vicious life imaginable. Only a few months now remained before the arrival of the appointed day, when he was to fall into the hands of the demon to whom he had sold himself. Partly through his suggestion, partly stimulated by the agitation of his conscience loaded with such numerous and fearful crimes, he gradually became desperate, and begun to commit acts of insanity, but all of a criminal nature.

Thus he endeavored to poison his father and mother, and to set fire to the castle. But God did not permit any one of these horrible attempts to be successful, nor that the wretched youth should effect his purpose of committing suicide, which he twice endeavored to do, by leaning his breast upon a loaded musket, which each time missed fire.

This last act of despair, witnessed by his two sisters, who ran to hold him and to prevent his making a third attempt at self-destruction, partly made known the miserable condition to which he was reduced, the cause of his guilty life, and of his yet more criminal resolution to end it by self-murder. One of his sisters entreated him with tears to tell her what was his motive for having thus resolved to die, and if death were the sole remedy for his misfortunes, whatsoever they might be. Ludwig replied that what she had prevented for a time, would shortly happen, and that it was no more in his power to avoid it, than to abandon the guilty life, which he led.

These words being repeated to their mother, she resolved to discover herself what were the motives of her son's despair. To her he revealed them; and the unfortunate lady,

her heart pierced with grief, had no sooner heard the fatal secret, than she fell senseless on the ground.

But as she was a Protestant, and had led her son to embrace the errors of her sect, she sought for no remedy in the aid of the church, but passed her time in weeping and bewailing his wretched fate ; until one day, when beholding him with her own eyes, dashed to the ground by the demon, she ran to his assistance, and earnestly recommended her son to God.

At length it was decided that he should be placed in the hands of some holy religious ; but the wretched young man contrived to escape from them to Eistadt, where he led even a worse life than before.

He was, however, discovered by one of his brothers, a canon of the church of Erbiboli, who conveyed him, strongly bound, to Molsheim, where he delivered him to the charge of the Fathers of the society, that they might attempt the cure of his miserable soul, with the assistance of St. Ignatius, by whom great miracles were frequently wrought in this place. The evil one seeing his prey thus about to escape him, had recourse to threats, persuasions, terrors, and every kind of artifice to drag him from the hands of the good Fathers. Sometimes he attacked him under the form of a lion, or other wild animal, and seemed as if he would tear him in pieces. Then the young man would rush for aid to the Fathers, and throw himself into their arms, trembling and terrified ; and although he alone could see these frightful apparitions, the howling of the demon was heard by them all.

They began his cure by requiring from him a general confession of his whole life, as a preparation for which, he was to meditate upon some of the Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius. Then the devil inspired him with so much horror for the Fathers and for their instructions, that merely to see one of these religious, was torture to him. If occasionally

he gave his attention to some points of the meditation which they suggested, he was very soon turned from it by the insinuations of his tormentor. One day the spirit appeared to him under the form of a hairy savage, and induced him to write a formula, similar to that of the former pact, and to throw it where it would attract attention, that the Fathers might believe it was the original paper given up by the evil spirit, and thus thinking the engagement broken, might abandon their protegee.

But a faithful servant, who never quitted Ludwig, discovered the trick, and gave notice of it to the Rector, who severely reprimanded the young man, and persuaded him to reflect and meditate, and to prepare seriously for his confession. It was a hard task for him to perform; and more than once he fainted away with horror on beholding the frightful shapes under which the demon appeared to him. But meanwhile the monks had recourse to so many fervent prayers and supplications to God, to so many exorcisms, such frequent sprinkling of holy water, so many entreaties for help, that at length he was enabled to prepare himself thoroughly for confession, and from that moment felt himself wonderfully encouraged and his heart strengthened to resist every new temptation.

Then in the chapel of St. Ignatius, the exorcisms were commenced, in order that by the intercession of the Saint, the evil spirit might be forced to withdraw from the hand of the young man, the schedule which he had concealed in it, and also to give up the paper which he had carried away with him. The day fixed for this purpose was the twelfth of October, and Ludwig prepared himself meanwhile by fasting and discipline. The Rector proceeded to the chapel of St. Ignatius, and offered the votive mass of the Saint; after which the young man in the presence of all the Fathers,

and of a vast number of spectators, made his profession of faith, and formally renounced his contract with the demon. These two formulas, written and signed by his own hand, he delivered to the Rector, who placed them upon the altar, and made an offering of them to God ; after which the young man received the Holy Communion.

At that moment, trembling with terror, as one who beholds some frightful spectacle, he cried out that on either side of him stood an evil spirit. The Fathers comforted him and exhorted him to take courage ; the Rector concluded the Mass, and then renewed the exorcisms and invocations to the Saint through whose intercession they hoped for deliverance ; after which the two demons disappeared. They had shown themselves under the form of two enormous goats, standing on their hind legs, one on each side of the altar, and each held one of the schedules between its fore paws. The exorcism finished, the smallest of the two papers was found lying at the feet of the poor victim ; the same which the demon had inclosed within his hand. On seeing it, the young man burst into tears, and on looking at his hand, perceived that the deep wound which the devil had made in it, was entirely healed, so as hardly to leave a trace of having existed.

It was now necessary to obtain the other paper, and for this purpose the same methods were put in practice. Again the fasting and discipline, the exorcisms, the invocation and votive Mass of St. Ignatius, the holy Communion ; after which, the demon appeared as before, but this time under the form of an enormous stork, which apparition was perhaps more frightful to the Father who exorcised, than to the young man himself, now encouraged by the Divine goodness to cast off all fear of his tormentor. This animal held in its beak the second paper. The invocations to the Saint

were continued with redoubled fervor, and the animal letting fall the document, vanished; yet in vain they sought for it on the ground; no trace of it was visible. But all eyes were suddenly turned towards the altar; and there it lay beside the act written in the hand of the young man, by which he renounced his engagements with Satan, and which the priest had placed upon the altar. Thus delivered from his horrible compact with the evil spirit, and from the suffering and agony consequent thereupon, freed from the dreadful temptations which hurried him to crime, and reconciled to God and the Church, the young Ludwig ever after led a holy and Christian life, never forgetting the obligations he was under to the Saint through whose intercession he had obtained his deliverance.

A German priest belonging to the Society abandoned the Order, and passed into the service of the Archbishop of Treves. There it pleased God to afflict him with a contagious malady, so that he was shunned by every one, and would have been totally deserted, but for a poor old woman, who took compassion on him. Sometimes the violence of his sufferings caused him to fall senseless; and when, restored to himself, he reflected on his miserable condition, both of soul and body, despair took possession of his mind. His misery increased to such an extent, that one day he was about to put an end to his existence by cutting his throat, when the woman coming in, seized his hand, and got possession of the knife. But she could not prevent him from dashing himself from a window upon a heap of stones, where he was found bleeding and mangled, though still breathing. Then God was pleased to touch the heart of this unfortunate man, and to enlighten him both as to his guilty life, and the criminal resolution which had led him to rush upon self-destruction. His courage revived; he invoked the

holy Father whom he had abandoned, and made a vow to St. Ignatius, that if he recovered from the desperate situation in which he then was, he would go on foot to Rome, and throw himself at the feet of Father Francis Borgia, then Vicar General of the Order, and declaring his repentance, entreat that holy man to grant him the favor of re-admission into the Society; or if judged unworthy of this, permission to remain all his life as a servant, attached to the house. Whilst he made this promise, his face bathed with tears of repentance, he suddenly felt that he was cured, not only of the dreadful consequences of his fall, but also of the contagious malady which threatened him with approaching dissolution. He immediately set off for Rome, in company with Father Francis Cortero, to place himself under the authority of the General, and fulfil his vow.

Victoria Delfina, wife of Lorenzo Altieri, both belonging to the most ancient nobility of Rome, being near the period of her confinement, suddenly fell ill, and after a succession of fits, was reduced to a hopeless condition. As she seemed on the point of expiring, her confessor was sent for in all haste. After hearing her confession, this priest, who was a Religious of the Society, placed in her hand an image of St. Ignatius, exhorting her to ask the assistance of his prayers; and then going to visit the husband of Victoria, who was overwhelmed with grief, he advised him to make a vow to the Saint, such as to visit his tomb thrice; there to receive the holy Communion, and to make an offering. Lorenzo eagerly made this vow, and his wife joined him in her heart. But the fits returned; the poor sufferer, already cold and livid, seemed about to breathe her last sigh; and still her confessor neither lost hope, nor trust in the Saint, and said that perhaps she was thus at the las

agonies, only that the miracle might be more clear and evident.

Nor was he deceived in his expectation; whilst the Fathers of our house, grateful for the numerous obligations under which they lay to the noble family of Altieri, fervently recommended the dying lady to the mercy of God and the intercession of our holy Founder, she was taken with the pains of child-birth: her agonies ceased, her strength suddenly returned, and she brought a dead child into the world.

Notwithstanding her previous sufferings, she was soon convalescent, and her two physicians, Marsilio Cagnati and Angelo Vittori, gave their deposition to the truth of the miracle which had been wrought upon her; while she, filled with gratitude to St. Ignatius, whose intercession had obtained her life from the hand of God, never ceased to honor him as her patron and protector, daily visited his tomb, and remained there several hours in prayer. Victoria Altieri was well known and much revered in Rome, as a noble and virtuous matron, whose life was a model of every perfection.

In the year 1600, the Vicar of the Holy See at Avignon fell sick. From his youth upwards he had been very devout to the Blessed Virgin, and much attached to our Order; but he led an irregular life, and notwithstanding the inspirations of divine grace, had never amended his conduct. Now given over by his physicians, he remembered the sins of his past life; his devotion towards the holy Mother of God revived; he conjured her to take pity upon him, who had always been so devoted to her honor, and promised with tears of repentance, to lead a new life, if she would obtain from God the prolongation of his existence.

Whilst the Vicar prayed thus, the Queen of Heaven ap-

peared before him. Her countenance betokened displeasure, and she seemed as though she were rather wearied by hearing his prayers, than prepared to grant them. She reproached him severely with the hardness of his heart, reminded him of the inspirations of grace which he had despised, and the little faith which could be attached to promises wrested from him not by repentance, but by the fear of death. As for his homage to her, it merited no reward, for she could not receive the service of a corrupt soul. And with these words, the Blessed Virgin disappeared.

The unfortunate man was filled with sorrow and confusion. Renouncing all hope of recovery, he felt that nothing remained for him but to prepare himself for death. To this end, he sent for one of the Fathers of the Company, and began to make him a general confession of his whole life; but so violent a paroxysm of illness came on, accompanied by so much weakness and so much trouble and confusion in his thoughts, that he was forced to interrupt it. Whilst he was alone, and consumed by a burning fever, he again beheld the Mother of Our Saviour appear before him, her countenance still expressive of displeasure; but this time she was not alone; her divine Son was by her side, and Ignatius was kneeling before them, whilst Mary with her hand covered the wound on Our Saviour's side.

At this sight, the sick man was more terrified than before; for although he heard St. Ignatius praying for him fervently, yet seeing that the Holy Virgin herself covered the wound in the heart of her Son, he understood it to mean that for him the fountain of Divine Mercy was sealed. Meanwhile St. Ignatius continued to breathe forth ardent prayers, to offer himself as a pledge for the repentance of the sinner, promising that he would ever after lead a more holy life, one more suitable to his vocation. At length the

Blessed Virgin, as if yielding to the supplications of Ignatius, turned towards the sick man with a countenance expressive of less severity, and asked him what would be the tenor of his life in future, if it were restored to him. He answered trembling and bathed in tears, that he would faithfully perform all that Ignatius had promised in his name. Then it appeared to him that Mary, putting her hand into the wound of her Divine Son, drew it forth covered with blood, with which she sprinkled him. At the same moment the vision disappeared, and he found himself not only out of danger, but completely restored to health.

From that time the Vicar began to lead a new life, in all things conformable to the promises which he had made; and to show his gratitude for the protection which he had obtained from the Saint, he went to the College, and placed in the hands of the Rector a writing containing the account of all that had happened to him, after which having asked for and obtained a portrait of St. Ignatius, who was not yet canonized, he exposed it to public veneration.

There lived at Cazorla, a village in the diocese of Toledo, a young girl, devoted from her childhood to the service of God, by a vow of perpetual virginity, whose life was passed in exercises of piety and penance. She had a particular devotion to St. Ignatius, and possessed a picture of him, before which she used to pray every day, having recourse to him in all her necessities whether spiritual or corporal. It happened that one day she lost the key of a casket where she kept her money. After having sought for it a long while in vain, she with her usual simple confidence addressed herself to the Saint, begging him to show her where to find it. The following night, she heard some one calling her by name, and opening her eyes, saw St. Ignatius, who with a radiant countenance, and surrounded by a bright light pointed out to

her the place where she would find the key which she had sought for in vain, and also an important paper which she had lost some time before and had given up all hopes of recovering. But these favors, though showing the affectionate interest of the Saint towards this pious maiden, were followed some years after by another infinitely more important.

She became stone deaf, so as to be unable to hear even the loudest voice, however close to her ear. Perfectly resigned to the will of God, her only grief arose from the injury resulting to her soul in consequence of this infliction; since she was thus deprived of her only consolations, listening to the instructions of her Confessor, and to the discourses of the Preacher. In this trouble she recommended herself particularly to St. Ignatius, and taking his picture in her hands, protested her perfect resignation to the will of God, and her readiness to endure every bodily infirmity which it might be His pleasure to inflict upon her; but feeling how prejudicial this deafness was to her soul, she earnestly entreated the Saint to obtain for her from the Divine Grace, the power of hearing spiritual things, she desired no more. With this she kissed the image, and pressing it upon each of her ears alternately, took her way to Mass as usual. On entering the Church, she found that her humble and pious prayer was granted. She distinctly heard the voices of the priests as they celebrated the Holy Sacrifice, then that of the preacher; and afterwards that of her Confessor. But a still greater marvel was that when she left the Church, she again lost her hearing, and again it was restored to her as she entered the sacred edifice the following day, and so it continued a perpetual miracle; and so it still continued in the year 1603 when this was written; when it had been daily renewed for one year, and was too well authenticated to be even called in question.

At Manresa, in 1611, a child was born dead, and the dangerous condition of the mother requiring immediate attention, it was laid aside, and for a time forgotten. But when the nurse was somewhat reassured as to the state of her patient, she turned to look at the little baby, lying there dead and already livid, and as she looked at it she was moved with pity at the thought that it had died without baptism. The good woman through a feeling of compassion, knelt down, and implored Ignatius by all the love which he bore to his own land of Manresa, where God had favored him with such an abundance of graces, to obtain the restoration of this poor baby to life; at least until it should receive baptism. She had hardly finished her prayer, before the child moved, and opened its eyes. All those who were present marvelled at this great miracle; and the nurse placed the child alive and well in the arms of its mother.

On the 30th of July, vigil of the feast of St. Ignatius, in the year 1629, Paola Sharbagli was holding in her arms towards the evening, a child of seven months old, named Lewis, the son of her brother-in-law, John Oltramari. A violent hurricane of wind and rain arose suddenly, and Paola with the baby in her arms, ran up-stairs to the upper story to shut the windows. Finding great difficulty in closing one of the shutters, she leant her body half way out of the window; and the baby, which was not in swaddling-clothes, but merely wrapped round with a linen cloth, gave so sudden a spring, that he escaped from her arms, and fell out of the window upon the street. The poor woman with loud cries called upon the Lord for assistance, invoked the protection of St. Ignatius, for whom she had a peculiar devotion, and then fell fainting upon a bench which stood near. In a few moments her senses returned, and her transport of joy at finding the infant safe in her arms, may be imagined. "With

my own eyes," cried she, "I saw him, the glorious St. Ignatius, by my side, holding the child in his arms, and placing it in mine. And as, in my trouble, I had not strength enough to press it against my heart, he supported it himself in my arms, until my strength and my senses were entirely restored." The Saint was dressed in the ordinary habit of the Society. His countenance was resplendent, he appeared like a man in the prime of life, but did not resemble any one of the portraits which the woman had seen at Ferrara, where the miracle took place. The child looked smiling and happy, and seemed to return her caresses. The linen cloth which enveloped it, was found upon the street beneath the window from whence it had fallen.

There was in Guadiana, a town in Mexico, an Indian slave, who had been afflicted with a grievous infirmity for two years. The vertebræ of her spine were dislocated, so that she could not stand upright without suffering great torture, nor was she ever free from severe pain. It happened that one of the Fathers of the Society passed through that city, and seeing her miserable condition, fervently entreated St. Ignatius to become himself her physician, and to take her under his charge, since earthly remedies could be of no avail to her. And in order to revive the faith and confidence of the sick woman in the protection of the Saint, he related to her several of the miracles which Ignatius had wrought in these countries. He then repeated the prayer of the Saint and invoked his aid. At the same moment, the slave was healed. She rose, she walked upright in the presence of all the people, and lifting a great burden, carried it lightly upon her shoulder, without the slightest difficulty.

When the Father had gone, she foolishly thought that it might perhaps be prudent to take some remedies to strengthen her, and to prevent the recurrence of her illness. In

pursuance of this idea, she asked for a hot bath, but hardly had she entered it, before all her pains returned with more than their former intensity, and she cried aloud in agony. Being carried out of the bath, and laid in bed, she reflected that she had received the punishment due to her folly and ingratitude ; and with many tears entreated the Saint to pardon her ; said several prayers in his honor, and before they were finished, was once more restored to health ; by this second miracle, rendered wiser than she had been before.

An English priest named William Guardford, came to Rome in 1594, to become a religious of the Society ; and being particularly desirous to make his first entry into the novitiate, on the day of St. Augustine, the Apostle of England, concealed as much as possible the fact that he had been suffering since the morning from a violent attack of fever. The next day his illness increased ; accompanied by a complete prostration of strength, and other alarming symptoms. Deeply grieved at the thought that he was about to be deprived of life, at the very time when he had begun to value it, he raised himself up in bed, and fixing his eyes full of tears on one point of the chamber, implored St. Ignatius, who he trusted would look upon and listen to him as a Father, now that he had become his son, not to permit this happiness after which he had so long sighed, and in search of which he had made so long a pilgrimage, to escape from him at the very moment when he had begun to enjoy it. All he asked was that his illness might be delayed to some more remote period, so that he might not have brought to the Society merely a corpse, by dying before he had lived there.

These supplications touched the paternal heart of St. Ignatius ; for the following night, he appeared to the sick man, standing in that very part of the chamber which he had looked at while invoking his aid. He was accompanied by

several Fathers of the Society, and wore his usual dress. His staff was in his hand, and as he approached the bed, he shook it with a movement as of one who is driving away dogs or birds of prey from a dead body ; then after looking at the sick man with an expression of extreme tenderness, he withdrew. One of the Fathers who accompanied St. Ignatius, then separated from the others, and came up to the bed ; and the patient, who already felt himself entirely cured, asked him if he also could perform such miracles. The Father smiled, and assisting him to lie down again, and covering him with the blankets, made him a sign to calm himself and go to sleep. Then Guardford fell into a deep and tranquil slumber, from which he did not awaken for several hours, and then so perfectly recovered, that he rose the same day and took his share in all the labors of the house.

St. Ignatius was already in glory, when he obtained the blessing of health for his new son, in order that he might serve God in the Order which he had so ardently desired to enter. But even whilst he was still living in the world, he had been the instrument of a similar miracle, and for the same object.

A brother named John Baptist, who served in the kitchen of the professed house in Rome, was a religious of an extremely humble and mortified spirit. Profiting by the duties of his office, not only to labor and fatigue himself, but also finding in it many subjects for spiritual meditation, he would frequently fix his eyes upon the fire that was burning in his kitchen, and comparing it in his mind with those frightful flames which shall eternally consume the wicked, would reflect how terrible must be those mortal sins which are deserving of such awful and everlasting punishment.

One day when completely absorbed in these thoughts, he had abandoned himself to grief in reflecting upon the sins

which he had committed whilst he lived in the world, the good Brother in a moment of indiscreet zeal, plunged his hand into the fire, and burnt it even to the bone. The smell of burning which it exhaled, was remarked by the Father Minister who was passing by the kitchen ; he entered and inquired into the cause. The poor brother could not dissemble the excess of his agony, which forced tears into his eyes. He showed his hand almost entirely consumed by the fire, and throwing himself on his knees, entreated pardon for his fault.

Ignatius was immediately informed of what had taken place, and when the circumstance came to the knowledge of the Fathers, many were of the opinion that a man who by his own imprudence had rendered himself incapable of serving in the house, should be expelled ; but the Saint took a different view of the matter, and considered his fault more worthy of compassion than punishment. For this reason, he offered up fervent supplications to God that he would heal the wounds of this poor brother, and according to his custom, passed a great part of the night in prayer. And so ardently did he implore the Divine Mercy, that his request was granted, and the Brother arose the following morning, his hand perfectly healed, and without any trace of having been burned.

An estimable inhabitant of Condoni, a town in Gaseony, had conceived such an antipathy for the Society of Jesus, that he could not even bear to hear it spoken of. As for its Founder, far from considering him as a Saint, worthy of the honors which the Church had shortly before decreed to him by canonization, he believed him to be a knave and a hypocrite, and made him the object of the most bitter sarcasm, and sacrilegious raillery. He read the story of his life, solely in hopes of discovering some contradiction which

might convict him of falsehood ; and all that appeared to be supernatural in the accounts given of him, he considered as mere fables.

Doubtless our holy Father looked down from his glorious place in Heaven, and regarding the conduct of this man with a feeling of pity, such as might be excited on beholding the vagaries of a madman, earnestly entreated the Lord to destroy his unjust prejudices.

One night then St. Ignatius appeared to him ; whether during his sleep, or while he was awake, is not known. His aspect was majestic, and indicative of the glory and happiness which he enjoyed amongst the Blessed ; a glorious company of angels surrounded him. The Saint did not speak ; but gave his enemy time to look at him attentively ; then with a glance expressive of the most cordial affection, disappeared. It seemed as if this look pierced the heart of the incredulous man, for he fainted away. When his senses returned, he sprung from his bed, penitent and weeping, and prostrating himself upon the ground, entreated the Saint to pardon him for the insults which he had heaped upon him, took from the table the history of the life of Ignatius, pressed it to his heart, covered it with tears and kisses ; then made a solemn promise, which he faithfully kept, to be in future as respectful and devoted to St. Ignatius and his Order, as he had until then been prejudiced against both.

The news of the canonization of St. Ignatius having arrived in Amercia, caused a universal joy, and solemn festivals were held to celebrate it, in San Luis Potosi. One Christopher Martinez, a native of that place, had been afflicted with lameness for four years, could not move excepting with the aid of crutches, and then with great difficulty. As he listened to the sounds of public rejoicing, his infirmity, which made it impossible for him to join in

these manifestations, became more than ever burdensome to him. "Oh! glorious Patriarch St. Ignatius!" exclaimed he; "can it be in the midst of all this universal joy of which you are the cause, I alone must remain sorrowful? and that whilst all the people are running and flocking together in your honor, I alone cannot move a step?" At the same moment, he suddenly felt new life and vigor infused into his limbs, and rising up, found that he was cured.

A similar fact took place in Majorca, the same year 1609, and on a similar occasion. The Fathers of the Society were celebrating in their church the beatification of their holy Founder. A woman who had lost the use of her limbs, nevertheless insisted upon being present. Her sister endeavored to dissuade her from so dangerous an undertaking, by representing to her that amidst the crowds who had hastened to the festival, she would inevitably, in her infirm state, be thrown down and suffocated; but nothing could frighten her, and she set out for the church. Hardly had she left the house, before she felt strength restored to her limbs; and throwing away her crutches, she ran to the church to return thanks to the Saint and to make her Communion in his honor.

Michael Schramm, a young man of seventeen, had been sent by his father to Erbiboli, to pursue his studies; but as too frequently happens, he found himself in the midst of dissolute and immoral companions, and made more progress in vice than in literature, until he at length fell into the hands of Satan himself.

One of the students conducted Michael and another of his companions, about the same age as himself, to the house of a skilful magician, whose friend and pupil he was. The young men drank deeply, and then the magician began to boast of his art and his power. It was easy to turn the

heads of these hair-brained youths, and to excite in them a vehement curiosity and at the same time an ardent desire to obtain the power of working these wonders themselves. Added to this sterile curiosity, they had also the hope of thus obtaining great riches, for the magician spoke to them of a wonderful root, which placed upon the tongue or fixed on one of the fingers, produced the most surprising effects; in the first case by merely speaking, in the second by touching the objects over which they wished to have power. To unlock doors, or iron chests, to break chains, to discover subterranean treasures, to perform numerous other and stranger miracles, all could be done by means of this root. And the cost was but little; it was only necessary to have the courage to see the demon once, and under a not unpleasant aspect; and to go through the ceremony of giving him by a schedule, written with the blood of the individual, the possession of his soul.

Such was the price at which the magician sold his secret. But the unfortunate young men were so intoxicated with the desire of possessing this wondrous talisman, that they consented to all he desired; only inserting in the bargain, that the act by which they gave up their souls should be valid only so long as they made use of the root; and that when they gave it back, the compact should be considered broken.

These stipulations made, the magician taking a little blood from one of the fingers of each of his new disciples, dictated the formula by which they gave themselves over to the Evil One; then taking the writing, and giving each of them a cane to hold, he led them out of the town. At a place where four roads met, he stopped, traced a circle upon the ground, made several incantations, and pronounced some mysterious words. Then the Evil One appeared suddenly in the form of a very young man; but the two novices shud-

dered as they beheld him, for they understood that under this form they beheld the Enemy of mankind. They looked at each other, pale, trembling and speechless, and made an effort to flee from the spot; but they could not move; for the magician foreseeing that such would be the case, had bound them invisibly, so that all their efforts were in vain. He then tried to reassure them; until at length their courage reviving, they placed the papers at the end of the canes, and presented them to the demon, who did not leave the circle traced by the magician.

Then he and the evil spirit spoke together for a time in a language unknown to the young men; after which the magician placed a piece of the promised root in the little wound from whence the blood had been taken, but without causing them any pain. The demon then disappeared, and the three returned to the city. The friends then began, in the house of their unworthy master, to make trial of the power which they had received, and found that they were in fact able to perform all the prodigies which they had seen wrought by the magician. If they placed their finger near a lock, it flew open. They buried a silver ducat, two feet deep in the earth; by placing their hand upon the earth, it sprang out, and fastened to their finger like iron to a loadstone. They made a sign over a vat filled with water; it divided, and the water hung suspended in the air, as if it were frozen. One of them caused himself to be strongly chained, then touched the chain with the finger containing the root, and the chain fell to the ground in morsels.

These foolish young men were enchanted with these experiments, and for the acquirement of so wonderful a secret, would willingly have sacrificed ten souls had they possessed them.

One of them, however, named Michael, returned shortly

after to his own country. With the imprudence of a child, wishing to show his power, he performed these wonderful things in the presence of all who were curious to see them, especially the sudden opening of the doors and strong boxes. But in a short time his secret endangered his life, and nearly led him to the scaffold. He was suspected of a considerable theft, and whether guilty or not, escaped punishment with great difficulty. In a short time he fell into another danger, not less imminent; for some of his companions believing that a treasure was hidden in a certain part of a wood, inveigled him thither under some false pretext, and threatened him with death if he did not reveal to them where this wonderful root was to be found, to which they attributed the natural property of effecting what they had seen him do. To save himself he gave them one, upon which he performed some enchantments; and thus leading them to believe that he had given them the true root which they coveted, escaped from their hands. But from that day the eyes of Schramm began to be opened to the bitter fruits of a compact, which while it condemned his soul to eternal perdition, also exposed his body to constantly recurring dangers. Resolved to break through this horrible engagement, he went to a priest, a wise and conscientious man, in whom he had great confidence, and to him revealed the dreadful secret. The priest after hearing his confession, showing him all the horrors of the crime of which he had been guilty, and making him feel that he stood on the brink of eternal destruction, endeavored to inspire him with courage to use his most strenuous efforts in order to escape from the frightful bonds which held him.

He then sent him to the care of the Fathers of the Society at Molsheim, hoping that with the assistance of St. Ignatius whose power in similar cases had so often been

proved, they might recover the document, and break the odious compact. The Fathers received the unfortunate young man with much kindness, and for twelve days he was subjected to various penances; to fasting, discipline and mortification, in order to prepare him for making his general confession, and throwing off the yoke of Satan. The day having arrived on which an effort for his deliverance was to be made, he was led to the chapel of St. Ignatius, in the presence of several witnesses, and solemnly placed under his protection. The Rector of the College then said the votive Mass of the Saint, and the young man made his profession of faith; but when he proceeded to read his recantation, so strong a feeling of horror inspired by the demon seized him, that he shuddered from head to foot, his hair stood erect, and as he endeavored to pronounce the word *Renuntio*, his throat became so compressed that he was unable to articulate a word. The Father under whose charge he had been since his arrival, and who stood by his side, made the sign of the cross upon him, invoking at the same time the protection of St. Ignatius; and he was thus enabled to triumph over his enemy, and to read his recantation aloud. He afterwards gave it to the Rector, who offered it to God, placing it upon the altar. But the Evil One did not appear, and the writing was not restored. For several days the penances, the prayers, and the votive Mass of St. Ignatius were repeated; and the unfortunate man was again placed under that protection which had always proved so powerful against the spirits of darkness. At length, on the 13th of January, 1613, the Rector having arrived at the Canon of the Mass, all present heard a noise as of a paper rubbed against the wall, but nothing was observed to fall. The young man alone perceived at the corner of the altar an evil spirit who pointed to the paper, which he had given him at

Erbepoli written with his blood, which he held in his hand, and then, throwing it away, vanished. The Mass being concluded, it was sought for, and found under the cloth which covered the altar; whereupon all who were present, with one universal impulse, gave praise and glory to God, and returned fervent thanks to His holy servant Ignatius.

In 1626, an extraordinary descent of wolves from the mountains, had rendered some of the valleys of Piedmont uninhabitable, amongst others that of Lanzo. Neither men nor flocks were in safety in the country, for these fierce and famished brutes collected in packs, attacked every thing that came in their way, and committed innumerable ravages.

A chapel had lately been erected in the principal church of the provostship of Mezanile, in honor of St. Ignatius. The inhabitants of this canton resolved to address themselves to him, imploring him to obtain their deliverance from this fearful scourge. With this intention, they went during nine days in procession to the chapel, and caused a solemn Mass to be chanted there. Their prayers were granted. The wolves, as if driven back by some superior power, fled from the country, and if they met in the environs children or cattle, far from approaching them, fled precipitately as if struck with terror. To render the miracle yet more striking, two of these animals seemed as it were to have received permission to retain their fierceness. Meeting with a few sheep guarded by a little girl of seven, with her brother who was five years of age, one of these wolves turned away from the sheep to rush upon the youngest child, and having thrown it down, turned it over with his muzzle though without biting it; but such was the firm persuasion entertained throughout the whole country of a miracle having been wrought through the prayers of the Saint, that the little girl boldly approached the wolf and struck him with a

small stick which she held in her hand ; and this not sufficing to frighten him, dragged him with all her force off her brother, and seizing him by the ears, drove him away to the mountain.

The other wolf still bolder than the first entered a poor cottage where there were several children, and seizing a little one of five years old by the throat, fled with it towards the woods. The mother who was working in an adjoining field, attracted by the cries of the other children ran hastily up to her cottage, and on learning the abduction of her child, prostrated herself upon the ground to implore the protection of St. Ignatius, then flew in the direction which the wolf had taken. After having run a long and weary distance without discovering any traces of her little boy, she heard him calling in a joyful tone from the midst of a heap of rocks ; " Mother I am here. I am alive." The boy then related to her how all of a sudden the wolf had stopped, laid him down on the ground, and looking at him with his fierce eyes, had fled into the woods. The mother knew that the child had been saved precisely at the moment when she had recommended it to the protection of the Saint.

In 1629 there reigned in two villages named Gisola and Tortore, situated in this same valley of Lanzo, a distemper which produced a great mortality amongst the animals in a short space of time, and reduced many of the inhabitants to misery. Remembering the assistance which they had obtained through the intercession of St. Ignatius at the time of the invasion of the wolves, they once more offered up fervent prayers for his help, and made a solemn vow to build a chapel in his honor upon the mountain of Bastia, near Tortore. No sooner was the vow made, than the mortality

ceased; the sick animals were cured, and the pious villagers began the erection of the chapel.

Great veneration for the name of St. Ignatius gradually extended over the whole country. The chapel was so thronged with votaries, that it was found necessary to level and open a new road up the side of the mountain by which it might be more easily reached. As it was built upon the summit of Mount Bastia, it could be seen from every point of the adjacent country; and even from their own houses, the people offered up prayers and homage to their patron Saint, as they looked at his chapel from their distant homes. The Saint, touched no doubt by their humble devotion, obtained great favors for those who invoked his aid. He even deigned to appear to Paula, the wife of Thomas della Mussa, an inhabitant of the village of Tortore, whose son had been cured of a dangerous malady through his intercession. This woman was employed one day in devoutly repeating some prayers in fulfilment of a promise made to Ignatius, if the child recovered its health; when she beheld the Saint seated upon a lofty stone, in the very place where it had been her intention to erect an altar in his honor. He wore the usual dress of the Order, although his clothing appeared more beautiful, and more ornamented than the ordinary habit of the Society. His eyes were raised to Heaven, and a little lower than himself was seated another Father, who appeared to be clad in a garment of coarser materials. Paula, favored by this vision, instantly understood that it was St. Ignatius whom she beheld; from some internal inspiration, and from the joy with which her heart overflowed. Having made it known to the curate of Ceres, a parish adjoining that of Mevenile, he advised her to redouble the fervor of her invocations towards the Saint, and to make several Communions in his honor. By this means the curate hoped that she would

obtain the favor of a second vision, by which the truth of the first should be confirmed. Nor was he mistaken in his expectations. On the 20th of December in the same year, this woman being plunged in great affliction of mind, and recommending herself to St. Ignatius, turned her eyes towards the mountain on which his chapel was built, and beheld him for the second time, clothed as he was on his first apparition, and seated upon the same stone. At this sight all her sorrows vanished, and her heart was filled with a degree of celestial consolation, until then unknown to her.

The report of this miracle was spread over the whole surrounding country, and wonderfully increased the public devotion towards the Saint. In several places, chapels were erected in his honor; his festival was preceded by a vigil, and celebrated with the greatest solemnity.

THE END.

BX 4700 L7B3 v.2	Bartoli. History of Life and Institute of St. Ignatius of Loyola. 681510
FEB 2 '28 FEB 13 '28	Pearl Lipkin 6227 St. Pauls
MAR 8 '28 MAR 12 '28	H. Broad 5534 Blackstone
JUL 27 '28 AUG 10 '28	R. Zussenfing 41031 Kimbark
MAR 5 '28 MAR 15 '28	E. Merriam 6941 University
FEB 25 '28 MAR 14 '28	A. Brantingham 6933 Sleight
JAN 23 '31 JAN 30 '31	R7 Clarke 6048 Kenwood
DEC 7 '28 DEC 20 '28	J. McIntosh 5827 Madison
NOV 27 '31 FEB 5 '32	J. Stenwin (J.R.D.) 1957 TecX

UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



45 240 513

BX4700

L7 B3

V2

681510